"MAKE SURE
OF ALL THINGS
Hold Fast To What Is Fine"

"MAKE SURE OF ALL THINGS Hold Fast To What Is Fine"

A compilation of scriptures from the Holy Bible under one hundred and twenty-three main headings, to enable you to ascertain quickly what the Bible itself has to say on these important subjects. This book may be used to assure yourself of the Bible teaching on these subjects, and also to answer those who challenge your faith.



"Make sure of all things; hold fast to what is fine."
—1 Thessalonians 5: 21.

COPYRIGHT, 1965
by
WATCH TOWER BIBLE & TRACT SOCIETY
OF PENNSYLVANIA

All scriptures, unless otherwise indicated, are quoted from the *New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures,* 1961 Edition. Quotations from other Bible versions are indicated as shown below:

AS — American Standard Version
AT — An American Translation
AV — Authorized or King James Version
Confraternity — Catholic Confraternity Revision of the New Testament
Dy — Catholic Douay-Rheims Version, revised by Bishop Challoner
ED — The Emphatic Diaglott, with Greek text
Knox — Monsignor Knox's translation
Mo — James Moffatt's version, revised edition
RS — Revised Standard Version
Westminster — Catholic Westminster Bible Version

PUBLISHERS
WATCHTOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY
OF NEW YORK, INC.
International Bible Students Association
Brooklyn, New York, U.S.A.

Made in the United States of America

PRINCIPAL SUBJECTS

	Page
Angels	9
Antichrist	14
Apostles	17
Apostolic Succession	20
Armageddon (Har-Magedon)	25
Associations	30
Babylon the Great	33
Baptism	39
Bible	45
Blood	53
Born Again, as Spiritual Sons of God	56
Bride of Christ	57
Caesar's Things to Caesar	59
Celebrations	62
Charitable Works	67
Children	71
Christians	78
Chronology	84
Commandments	91
Communism	94
Conduct of Christians	98
Confession	109
Congregation of God	112
Conscience	117
Counsel	119
Covenants	123
Creation	131
Creature Worship	135
Cross	139
Death	142
Decisions	146
Dedication	150
Devil and Demons	153
Discipline	160
Disfellowshiping	162
Earth and Its Destiny	165
Encouragement	171
Endurance	174
Evolution	177
Faith	184
Fear	189
Food	192
Freedom	194
Friendship with the World	197
Fruits of the Spirit	203
Gehenna	209
Gifts from God	211
God	215
Healing	218
Heart	223
Heaven	225
Hellfire	229
Holidays	235
Honorary Titles	243
Humility	244
Idolatry	247
Immortality	252
Incarnation	253
Interfaith	257
Jehovah	264
Jehovah's Witnesses	270
Jesus Christ	282
Joy	289
Judgment	290

PRINCIPAL SUBJECTS

	Page
Justification, or Being Declared Righteous	295
Kindness	298
Kingdom	300
Knowledge	306
"Last Days"	311
Law	313
Life	319
Long-suffering	322
Lord's Evening Meal	323
Love	325
Mariolatry	329
Marriage	332
Mass	335
Materialism	338
Maturity	342
Mercy	344
Minister of God	346
Neutrality	351
Obedience	359
Organization (Jehovah's)	362
Overseers	366
Peace	371
Persecution	374
Prayer	379
Preaching the Good News	384
Predestination (Foreordination)	390
Prophecy	394
Purgatory	403
Races of Mankind	406
Ransom	408
Religion	412
Repentance	420
Resurrection	424
Return of Christ	429
Sabbath	434
Salvation	437
Sanctification	441
Self-Control	444
Settling Personal Differences	446
Sheol—Hades	448
Sign of Christ's Presence	451
Sin	456
Singleness	460
Social Distinctions	462
Soul	463
Spirit	466
Spiritism	468
Study	470
Superior Authorities	473
Tithing	477
Tongues, Speaking in	479
Tradition	481
Transmigration	482
Trinity	484
War	489
Wickedness	492
Wisdom	497
Women	500
Work	502

FOREWORD

"Make sure of all things; hold fast to what is fine." That is sound advice. Those who follow it will not be misled. They will not fall into the trap concerning which all Christians are warned with the words: "Look out: perhaps there may be someone who will carry you off as his prey through the philosophy and empty deception according to the tradition of men, according to the elementary things of the world and not according to Christ."—1 Thess. 5:21; Col. 2:8.

But how can one "make sure of all things"? To what authority will one look for reliable information? To God's own written Word the Bible. Jesus Christ himself quoted from the Holy Scriptures as authoritative, and his apostle Paul wrote: "All Scripture is inspired of God and beneficial for teaching, for reproving, for setting things straight, for disciplining in righteousness, that the man of God may be fully competent, completely equipped for every good work." (2 Tim. 3:16, 17) It is to that same source of information that we go with confidence that what we will find will be, 'not the word of men, but the word of God.'—1 Thess. 2:13.

So if we want to know what is right doctrine, we must listen to God when he speaks to us through his written Word. If we want to know what reliable hope there is concerning the future, we must consult the prophetic Scriptures. And if we are confronted with personal problems and decisions, where can we find better advice than what God himself has provided for us in the Bible? This publication, *"Make Sure of All Things; Hold Fast to What Is Fine,"* can help you to locate the information that you need from the Bible and it can do it in a minimum of time.

You will find that the material under each of the one hundred and twenty-three Principal Subjects is so arranged that it will be a delight for you simply to sit down and read it. In just a short time it will give you a rounded-out view of what the Bible itself has to say on the subject you have selected to read. It will sharpen your appreciation of important details and enable you to become acquainted with scriptures on the subject from many parts of the Bible.

Similarly, when visiting with others in their homes to discuss the Bible, you will find this book a ready source of information on almost any Scriptural topic that may come up. Since the main headings are arranged alphabetically, it is an easy thing to turn to the section of the book that considers the subject. Then, if time permits, start right in with the first subheading. Read it and at least one of the scriptures quoted under it; then consider the next subheading, and so on through the entire outline of material. Where additional proof is needed, read some of the other scriptures quoted under the subheading; an abundance of material has been provided, and the scriptures are so plain that they speak for themselves. This will provide a satisfying picture of just what the Bible has to say on the matter.

However, if time is limited or the question raised involves only one aspect of the subject, select the specific subheading that provides the information desired. This can be located either by turning to the section that contains the scriptures on the subject and then quickly glancing at the logically arranged boldface subheadings, or you can consult the Index in the back of the book. There you will find listed, not only the one hundred and twenty-three Principal Subjects, but 234 additional related subjects, with page references.

When you have talks to prepare, "*Make Sure of All Things; Hold Fast to What Is Fine*" can also prove itself to be a great aid. Not only will its subheadings offer you a ready-to-use outline, but the wide selection of scriptures quoted will make it possible for you to have variety and freshness in your presentation.

Use of this book of scriptures will enable you to "make sure" that what you believe is in harmony with God's Word. It will help you to "make sure" that your decisions are in harmony with Bible principles. It will assist you to "make sure" that when you tell others about God and his purposes you are imparting accurate information. Carry it with you. Use it often.

Angels

Spirit Creatures

Heb. 1:7 "He makes his angels spirits."

Luke 24:39 "A spirit does not have flesh and bones."

Matt. 18:10 "Their angels in heaven always behold the face of my Father who is in heaven." (Compare John 1:18.)

Classifications

Jude 9 "Michael the archangel had a difference with the Devil and was disputing about Moses' body."

Isa. 6:2 "Seraphs were standing above him. Each one had six wings. With two he kept his face covered, and with two he kept his feet covered, and with two he would fly about."

Gen. 3:24 "He drove the man out and posted at the east of the garden of Eden the cherubs and the flaming blade of a sword that was turning itself continually to guard the way to the tree of life."

Zech. 4:1, 6 "The angel who was speaking with me proceeded to come back and wake me up . . . Accordingly he answered and said to me: 'This is the word of Jehovah to Zerubbabel.'"

Number in God's Heavenly Organization

Rev. 5:11 "I heard a voice of many angels around the throne and the living creatures and the older persons, and the number of them was myriads of myriads and thousands of thousands."

Dan. 7:9, 10 "I kept on beholding until there were thrones placed and the Ancient of Days sat down. . . . There was a stream of fire flowing and going out from before him. There were a thousand thousands that kept ministering to him, and ten thousand times ten thousand that kept standing right before him."

Heb. 12:22 "You have approached a Mount Zion and a city of the living God, heavenly Jerusalem, and myriads of angels."

Matt. 26:53 "Do you think that I cannot appeal to my Father to supply me at this moment more than twelve legions of angels?"

Created by God Before Men, Not Disembodied Humans

Job 38:4, 7 "Where did you happen to be when I founded the earth? . . . When the morning stars joyfully cried out together, and all the sons of God ["the godlike ones," "my angels," 1950 Ed. ftn.] began shouting in applause?"

See also the main heading "Soul," pages 463-465.

Do not marry and reproduce; each a direct creation

Mark 12:25 "When they rise from the dead, neither do men marry nor are women given in marriage, but are as angels in the heavens."

Superior to Men

2 Pet. 2:11 "Angels, although they are greater in strength and power, do not bring against them an accusation in abusive terms, not doing so out of respect for Jehovah."

Heb. 2:6, 7 "What is man that you keep him in mind, or the son of man that you take care of him? You made him a little lower than angels." (See also Ps. 8:4, 5.)

Properly Subject to Jehovah and Christ

Ps. 103:20 "Bless Jehovah, O you angels of his, mighty in power, carrying out his word, by listening to the voice of his word."

Ps. 148:2 "Praise him, all you his angels. Praise him, all you his army."

1 Pet. 3:22 "He [Jesus Christ] is at God's right hand, for he went his way to heaven; and angels and authorities and powers were made subject to him."

Heb. 1:6 "When he again brings his First-born into the inhabited earth, he says: 'And let all God's angels worship him.'"

Not to Be Worshiped

Rev. 22:8, 9 "Well, I John was the one hearing and seeing these things. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel that had been showing me these things. But he tells me: 'Be careful! Do not do that! All I am is a fellow slave of you and of your brothers who are prophets and of those who are observing the words of this scroll. Worship God.'" (See also Rev. 19:10.)

Col. 2:18 "Let no man deprive you of the prize who takes delight in a mock humility and a form of worship of the angels."

Appeared Visibly to Humans

Luke 1:5, 11 "In the days of Herod, king of Judea, there happened to be a certain priest named Zechariah . . . To him Jehovah's angel appeared, standing at the right side of the incense altar."

Luke 1:26-28 "The angel Gabriel was sent forth from God to a city of Galilee named Nazareth, to a virgin promised in marriage to a man named Joseph of David's house; and the name of the virgin was Mary. And when he went in before her he said: 'Good day, highly favored one.'"

Luke 2:8, 9, 13 "There were also in that same country shepherds living out of doors and keeping watches in the night over their flocks. And suddenly Jehovah's angel stood by them . . . And suddenly there came to be with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host, praising God."

Judg. 13:2, 3 "There happened to be a certain man of Zorah of the family of the Danites, and his name was Manoah. And his wife was barren and had borne no child. In time Jehovah's angel appeared to the woman."

Last recorded appearance

Rev. 1:1 "A revelation by Jesus Christ, which God gave him, to show his slaves the things that must shortly take place. And he sent forth his angel and presented it in signs through him to his slave John." (About 96 C.E.) (Compare Rev. 22:8, 9.)

Services Performed

Uphold Jehovah's throne, his sovereign majesty

Ps. 99:1 "Jehovah himself has become king. Let the peoples be agitated. He is sitting upon the cherubs."

Isa. 6:2, 3 "Seraphs were standing above him. . . . And this one called to that one and said: 'Holy, holy, holy is Jehovah of armies. The fullness of all the earth is his glory.'"

Gen. 3:17, 24 "To Adam he said: ' . . . [you] took to eating from the tree concerning which I gave you this command, "You must not eat from it,"' . . . And so he drove the man out and posted at the east of the garden of Eden the cherubs and the flaming blade of a sword that was turning itself continually to guard the way to the tree of life."

See also 2 Ki. 19:15; Ezek. 10: 1, 3-5.

Representatives of Jehovah, spoke in his name

Ex. 3:1-6 "Then Jehovah's angel appeared to [Moses] in a flame of fire in the midst of a thornbush. . . . When Jehovah saw that he turned aside to inspect, God at once called to him out of the midst of the thornbush and said: . . . 'I am the God of your father, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac and the God of Jacob.' Then Moses concealed his face, because he was afraid to look at the true God." (Compare Acts 7:30-35.)

Acts 7:53 "You . . . received the Law as transmitted by angels but have not kept it." (Compare Ex. 20:1-21.)

Judg. 6:12-22 "Jehovah's angel appeared to [Gideon] and said to him: 'Jehovah is with you' . . . Upon that Jehovah faced him and said: 'Go in this power of yours, and you will certainly save Israel out of Midian's palm. Do I not send you?' In turn he said to him: 'Excuse me, Jehovah. With what shall I save Israel?' . . . As for Jehovah's angel, he vanished from his sight. Consequently Gideon realized that it was Jehovah's angel."

Messengers

Gen. 22:11-17 "Jehovah's angel began calling to him out of the heavens and saying: 'Abraham, Abraham!' to which he answered: 'Here I am!' And he went on to say: 'Do not put out your hand against the boy' . . . '"By myself I do swear," is the utterance of Jehovah, "that by reason of the fact that you have done this thing and you have not withheld your son, your only one, I shall surely bless you."'"

Acts 7:37, 38 "This is the Moses . . . that came to be among the congregation in the wilderness with the angel that spoke to him on Mount Sinai and with our forefathers, and he received living sacred pronouncements to give you."

Judg. 2:1, 2 "Jehovah's angel went up from Gilgal to Bochim and said: 'I proceeded to bring you up out of Egypt and to bring you into the land about which I swore to your forefathers. Furthermore, I said, "Never shall I break my covenant with you. And for your part, you must not conclude a covenant with the inhabitants of this land. Their altars you should pull down." But you have not listened to my voice.'"

2 Ki. 1:3 "As for the angel of Jehovah, he spoke to Elijah the Tishbite: 'Rise up, go up to meet the messengers of the king of Samaria and say to them, "Is it because there is no God at all in Israel that you are going to inquire of Baal-zebub the god of Ekron?"'"

Matt. 2:13 "Jehovah's angel appeared in a dream to Joseph, saying: 'Get up, take the young child and its mother and flee into Egypt.'"

Services on behalf of God's earthly servants

Ps. 34:7 "The angel of Jehovah is camping all around those fearing him, and he rescues them."

Acts 12:6-11 "When Herod was about to produce him, that night Peter was sleeping bound with two chains between two soldiers, and guards before the door were keeping the prison. But, look! Jehovah's angel stood by, and a light shone in the prison cell. Striking Peter on the side, he roused him, saying: 'Rise quickly!' . . . Going through the first sentinel guard and the second they got to the iron gate leading into the city, and this opened to them of its own accord. And after they went out they advanced down one street, and immediately the angel departed from him. And Peter, coming to himself, said: 'Now I actually know that Jehovah sent his angel forth and delivered me out of Herod's hand.'"

Dan. 6:16-22 "They brought Daniel and threw him into the pit of the lions. . . . Finally the king himself, at dawn, proceeded to get up in the daylight, and in a hurry he went right to the lions' pit. . . . The king was speaking up and saying to Daniel: 'O Daniel, servant of the living God, has your God whom you are serving with constancy been able to rescue you from the lions?' Immediately Daniel himself spoke even with the king: 'O king, live on even to times indefinite. My

own God sent his angel and shut the mouth of the lions, and they have not brought me to ruin.'"

Heb. 1:7, 14 "With reference to the angels he says: 'And he makes his angels spirits, and his public servants a flame of fire.' Are they not all spirits for public service, sent forth to minister for those who are going to inherit salvation?"

Matt. 18:10 "See to it that you men do not despise one of these little ones; for I tell you that their angels in heaven always behold the face of my Father who is in heaven."

Matt. 4:11 "The Devil left him, and, look! angels came and began to minister to him."

Luke 22:43 "An angel from heaven appeared to him and strengthened him."

Rev. 7:2, 3 "I saw another angel ascending from the sunrising, having a seal of the living God; and he cried with a loud voice to the four angels to whom it was granted to harm the earth and the sea, saying: 'Do not harm the earth or the sea or the trees, until after we have sealed the slaves of our God in their foreheads.'"

Gen. 31:11, 12 "The angel of the true God said to me in the dream, 'Jacob!' to which I said, 'Here I am.' And he continued, 'Raise your eyes, please, and see all the he-goats springing upon the flock are striped, speckled and spotty, for I have seen all that Laban is doing to you.'"

Gen. 48:15, 16 "He [Jacob] proceeded to bless Joseph and to say: '. . . the angel who has been recovering me from all calamity, bless the boys.'"

Directed and protected ancient Israel

Ex. 23:20-23 "Here I am sending an angel ahead of you to keep you on the road and to bring you into the place that I have prepared. Watch yourself because of him and obey his voice. . . . My angel will go ahead of you." (See also Num. 20:16.)

Ex. 14:19, 20 "The angel of the true God who was going ahead of the camp of Israel departed and went to their rear, and the pillar of cloud departed from their van and stood in the rear of them. So it came in between the camp of the Egyptians and the camp of Israel."

Ex. 33:2 "I will send an angel ahead of you and drive out the Canaanites, the Amorites, and the Hittites and the Perizzites, the Hivites and the Jebusites."

2 Ki. 6:16, 17 "He said: 'Do not be afraid, for there are more who *are with us than those who* are with them.' And Elisha began to pray and say: 'O Jehovah, open his eyes, please, that he may see.' Immediately Jehovah opened the attendant's eyes, so that he saw; and, look! the mountainous region was full of horses and war chariots of fire all around Elisha."

Preaching work done under angelic direction

Rev. 14:6-9 "I saw another angel flying in midheaven, and he had everlasting good news to declare as glad tidings to those who dwell on the earth, and to every nation and tribe and tongue and people, . . . And another, a second angel, followed, . . . And another *angel, a third, followed* them."

Matt. 24:31 "He will send forth his angels with a great trumpet sound, and they will gather his chosen ones together from the four winds, from one extremity of the heavens to their other extremity."

Matt. 25:31, 32 "When the Son of man arrives in his glory, and all the angels with him, then he will sit down on his glorious throne. And all the nations will be gathered before him, and he will separate people one from another."

Acts 5:19-21 "During the night Jehovah's angel opened the doors of the prison, brought them [the apostles] out and said: 'Be on your way, and, having taken a stand in the temple, keep on speaking to the people all the sayings about this life.' After hearing this, they entered into the temple at daybreak and began to teach."

Acts 8:26-35 "Jehovah's angel spoke to Philip, saying: 'Rise and go to the south to the road that runs down from Jerusalem to Gaza.' . . . With that he rose and went, and, look! an Ethiopian eunuch . . . So the spirit said to Philip: 'Approach and join yourself to this chariot.' . . . Philip opened his mouth and, starting *with this Scripture, he declared* to him the good news about Jesus."

Acts 10:1-22 "In Caesarea there was a certain man named Cornelius, an army officer . . . he saw plainly in a vision an angel of God come in to him and say to him: 'Cornelius! . . . Your prayers and gifts of mercy have ascended as a remembrance before God. So now send men to Joppa and summon a certain Simon who is surnamed Peter. . . .' As soon as the angel that spoke to him had left, he called two of his house servants and a devout soldier . . . and dispatched them to Joppa. . . . They said [to Peter]: 'Cornelius, an army *officer, a man righteous and fearing* God and well reported by the whole nation of the Jews, was given divine instructions by a holy angel to send for you to come to his house and to hear the things you have to say.'" (See also Acts 11:13, 14.)

Executioners of divine judgment

Matt. 13:41, 42 "The Son of man will send forth his angels, and they will collect out from his kingdom all things that cause stumbling and persons who are doing lawlessness, and they will pitch them into the fiery furnace."

Gen. 19:1, 12, 13 "Now the two angels arrived at Sodom by evening, . . . Then the men said to Lot: '. . . we are bringing this place to ruin, because the outcry against them has grown loud before Jehovah, so that Jehovah sent us to bring the city to ruin.'"

Ps. 78:42, 43, 49 "They did not remember his hand, the day that he redeemed them from the adversary, how he put his signs in Egypt itself and his miracles in the field of Zoan [an Egyptian city]. He went sending upon them his burning anger, fury and denunciation and distress, deputations of angels bringing calamity."

2 Ki. 19:35 "It came about on that night that *the* angel of Jehovah proceeded to go out and strike down a hundred and eighty-five thousand in the camp of the Assyrians. When people rose up early in the morning, why, there all of them were dead carcasses."

Acts 12:21-23 "On a set day Herod clothed himself with royal raiment and sat down upon the judgment seat and began giving them a public address. In turn the assembled people began shouting: 'A god's voice, and not a man's!' Instantly the angel of Jehovah struck him, because he did not give the glory to God; and he became eaten up with worms and expired."

2 Thess. 1:6-8 *"It is righteous* on God's part to repay tribulation to those who make tribulation for you, but, to you who suffer tribulation, relief along with us at the revelation of the Lord Jesus from heaven with his powerful angels in a flaming fire, as he brings vengeance upon those who do not know God and those who do not obey the good news about our Lord Jesus."

Rev. 20:1, 2 "I saw an angel coming down out of heaven with the key of the abyss and a great chain in his hand. And he seized the dragon, the original serpent, who is the Devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years."

Angels That Sinned

Became demons, wicked spirits

1 Pet. 3:19, 20 "He [Jesus Christ] went his way and preached to the spirits in prison, who had once been disobedient when the patience of God was waiting in Noah's days, while the ark was being constructed."

Gen. 6:1, 2, 4 "Now it came about that when men started to grow in numbers on the surface of the ground and daughters were born to them, then the sons of the true God began to notice the daughters of men, that they were good-looking; and they went taking wives for themselves, namely, all whom they chose. . . . the sons of the true God continued to have relations with the daughters of men and they bore sons to them, they were the mighty ones who were of old, the men of fame."

Eph. 6:12 "We have a fight, not against blood and flesh, but . . . against the wicked spirit forces in the heavenly places."

See also the heading "Devil and Demons," pages 153-160.

Destined to destruction

Jude 6 "The angels that did not keep their original position but forsook their own proper dwelling place he has reserved with eternal bonds under dense darkness for the judgment of the great day."

Luke 8:27, 30, 31 "As [Jesus Christ] got out onto land a certain man from the city who had demons met him. . . . Jesus asked him: 'What is your name?' He said: 'Legion,' because many demons had entered into him. And they kept entreating him not to order them to go away into the abyss."

Matt. 25:41 "Then he will say, in turn, to those on his left, 'Be on your way from me, you who have been cursed, into the everlasting fire prepared for the Devil and his angels.'"

Symbolic Use of Term

Rev. 1:20; 2:1 "As for the sacred secret of the seven stars that you saw upon my right hand, and of the seven golden lampstands: The seven stars mean the angels of the seven congregations, and the seven lampstands mean seven congregations. To the angel of the congregation in Ephesus write."

See also Rev. 2:8, 12, 18; 3:1, 7, 14.

Antichrist

There Are Many Antichrists

1 John 2:18 "Just as you have heard that antichrist is coming, even now there have come to be many antichrists."

Any Not Truly on Christ's Side Are Antichrists

Luke 11:23 "He that is not on my side is against me, and he that does not gather with me scatters."

Matt. 7:22, 23 "Many will say to me in that day, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your name, and expel demons in your name, and perform many powerful works in your name?' And yet then I will confess to them: I never knew you! Get away from me, you workers of lawlessness."

Identified in the Scriptures

Those denying the Father and the Son are antichrists

1 John 2:22 "This is the antichrist, the one that denies the Father and the Son."

John 15:20, 21, 23 "If they have persecuted me, they will persecute you also . . . But they will do all these things against you on account of my name, because they do not know him that sent me. He that hates me hates also my Father."

See also the main heading "Trinity," pages 484-489.

Deny Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God

1 John 2:22 "Who is the liar if it is not the one that denies that Jesus is the Christ? This is the antichrist, the one that denies the Father and the Son."

John 8:42, 48, 49; 9:22 "Jesus said to them: 'If God were your Father, you would love me, for from God I came forth and am here. Neither have I come of my own initiative at all, but that One sent me forth.' In answer the Jews said to him: 'Do we not rightly say, You are a Samaritan and have a demon?' Jesus answered: 'I do not have a demon, but I honor my Father, and you dishonor me.'" "The Jews had already come to an agreement that, if anyone confessed him as Christ, he should get expelled from the synagogue."

See also the main heading "Faith," page 185.

Deny Christ came to earth as perfect man of flesh

1 John 4:2, 3 "Every inspired expression that confesses Jesus Christ as having come in the flesh originates with God, but every inspired expression that does not confess Jesus does not originate with God. Furthermore, this is the antichrist's inspired expression which you have heard was coming, and now it is already in the world."

2 John 7 "Many deceivers have gone forth into the world, persons not confessing Jesus Christ as coming in the flesh. This is the deceiver and the antichrist."

Apostates, forsake association of true Christians

1 John 2:18, 19 "Even now there have come to be many antichrists . . . They went out from us, but they were not of our sort; for if they had been of our sort, they would have remained with us. But they went out that it might be shown up that not all are of our sort."

"False Christs"

Matt. 24:24, 5 "False Christs and false prophets will arise and will give great signs and wonders so as to mislead, if possible, even the chosen ones. . . . many will come on the basis of my name, saying, 'I am the Christ,' and will mislead many."

False prophets

1 John 4:1, 3 "Do not believe every inspired expression, but test the inspired expressions to see whether they originate with God, because many false prophets have gone forth into the world. . . . every inspired expression that does not confess Jesus does not originate with God. Furthermore, this is the antichrist's inspired expression."

Matt. 7:15 "Be on the watch for the false prophets that come to you in sheep's covering, but inside they are ravenous wolves."

Acts 13:6 "When they had gone through the whole island as far as Paphos, they met up with a certain man, a sorcerer, a false prophet, a Jew whose name was Bar-Jesus."

See also the main heading "Prophecy," page 394.

All who oppose and persecute true followers of Christ

Luke 21:12 "People will lay their hands upon you and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues and prisons, you

being haled before kings and governors for the sake of my name."

Matt. 25:40, 45 "In reply the king will say to them, 'Truly I say to you, To the extent that you did it to one of the least of these my brothers, you did it to me.' Then he will answer them with the words, 'Truly I say to you, To the extent that you did not do it to one of these least ones, you did not do it to me.'"

Acts 9:1-5 "Saul . . . asked him for letters to the synagogues in Damascus, in order that he might bring bound to Jerusalem any whom he found who belonged to The Way, both men and women. . . . He fell to the ground and heard a voice say to him: 'Saul, Saul, why are you persecuting me?' He said: 'Who are you, Lord?' He said: 'I am Jesus, whom you are persecuting.'" (See also Acts 22:7, 8; 26:14, 15.)

Rev. 17:5, 6 "Upon her forehead was written a name, a mystery: 'Babylon the Great, the mother of the harlots and of the disgusting things of the earth.' And I saw that the woman was drunk with the blood of the holy ones and with the blood of the witnesses of Jesus."

Matt. 24:48-51 "If that evil slave should say in his heart, 'My master is delaying,' and should start to beat his fellow slaves . . . the master of that slave will come on a day that he does not expect and in an hour that he does not know, and will punish him with the greatest severity and will assign him his part with the hypocrites."

Those who oppose Christ's kingdom authority

Ps. 2:1, 2 "Why have the nations been in tumult and the national groups themselves kept muttering an empty thing? The kings of earth take their stand and high officials themselves have massed together as one against Jehovah and against his anointed one [or, Christ]."

Rev. 19:19-21 "I saw the wild beast and the kings of the earth and their armies gathered together to wage the war with the one [Jesus Christ] seated on the horse and with his army. And the wild beast was caught, and along with it the false prophet that performed in front of it the signs with which he misled those who received the mark of the wild beast and those who render worship to its image. While still alive, they both were hurled into the fiery lake that burns with sulphur. But the rest were killed off with the long sword of the one seated on the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth."

Antichrists to Be Destroyed Forever

1 John 4:3, 5; 2:17 "This is the antichrist's inspired expression which you have heard was coming, and now it is already in the world. They originate with the world; that is why they speak what proceeds from the world and the world listens to them." "Furthermore, the world is passing away and so is its desire, but he that does the will of God remains forever."

2 Pet. 2:1 "There also came to be false prophets among the people, as there will also be false teachers among you. These very ones will quietly bring in destructive sects and will disown even the owner that bought them, bringing speedy destruction upon themselves."

Matt. 25:31, 46 "When the Son of man arrives in his glory, and all the angels with him, then he will sit down on his glorious throne. And these will depart into everlasting cutting-off, but the righteous ones into everlasting life." (Compare vss. 40, 45.)

Apostles

Christ Jesus an Apostle, One Sent Forth by Jehovah

Heb. 3:1, 2 "Consider the apostle and high priest whom we confess—Jesus. He was faithful to the One that made him such."

Twelve Sent Forth by Jesus Christ

Matt. 10:2-5 "The names of the twelve apostles are these: First, Simon, the one called Peter, and Andrew his brother; and James the son of Zebedee and John his brother; Philip and Bartholomew; Thomas and Matthew the tax collector; James the son of Alphaeus, and Thaddaeus; Simon the Cananaean, and Judas Iscariot, who later betrayed him. These twelve Jesus sent forth."

Type of Men Chosen to Be Apostles

Acts 4:13 "Now when they beheld the outspokenness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were men unlettered and ordinary, they got to wondering. And they began to recognize about them that they used to be with Jesus."

1 Thess. 2:6-11 "We could be an expensive burden as apostles of Christ. To the contrary, we became gentle in the midst of you, as when a nursing mother cherishes her own children. So, having a tender affection for you, we were well pleased to impart to you, not only the good news of God, but also our own souls, because you became beloved to us. Certainly you bear in mind, brothers, our labor and toil. It was with working night and day, so as not to put an expensive burden upon any one of you, that we preached the good news of God to you. You are witnesses, God is also, how loyal and righteous and unblamable we proved to be to you believers. In harmony with that you well know how, as a father does his children, we kept exhorting each one of you, and consoling and bearing witness to you."

Matt. 4:18-22 "Walking alongside the sea of Galilee he saw two brothers, Simon who is called Peter and Andrew his brother, letting down a fishing net into the sea, for they were fishers. And he said to them: 'Come after me, and I will make you fishers of men.' At once abandoning the nets, they followed him. Going on also from there he saw two others who were brothers, James the son of Zebedee and John his brother, in the boat with Zebedee their father, mending their nets, and he called them. At once leaving the boat and their father, they followed him."

Matt. 9:9 "While passing along from there, Jesus caught sight of a man named Matthew seated at the tax office, and he said to him: 'Be my follower.' Thereupon he did rise up and follow him."

John 1:47 "Jesus saw Nathanael [also called Bartholomew] coming toward him and said about him: 'See, an Israelite for a certainty, in whom there is no deceit.'"

Acts 22:3 "I am a Jew, born in Tarsus of Cilicia, but educated in this city at the feet of Gamaliel, instructed according to the strictness of the ancestral Law, being zealous for God."

1 Cor. 9:5 "We have authority to lead about a sister as a wife, even as the rest of the apostles and the Lord's brothers and Cephas [Simon Peter], do we not?"

Trained by Jesus Christ

Matt. 10:5-23 "These twelve Jesus sent forth, giving them these orders: '. . . As you go, preach, saying, "The kingdom of the heavens has drawn near." . . .

When you are entering into the house, greet the household; and if the house is deserving, let the peace you wish it come upon it; but if it is not deserving, let the peace from you return upon you. Wherever anyone does not take you in or listen to your words, on going out of that house or that city shake the dust off your feet. . . . Look! I am sending you forth as sheep amidst wolves; therefore prove yourselves cautious as serpents and yet innocent as doves. . . . When they persecute you in one city, flee to another.'"

Miraculous Powers Were Exercised by Them

Matt. 10:1 "He summoned his twelve disciples and gave them authority over unclean spirits, in order to expel these and to cure every sort of disease and every sort of infirmity."

Acts 5:12 "Through the hands of the apostles many signs and portents continued to occur among the people." (See also 2 Cor. 12:12.)

Acts 3:6-8 "Peter said: 'Silver and gold I do not possess, but what I do have is what I give you: In the name of Jesus Christ the Nazarene, walk!' With that he took hold of him by the right hand and raised him up. Instantly the soles of his feet and his ankle bones were made firm; and, leaping up, he stood up and began walking, and he entered with them into the temple, walking and leaping and praising God."

Acts 9:36-40 "In Joppa there was a certain disciple named Tabitha, which, when translated, means Dorcas. . . . she happened to fall sick and die. . . . But Peter put everybody outside and, bending his knees, he prayed, and, turning to the body, he said: 'Tabitha, rise!' She opened her eyes and, as she caught sight of Peter, she sat up."

See also Acts 28:8, 9.

Through them or in their presence, gifts of spirit were transmitted to others

Acts 19:6 "When Paul laid his hands upon them, the holy spirit came upon them, and they began speaking with tongues and prophesying."

Acts 8:14-18 "When the apostles in Jerusalem heard that Samaria had accepted the word of God, they dispatched Peter and John to them . . . Then they went laying their hands upon them, and they began to receive holy spirit. . . . Simon saw that through the laying on of the hands of the apostles the spirit was given."

Acts 10:44-46 "While Peter was yet speaking about these matters the holy spirit fell upon all those hearing the word. And the faithful ones that had come with Peter who were of those circumcised were amazed, because the free gift of the holy spirit was being poured out also upon people of the nations. For they heard them speaking with tongues and glorifying God."

See also the main heading "Gifts from God," pages 213, 214.

Called to Heavenly Life

John 13:36; 14:2, 3 "Simon Peter said to him: 'Lord, where are you going?' Jesus answered: 'Where I am going you cannot follow me now, but you will follow afterwards.'" "In the house of my Father there are many abodes. . . . I am going my way to prepare a place for you . . . that where I am you also may be."

Luke 22:28-30 "You are the ones that have stuck with me in my trials; and I make a covenant with you, just as my Father has made a covenant with me, for a kingdom, that you may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom."

Rev. 21:2, 14 "I saw also the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven . . . The wall of the city also had twelve foundation stones, and on them the twelve names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb."

See also the main heading "Heaven," pages 225, 226.

Were Guided by Jehovah's Holy Spirit

Acts 2:1-4, 14, 16-18 "While the day of the festival of Pentecost was in progress they were all together at the same place, . . . and they all became filled with holy spirit and started to speak with different tongues, just as the spirit was granting them to make utterance. . . . Peter stood up with the eleven and raised his voice and made this utterance to them: '. . . this is what was said through the prophet Joel, "'And in the last days,' God says, 'I shall pour out some of my spirit upon every sort of flesh, and your sons and your daughters will prophesy and your young men will see visions and your old men will dream dreams; and even upon my men slaves and upon my women slaves I will pour out some of my spirit.'"'"

1 Cor. 7:40 "I certainly think I also have God's spirit."

Acts 10:19 "As Peter was going over in his mind about the vision, the spirit said: 'Look! Three men are seeking you.'"

John 16:13 "When that one arrives, the spirit of the truth, he will guide you into all the truth."

One of the Twelve Prophesied to Be a Traitor

Ps. 41:9 "The man at peace with me, in whom I trusted, who was eating my bread, has magnified his heel against me."

John 13:10, 11, 18 "'And you men are clean, but not all.' He knew, indeed, the man betraying him. This is why he said: 'Not all of you are clean.' 'I am not talking about all of you; I know the ones I have chosen. But it is in order that the scripture might be fulfilled, "He that used to feed on my bread has lifted up his heel against me."'"

Selection of Twelfth Apostle to Replace Judas

Peter felt the congregation had responsibility to see that vacant position was filled

Acts 1:23-26 "They put up two, Joseph called Barsabbas, who was surnamed Justus, and Matthias. And they prayed and said: 'You, O Jehovah, who know the hearts of all, designate which one of these two men you have chosen, *to take the place of this ministry* and apostleship, from which Judas deviated to go to his own place.' So they cast lots over them, and the lot fell upon Matthias; and he was reckoned along with the eleven apostles." (See vs. 15.)

Saul of Tarsus (Paul) Chosen by Jesus Christ to Be an Apostle

Gal. 1:1 "Paul, an apostle, neither from men nor through a man, but through Jesus Christ and God the Father."

Acts 9:15 "This man is a chosen vessel to me to bear my name to the nations as well as to kings and the sons of Israel."

Acts 26:16 "I have made myself visible to you, in order to choose you as an attendant and a witness both of things you have seen and things I shall make you see respecting me."

1 Cor. 15:7-10 "He appeared to James, then to all the apostles; but last of all he appeared also to me as if to one born prematurely. For I am the least of the apostles, and I am not fit to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the congregation of God. But by God's undeserved kindness I am what I am."

Rom. 11:13 "I speak to you who are people of the nations. Forasmuch as I am, in reality, an apostle to the nations."

Apostles and Other Mature Christians Constituted Governing Body in First Century

Acts 6:2, 3 "The twelve called the multitude of the disciples to them and said: 'It is not pleasing for us to leave the word of God to distribute food to tables. So, brothers, search out for yourselves seven certified men from among you, full of spirit and wisdom, that we may appoint them over this necessary business.'"

Acts 15:22, 23 "Then the apostles and the older men together with the whole congregation favored sending chosen men from among them to Antioch along with Paul and Barnabas, namely, Judas who was called Barsabbas and Silas, leading men among the brothers; and by their hand they wrote: 'The apostles and the older brothers to those brothers in Antioch and Syria and Cilicia.'" (See also Gal. 1:19.)

"Superfine Apostles" Considered Themselves Superior to Paul

2 Cor. 11:5, 13 "I consider that I have not in a single thing proved inferior to your superfine apostles. For such men are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into apostles of Christ."

Term Used in General Way to Refer to Ones Sent Forth

Acts 14:4, 14 "The multitude of the city was split, and some were for the Jews but others for the apostles. However, when the apostles Barnabas and Paul heard of it, they ripped their outer garments and leaped out into the crowd."

Rom. 16:7 "Greet Andronicus and Junias my relatives and my fellow captives, who are men of note among the apostles and who have been in union with Christ longer than I have."

Phil. 2:25 "I consider it necessary to send to you Epaphroditus, my brother and fellow worker and fellow soldier, but your envoy ["apostle," 1950 Ed. ftn.]."

Apostolic Succession

Christ Himself, Not Peter, the Foundation Cornerstone on Which the Spiritual House of God Is Built

Eph. 2:20, 21 "You have been built up upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, while Christ Jesus himself is the foundation cornerstone. In union with him the whole building, being harmoniously joined together, is growing into a holy temple for Jehovah."

1 Pet. 2:4-6 "Coming to him as to a living stone, rejected, it is true, by men, but chosen, precious, with God . . . For it is contained in Scripture: 'Look! I am laying in Zion a stone, chosen, a foundation cornerstone, precious; and no one exercising faith in it will by any means come to disappointment.'" (See also Isa. 28:16.)

Matthew 16:18 harmonious with this

Matt. 16:13-20 "Jesus went asking his disciples: 'Who are men saying the Son of man is?' They said: 'Some say John the Baptist, others Elijah, still others Jeremiah or one of the prophets.' He said to them: 'You, though, who do you say I am?' In answer Simon Peter said: 'You are the Christ, the Son of the living God.' In response Jesus said to him: 'Happy are you, Simon son of Jonah, because flesh and blood did not reveal it to you, but my Father who is in the heavens did. Also, I say to you, You are Peter [*petros*, meaning a piece of rock, a stone], and on this rock-mass [*petra*, meaning a mass of rock or a cliff] I will build my congregation, and the gates of Hades will not overpower it. I will give you the keys of the kingdom of the heavens, and whatever you may bind on earth will be the thing bound in the heavens, and whatever you may loose on earth will be the thing loosed in the heavens.' Then he sternly charged the disciples not to say to anybody that he was the Christ."

Peter himself understood Christ to be the Rock-mass

1 Pet. 2:4-8 "Coming to him as to a living stone, rejected, it is true, by men, but chosen, precious, with God, you yourselves also as living stones are being built up a spiritual house for the purpose of a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through Jesus Christ. For it is contained in Scripture: 'Look! I am laying in Zion a stone, chosen, a foundation cornerstone, precious; and no one exercising faith in it will by any means come to disappointment.' It is to you, therefore, that he is precious, because you are believers; but to those not believing, 'the identical stone that the builders rejected has become the head of the corner,' and 'a stone of stumbling and a rock-mass of offense.'"

Acts 4:8-11 "Then Peter, filled with holy spirit, said to them: 'Rulers of the people and older men, . . . let it be known to all of you and to all the people of Israel, that in the name of Jesus Christ the Nazarene, whom you impaled but whom God raised up from the dead, by this one does this man stand here sound in front of you. This is "the stone that was treated by you builders as of no account that has become the head of the corner."'"

Christ is alive, head of his congregation, needs no priestly successors

Heb. 7:23-25 "Furthermore, many had to become priests in succession because of being prevented by death from continuing as such, but he because of continuing alive forever has his priesthood without any successors. Consequently he is able also to save completely those who are approaching God through him, because he is always alive to plead for them."

Rom. 6:9 "We know that Christ, now that he has been raised up from the dead, dies no more; death is master over him no more."

Eph. 5:23 "A husband is head of his wife as the Christ also is head of the congregation."

Eph. 1:22, 23 "He also subjected all things under his feet, and made him head over all things to the congregation, which is his body, the fullness of him who fills up all things in all."

See also "Congregation of God," pages 113-116.

Scriptures Leave No Allowance for Successors to Faithful Apostles

Mark 3:14 "He formed a group of twelve, whom he also named 'apostles,' that they might continue with him and that he might send them out to preach."

Matt. 19:28 "Truly I say to you, In the re-creation, when the Son of man sits down upon his glorious throne, you who have followed me will also yourselves sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel."

Rev. 21:14 "The wall of the city also had twelve foundation stones, and on them the twelve names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb."

Gates of Hell (Hades) Do Not Prevail Against the Christian Congregation, Preventing the Resurrection of Its Members

Rev. 20:6 "Happy and holy is anyone having part in the first resurrection; over these the second death has no authority, but they will be priests of God and of the Christ, and will rule as kings with him for the thousand years."

1 Cor. 15:54, 55 "When this which is corruptible puts on incorruption and this which is mortal puts on immortality, then the saying will take place that is written: 'Death is swallowed up forever.' 'Death, where is your victory? Death, where is your sting?' "

1 Thess. 4:16 "The Lord himself will descend from heaven with a commanding call, with an archangel's voice and with God's trumpet, and those who are dead in union with Christ will rise first."

Christ, not Peter, holds keys of death and Hades, so that he can free people from grip of death

Rev. 1:18 "I became dead, but, look! I am living forever and ever, and I have the keys of death and of Hades." (See also vs. 1.)

John 11:25 "Jesus said to her: 'I am the resurrection and the life. He that exercises faith in me, even though he dies, will come to life.' "

John 6:40 "This is the will of my Father, that everyone that beholds the Son and exercises faith in him should have everlasting life, and I will resurrect him at the last day."

Keys of Kingdom

Matt. 16:19 "I will give you the keys of the kingdom of the heavens, and whatever you may bind on earth will be the thing bound in the heavens, and whatever you may loose on earth will be the thing loosed in the heavens."

Matt. 23:13 "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because you shut up the kingdom of the heavens before men; for you yourselves do not go in, neither do you permit those on their way in to go in."

Luke 11:52 "Woe to you who are versed in the Law, because you took away the key of knowledge; you yourselves did not go in, and those going in you hindered!"

Peter used keys to open up knowledge regarding God's provision of salvation through Christ for Jews and Gentiles, so affording opportunity to enter heavenly kingdom

Acts 2:14, 22-24, 36, 38, 39 "Peter stood up with the eleven and raised his voice and made this utterance to them: '. . . Men of Israel, hear these words: Jesus the Nazarene, a man publicly shown by God to you through powerful works and portents and signs that God did through him in your midst, just as you yourselves know, this man, as one delivered up by the determined counsel and foreknowledge of God, you fastened to a stake by the hand of lawless men and did away with. But God resurrected him by loosing the pangs of death, because it was not possible for him to continue to be held fast by it. Therefore let all the house of Israel know for a certainty that God made him both Lord and Christ, this Jesus whom you impaled.' Peter said to them: 'Repent, and let each one of you be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ for forgiveness of your sins, and you will receive the free gift of the holy spirit. For the promise is to you and to your children and to all those afar off, just as many as Jehovah our God may call to him."

Acts 10:24, 34-36, 42, 43 "On the day after that he entered into Caesarea. Cornelius, of course, was expecting them and had called together his relatives and intimate friends. At this Peter opened his mouth and said: 'For a certainty I perceive that God is not partial, but in every nation the man that fears him and works righteousness is acceptable to him. He sent out the word to the sons of Israel to declare to them the good news of peace through Jesus Christ: this One is Lord of all others. . . . he ordered us to preach to the people and to give a thorough witness that this is the One decreed by God to be judge of the living and the dead. To him all the prophets bear witness, that everyone putting faith in him gets forgiveness of sins through his name.' "

Acts 11:4, 17 "At this Peter commenced and went on to explain the particulars to them, saying: 'If, therefore, God gave the same free gift to them as he also did to us who have believed upon the Lord Jesus Christ, who was I that I should be able to hinder God?' "

Rom. 1:16 "I am not ashamed of the good news; it is, in fact, God's power for salvation to everyone having faith, to the Jew first and also to the Greek."

Acts 15:7 "Peter rose and said to them: 'Brothers, you well know that from early days God made the choice among you that through my mouth people of the nations should hear the word of the good news and believe.' "

Eph. 3:5, 6 "In other generations this secret was not made known to the sons of men as it has now been revealed to his holy apostles and prophets by spirit, namely, that people of the nations should be joint heirs and fellow members of the body and partakers with us of the promise in union with Christ Jesus through the good news."

God and Christ, not Peter, judge who is worthy to enter kingdom

2 Tim. 4:1 "I solemnly charge you before God and Christ Jesus, who is destined to judge the living and the dead, and by his manifestation and his kingdom."

Acts 10:34, 36, 42 "At this Peter opened his mouth and said: '. . . He sent out the word to the sons of Israel to declare to them the good news of peace through Jesus Christ: this One is Lord of all others. Also, he ordered us to preach to the people and to give a thorough witness that this is the One decreed by God to be judge of the living and the dead.' "

2 Tim. 4:8 "From this time on there is reserved for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, will give me as a reward in that day, yet not only to me, but also to all those who have loved his manifestation."

See also 1 Pet. 1:17-21.

None of apostles (not even Peter, the supposed "gatekeeper") were in heaven prior to Christ's second presence

John 13:36; 14:2, 3 "Simon Peter said to him: 'Lord, where are you going?' Jesus answered: 'Where I am going you cannot follow me now, but you will follow afterwards.' " "In the house of my Father there are many abodes. Otherwise, I would have told you, because I am going my way to prepare a place for you. Also, if I go my way and prepare a place for you, I am coming again and will receive you home to myself, that where I am you also may be."

1 Thess. 4:15, 16 "This is what we tell you by Jehovah's word, that we the living who survive to the presence of the Lord shall in no way precede those who have fallen asleep in death; because the Lord himself will descend from heaven with a commanding call, with an archangel's voice and with God's trumpet, and those who are dead in union with Christ will rise first."

1 Pet. 1:3-5 "Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, for according to his great

mercy he gave us a new birth to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, to an incorruptible and undefiled and unfading inheritance. It is reserved in the heavens for you, who are being safeguarded by God's power through faith for a salvation ready to be revealed in the last period of time."

2 Tim. 4:8 "From this time on there is reserved for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, will give me as a reward in that day, yet not only to me, but also to all those who have loved his manifestation."

Peter Did Not Rule over Christian Congregation; He Was Not Even the Presiding Member of the Governing Body

Acts 15:6, 13, 14, 19, 20 "The apostles and the older men gathered together to see about this affair. After they quit speaking, James answered, saying: 'Brothers, hear me. Symeon has related thoroughly how God for the first time turned his attention to the nations to take out of them a people for his name. Hence my decision is not to trouble those from the nations who are turning to God, but to write them to abstain from things polluted by idols and from fornication and from what is strangled and from blood.'"

Peter Refused to Let Others Do Obeisance to Him

Acts 10:25, 26 "As Peter entered, Cornelius met him, fell down at his feet and did obeisance to him. But Peter lifted him up, saying: 'Rise; I myself am also a man.'"

Peter Was Not Infallible

Gal. 2:11-14 "When Cephas came to Antioch, I resisted him face to face, because he stood condemned. For before the arrival of certain men from James, he used to eat with people of the nations; but when they arrived, he went withdrawing and separating himself, in fear of those of the circumcised class. The rest of the Jews also joined him in putting on this pretense. . . . But when I saw they were not walking straight according to the truth of the good news, I said to Cephas before them all: 'If you, though you are a Jew, live as the nations do, and not as Jews do, how is it that you are compelling people of the nations to live according to Jewish practice?'"

Luke 22:56-61 "A certain servant girl saw [Peter] sitting by the bright fire and looked him over and said: 'This man also was with him.' But he denied it, saying: 'I do not know him, woman.' And after a short time another person seeing him said: 'You also are one of them.' But Peter said: 'Man, I am not.' And after about an hour intervened a certain other man began insisting strongly: 'For a certainty this man also was with him; for, in fact, he is a Galilean!' But Peter said: 'Man, I do not know what you are saying.' And instantly, while he was yet speaking, a cock crowed. And the Lord turned and looked upon Peter, and Peter recalled the utterance of the Lord when he said to him: 'Before a cock crows today you will disown me three times.'"

Matt. 16:22, 23 "Peter took [Jesus] aside and commenced raising strong objections to him, saying: 'Be kind to yourself, Lord; you will not have this destiny at all.' But, turning his back, he said to Peter: 'Get behind me, Satan! You are a stumbling block to me, because you think, not God's thoughts, but those of men.'"

Preached Mainly to Jews and Wrote at Least One of His Letters from Babylon, Not Rome

Gal. 2:7-9 "When they saw that I had entrusted to me the good news for those who are uncircumcised, just as Peter had it for those who are circumcised —for He who gave Peter powers necessary for an apostleship to those who are circumcised gave powers also to me for those who are of the nations; yes, when they came to know the undeserved kindness that was given me, James and Cephas and John, the ones who seemed to be pillars, gave me and Barnabas the right hand of sharing together, that we should go to the nations, but they to those who are circumcised."

1 Pet. 5:13 "She who is in Babylon, a chosen one like you, sends you her greetings, and so does Mark my son."

Peter Was Married

1 Cor. 9:5 "We have authority to lead about a sister as a wife, even as the rest of the apostles and the Lord's brothers and Cephas, do we not?" (See also John 1:42.)

Matt. 8:14 "Jesus, on coming into Peter's house, saw his mother-in-law lying down and sick with fever."

Anointed Followers of Christ Rule as Kings and Priests from Heaven During Thousand Years, Yet Future; Not Ruling on Earth from Time of Pentecost

2 Tim. 4:18 "The Lord will deliver me from every wicked work and will save me for his heavenly kingdom."

Rev. 3:21 "To the one that conquers I will grant to sit down with me on my throne, even as I conquered and sat down with my Father on his throne."

Rev. 5:9, 10 "They sing a new song, saying: 'You are worthy to take the scroll and open its seals, because you were slaughtered and with your blood you bought persons for God out of every tribe and tongue and people and nation, and you made them to be a kingdom and priests to our God, and they will rule as kings over the earth.'"

Rev. 20:4 "I saw thrones, and there were those who sat down on them, and power of judging was given them. . . . And they came to life and ruled as kings with the Christ for a thousand years."

1 Cor. 4:8 "You men already have your fill, do you? You are rich already, are you? You have begun ruling as kings without us, have you?"

Armageddon

(OR HAR–MAGEDON)

Political Rulers and Supporters Aligned Against Jehovah and Christ by Demons

Rev. 16:14, 16 "They are, in fact, expressions inspired by demons and perform signs, and they go forth to the kings of the entire inhabited earth, to gather them together to the war of the great day of God the Almighty. And they gathered them together to the place that is called in Hebrew Har–Magedon."

Rev. 19:19 "I saw the wild beast and the kings of the earth and their armies gathered together to wage the war with the one seated on the horse and with his army."

See also Joel 3:9-12, 14.

Christians on Earth Have No Part in Slaying Work

2 Cor. 10:3, 4 "For though we walk in the flesh, we do not wage warfare according to what we are in the flesh. For the

weapons of our warfare are not fleshly, but powerful by God for overturning strongly entrenched things."

Rom. 12:19 "Do not avenge yourselves, beloved, but yield place to the wrath; for it is written: 'Vengeance is mine; I will repay, says Jehovah.'"

Eph. 6:12 "We have a fight, not against blood and flesh, but . . . against the wicked spirit forces in the heavenly places."

See also Isa. 63:1-4, 6.

War of Divine Execution

Jer. 25:31 "'A noise will certainly come clear to the farthest part of the earth, for there is a controversy that Jehovah has with the nations. He must personally put himself in judgment with all flesh. As regards the wicked ones, he must give them to the sword,' is the utterance of Jehovah."

2 Thess. 1:6-9 "This takes into account that it is righteous on God's part to repay tribulation to those who make tribulation for you, but, to you who suffer tribulation, relief along with us at the revelation of the Lord Jesus from heaven with his powerful angels in a flaming fire, as he brings vengeance upon those who do not know God and those who do not obey the good news about our Lord Jesus. These very ones will undergo the judicial punishment of everlasting destruction from before the Lord and from the glory of his strength."

Zeph. 3:8 "'Therefore keep yourselves in expectation of me,' is the utterance of Jehovah, 'till the day of my rising up to the booty, for my judicial decision is to gather nations, for me to collect together kingdoms, in order to pour out upon them my denunciation, all my burning anger; for by the fire of my zeal all the earth will be devoured.'"

Jude 14, 15 "The seventh man in line from Adam, Enoch, prophesied also regarding them, when he said: 'Look! Jehovah came with his holy myriads, to execute judgment against all, and to convict all the ungodly concerning all their ungodly deeds that they did in an ungodly way, and concerning all the shocking things that ungodly sinners spoke against him.'"

Rev. 6:15-17 "The kings of the earth and the top-ranking ones and the military commanders and the rich and the strong ones and every slave and every free person hid themselves in the caves and in the rock-masses of the mountains. And they keep saying to the mountains and to the rock-masses: 'Fall over us and hide us from the face of the one seated on the throne and from the wrath of the Lamb, because the great day of their wrath has come, and who is able to stand?'"

See also Isa. 66:15, 16; Ps. 2:8, 9; 110:5, 6; Ezek. 38:18-23; Rev. 19:11-21.

Description of Destruction

Rev. 14:19, 20 "The angel thrust his sickle into the earth and gathered the vine of the earth, and he hurled it into the great wine press of the anger of God. And the wine press was trodden outside the city, and blood came out of the wine press as high up as the bridles of the horses, for a distance of a thousand six hundred furlongs."

Jer. 25:30, 32, 33 "'From on high Jehovah himself will roar, and from his holy dwelling he will give forth his voice. Without fail he will roar upon his abiding place. A shout like that of those treading the wine press he will sing out against all the inhabitants of the earth.' This is what Jehovah of armies has said, 'Look! A calamity is going forth from nation to nation, and a great tempest itself will be roused up from the remotest parts of the earth. And those slain by Jehovah will certainly come to be in that day from one end of the earth clear to the other end of the earth. They will not be bewailed, neither will they be gathered up or be buried. As manure on the surface of the ground they will become.'"

Zech. 14:3, 12 "Jehovah will certainly go forth and war against those nations as in the day of his warring, in the day of fight. And this is what will prove to be the scourge with which Jehovah will scourge all the peoples that will actually do military service against Jerusalem: There will be a rotting away of one's flesh, while one is standing upon one's feet; and one's very eyes will rot away in their sockets, and one's very tongue will rot away in one's mouth."

Ezek. 38:18-22 "'It must occur in that day, in the day when Gog comes in upon the soil of Israel,' is the utterance of the Lord Jehovah, 'that my rage will come up into my nose. And in my ardor, in the fire of my fury, I shall have to speak. Surely in that day a great quaking will occur in the soil of Israel. And because of me the fish of the sea and the flying creatures of the heavens and the wild beasts of the field and all the creeping things that are creeping on the ground and all mankind that are upon the surface of the ground will be bound to shiver, and the mountains will actually be thrown down and the steep ways will have to fall, and to the earth even every wall will fall. And I will call forth against him throughout all my mountainous region a sword,' is the utterance of the Lord Jehovah. 'Against his own brother the sword of each one will come to be. And I will bring myself into judgment with him, with pestilence and with blood; and a flooding downpour and hailstones, fire and sulphur I shall rain down upon him and upon his bands and upon the many peoples that will be with him.'"

Zeph. 1:14-18 "The great day of Jehovah is near. It is near, and there is a hurrying of it very much. The sound of the day of Jehovah is bitter. There a mighty man is letting out a cry. That day is a day of fury, a day of distress and of anguish, a day of storm and of desolation, a day of darkness and of gloominess, a day of clouds and of thick gloom, a day of horn and of alarm signal, against the fortified cities and against the high corner towers. And I will cause distress to mankind, and they will certainly walk like blind men; because it is against Jehovah that they have sinned. And their blood will actually be poured out like dust, and their bowels like the dung. Neither their silver nor their gold will be able to deliver them in the day of Jehovah's fury; but by the fire of his zeal the whole earth will be devoured, because he will make an extermination, indeed a terrible one, of all the inhabitants of the earth."

Why Necessary

Magnify Jehovah's name, clear it of reproach

Ezek. 38:23 "I shall certainly magnify myself and sanctify myself and make myself known before the eyes of many nations; and they will have to know that I am Jehovah."

Ps. 74:10, 18 "How long, O God, will the adversary keep reproaching? Will the enemy keep treating your name with disrespect forever? Remember this: The enemy himself has reproached, O Jehovah, and a senseless people have treated your name with disrespect."

See also the main heading "Sanctification," pages 441, 442.

Prove Jehovah God righteous sovereign, with unquestionable right to rule

Ps. 83:17, 18 "O may they be ashamed and be disturbed for all times, and may they become

abashed and perish; that people may know that you, whose name is Jehovah, you alone are the Most High over all the earth."

Dan. 2:44 "In the days of those kings the God of heaven will set up a kingdom that will never be brought to ruin. And the kingdom itself will not be passed on to any other people. It will crush and put an end to all these kingdoms, and it itself will stand to times indefinite."

Rev. 11:17, 18 "We thank you, Jehovah God, the Almighty, the one who is and who was, because you have taken your great power and begun ruling as king. But the nations became wrathful, and your own wrath came, and the appointed time for the dead to be judged, and to give their reward to your slaves the prophets and to the holy ones and to those fearing your name, the small and the great, and to bring to ruin those ruining the earth."

Isa. 46:8-11 "Remember this, that you people may muster up courage. Lay it to heart, you transgressors. Remember the first things of a long time ago, that I am the Divine One and there is no other God, nor anyone like me; the One telling from the beginning the finale, and from long ago the things that have not been done; the One saying, 'My own counsel will stand, and everything that is my delight I shall do'; the One calling from the sunrising a bird of prey, from a distant land the man to execute my counsel. I have even spoken it; I shall also bring it in. I have formed it, I shall also do it."

Destroy entrenched political opposition to kingdom

Ps. 2:2, 5, 6, 9 "The kings of earth take their stand and high officials themselves have massed together as one against Jehovah and against his anointed one. At that time he will speak to them in his anger and in his hot displeasure he will disturb them, saying: 'I, even I, have installed my king upon Zion, my holy mountain.' You will break them with an iron scepter, as though a potter's vessel you will dash them to pieces."

Rev. 17:12-14 "The ten horns that you saw mean ten kings, who have not yet received a kingdom, but they do receive authority as kings one hour with the wild beast. These have one thought, and so they give their power and authority to the wild beast. These will battle with the Lamb, but, because he is Lord of lords and King of kings, the Lamb will conquer them. Also, those called and chosen and faithful with him will do so."

Rev. 19:11, 16, 19 "I saw the heaven opened, and, look! a white horse. And the one seated upon it is called Faithful and True, and he judges and carries on war in righteousness. And upon his outer garment, even upon his thigh, he has a name written, King of kings and Lord of lords. And I saw the wild beast and the kings of the earth and their armies gathered together to wage the war with the one seated on the horse and with his army."

Clear wickedness from earth to pave way for righteous new system of things

Ps. 37:10, 11 "Just a little while longer, and the wicked one will be no more; and you will certainly give attention to his place, and he will not be. But the meek ones themselves will possess the earth, and they will indeed find their exquisite delight in the abundance of peace."

Prov. 2:21, 22 "For the upright are the ones that will reside in the earth, and the blameless are the ones that will be left over in it. As regards the wicked, they will be cut off from the very earth; and as for the treacherous, they will be torn away from it."

Ps. 145:20 "Jehovah is guarding all those loving him, but all the wicked ones he will annihilate."

Isa. 11:1, 4 "There must go forth a twig out of the stump of Jesse; and out of his roots a sprout will be fruitful. And with righteousness he must judge the lowly ones, and with uprightness he must give reproof in behalf of the meek ones of the earth. And he must strike the earth with the rod of his mouth; and with the spirit of his lips he will put the wicked one to death."

See also the main heading "Wickedness," pages 492-497.

Love of God Not Violated by Destruction of Wicked

Ezek. 18:23 "'Do I take any delight at all in the death of someone wicked,' is the utterance of the Lord Jehovah, 'and not in that he should turn back from his ways and actually keep living?'"

Rom. 9:22 "God, although having the will to demonstrate his wrath and to make his power known, tolerated with much long-suffering vessels of wrath made fit for destruction."

2 Pet. 3:9 "Jehovah is not slow respecting his promise, as some people consider slowness, but he is patient with you because he does not desire any to be destroyed but desires all to attain to repentance."

Ps. 37:28 "Jehovah is a lover of justice, and he will not leave his loyal ones. To time indefinite they will certainly be guarded; but as for the offspring of the wicked ones, they will indeed be cut off."

Luke 18:7, 8 "Certainly, then, shall not God cause justice to be done for his chosen ones who cry out to him day and night, even though he is long-suffering toward them? I tell you, He will cause justice to be done to them speedily."

When Armageddon Will Come

Matt. 24:34-36, 43, 44 "Truly I say to you that this generation will by no means pass away until all these things occur. Heaven and earth will pass away, but my words will by no means pass away. Concerning that day and hour nobody knows, neither the angels of the heavens nor the Son, but only the Father. But know one thing, that if the householder had known in what watch the thief was coming, he would have kept awake and not allowed his house to be broken into. On this account you too prove yourselves ready, because at an hour that you do not think to be it, the Son of man is coming."

Comes Suddenly, Unexpectedly to Wicked

1 Thess. 5:2, 3 "For you yourselves know quite well that Jehovah's day is coming exactly as a thief in the night. Whenever it is that they are saying: 'Peace and security!' then sudden destruction is to be instantly upon them just as the pang of distress upon a pregnant woman; and they will by no means escape."

2 Pet. 3:10 "Jehovah's day will come as a thief, in which the heavens will pass away with a hissing noise, but the elements being intensely hot will be dissolved, and earth and the works in it will be discovered."

Luke 21:34, 35 "Pay attention to yourselves that your hearts never become weighed down with overeating and heavy drinking and anxieties of life, and suddenly that day be instantly upon you as a snare. For it will come in upon all those dwelling upon the face of all the earth."

Rev. 16:15 "Look! I am coming as a thief. Happy is the one that stays awake and keeps his outer garments, that he may not walk naked and people look upon his shamefulness."

Prov. 6:12-15 "A good-for-nothing man, a man of hurtfulness, is walking with crookedness of speech . . . That is why suddenly there will come his disaster; in

an instant he will be broken, and there will be no healing."

Follows Earth-wide Warning

Matt. 24:14 "This good news of the kingdom will be preached in all the inhabited earth for a witness to all the nations; and then the end will come."

How to Survive

Zeph. 2:2, 3 "Before the statute gives birth to anything, before the day has passed by just like chaff, before there comes upon you people the burning anger of Jehovah, before there comes upon you the day of Jehovah's anger, seek Jehovah, all you meek ones of the earth, who have practiced His own judicial decision. Seek righteousness, seek meekness. Probably you may be concealed in the day of Jehovah's anger."

Joel 2:32 "It must occur that everyone who calls on the name of Jehovah will get away safe; for in Mount Zion and in Jerusalem there will prove to be the escaped ones, just as Jehovah has said, and in among the survivors, whom Jehovah is calling."

Ps. 145:20 "Jehovah is guarding all those loving him, but all the wicked ones he will annihilate."

Ps. 2:11, 12 "Serve Jehovah with fear and be joyful with trembling. Kiss the son, that He may not become incensed and you may not perish from the way, for his anger flares up easily. Happy are all those taking refuge in him."

John 3:16 "God loved the world so much that he gave his only-begotten Son, in order that everyone exercising faith in him might not be destroyed but have everlasting life."

Rom. 5:9, 10 "Much more, therefore, since we have been declared righteous now by his blood, shall we be saved through him from wrath. For if, when we were enemies, we became reconciled to God through the death of his Son, much more, now that we have become reconciled, we shall be saved by his life."

Eccl. 7:12 "Wisdom is for a protection the same as money is for a protection; but the advantage of knowledge is that wisdom itself preserves alive its owners."

Rom. 10:10 "With the heart one exercises faith for righteousness, but with the mouth one makes public declaration for salvation."

Matt. 10:22 "You will be objects of hatred by all people on account of my name; but he that has endured to the end is the one that will be saved."

Associations

Union and Friendship with Father and Son

1 John 1:3 "That which we have seen and heard we are reporting also to you, that you too may be having a sharing with us. Furthermore, this sharing of ours is with the Father and with his Son Jesus Christ."

1 John 3:24 "Moreover, he who observes his commandments remains in union with him, and he in union with such one; and by this we gain the knowledge that he is remaining in union with us, owing to the spirit which he gave us."

John 15:15 "I have called you friends, because all the things I have heard from my Father I have made known to you."

Regular Fellowship with Other Christians Important

Heb. 10:24, 25 "Let us consider one another to incite to love and fine works, not forsaking the gathering of ourselves together, as some have the custom, but encouraging one another, and all the more so as you behold the day drawing near."

Prov. 13:20 "He that is walking with wise persons will become wise, but he that is having dealings with the stupid ones will fare badly."

Ps. 133:1 "Look! How good and how pleasant it is for brothers to dwell together in unity!"

1 Thess. 5:11 "Therefore keep comforting one another and building one another up, just as you are in fact doing."

Col. 3:16 "Keep on teaching and admonishing one another with psalms, praises to God, spiritual songs with graciousness, singing in your hearts to Jehovah."

Heb. 3:13 "Keep on exhorting one another each day, as long as it may be called 'Today.'"

Ps. 119:63 "A partner I am of all those who do fear you, and of those keeping your orders."

Acts 1:14 "With one accord all these were persisting in prayer, together with some women and Mary the mother of Jesus and his brothers."

See also the main heading "Celebrations," pages 66, 67.

Religious Association with False Worshipers to Be Shunned

2 Cor. 6:16, 17 "What agreement does God's temple have with idols? For we are a temple of a living God; just as God said: 'I shall reside among them and walk among them, and I shall be their God, and they will be my people.' 'Therefore get out from among them, and separate yourselves,' says Jehovah, 'and quit touching the unclean thing.'"

Rev. 18:4 "I heard another voice out of heaven say: 'Get out of her, my people, if you do not want to share with her in her sins, and if you do not want to receive part of her plagues.'"

2 Tim. 3:2, 5 "Men will be lovers of themselves, . . . having a form of godly devotion but proving false to its power; and from these turn away."

Ps. 106:35, 36 "They went mingling with the nations and took up learning their works. And they kept serving their idols, and these came to be a snare to them."

Num. 25:2, 3 "The women came calling the people to the sacrifices of their gods, and the people began to eat and to bow down to their gods. So Israel attached itself to the Baal of Peor; and the anger of Jehovah began to blaze against Israel."

See also the main heading "Interfaith," pages 257-263.

Marriage Alliances with Unbelievers, Those Who Are Not Dedicated Servants of Jehovah, Warned Against

Deut. 7:3, 4 "You must form no marriage alliance with them. Your daughter you must not give to his son, and his daughter you must not take for your son. For he will turn your son from following me, and they will certainly serve other gods; and Jehovah's anger will indeed blaze against you, and he will certainly annihilate you in a hurry."

Josh. 23:12, 13 "But if you should turn back at all and you do cleave to what is left of these nations, these that remain with you, and you do form marriage alliances with them and go in among them, and they among you, you should positively know that Jehovah your God will not continue to dispossess these nations on your account."

Judg. 3:5, 6, 8 "The sons of Israel dwelt in among the Canaanites, the Hittites and the Amorites and the Perizzites and the Hivites and the Jebusites. And they proceeded to take their daughters as wives for themselves, and their own daughters they gave to their sons, and they took up serving their gods. At this Jehovah's anger blazed against

Israel, so that he sold them into the hand of Cushan-rishathaim the king of Mesopotamia."

Ezra 9:14 "Shall we go breaking your commandments again and forming marriage alliances with the peoples of these detestable things? Will you not get incensed at us to the limit so that there will be none remaining and none escaping?"

Neh. 13:25, 26 "You should not give your daughters to their sons, and you should not accept any of their daughters for your sons or yourselves. Was it not because of these that Solomon the king of Israel sinned?" (See also 1 Ki. 11:1, 2.)

1 Cor. 7:39 "A wife is bound during all the time her husband is alive. But if her husband should fall asleep in death, she is free to be married to whom she wants, only in the Lord."

1 Cor. 9:5 "We have authority to lead about a sister as a wife."

Social Companionship with Worldly Persons Leads to Trouble

1 Cor. 15:33 "Do not be misled. Bad associations spoil useful habits."

Gen. 34:1, 2 "Now Dinah the daughter of Leah, whom she had borne to Jacob, used to go out to see the daughters of the land. And Shechem the son of Hamor the Hivite, a chieftain of the land, got to see her and then took her and lay down with her and violated her."

Eph. 5:7-11 "Therefore do not become partakers with them; . . . and quit sharing with them in the unfruitful works that belong to the darkness, but, rather, even be reproving them."

2 Cor. 6:14, 15 "What sharing do righteousness and lawlessness have? Or what fellowship does light have with darkness? . . . Or what portion does a faithful person have with an unbeliever?"

See also the main heading "Friendship with the World," pages 197-203.

No Association with Those Disfellowshiped from the Congregation

1 Cor. 5:11 "Now I am writing you to quit mixing in company with anyone called a brother that is a fornicator or a greedy person or an idolater or a reviler or a drunkard or an extortioner, not even eating with such a man."

Rom. 16:17 "Now I exhort you, brothers, to keep your eye on those who cause divisions and occasions for stumbling contrary to the teaching that you have learned, and avoid them."

Christians Are No Part of the World

John 15:19 "If you were part of the world, the world would be fond of what is its own. Now because you are no part of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, on this account the world hates you."

John 17:16 "They are no part of the world, just as I am no part of the world."

Jas. 4:4 "Adulteresses, do you not know that the friendship with the world is enmity with God? Whoever, therefore, wants to be a friend of the world is constituting himself an enemy of God."

Do not seek association with worldly people or share in their way of life

1 John 2:15-17 "Do not be loving either the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him; because everything in the world—the desire of the flesh and the desire of the eyes and the showy display of one's means of life—does not originate with the Father, but originates with the world. Furthermore, the world is passing away and so is its desire, but he that does the will of God remains forever."

1 Pet. 4:4, 5 "Because you do not continue running with them in this course to the same low sink of debauchery, they are puzzled and go on speaking abusively of you. But these people will render an account to the one ready to judge those living and those dead."

Eph. 4:17-20 "This, therefore, I say and bear witness to in the Lord, that you no longer go on walking just as the nations also walk in the unprofitableness of their minds, while they are in darkness mentally, and alienated from the life that belongs to God, because of the ignorance that is in them, because of the insensibility of their hearts. Having come to be past all moral sense, they gave themselves over to loose conduct to work uncleanness of every sort with greediness. But you did not learn the Christ to be so."

Eph. 5:11, 12 "Quit sharing with them in the unfruitful works that belong to the darkness, but, rather, even be reproving them, for the things that take place in secret by them it is shameful even to relate."

Ps. 119:115 "Get away from me, you evildoers, that I may observe the commandments of my God."

Impossible to Avoid All Contact with Unbelievers; Some Contact in Secular Work and in Preaching

1 Cor. 5:9, 10 "In my letter I wrote you to quit mixing in company with fornicators, not meaning entirely with the fornicators of this world or the greedy persons and extortioners or idolaters. Otherwise, you would actually have to get out of the world."

John 17:15, 16 "I request you, not to take them out of the world, but to watch over them because of the wicked one. They are no part of the world, just as I am no part of the world."

Matt. 28:19, 20 "Go therefore and make disciples of people of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the holy spirit, teaching them to observe all the things I have commanded you."

Babylon the Great

Lovers of Righteousness Warned to Get Out of Babylon the Great Before It Is Too Late

Rev. 18:2, 4 "He cried out with a strong voice, saying: 'She has fallen! Babylon the great has fallen' . . . And I heard another voice out of heaven say: 'Get out of her, my people, if you do not want to share with her in her sins, and if you do not want to receive part of her plagues.'"

IDENTIFYING BABYLON THE GREAT

Described Symbolically as Both a Harlot and a City

Rev. 17:1, 5, 18 "One of the seven angels that had the seven bowls came and spoke with me, saying: 'Come, I will show you the judgment upon the great harlot' . . . And upon her forehead was written a name, a mystery: 'Babylon the Great, the mother of the harlots and of the disgusting things of the earth.' 'And the woman whom you saw means the great city that has a kingdom over the kings of the earth.'"

Rev. 18:10 "They stand at a distance because of their fear of her torment and say, 'Too bad, too bad, you great city, Babylon you strong city, because in one hour your judgment has arrived!'"

Literal Babylon was no longer a great city when Revelation was written at end of first century C.E.

"The city was taken by the Persians under Cyrus the Great in 539 B.C. Later Alexander the Great planned to make Babylon the capital of his eastern empire, but after his death Babylon gradually lost importance."—*The Encyclopedia Americana* (New York; 1956), Vol. III, p. 7.

"Although the Persian kings made Babylon their residence, nothing was done for the restoration of the city; and Alexander the Great, who, on his entrance, in 331 B.C., had promised the inhabitants to rebuild the ruined temple, was unable even to clear away the rubbish, although he employed 10,000 workmen for two months. After his death in the palace of Nebuchadrezzar, and the foundation of Seleucia on the Tigris by Seleucus Nicator, Babylon went rapidly to decay."—*The New Funk & Wagnalls Encyclopedia* (New York; 1950), Vol. 3, p. 872.

"The foundation of Seleucia [in 312 B.C.E.] diverted the population [of Babylon] to the new capital of Babylonia and the ruins of the old city became a quarry for the builders of the new seat of government."—*The Encyclopædia Britannica* (New York; 1910), Vol. 3, p. 106.

Dan. 5:17-30 "Daniel was answering . . . : 'As for you, O king, the Most High God himself gave to Nebuchadnezzar your father the kingdom . . . And as for you, his son Belshazzar, you have not humbled your heart . . . Consequently . . . God has numbered the days of your kingdom and has finished it. . . . your kingdom has been divided and given to the Medes and the Persians.' . . . In that very night Belshazzar the Chaldean king was killed."

A city may be referred to in a spiritual sense, with reference to something more extensive than the original city but bearing marked similarities

Rev. 11:8 "Their corpses will be on the broad way of the great city which is in a spiritual sense called Sodom and Egypt, where their Lord was also impaled."

Does Not Refer to a Political System, Because Babylon the Great Is Said to Commit Fornication with the Political Rulers of Earth

Rev. 17:1, 2, 5 "The great harlot . . . with whom the kings of the earth committed fornication . . . And upon her forehead was written a name, a mystery: 'Babylon the Great.'"

Rev. 18:9 "The kings of the earth who committed fornication with her and lived in shameless luxury will weep and beat themselves in grief over her."

Does Not Refer to Commercial Systems, Because They Are Described as Weeping at Her Destruction

Rev. 18:11, 15, 16 "The traveling merchants of the earth are weeping and mourning over her, because there is no one to buy their full stock any more. The traveling merchants of these things, who became rich from her, will stand at a distance because of their fear of her torment and will weep and mourn, saying, 'Too bad, too bad—the great city, clothed with fine linen and purple and scarlet.'"

Ancient Babylon Was Outstandingly Noted for Its Religion, in Opposition to Worship of Jehovah, the True God

Gen. 10:8-10 "Cush became father to Nimrod. He made the start in becoming a mighty one in the earth. He displayed himself a mighty hunter in opposition to Jehovah. That is why there is a saying: 'Just like Nimrod a mighty hunter in opposition to Jehovah.' And the beginning of his kingdom came to be Babel [Babylon]."

Gen. 11:4-9 "They now said: 'Come on! Let us build ourselves a city and also a tower [a ziggurat, for religious worship] with its top in the heavens, and let us make a celebrated name for ourselves . . . And Jehovah proceeded to go down to see the city and the tower that the sons of men had built. After that Jehovah said: 'Look! They are one people and there is one language for them all, and this is what they start to do. . . . Come now! Let us go down and there confuse their language that they may not listen to one another's language.' Accordingly Jehovah scattered them from there over all the surface of the earth . . . That is why its name was called Babel [Babylon], because there Jehovah had confused the language of all the earth, and Jehovah had scattered them from there over all the surface of the earth."

Dan. 5:1, 4, 17, 22, 23 "Belshazzar the king . . . made a big feast for a thousand of his grandees . . . They drank wine, and they praised the gods of gold and of silver, copper, iron, wood and stone. . . . Daniel was answering and saying before the king: . . . 'And as for you, his son Belshazzar . . . you have praised mere gods of silver and of gold, copper, iron, wood and stone, that are beholding nothing or hearing nothing or knowing nothing; but the God in whose hand your breath is and to whom all your ways belong you have not glorified.'"

Jer. 51:6, 45, 47 "Flee out of the midst of Babylon, and provide escape each one for his own soul. Do not be rendered inanimate through her error. For it is the time of vengeance belonging to Jehovah. . . . Get out of the midst of her, O my people, and provide each one his soul with escape from the burning anger of Jehovah. . . . look! there are days coming, and I will turn my attention upon the graven images of Babylon."

Isa. 21:9 "She has fallen! Babylon has fallen, and all the graven images of her gods he has broken to the earth!"

Isa. 52:11 "Turn away, turn away, get out of there, touch nothing unclean; get out from the midst of her [Babylon], keep yourselves clean, you who are carrying the utensils of Jehovah."

"Advantageous as is Babylon's geographical position, other factors helped to make her a dominant city for a long period. Throughout the whole history of Mesopotamia, ancient as well as modern, religion has played an important part in giving prestige and power to a city. In Mesopotamia from the time of Hammurabi onwards the worship of Marduk was specially associated with Babylon. The priesthood acquired considerable power, and even the kings of Assyria found it politic to receive what was practically a coronation rite in Babylon."—*The Encyclopædia Britannica* (Chicago; 1946), Vol. 2, p. 841.

"Sumerian civilization [which embraced Babylon] was largely dominated by priests; at the head of the state was the *lugal* (literally 'great man'), the representative of the gods. Sumerian religion was polytheistic."—*The Encyclopedia Americana* (New York; 1956), Vol. III, p. 8.

"In the ancient world . . . Egypt, Persia, and Greece felt the influence of the Babylonian religion. . . . In Persia, the Mithra cult reveals the unmistakable influence of Babylonian conceptions; and if it be recalled what a degree of importance the mysteries connected with this cult acquired among the Romans, another link will be added connecting the ramifications of ancient culture with the civilization of the Euphrates Valley. The

strong admixture of Semitic elements both in early Greek mythology and in Grecian cults is now so generally admitted by scholars as to require no further comment. These Semitic elements are to a large extent more specifically Babylonian."—*Religion of Babylonia and Assyria* (Boston; 1898), Morris Jastrow, Jr., pp. 699, 700.

"The researches of modern writers . . . uniformly regard Babylon and Assyria as the cradle of the ancient Paganism."—*The Worship of the Dead* (London; 1904), Colonel J. Garnier, p. 8.

"It was from Babylonia that the Assyrians had brought their religion . . . Their gods were the gods of Babylonia."—*The Races of the Old Testament* (London; 1891), A. H. Sayce, p. 60.

"By the side of their depravity, the Babylonians were the most religious people of antiquity."—*Nebuchadnezzar* (London; 1931), G. R. Tabouis, p. 364, based on *La Religion assyro-babylonienne* (Paris; 1910), Paul Dhorme, pp. 220 ff.

Cuneiform inscription: "Altogether there are in Babylon 53 temples of the chief gods, 55 chapels of Marduk, 300 chapels for the earthly deities, 600 for the heavenly deities, 180 altars for the goddess Ishtar, 180 for the gods Nergal and Adad and 12 other altars for different gods."—*The Bible As History* (New York; 1956), Werner Keller, p. 299.

Babylon the Great Said to Be Drunk with Blood of Servants of God, Responsible for Their Death

Rev. 17:6 "I saw that the woman was drunk with the blood of the holy ones and with the blood of the witnesses of Jesus."

Rev. 18:24 "Yes, in her was found the blood of prophets and of holy ones and of all those who have been slaughtered on the earth."

Jesus Christ said that false religious leaders bore that responsibility

Matt. 23:29, 34, 35 "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! . . . here I am sending forth to you prophets and wise men and public instructors. Some of them you will kill and impale, and some of them you will scourge in your synagogues and persecute from city to city; that there may come upon you all the righteous blood spilled on earth, from the blood of righteous Abel to the blood of Zechariah son of Barachiah, whom you murdered between the sanctuary and the altar."

Described as a Harlot That Commits Fornication with Political Rulers

Rev. 17:1, 2 "One of the seven angels that had the seven bowls came and spoke with me, saying: 'Come, I will show you the judgment upon the great harlot who sits on many waters, with whom the kings of the earth committed fornication, whereas those who inhabit the earth were made drunk with the wine of her fornication.'"

Involvement in worldly affairs by those who profess to serve God is religious fornication

Jas. 4:4 "Adulteresses, do you not know that the friendship with the world is enmity with God? Whoever, therefore, wants to be a friend of the world is constituting himself an enemy of God."

Ezek. 16:2, 28, 29 "Son of man, make known to Jerusalem her detestable things. 'And you went on to prostitute yourself to the sons of Assyria because there was no satisfying of you, and you kept prostituting yourself with them and also did not get satisfaction. So you kept making your prostitution abound toward the land of Canaan, toward the Chaldeans; and even in this you did not get satisfaction.'"

Babylon the Great Is Described as Being Lavishly Attired, Living in "Shameless Luxury," While the People Suffer Under Her Domination; This Is Characteristic of Most False Religion

Rev. 18:7, 16 "To the extent that she glorified herself and lived in shameless luxury, to that extent give her torment and mourning. For in her heart she keeps saying, 'I sit a queen, and I am no widow.' . . . 'the great city, clothed with fine linen and purple and scarlet, and richly adorned with gold ornament and precious stone and pearl.'"

Rev. 17:2, 4 "'Those who inhabit the earth were made drunk with the wine of her fornication.' And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet, and was adorned with gold and precious stone and pearls and had in her hand a golden cup."

Ancient Babylonian Religious Concepts and Practices Are Found in Religious Systems That Are Part of Babylon the Great

"The distinction between priest and layman is characteristic of this [Babylonian] religion."—*The Encyclopædia Britannica* (Chicago; 1946), Vol. 2, p. 861.

"The triad [trinity] of divinities Sin, Shamash, and Ishtar, is reckoned in the Pan-Babylonian theory as a family, the children of Anu, the Father of the gods, or of Ellil, the Ruler of the Zodiac."—*Israel and Babylon* (London; 1925), W. Lansdell Wardle, p. 324.

"Church and State [in ancient Babylon] were so inextricably mingled that while the State has to be regarded as a theocracy the Church must in part at least be judged as a political institution and the state religion as a political instrument."—*The Sumerians* (Oxford; 1929), C. Leonard Woolley, p. 129.

"After death the souls of men were supposed to continue in existence. It can hardly be called life. The place to which they have gone is called the 'land of no return.' There they lived in dark rooms amid the dust and the bats covered with a garment of feathers, and under the dominion of Nergal and Ereshkigal. When the soul arrived among the dead he had to pass judgment before the judges of the dead."—*The International Standard Bible Encyclopaedia* (Grand Rapids, Mich.; 1960), Vol. I, p. 373.

Jer. 50:35, 38 "Babylon . . . is a land of graven images."

"Once I saw the silver image, larger than life, of the Virgin Mary laden with rings, precious stones, gold, and silver as votive offerings, being carried by fourteen men on a litter out through the portal of the Syracuse Cathedral. It seemed to float high over the heads of the teeming throng as it was brought forth, to the accompaniment of ecstatic music and the crowd's stormy prayers, into the Gardens of the Stonecutters. A procession in honor of Marduk, I think, must have looked the same when the god was carried in triumph out of E-sagila, perhaps through the peribolos (enclosed court) and along the great Procession Street [of Babylon]."—Archaeologist Robert Koldewey, leader in excavation of the ruins of Babylon (1898-1917), as quoted in *Gods, Graves, and Scholars* (New York; 1954), C. W. Ceram, pp. 296, 297.

Isa. 47:1, 12-14 "O virgin daughter of Babylon . . . Stand still, now, with your spells and with the abundance of your sorceries, in which you have toiled from your youth . . . Let them stand up, now, and save you, the worshipers of the heavens, the lookers at the stars, those giving out knowledge at the new moons concerning the things that will come upon you. Look! They have become like stubble."

"The Chaldeans made great progress in the study of astronomy through an effort to discover the future in the stars. This

art we call 'astrology.' . . . The groups of stars which now bear the name 'Twelve Signs of the Zodiac' were mapped out for the first time, and the planets Mercury, Venus, Mars, Jupiter, and Saturn were known. Since these planets were thought to have special powers over the lives of men, they were named for the five leading gods and goddesses. We refer to these planets by their Roman names, but the Romans had adopted the Babylonian terms and simply translated them into their equivalents in Rome. Thus the planet of Ishtar, the goddess of love, became Venus, and that of the god Marduk was changed to Jupiter."—*The Dawn of Civilization and Life in the Ancient East* (Chicago; 1938), Robert M. Engberg and Fay-Cooper Cole, pp. 230-232.

Ezek. 21:21 "The king of Babylon stood still at the crossways, at the head of the two ways, in order to resort to divination."

"The deities and mythological figures on Etruscan gold-work and jewellery of the 7th century are evidently the heroes and deities of Asiatic mythology. . . . In the sphere of ritual and religion there are many details which are taken direct from Mesopotamia, and the whole feeling and atmosphere are purely oriental. The most striking identities are in the practices of divination and augury; for the custom of divining from the livers of sheep or the flight of birds is purely Chaldaean."—*The Encyclopædia Britannica* (Chicago; 1946), Vol. 8, p. 786.

See also the main headings "Cross," pages 139-141, and "Religion," pages 417-420.

Babylon the Great Is a Globe-girdling Kingdom or Empire

Exercises influence, not merely on a national scale, but on many political rulers

Rev. 17:18 "The woman whom you saw means the great city that has a kingdom over the kings of the earth."

Dominates the masses of people in many lands

Rev. 17:1, 15 "One of the seven angels . . . spoke with me, saying: 'Come, I will show you the judgment upon the great harlot who sits on many waters.' And he says to me: 'The waters that you saw, where the harlot is sitting, mean peoples and crowds and nations and tongues.'"

FALL AND DESTRUCTION

Fall of Ancient Babylon to Medes and Persians Did Not Bring Immediate Desolation, but Led to Early Release of Worshipers of Jehovah Who Were Captives

"Military conquest affected the fortunes of Babylon at many critical stages in its history. It is all the more remarkable, therefore, that its capitulation to Cyrus in 539 B.C. should be designated 'The Fall of Babylon,' as if no other like event had occurred in the city's history. Even the submission of Babylon to Alexander [the Great] in 331 B.C. pales in importance when compared with the disaster which brought the Neo-Babylonian empire to a close."—*Nabonidus and Belshazzar* (Yale Oriental Series, Researches, Vol. XV, New Haven; 1929), Raymond P. Dougherty, p. 167.

"After the overthrow of Babylonia by the Persians, Cyrus gave the Jews permission to return to their native land (537 B.C.), and more than forty thousand are said to have availed themselves of the privilege."—*The Encyclopædia Britannica* (New York; 1910), Vol. III, p. 115.

Isa. 48:20 "Go forth, you people, out of Babylon! Run away from the Chaldeans. Tell forth even with the sound of a joyful cry, cause this to be heard. Make it to go forth to the extremity of the earth. Say: 'Jehovah has repurchased his servant Jacob.'"

Ezra 1:1-4 "In the first year of Cyrus the king of Persia . . . Jehovah roused the spirit of Cyrus the king of Persia so that he caused a cry to pass through all his realm, and also in writing, saying: 'This is what Cyrus the king of Persia has said, "All the kingdoms of the earth Jehovah the God of the heavens has given me, and he himself has commissioned me to build him a house in Jerusalem, which is in Judah. Whoever there is among you of all his people, may his God prove to be with him. So let him go up to Jerusalem . . . As for anyone that is left from all the places where he is residing as an alien, let the men of his place assist him with silver and with gold."'"

Announcement of Fall of Babylon the Great Is Accompanied by Command to God's People to Get Out of Her

Rev. 18:2-4 "He cried out with a strong voice, saying: 'She has fallen! Babylon the great has fallen, and she has become a dwelling place of demons and a lurking place of every unclean exhalation and a lurking place of every unclean and hated bird! For because of the passion-arousing wine of her fornication all the nations have fallen victim, and the kings of the earth committed fornication with her, and the traveling merchants of the earth became rich due to the power of her shameless luxury.' And I heard another voice out of heaven say: 'Get out of her, my people, if you do not want to share with her in her sins, and if you do not want to receive part of her plagues.'"

Description of Complete Destruction of Babylon the Great

Rev. 18:8 "In one day her plagues will come, death and mourning and famine, and she will be completely burned with fire, because Jehovah God, who judged her, is strong."

Rev. 17:16, 17 "The ten horns that you saw, and the wild beast, these will hate the harlot and will make her devastated and naked, and will eat up her fleshy parts and will completely burn her with fire. For God put it into their hearts to carry out his thought, even to carry out their one thought by giving their kingdom to the wild beast, until the words of God will have been accomplished."

Rev. 18:21 "A strong angel lifted up a stone like a great millstone and hurled it into the sea, saying: 'Thus with a swift pitch will Babylon the great city be hurled down, and she will never be found again.'" (See also Jer. 51:63, 64.)

Baptism

A Necessary Step of Obedience for All Who 'Follow Jesus' Steps Closely'

Matt. 3:13-17 "Then Jesus came from Galilee to the Jordan to John, in order to be baptized by him. . . . Jesus said to him: 'Let it be, this time, for in that way it is suitable for us to carry out all that is righteous.' . . . After being baptized Jesus immediately came up from the water . . . [illegible] Also, there was a voice from the heavens that said: 'This is my Son, the beloved, whom I have approved.'"

1 Pet. 2:21 "In fact, to this course you were called, because even Christ suffered for you, leaving you a model for you to follow his steps closely."

Matt. 28:19, 20 "Go therefore and make disciples of people of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the holy spirit, teaching them to observe all the things I have commanded you."

Acts 10:48 "He commanded them to be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ."

Acts 8:12 "But when they believed Philip, who was declaring the good news of the kingdom of God and of the name of Jesus Christ, they proceeded to be baptized, both men and women."

Complete Immersion, Not Sprinkling

(From Greek *baptizein*, "to dip, submerge, immerse")

Mark 1:9, 10 "Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee and was baptized in the Jordan [River] by John. And immediately on coming up out of the water he saw the heavens being parted."

John 3:23 "John also was baptizing in Aenon near Salim, because there was a great quantity of water there, and people kept coming and being baptized."

Acts 8:36, 38, 39 "Now as they were going over the road, they came to a certain body of water, and the eunuch said: 'Look! A body of water; what prevents me from getting baptized?' . . . they both went down into the water, . . . and he baptized him. When they had come up out of the water, . . . he kept going on his way."

Baptism a Symbol of One's Believing, Deciding for God's Word and the Provisions and Responsibilities That It Sets Out

Matt. 28:19, 20 "Make disciples of people of all the nations, baptizing them . . . , teaching them."

Acts 2:41 "Those who embraced his word heartily were baptized."

Acts 8:12 "When they believed Philip, who was declaring the good news of the kingdom of God and of the name of Jesus Christ, they proceeded to be baptized."

Acts 18:8 "Many of the Corinthians that heard began to believe and be baptized."

To Qualify for Baptism, One's Life Must Harmonize with Bible's Standard of Morality

Acts 2:38 "Repent, and let each one of you be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ for forgiveness of your sins."

Eph. 4:22-24 "Put away the old personality which conforms to your former course of conduct and which is being corrupted according to his deceptive desires; . . . be made new in the force actuating your mind, . . . put on the new personality which was created according to God's will in true righteousness and loyalty."

Col. 3:5-10 "Deaden, therefore, your body members that are upon the earth as respects fornication, uncleanness, sexual appetite, hurtful desire, and covetousness, which is idolatry. . . . Strip off the old personality with its practices, and clothe yourselves with the new personality, which through accurate knowledge is being made new according to the image of the One who created it."

Baptism Does Not Wash Away One's Sins

Heb. 9:22 "Unless blood is poured out no forgiveness takes place."

1 Pet. 2:22 "He [Jesus] committed no sin, nor was deception found in his mouth."

Mark 1:9 "Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee and was baptized in the Jordan by John."

John 1:29 "The next day he [John the Baptist] beheld Jesus coming toward him, and he said: 'See, the Lamb of God that takes away the sin of the world!' "

1 Pet. 2:24 "He [Jesus] himself bore our sins in his own body upon the stake, in order that we might be done with sins and live to righteousness."

Acts 22:16 "Rise, get baptized and wash your sins away by your calling upon his name." (See also Acts 2:21.)

Infant Baptism Unscriptural

Matt. 28:19, 20 "Go therefore and make disciples of people . . . baptizing them . . . , teaching them."

Acts 2:41 "Those who embraced his word heartily were baptized."

Acts 8:12 "When they believed Philip, . . . they proceeded to be baptized, both men and women."

Luke 3:21, 23 "Now when all the people were baptized, Jesus also was baptized . . . Furthermore, Jesus himself, when he commenced his work, was about thirty years old."

In the Name (Recognizing the Office, Authority) of the Father

Matt. 28:19 "Go therefore and make disciples of people of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father."

Ps. 83:18 "You, whose name is Jehovah, you alone are the Most High over all the earth."

2 Ki. 19:15 "O Jehovah . . . you alone are the true God of all the kingdoms of the earth. You yourself have made the heavens and the earth."

Ps. 36:9 "For with you is the source of life."

Isa. 33:22 "For Jehovah is our Judge, Jehovah is our Statute-giver, Jehovah is our King; he himself will save us."

See also the main heading "Jehovah," pages 264-269.

In the Name (Recognizing the Office, Authority) of the Son

Matt. 28:19 "Go therefore and make disciples of people of all the nations, baptizing them in the name . . . of the Son."

Phil. 2:9-11 "God exalted him to a superior position and kindly gave him the name that is above every other name, so that in the name of Jesus every knee should bend of those in heaven and those on earth and those under the ground, and every tongue should openly acknowledge that Jesus Christ is Lord to the glory of God the Father."

Rev. 19:16 "He has a name written, King of kings and Lord of lords."

Rev. 1:5 "Jesus Christ, the 'Faithful Witness,' 'The firstborn from the dead,' and 'The Ruler of the kings of the earth.' "

Heb. 5:9, 10 "He became responsible for everlasting salvation to all those obeying him, because he has been specifically called by God a high priest according to the manner of Melchizedek."

1 Tim. 2:5 "There is one God, and one mediator between God and men, a man Christ Jesus."

See also the main heading "Jesus Christ," pages 282-288.

In the Name (Recognizing the Function, Activity) of the Holy Spirit

Matt. 28:19 "Go therefore and make disciples of people of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of . . . the holy spirit."

John 14:16, 17 "I will request the Father and he will give you another helper to be with you forever, the spirit of the truth."

Eph. 6:17 "Accept . . . the sword of the spirit, that is, God's word."

2 Pet. 1:21 "Prophecy was at no time brought by man's will, but men spoke from God as they were borne along by holy spirit."

1 Cor. 2:10 "For it is to us God has revealed them through his spirit, for the spirit searches into all things, even the deep things of God."

Joel 2:28, 29 "I shall pour out my spirit on every sort of flesh, and your sons and your daughters will certainly prophesy. As for your old men, dreams they will

dream. As for your young men, visions they will see. And even on the menservants and on the maidservants in those days I shall pour out my spirit."

Gal. 5:22, 23 "The fruitage of the spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, kindness, goodness, faith, mildness, self-control."

Baptized One Must Stay Close to Christian Congregation, Be an *Active Praiser of God*, Continue to Walk in Footsteps of Jesus Christ

Acts 2:41-47 "Those who embraced his word heartily were baptized . . . And they continued devoting themselves to the teaching of the apostles and to sharing with one another . . . And day after day they were in constant attendance at *the temple with one accord, . . . praising God and* finding favor with all the people. At the same time Jehovah continued to join to them daily those being saved."

Acts 9:18-22 "He rose and was baptized, and he took food and gained strength. He got to be for some days with the disciples in Damascus, and *immediately in the synagogues he began to* preach Jesus, that this One is the Son of God. . . . Saul kept on acquiring power all the more and was confounding the Jews that dwelt in Damascus as he proved logically that this is the Christ."

Eph. 4:5 "One Lord, one faith, one baptism."

See also the main headings "Conduct of Christians," pages 98-108, "Organization," pages 362-366, and "Preaching the Good News," pages 384-390.

Rebaptism in Order When There Is Conviction that One Did Not Properly Understand Jehovah's *Provision for Approach to Him or Was Not in Acceptable Condition* to Become His Servant at Time of Former Baptism

Acts 19:3-5 "He said: 'In what, then, were you baptized?' They said: 'In John's baptism.' Paul said: 'John baptized with the *baptism in symbol of repentance, telling the people to believe in* the one coming after him, that is, in Jesus.' On hearing this, they got baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus."

Ps. 24:3-5 "Who may ascend into the mountain of Jehovah, and who may rise up in his holy place? Anyone innocent in his hands and clean in heart, who has not carried My soul to sheer worthlessness, nor taken an oath deceitfully. He will carry away blessing from Jehovah and righteousness from his God of salvation."

John the Baptist Was Commissioned by Jehovah to Do *Baptizing*

John 1:32, 33 "John also bore witness, saying: '. . . the very One who sent me to baptize in water said to me, "Whoever it is upon whom you see the spirit coming down and remaining, this is the one that baptizes in holy spirit." ' "

Baptized only Jews and proselytes to Jews' religion

Acts 13:24 "John . . . preached publicly to all the people of Israel the baptism of those repenting."

Luke 1:16, 17 "Many of the sons of Israel will he turn back to Jehovah their God. Also, he will go before him with Elijah's spirit and power, to turn back the hearts of fathers to children and the disobedient ones to the practical wisdom of righteous ones, to get ready for Jehovah a prepared people." (See also Mal. 4:5, 6; Matt. 17:12, 13.)

See also Ex. 12:48.

Symbol of repentance for sins against law covenant, and a preparing of them for Christ

Acts 19:4 "John baptized with the baptism in symbol of repentance, telling the people to believe in the one coming after him, that is, in Jesus."

Matt. 3:11 "I . . . baptize you with water because of your repentance; but the one coming after me is stronger than I am, whose sandals I am not fit to take off."

Acts 13:23-25 "From the offspring of this man according to his promise God has brought *to Israel a savior, Jesus, after* John, in advance of the entry of that One, had preached publicly to all the people of Israel the baptism of those repenting. But as John was fulfilling his course, he would say, 'What do you suppose I am? I am not he. But, look! one is coming after me the sandals of whose feet *I am not worthy to untie.*' "

See also the main heading "Law," pages 313-318.

Valid performance of "John's baptism" did not continue indefinitely

John 3:26, 27, 30 "They came to John and said to him: 'Rabbi, the man *[Jesus]* that was with you across the Jordan, to whom you have borne witness, see, this one is baptizing and all are going to him.' In answer John said: ' . . . That one must go on increasing, but I must go on decreasing.' "

Acts 19:2-5 "[Paul] said to *them: 'Did you receive holy spirit* when you became believers?' They said to him: 'Why, we have never heard whether there is a holy spirit.' And he said: 'In what, then, were you baptized?' They said: 'In John's baptism.' Paul said: 'John baptized with the baptism in symbol of repentance, *telling the people to believe* in the one coming after him, that is, in Jesus.' On hearing this, they got baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus."

Those Who Submitted to Moses as One Designated by God *to Lead Them Experienced* a Baptism, Figuratively Speaking; a Like Baptism Applies to Those Who Submit to Christ

Ex. 14:21, 22 "Moses now stretched his hand out over the sea; and Jehovah began making the sea go back by a strong east wind all night long . . . and the waters were being split apart. At length the sons of Israel went through the midst of the sea on dry land, while the waters were a wall to them on their right hand and on their left."

1 Cor. 10:1, 2 "Our forefathers were all under the cloud and all passed through the sea and all got baptized into Moses by means of the cloud and of the sea."

Spirit Baptism into Body of Christ for "Little Flock" of 144,000 Puts Them in Line for Heavenly Kingdom

1 Cor. 12:13, 27 "For truly by one spirit we were all baptized into one body, whether Jews or Greeks, whether slaves or free, and we were all made to drink *one spirit. Now you are Christ's* body."

Gal. 3:27, 28 "For all of you who were baptized into Christ have put on Christ. . . . for you are all one person in union with Christ Jesus."

Acts 1:4, 5 "Keep waiting for what the Father has promised . . . because John, indeed, baptized *with water, but you will be* baptized in holy spirit."

Rev. 14:1, 4 "And I saw, and, look! the Lamb standing upon the Mount Zion, and with him a hundred and forty-four thousand having his name and the name of his Father written on their foreheads. . . . These are the ones that keep following the *Lamb no matter where he goes.* These were bought from among mankind as a first fruits to God and to the Lamb."

John 3:5 "Unless anyone is born from water and spirit, he

cannot enter into the kingdom of God."

Spirit not direct from God, but through Christ

Acts 2:32, 33 "This Jesus God resurrected, of which fact we are all witnesses. Therefore because he was exalted to the right hand of God and received the promised holy spirit from the Father, he has poured out this which you see and hear."

John 15:26 "When the helper arrives that I will send you from the Father, the spirit of the truth, which proceeds from the Father, that one will bear witness about me."

Baptism into Death for Christ and 144,000 Joint Heirs, Followed by Resurrection

Rom. 6:3-5, 8 "Do you not know that all of us who were baptized into Christ Jesus were baptized into his death? Therefore we were buried with him through our baptism into his death, in order that, just as Christ was raised up from the dead through the glory of the Father, we also should likewise walk in a newness of life. For if we have become united with him in the likeness of his death, we shall certainly also be united with him in the likeness of his resurrection . . . Moreover, if we have died with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him."

Col. 2:12 "You were buried with him in his baptism, and by relationship with him you were also raised up together through your faith in the operation of God, who raised him up from the dead."

Phil. 3:10, 11 "So as to know him and the power of his resurrection and a sharing in his sufferings, submitting myself to a death like his, to see if I may by any means attain to the earlier resurrection from the dead."

1 Cor. 15:29 "What will they do who are being baptized for the purpose of being dead ones? If the dead are not to be raised up at all, why are they also being baptized for the purpose of being such?"

2 Tim. 2:11, 12 "Certainly if we died together, we shall also live together; if we go on enduring, we shall also rule together as kings."

Rom. 8:17 "We are also heirs: heirs indeed of God, but joint heirs with Christ, provided we suffer together that we may also be glorified together."

Baptism with Fire Means Destruction for God's Enemies

Luke 3:16 "He will baptize you people with . . . fire."

Luke 17:29, 30 "On the day that Lot came out of Sodom it rained fire and sulphur from heaven and destroyed them all. The same way it will be on that day when the Son of man is to be revealed."

Matt. 13:49, 50 "That is how it will be in the conclusion of the system of things: the angels will go out and separate the wicked from among the righteous and will cast them into the fiery furnace."

Not the same as baptism with holy spirit

Acts 1:5 "John, indeed, baptized with water, but you will be baptized in holy spirit not many days after this."

Acts 2:1-4 "Now while the day of the festival of Pentecost was in progress they were all together at the same place, and suddenly there occurred from heaven a noise just like that of a rushing stiff breeze, and it filled the whole house in which they were sitting. And tongues as if of fire became visible to them . . . and they all became filled with holy spirit and started to speak with different tongues, just as the spirit was granting them to make utterance." (See also Joel 2:28, 29.)

Bible

The Word of Jehovah God

Ex. 20:1 "God proceeded to speak all these words."

Isa. 7:7 "This is what the Lord Jehovah has said."

Jer. 1:9 "Jehovah thrust his hand out and caused it to touch my mouth. Then Jehovah said to me: 'Here I have put my words in your mouth.' "

John 14:10 "The things I say to you men I do not speak of my own originality; but the Father who remains in union with me is doing his works." (See also John 8:28.)

Eph. 6:17 "Accept . . . the sword of the spirit, that is, God's word."

Inspired by God, Not of Human Origination

2 Tim. 3:16, 17 "All Scripture is inspired of God and beneficial for teaching, for reproving, for setting things straight, for disciplining in righteousness, that the man of God may be fully competent, completely equipped for every good work."

1 Thess. 2:13 "That is why we also thank God incessantly, because when you received God's word, which you heard from us, you accepted it, not as the word of men, but, just as it truthfully is, as the word of God."

Men were moved by God's spirit to write

2 Pet. 1:20, 21 "No prophecy of Scripture springs from any private interpretation. For prophecy was at no time brought by man's will, but men spoke from God as they were borne along by holy spirit."

2 Sam. 23:1, 2 "And these are the last words of David: . . . The spirit of Jehovah it was that spoke by me, and his word was upon my tongue."

Acts 1:16 "It was necessary for the scripture to be fulfilled, which the holy spirit spoke beforehand by David's mouth."

Acts 28:25 "Paul made this one comment: 'The holy spirit aptly spoke through Isaiah the prophet to your forefathers.' "

Acts 3:21 "God spoke through the mouth of his holy prophets of old time."

Means of inspiration

Num. 12:8 "Mouth to mouth I speak to him [Moses], thus showing him."

Ezek. 1:3 "The word of Jehovah occurred specifically to Ezekiel . . . and upon him in that place the hand of Jehovah came to be."

Hab. 2:2 "Jehovah proceeded to answer me and to say: 'Write down the vision, and set it out plainly upon tablets.' "

Dan. 7:1, 2, 7 "Daniel himself beheld a dream and visions of his head upon his bed. At that time he wrote down the dream itself. The complete account of the matters he told. Daniel was speaking up and saying: 'I happened to be beholding in my visions during the night . . . After this I kept on beholding in the visions of the night.' "

Prophecy Proves the Bible to Be of Divine Origin

2 Pet. 1:21 "Prophecy was at no time brought by man's will, but men spoke from God as they were borne along by holy spirit."

Isa. 46:9, 10 "I am the Divine One . . . the One telling from the beginning the finale, and from long ago the things that have not been done."

Deut. 18:22 "When the prophet speaks in the name of Jehovah and the word does not occur or come true, that is the word that Jehovah did not speak."

John 14:29 "So now I have told you before it occurs, in order that, when it does occur, you may believe."

See also the main heading "Prophecy," pages 394-402.

Truthfulness of Record Shown by Candor of Writers

Num. 20:12 "Later Jehovah said to Moses and Aaron: 'Because you did not show faith in me to sanctify me before the eyes of the sons of Israel, therefore you will not bring this congregation into the land that I shall certainly give them.'"

1 Ki. 11:9 "Jehovah came to be incensed at Solomon, because his heart had inclined away from Jehovah the God of Israel, the one appearing to him twice."

Jonah 1:1-3 "And the word of Jehovah began to occur to Jonah the son of Amittai, saying: 'Get up, go to Nineveh the great city, and proclaim against her that their badness has come up before me.' And Jonah proceeded to get up and run away to Tarshish from before Jehovah."

Mark 14:66, 67, 71, 72 "Now while Peter was below in the courtyard, one of the servant girls of the high priest came, and, seeing Peter warming himself, she looked straight at him and said: 'You, too, were with the Nazarene, this Jesus.' But he commenced to curse and swear: 'I do not know this man of whom you speak.' And immediately a cock crowed a second time; and Peter recalled the saying that Jesus spoke to him: 'Before a cock crows twice, you will disown me three times.' And he broke down and gave way to weeping."

Glory directed to God rather than men

Ps. 113:3-5 "From the rising of the sun until its setting Jehovah's name is to be praised. Jehovah has become high above all the nations; his glory is above the heavens. Who is like Jehovah our God, him who is making his dwelling on high?"

Isa. 40:22, 23 "There is One who is dwelling above the circle of the earth, the dwellers in which are as grasshoppers, . . . the One who is reducing high officials to nothing, who has made the very judges of the earth as a mere unreality."

1 Cor. 1:26-31 "Not many wise in a fleshly way were called, not many powerful, not many of noble birth; but God chose the foolish things of the world, that he might put the wise men to shame; and God chose the weak things of the world, that he might put the strong things to shame; and God chose the ignoble things of the world and the things looked down upon, . . . in order that no flesh might boast in the sight of God. . . . that it may be just as it is written: 'He that boasts, let him boast in Jehovah.'"

Rev. 7:12 "The blessing and the glory and the wisdom and the thanksgiving and the honor and the power and the strength be to our God forever and ever."

Archaeology Has Corroborated the Following Bible Accounts and Many Others

Gen. 19:24, 25 "Jehovah made it rain sulphur and fire from Jehovah, from the heavens, upon Sodom and upon Gomorrah. So he went ahead overthrowing these cities, even the entire District and all the inhabitants of the cities and the plants of the ground." (Geologists confirm catastrophic explosion followed by rain of sulphur and destructive fire engulfing entire District about 1900 B.C.E. Expedition found extensive underwater remnants of civilization that flourished and died 4,000 years ago, now submerged beneath south end of Dead Sea.)

Josh. 1:4 "From the wilderness and this Lebanon to the great river, the river Euphrates, that is, all the land of the Hittites." (From 1906 especially, extent of Hittite empire discovered. Excavations at Boghazkeui, Turkey, site of ancient Hittite capital, uncovered multitude of artifacts and some 10,000 clay tablets in Hittite cuneiform script and other languages.)

Josh. 6:1, 20, 21 "Now Jericho was tightly shut up because of the sons of Israel . . . And it came about that as soon as the people heard the sound of the horn and the people began to shout a great war cry, then the wall began to fall down flat. . . . And they went devoting all that was in the city . . . to destruction." (From 1929 onward expeditions under Professor Garstang excavated ruins of Jericho, confirmed Bible record.)

2 Sam. 5:7, 8 "David proceeded to capture the stronghold of Zion, that is, the city of David. So David said on that day: 'Anyone striking the Jebusites, let him, by means of the water tunnel, make contact.'" (In 1867 old water tunnel running from fountain of Gihon back into hill and upward into old city was discovered. In 1909-1911 entire system of tunnels leading from Gihon was cleared.)

1 Ki. 14:25, 26 "In the fifth year of King Rehoboam . . . Shishak the king of Egypt came up against Jerusalem. And he got to take the treasures of the house of Jehovah and the treasures of the house of the king; and everything he took." (In 1830 writings on outer wall of Egyptian temple at Karnak deciphered, found to be Shishak's victory document.)

2 Ki. 3:4, 5 "As regards Mesha the king of Moab, he became a sheep raiser, and he paid to the king of Israel a hundred thousand lambs and a hundred thousand unshorn male sheep. And it came about that as soon as Ahab died, the king of Moab began to revolt against the king of Israel." (Moabite stone, found in 1868, now preserved in the Louvre, Paris, gives King Mesha's version of his revolt against Israel.)

2 Ki. 18:13 "In the fourteenth year of King Hezekiah, Sennacherib the king of Assyria came up against all the fortified cities of Judah and proceeded to seize them." (During 1847-1851 Layard excavated Assyrian King Sennacherib's great palace at Kuyunjik. Clay cylinder, called King Sennacherib's Prism, giving his boastful version of invasion of Judah, found. Prism preserved in British Museum.)

Jer. 34:7 "The military forces of the king of Babylon were fighting against . . . Lachish." (In 1935 eighteen pieces of pottery inscribed with Hebrew-Phoenician writing found at ruins of Lachish. Written from outpost of Judean troops to commander at Lachish describing urgency of situation during invasion.)

Acts 17:22 "Paul now stood in the midst of the Areopagus." (Hill of Ares, or "Mars Hill," rocky hill northwest of Acropolis of Athens still remains to confirm Bible record of setting for Paul's discourse. Plaque there contains copy of his speech.)

Bible in Harmony with True Science

Job 26:7 "He is stretching out the north over the empty place, hanging the earth upon nothing."

Isa. 40:22 "There is One who is dwelling above the circle of the earth, the dwellers in which are as grasshoppers."

Job 28:2 "Iron itself is taken from the very dust and from stone copper is being poured out."

Gen. 1:11, 21, 25 "And God went on to say: 'Let the earth cause grass to shoot forth, vegetation bearing seed, fruit trees yielding fruit according to their kinds, the seed of which is in it . . . And God proceeded to create the great sea monsters and every living soul that moves about, which the waters swarmed forth according to their kinds, and every winged flying creature according to its kind. . . . And God proceeded to make the wild beast of the earth according to its kind and the domestic animal according to its kind and every moving animal of the ground according to its kind."

See also the main heading "Evolution," pages 177-184.

Preservation in Face of Severe Opposition Shows It to Be "the Word of Our God"

Isa. 40:8 "The green grass has dried up, the blossom has withered; but as for the word of our God, it will last to time indefinite."

1 Pet. 1:25 "'The saying of Jehovah endures forever.' Well, this is the 'saying,' this which has been declared to you as good news."

Those Who Follow Example of Christ and His Apostles Cannot Reject Parts of Bible as Myths

John 17:17 "Sanctify them by means of the truth; your word is truth."

Acts 24:14 "I believe all the things set forth in the Law and written in the Prophets."

2 Tim. 4:3, 4 "There will be a period of time when they will not put up with the healthful teaching, but, in accord with their own desires, they will accumulate teachers for themselves to have their ears tickled; and they will turn their ears away from the truth, whereas they will be turned aside to false stories."

See also Matt. 19:4, 5 and Gen. 1:27; 2:24.

None of Bible Is Outdated; All Is Beneficial

Rom. 15:4 "All the things that were written aforetime were written for our instruction, that through our endurance and through the comfort from the Scriptures we might have hope."

John 20:31 "These have been written down that you may believe that Jesus is the Christ the Son of God, and that, because of believing, you may have life by means of his name."

Jesus and his apostles quoted freely from Hebrew Scriptures, setting pattern for all Christians

Luke 4:17-21 "So the scroll of the prophet Isaiah was handed him [Jesus], and he opened the scroll and found the place where it was written: [Isa. 61:1, 2] . . . With that he rolled up the scroll, handed it back to the attendant and sat down . . . Then he started to say to them: 'Today this scripture that you just heard is fulfilled.'"

Luke 24:27, 44, 45 "And commencing at Moses and all the Prophets he interpreted to them things pertaining to himself in all the Scriptures. He now said to them: 'These are my words which I spoke to you while I was yet with you, that all the things written in the law of Moses and in the Prophets and Psalms about me must be fulfilled.' Then he opened up their minds fully to grasp the meaning of the Scriptures."

Matt. 4:4-10 "In reply [Jesus] said: 'It is written [Deut. 8:3], "Man must live, not on bread alone, but on every utterance coming forth through Jehovah's mouth."' . . . Jesus said to him: 'Again it is written [Deut. 6:16], "You must not put Jehovah your God to the test."' . . . Then Jesus said to him: 'Go away, Satan! For it is written [Deut. 5:9], "It is Jehovah your God you must worship, and it is to him alone you must render sacred service."'"

Rom. 9:12-18 "It was said to her [Gen. 25:23]: 'The older will be the slave of the younger.' Just as it is written [Mal. 1:2, 3]: 'I loved Jacob, but Esau I hated.' What shall we say, then? Is there injustice with God? Never may that become so! For he says to Moses [Ex. 33:19]: 'I will have mercy upon whomever I do have mercy, and I will show compassion to whomever I do show compassion.' So, then, it depends, not upon the one wishing nor upon the one running, but upon God, who has mercy. For the Scripture says to Pharaoh [Ex. 9:16]: 'For this very cause I have let you remain, that in connection with you I may show my power, and that my name may be declared in all the earth.' So, then, upon whom he wishes he has mercy, but whom he wishes he lets become obstinate."

See also Rom. 9:25-29; 15:9-12; Acts 15:12-18.

Hebrew Scriptures contain examples for our benefit today

1 Cor. 10:11 "Now these things went on befalling them as examples, and they were written for a warning to us upon whom the ends of the systems of things have arrived."

Luke 17:26-30 "Just as it occurred in the days of Noah, so it will be also in the days of the Son of man: they were eating, they were drinking, men were marrying, women were being given in marriage, until that day when Noah entered into the ark, and the flood arrived and destroyed them all. Likewise, just as it occurred in the days of Lot: they were eating, they were drinking, they were buying, they were selling, they were planting, they were building. But on the day that Lot came out of Sodom it rained fire and sulphur from heaven and destroyed them all. The same way it will be on that day when the Son of man is to be revealed."

Bible to be viewed as united whole

2 Tim. 3:16 "All Scripture is inspired of God and beneficial."

Regular Bible Reading Important

Matt. 4:4 "Man must live, not on bread alone, but on every utterance coming forth through Jehovah's mouth."

John 17:3 "This means everlasting life, their taking in knowledge of you, the only true God, and of the one whom you sent forth, Jesus Christ."

Deut. 6:6, 7 "These words that I am commanding you today must prove to be on your heart; and you must inculcate them in your son and speak of them when you sit in your house and when you walk on the road and when you lie down and when you get up."

2 Tim. 3:15 "From infancy you have known the holy writings, which are able to make you wise for salvation."

Acts 17:11 "Now the [Bereans] were more noble-minded than those in Thessalonica, for they received the word with the greatest eagerness of mind, carefully examining the Scriptures daily as to whether these things were so."

Eph. 5:17 "Go on perceiving what the will of Jehovah is."

See also the main heading "Study," pages 470-473.

Gaining Understanding of the Bible Vital

Prov. 4:7, 8 "Acquire wisdom; and with all that you acquire, acquire understanding. Highly esteem it, and it will exalt you. It will glorify you because you embrace it."

Matt. 13:19 "Where anyone hears the word of the kingdom but does not get the sense of

it, the wicked one comes and snatches away what has been sown in his heart."

Prov. 2:3-6, 9 "If, moreover, you call out for understanding itself and you give forth your voice for discernment itself, if you keep seeking for it as for silver, and as for hid treasures you keep searching for it, in that case you will understand the fear of Jehovah, and you will find the very knowledge of God. For Jehovah himself gives wisdom; out of his mouth there are knowledge and discernment. In that case you will understand righteousness and judgment and uprightness, the entire course of what is good."

Neh. 8:8 "They continued reading aloud from the book, from the law of the true God, it being expounded, and there being a putting of meaning into it; and they continued giving understanding in the reading."

Help needed

Acts 8:30, 31 "Philip ran alongside and heard him reading aloud Isaiah the prophet, and he said: 'Do you actually know what you are reading?' He said: 'Really, how could I ever do so, unless someone guided me?'"

Understanding not limited to specially educated ones

Matt. 11:25 "At that time Jesus said in response: 'I publicly praise you, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because you have hidden these things from the wise and intellectual ones and have revealed them to babes.'"

Acts 4:13 "Now when they beheld the outspokenness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were men unlettered and ordinary, they got to wondering."

1 Cor. 2:10, 13 "For it is to us God has revealed them through his spirit, . . . These things we also speak, not with words taught by human wisdom, but with those taught by the spirit, as we combine spiritual matters with spiritual words."

See also 1 John 5:20; John 7:14, 15.

For Right Interpretation of Bible We Must Look to God

Gen. 40:8 "Joseph said to them: 'Do not interpretations belong to God?'"

Dan. 2:28 "There exists a God in the heavens who is a Revealer of secrets."

Matt. 11:25 "At that time Jesus said in response: 'I publicly praise you, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because you have hidden these things from the wise and intellectual ones and have revealed them to babes.'"

Right explanation is always harmonious with rest of God's Word

2 Tim. 3:16 "All Scripture is inspired of God."

Acts 15:14, 15 "Symeon has related thoroughly how God for the first time turned his attention to the nations to take out of them a people for his name. And with this the words of the Prophets agree."

Other portions of written Word often shed light

Matt. 16:4 "A wicked and adulterous generation keeps on seeking for a sign, but no sign will be given it except the sign of Jonah." (Compare Matt. 12:39, 40.)

Matt. 24:35 "Heaven and earth will pass away, but my words will by no means pass away." (Compare Eccl. 1:4; Isa. 66:1; Rev. 19:11–20:3.)

Events in fulfillment of prophecy show meaning

Matt. 1:18, 22, 23 "The birth of Jesus Christ was in this way. . . . All this actually came about for that to be fulfilled which was spoken by Jehovah through his prophet, saying: 'Look! The virgin will become pregnant and will give birth to a son, and they will call his name Immanuel.'"

Acts 2:4, 14-21 "They all became filled with holy spirit and started to speak with different tongues . . . Peter stood up with the eleven and raised his voice and made this utterance to them: '. . . On the contrary, this is what was said through the prophet Joel, "'And in the last days,' God says, 'I shall pour out some of my spirit upon every sort of flesh, and your sons and your daughters will prophesy.'"'"

Personal interpretation may lead to twisting of Scriptures

2 Pet. 3:15, 16 "Our beloved brother Paul according to the wisdom given him also wrote you, speaking about these things as he does also in all his letters. In them, however, are some things hard to understand, which the untaught and unsteady are twisting, as they do also the rest of the Scriptures, to their own destruction."

God's Written Word Not to Be Set Aside for Man's Tradition

Matt. 15:3, 6, 9 "Why is it you also overstep the commandment of God because of your tradition? . . . And so you have made the word of God invalid because of your tradition. 'It is in vain that they keep worshiping me, because they teach commands of men as doctrines.'"

1 Cor. 4:6 "Do not go beyond the things that are written."

Scriptures warn against being misled by false religious tradition

Col. 2:8 "Look out: perhaps there may be someone who will carry you off as his prey through the philosophy and empty deception according to the tradition of men, according to the elementary things of the world and not according to Christ."

Matt. 16:6, 12 "Jesus said to them: 'Keep your eyes open and watch out for the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees.' Then they grasped that he said to watch out, not for the leaven of the loaves, but for the teaching of the Pharisees and Sadducees."

Gal. 1:13, 14 "You, of course, heard about my conduct formerly in Judaism, that to the point of excess I kept on persecuting the congregation of God and devastating it, and I was making greater progress in Judaism than many of my own age in my race, as I was far more zealous for the traditions of my fathers."

See also Isa. 29:13; Gal. 1:7-9.

Adding to or taking away from God's Word forbidden

Deut. 4:2 "You must not add to the word that I am commanding you, neither must you take away from it, so as to keep the commandments of Jehovah your God that I am commanding you."

Prov. 30:5, 6 "Every saying of God is refined. He is a shield to those taking refuge in him. Add nothing to his words, that he may not reprove you, and that you may not have to be proved a liar."

Rev. 22:18, 19 "If anyone makes an addition to these things, God will add to him the plagues that are written in this scroll; and if anyone takes anything away from the words of the scroll of this prophecy, God will take his portion away from the trees of life and out of the holy city, things which are written about in this scroll."

Bible Is Beneficial for People of All Nations and Races

Gen. 22:17, 18 "I shall surely bless you [Abraham] and I shall surely multiply your seed . . . And by means of your seed all nations of the earth will certainly bless themselves due to

the fact that you have listened to my voice." (Compare Gal. 3:16.)

Mic. 4:2 "Many nations will certainly go and say: 'Come, you people, and let us go up to the mountain of Jehovah . . . and he will instruct us about his ways, and we will walk in his paths.' "

1 Tim. 2:3, 4 "This is fine and acceptable in the sight of our Savior, God, whose will is that all sorts of men should be saved and come to an accurate knowledge of truth."

Must Use Scriptures Honestly

John 5:39, 40 "You are searching the Scriptures, because you think that by means of them you will have everlasting life; and these are the very ones that bear witness about me. And yet you do not want to come to me that you may have life."

2 Tim. 2:15 "Do your utmost to present yourself approved to God, a workman with nothing to be ashamed of, handling the word of the truth aright."

Matt. 4:5-7 "Then the Devil took him along into the holy city, and he stationed him upon the battlement of the temple and said to him: 'If you are a son of God, hurl yourself down; for it is written, "He will give his angels a charge concerning you, and they will carry you on their hands, that you may at no time strike your foot against a stone." ' Jesus said to him: 'Again it is written, "You must not put Jehovah your God to the test." ' "

Scripture Texts That Illustrate the Improved Understanding That Results from Modern Translation

Gen. 25:29 (*King James*) "And Jacob sod pottage: and Esau came from the field, and he was faint."

Gen. 25:29 (*NW*) "Once Jacob was boiling up some stew, when Esau came along from the field and he was tired."

Isa. 14:23 (Catholic *Douay*) "And I will make it a possession for the ericius, and pools of waters: and I will sweep it and wear it out with a besom, saith the Lord of hosts."

Isa. 14:23 (*NW*) " 'And I will make her a possession of porcupines and reedy pools of water, and I will sweep her with the broom of annihilation,' is the utterance of Jehovah of armies."

Matt. 5:3 (*King James*) "Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven."

Matt. 5:3 (*NW*) "Happy are those conscious of their spiritual need, since the kingdom of the heavens belongs to them."

1 Cor. 10:25 (*King James*) "Whatsoever is sold in the shambles, that eat, asking no question for conscience sake."

1 Cor. 10:25 (*NW*) "Everything that is sold in a meat market keep eating, making no inquiry on account of your conscience."

Phil. 4:6 (*King James*) "Be careful for nothing; but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God."

Phil. 4:6 (*NW*) "Do not be anxious over anything, but in everything by prayer and supplication along with thanksgiving let your petitions be made known to God."

Philem. 8 (*King James*) "I might be much bold in Christ to enjoin thee that which is convenient."

Philem. 8 (*NW*) "I have great freeness of speech in connection with Christ to order you to do what is proper."

1 John 2:16 (Catholic *Douay*) "For all that is in the world is the concupiscence of the flesh and the concupiscence of the eyes and the pride of life, which is not of the Father but is of the world."

1 John 2:16 (*NW*) "Because everything in the world—the desire of the flesh and the desire of the eyes and the showy display of one's means of life—does not originate with the Father, but originates with the world."

Jehovah Reveals Himself and His Purposes Through His Written Word

Rom. 16:25, 26 "Now to him who can make you firm in accord with the good news I declare and the preaching of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the sacred secret which has been kept in silence for long-lasting times but has now been made manifest and has been made known through the prophetic scriptures."

Amos 3:7 "The Lord Jehovah will not do a thing unless he has revealed his confidential matter to his servants the prophets."

Blood

God Views Blood as Soul (Life) of the Flesh

Lev. 17:11, 12, 14 "The soul of the flesh is in the blood . . . 'No soul of you should eat blood and no alien resident who is residing as an alien in your midst should eat blood.' 'For the soul of every sort of flesh is its blood by the soul in it. Consequently I said to the sons of Israel: "You must not eat the blood of any sort of flesh, because the soul of every sort of flesh is its blood. Anyone eating it will be cut off." ' "

Deut. 12:23 "Be firmly resolved not to eat the blood, because the blood is the soul and you must not eat the soul with the flesh."

Gen. 9:4 "Only flesh with its soul—its blood—you must not eat."

Animals Slaughtered for Food Must Be Properly Bled

Lev. 17:13 "As for any man of the sons of Israel or some alien resident who is residing as an alien in your midst who in hunting catches a wild beast or a fowl that may be eaten, he must in that case pour its blood out and cover it with dust."

Deut. 12:15, 16 "Whenever your soul craves it you may slaughter, and you must eat meat according to the blessing of Jehovah your God . . . Only the blood you must not eat. On the earth you should pour it out as water."

See also Deut. 12:24.

Requirement That Christians "Abstain . . . from Blood" Bars Medical Blood Transfusions

Acts 15:19, 20 "My decision is not to trouble those from the nations who are turning to God, but to write them to abstain . . . from blood."

Acts 15:28, 29 "The holy spirit and we ourselves have favored adding no further burden to you, except these necessary things, to keep yourselves free . . . from blood and from things strangled and from fornication. If you carefully keep yourselves from these things, you will prosper."

Acts 21:25 "As for the believers from among the nations, we have sent out, rendering our decision that they should keep themselves from what is sacrificed to idols as well as from blood and what is strangled and from fornication."

Prohibition Involves Any Form of Blood

Lev. 7:26, 27 "You must not eat any blood in any places where you dwell, whether that of fowl or that of beast. Any soul who

eats any blood, that soul must be cut off from his people."

Lev. 17:10 "As for any man of the house of Israel or some alien resident who is residing as an alien in your midst who eats any sort of blood, I shall certainly set my face against the soul that is eating the blood."

Importance of Law on Blood Emphasized

Lev. 17:10 "I shall certainly set my face against the soul that *is eating the blood, and I shall* indeed cut him off from among his people."

Acts 15:28, 29 "No further burden . . . , except these necessary things, to keep yourselves free from things sacrificed to idols and from blood and from things strangled and from fornication. If you carefully keep yourselves from these things, you will prosper."

Unscriptural Use of Blood Even in Emergencies Is Wrong

1 Chron. 11:18, 19 "David did not consent to drink [the water], but poured it out to Jehovah. And he went on to say: 'It is unthinkable on my part, as regards my God, to do this! Is it the blood of these men that I should drink at the risk of their souls? For it was at the risk of their souls that they brought it.' And he did not consent to drink it."

1 Sam. 14:31-34 "On that day they kept striking down the Philistines from Michmash to Aijalon, and the people got to be very tired. And the people began darting greedily at the spoil and taking sheep and cattle and calves and slaughtering them on the earth, and the people fell to eating along with the blood. So they told Saul, saying: 'Look! The people are sinning against Jehovah by eating along with the blood.' . . . After that Saul said: 'Scatter among the people, and you must say to them, "Bring near to me, each one of you, his bull and, each one, his sheep, and you must do the slaughtering in this place and the eating, and you must not sin against Jehovah by eating along with the blood."' "

Violation of God's Law in Effort to Preserve Present Life Leads to Loss of Eternal Life

Matt. 16:25, 26 "Whoever wants to save his soul will lose it; but whoever loses his soul for my sake will find it. For what benefit will it be to a man if he gains the whole world but forfeits his soul? or what will a man give in exchange for his soul?"

Sacrificial Use of Blood Only Use Approved by God

Heb. 9:22 "Nearly all things are cleansed with blood according to the Law, and unless blood is poured out no forgiveness takes place."

Lev. 17:11 "The soul of the flesh is in the blood, and I myself have put it upon the altar for you to make atonement for your souls, because it is the blood that makes atonement by the soul in it."

Animal sacrifices in times past

Deut. 12:27 "You must render up your burnt offerings [of animals], the flesh and the blood, upon the altar of Jehovah your God; and the blood of your sacrifices should be poured out against the altar of Jehovah your God, but the flesh you may eat."

Lev. 1:5 "Then the young bull must be slaughtered before Jehovah; and the sons of Aaron, the priests, must present the blood and sprinkle the blood round about upon the altar."

Blood of Jesus Christ is truly lifesaving

Rom. 5:9 "Much more, therefore, since we have been declared righteous now by his blood, shall we be saved through him from wrath."

Eph. 1:7 "By means of him we have the release by ransom through the blood of that one, yes, the forgiveness of our trespasses, according to the riches of his undeserved kindness."

Heb. 9:11-14 "When Christ came as a high priest . . . he entered, no, not with the blood of goats and of young bulls, but with his own blood, once for all time into the holy place and obtained *an everlasting deliverance* for us. For if the blood of goats and of bulls and the ashes of a heifer sprinkled on those who have been defiled sanctifies to the extent of cleanness of the flesh, how much more will the blood of the Christ, who through an everlasting spirit offered himself without blemish to God, cleanse our consciences from dead works that we may render sacred service to the living God?"

Figuratively 'Drinking Christ's Blood' Symbolizes One Receives Forgiveness of Sins by Virtue of Jesus' Sacrifice and Is in the New Covenant Validated by That Blood

John 6:53-56 "Unless you eat the flesh of the Son of man and drink his blood, you have no life in yourselves. He that feeds on my flesh and drinks my blood has everlasting life, and I shall resurrect him at the last day; for my flesh is true food, and my blood is true drink. He that feeds on my flesh and drinks my blood remains in union with me, and I in union with him."

Matt. 26:27, 28 "Also, he took a cup and, having given thanks, he gave it to them, saying: 'Drink out of it, all of you; for this *means my "blood of the covenant,"* which is to be poured out in behalf of many for forgiveness of sins.' "

Murderers to Answer for Blood Shed by Forfeiting Own Life

Gen. 9:6 "Anyone shedding man's blood, by man will his own blood be shed, for in God's image he made man."

Ex. 20:13 "You must not murder."

Num. 35:30, 31 "Every fatal striker of a soul should be slain as a murderer at the mouth of witnesses . . . And you must take no ransom for the soul of a murderer who is deserving to die, for without fail he should be put to death."

Rev. 21:8 "As for the . . . murderers . . . their portion will be in the lake that burns with fire and sulphur. This means the second death."

God's Servants Responsible to Make Known His Judgments in Order to Remain Free from Bloodguilt

Ezek. 3:18, 19 "When I say to someone wicked, 'You will positively die,' and you do not actually *warn him and speak in order* to warn the wicked one from his wicked way to preserve him alive, he being wicked, in his error he will die, but his blood I shall ask back from your own hand. But as for you, in case you have warned someone wicked and he does not actually turn back from his wickedness and from his wicked way, he himself for his error will die; but as for you, you will have delivered your own soul." (See also Ezek. 33:8, 9.)

Acts 20:26, 27 "I call you to witness this very day that I am clean from the blood of all men, for I have not held back from *telling you all the counsel of* God."

Born Again, as Spiritual Sons of God

Being Born Again, Begotten as Spiritual Sons of God, Necessary for Those Who Would Enter the *Heavenly Kingdom of God*

John 3:3 "Jesus said to him: 'Most truly *I say to you*, Unless anyone is born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.'"

1 Pet. 1:3, 4 "Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, for according to his great mercy he gave us a new birth to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, to an incorruptible and undefiled and unfading *inheritance*. It is reserved in the heavens for you."

1 Cor. 15:50 "Flesh and blood cannot inherit God's kingdom."

See also *the main heading* "Heaven," pages 225, 226.

Born from Water and Spirit

John 3:5 "Jesus answered: 'Most truly I say to you, Unless anyone is born from water and spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.'"

Part played by water

Mark 1:9 "In the course of those days Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee and was baptized in the Jordan by John."

1 Pet. 2:21 "Christ suffered for you, leaving you a model for you to follow his steps closely."

Matt. 28:19 "Go therefore and make disciples of people of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the holy spirit."

Acts 2:38, 41 "Peter said to them: 'Repent, and let each one of you be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ for forgiveness of your sins, and you will receive the free gift of the holy spirit.' Therefore those who embraced his word heartily were baptized, and on that day about three thousand souls were added."

Part played by holy spirit

Rom. 8:16 "The spirit itself bears witness with our spirit that we are God's children."

Eph. 1:13, 14 "You were sealed with the promised holy spirit, which is a token in advance of our inheritance, for the purpose of releasing by a ransom God's own possession, to his glorious praise."

2 Cor. 1:22 "He has also put his seal upon us and has given us the token of what is to come, that is, the spirit, in our hearts."

Jehovah God Is the Father

John 1:12, 13 "As many as did receive him, to them he gave authority to become God's children, because they were exercising faith in his name; and they were born, not from blood or from a fleshly will or from man's will, but from God."

Jas. 1:17, 18 "The Father . . . brought us forth by the word of truth, for us to be a certain first fruits of his creatures."

God's Heavenly Organization, Jerusalem Above, Is Mother

Gal. 4:26 "The Jerusalem above is free, and she is our mother."

Heb. 12:22 "You have approached a Mount Zion and a city of the living God, heavenly Jerusalem, and myriads of angels."

Christ and Those Christians Called to Heavenly Glory with Him Are Spiritual Brothers

Rom. 8:29 "Those whom he gave his first recognition he also foreordained to be patterned after the image of his Son, that he might be the first-born among many brothers."

Heb. 2:10, 11 "It was fitting for the one for whose sake all things are and through whom all things are, in bringing many sons to glory, to make the Chief Agent of their salvation perfect through sufferings. For both he who is sanctifying and those who are being sanctified all stem from one, and for this cause he is not ashamed to call them 'brothers.'" (See also verse 17.)

Matt. 25:40 "The king will say to them, 'Truly I say to you, To the extent that you did it to one of the least of these my brothers, you did it to me.'"

Evidence that One Has Been Born Again, Now as a Spiritual Son of God

1 John 5:18 "We know that every person that has been born from God does not practice sin, but the One born from God watches him, and the wicked one does not fasten his hold on him." (See also 1 John 3:9.)

Rom. 8:14, 16, 17 "All who are led by God's spirit, these are God's sons. The spirit itself bears witness with our spirit that we are God's children. If, then, we are children, we are also heirs: heirs indeed of God, but joint heirs with Christ, provided we suffer together that we may also be glorified together."

See also 1 John 2:29; 4:7.

Not Necessary to Be Born Again to Have God's Spirit, Produce Its Fruitage

Ex. 35:30, 31 "Moses said to the sons of Israel: 'See, Jehovah has called by name Bezalel . . . And he proceeded to fill him with the spirit of God in wisdom, in understanding and in knowledge and in every sort of craftsmanship.'"

Judg. 6:34; 11:29; 14:6 "Jehovah's spirit enveloped Gideon." "Jehovah's spirit now came upon Jephthah." "Jehovah's spirit became operative upon [Samson]."

Gal. 5:22, 23 "The fruitage of the spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, kindness, goodness, faith, mildness, self-control. Against such things there is no law."

John the Baptist filled with God's spirit, but not an heir of heavenly kingdom

Luke 1:15 "He will be filled with holy spirit right from his mother's womb."

Matt. 11:11 "Truly I say to you people, Among those born of women there has not been raised up a greater than John the Baptist; but a person that is a lesser one in the kingdom of the heavens is greater than he is."

Bride of Christ

Heavenly Kingdom Likened to Bridegroom and Virgins

Matt. 25:1 "The kingdom of the heavens will become like ten virgins that took their lamps and went out to meet the bridegroom."

Matt. 22:1, 2 "Jesus again spoke to them with illustrations, saying: 'The kingdom of the heavens has become like a man, a king, that made a marriage feast for his son.'"

See also the main heading "Kingdom," pages 300-305.

Bridegroom Is Jesus Christ, the Lamb of God

John 3:26-29 "They came to John and said to him: 'Rabbi, the man that was with you across the Jordan, to whom you have borne witness, see, this one is baptizing and all are going to him.' In answer John said: 'A man cannot receive a single thing unless it has been given him from heaven. You yourselves bear me witness that I said, I am not the Christ, but, I have been sent forth in advance of that one. He that has the bride is the bridegroom.'"

John 1:29, 35-37 "The next day he beheld Jesus coming toward him, and he said: 'See, the Lamb of God that takes away the sin of the world!' Again the next day John was standing with two of his disciples, and as he looked at Jesus walking he said: 'See, the Lamb of God!' And the two disciples heard him speak, and they followed Jesus."

Matt. 9:15 "Jesus said to them: 'The friends of the bridegroom have no reason to mourn as long as the bridegroom is with them, do they? But days will come when the bridegroom will be taken away from them, and then they will fast.'"

Bride Identified as New Jerusalem, a Heavenly City or Organization

Rev. 21:9, 10, 2 "There came one of the seven angels . . . and he spoke with me and said: 'Come here, I will show you the bride, the Lamb's wife.' So he carried me away in the power of the spirit to a great and lofty mountain, and he showed me the holy city Jerusalem coming down out of heaven from God. I saw . . . the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God and prepared as a bride adorned for her husband."

New Jerusalem is a temple organization made up of living stones, 144,000 devoted followers of the Lamb of God

Rev. 3:12 "The one that conquers—I will make him a pillar in the temple of my God, and he will by no means go out from it any more, and I will write upon him the name of my God and the name of the city of my God, the new Jerusalem which descends out of heaven from my God."

1 Pet. 2:4, 5, 9 "Coming to him as to a living stone, rejected, it is true, by men, but chosen, precious, with God, you yourselves also as living stones are being built up a spiritual house for the purpose of a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through Jesus Christ. But you are 'a chosen race, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a people for special possession.'"

Rev. 14:1-4 "I saw, and, look! the Lamb standing upon the Mount Zion, and with him a hundred and forty-four thousand having his name and the name of his Father written on their foreheads. . . . they are singing as if a new song before the throne and before the four living creatures and the older persons; and no one was able to master that song but the hundred and forty-four thousand, who have been bought from the earth. These are the ones that did not defile themselves with women; in fact, they are virgins. These are the ones that keep following the Lamb no matter where he goes. These were bought from among mankind as a first fruits to God and to the Lamb."

Preparation of Bride

2 Cor. 11:2 "I am jealous over you with a godly jealousy, for I personally promised you in marriage to one husband that I might present you as a chaste virgin to the Christ."

Eph. 5:25-27 "Husbands, continue loving your wives, just as the Christ also loved the congregation and delivered up himself for it, that he might sanctify it, cleansing it with the bath of water by means of the word, that he might present the congregation to himself in its splendor, not having a spot or a wrinkle or any of such things, but that it should be holy and without blemish."

See also "Congregation of God," pages 113-116.

Heavenly Marriage a Happy Event

Rev. 19:7 "Let us rejoice and be overjoyed, and let us give him the glory, because the marriage of the Lamb has arrived and his wife has prepared herself."

Ps. 45:7, 9-11 "You have loved righteousness and you hate wickedness. That is why God, your God, has anointed you with the oil of exultation more than your partners. The daughters of kings are among your precious women. The queenly consort has taken her stand at your right hand in gold of Ophir. Listen, O daughter, and see, and incline your ear; and forget your people and your father's house. And the king will long for your prettiness, for he is your lord, so bow down to him." (Compare Heb. 1:8, 9.)

Members of Bride Class Must Be Alert so as Not to Lose Out

Matt. 25:6-13 "Right in the middle of the night there arose a cry, 'Here is the bridegroom! Be on your way out to meet him.' Then all those virgins rose and put their lamps in order. The foolish said to the discreet, 'Give us some of your oil, because our lamps are about to go out.' The discreet answered with the words, 'Perhaps there may not be quite enough for us and you. Be on your way, instead, to those who sell it and buy for yourselves.' While they were going off to buy, the bridegroom arrived, and the virgins that were ready went in with him to the marriage feast; and the door was shut. Afterwards the rest of the virgins also came, saying, 'Sir, sir, open to us!' In answer he said, 'I tell you the truth, I do not know you.' Keep on the watch, therefore, because you know neither the day nor the hour."

2 Pet. 1:10 "Do your utmost to make the calling and choosing of you sure for yourselves."

Others Not of Bride Class Rejoice with Bride and Bridegroom

John 3:29 "The friend of the bridegroom . . . has a great deal of joy on account of the voice of the bridegroom. Therefore this joy of mine has been made full."

Ps. 45:14, 15 "The virgins in her train as her companions are being brought in to you. They will be brought with rejoicing and joyfulness; they will enter into the palace of the king."

Caesar's Things to Caesar

Caesar, the Roman Emperor, Is Equivalent to Existing Political Ruler or Government in Any Land

Mark 12:17 "Jesus then said: 'Pay back Caesar's things to Caesar, but God's things to God.'"

John 19:12, 15 "Pilate kept on seeking how to release [Jesus]. But the Jews shouted, saying: 'If you release this man, you are not a friend of Caesar.' . . . The

chief priests answered: 'We have no king but Caesar.'"

Due Respect for Worldly Rulers Proper

Rom. 13:1, 7 "Let every soul be in subjection to the superior authorities . . . Render to all their dues . . . to him who calls for fear, such fear; to him who calls for honor, such honor."

Titus 3:1 "Continue reminding them to be in subjection and be obedient to governments and authorities as rulers."

1 Tim. 2:1-3 "I therefore exhort, first of all, that supplications, prayers, intercessions, offerings of thanks, be made concerning all sorts of men, concerning kings and all those who are in high station; in order that we may go on leading a calm and quiet life with full godly devotion and seriousness. This is fine and acceptable in the sight of our Savior, God."

Acts 26:1-3 "Agrippa said to Paul: 'You are permitted to speak in behalf of yourself.' Then Paul stretched his hand out and proceeded to say in his defense: 'Concerning all the things of which I am accused by Jews, King Agrippa, I count myself happy that it is before you I am to make my defense this day, especially as you are expert on all the customs as well as the controversies among Jews. Therefore I beg you to hear me patiently.'"

See also Acts 26:25.

Tax for Services Rendered Should Be Paid

Luke 20:21-25 "They questioned him, saying: . . . 'Is it lawful for us to pay tax to Caesar or not?' But he detected their cunning and said to them: 'Show me a denarius. Whose image and inscription does it have?' They said: 'Caesar's.' He said to them: 'By all means, then, pay back Caesar's things to Caesar, but God's things to God.'"

Rom. 13:7 "Render to all their dues, to him who calls for the tax, the tax; to him who calls for the tribute, the tribute."

See also Matt. 17:24-27.

To Make Marriage "Honorable Among All," Requirements of the Law Should Be Met

Heb. 13:4 "Let marriage be honorable among all, and the marriage bed be without defilement, for God will judge fornicators and adulterers."

1 Tim. 3:2, 7 "The overseer should therefore be irreprehensible, a husband of one wife . . . Moreover, he should also have a fine testimony from people on the outside."

Legal Social Distinctions Acknowledged

1 Tim. 6:1, 2 "Let as many as are slaves under a yoke keep on considering their owners worthy of full honor, that the name of God and the teaching may never be spoken of injuriously. Moreover, let those having believing owners not look down on them, because they are brothers. On the contrary, let them the more readily be slaves, because those receiving the benefit of their good service are believers and beloved."

Titus 2:9, 10 "Let slaves be in subjection to their owners in all things, and please them well, not talking back, not committing theft, but exhibiting good fidelity to the full, so that they may adorn the teaching of our Savior, God, in all things."

Eph. 6:5 "You slaves, be obedient to those who are your masters in a fleshly sense, with fear and trembling in the sincerity of your hearts, as to the Christ."

1 Pet. 2:18 "Let house servants be in subjection to their owners with all due fear, not only to the good and reasonable, but also to those hard to please."

Philem. 10-16 "I am exhorting you concerning my child, to whom I became a father while in my prison bonds, Onesimus, formerly useless to you but now useful to you and to me. This very one I am sending back to you, yes, him, that is, my own tender affections. I would like to hold him back for myself . . . But without your consent I do not want to do anything . . . Perhaps really on this account he broke away for an hour, that you may have him back forever, no longer as a slave but as more than a slave, as a brother beloved."

Required Registrations to Be Complied With

Luke 2:1-5 "Now in those days a decree went forth from Caesar Augustus for all the inhabited earth to be registered; (this first registration took place when Quirinius was governor of Syria;) and all people went traveling to be registered, each one to his own city. Of course, Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judea, to David's city, which is called Bethlehem, because of his being a member of the house and family of David, to get registered with Mary."

Christians Obey Caesar's Laws for Conscience' Sake

Rom. 13:5, 6 "There is therefore compelling reason for you people to be in subjection, not only on account of that wrath but also on account of your conscience. For that is why you are also paying taxes."

1 Pet. 3:16, 17 "Hold a good conscience, so that in the particular in which you are spoken against they may get ashamed who are speaking slightingly of your good conduct in connection with Christ. For it is better to suffer because you are doing good, if the will of God wishes it, than because you are doing evil."

Acts 24:16 "In this respect, indeed, I am exercising myself continually to have a consciousness of committing no offense against God and men."

Christian Subjection to Political Authorities Does Not Ignore Supreme Authority of God

Matt. 22:21 "Pay back, therefore, Caesar's things to Caesar, but God's things to God."

1 Pet. 2:13-15 "For the Lord's sake subject yourselves to every human creation: whether to a king . . . or to governors . . . For so the will of God is."

Eccl. 5:8 "If you see any oppression of the one of little means and the violent taking away of judgment and of righteousness in a jurisdictional district, do not be amazed over the affair, for one that is higher than the high one is watching, and there are those who are high above them."

See also the heading "Superior Authorities," pages 473-477.

Man's life, worship and devotion or allegiance not for Caesar; these belong to God

Ps. 66:8, 9 "Bless our God, O you peoples, and cause the voice of praise to him to be heard. He is setting our soul in life."

Rev. 7:9, 10 "I saw, and, look! a great crowd, which no man was able to number, out of all nations and tribes and peoples and tongues . . . And they keep on crying with a loud voice, saying: 'Salvation we owe to our God, who is seated on the throne, and to the Lamb.'"

See also Ps. 146:3.

1 Cor. 7:23 "You were bought with a price; stop becoming slaves of men."

Rev. 14:6, 7 "I saw another angel flying in midheaven . . . saying in a loud voice: 'Fear God and give him glory, because the hour of the judgment by him has arrived, and so worship the One who made the heaven and the earth and sea and fountains of waters.'"

Luke 4:8 "In reply Jesus said to him: 'It is written, "It is Je-

hovah your God you must worship, and it is to him alone you must render sacred service.'"

See also the main heading "Neutrality," pages 351-359.

When Caesar's laws conflict with God's law, Christians must put obedience to God first

Acts 5:27-29 "They brought them and stood them in the Sanhedrin hall. And the high priest questioned them and said: 'We positively ordered you not to keep teaching upon the basis of this name, and yet, look! you have filled Jerusalem with your teaching . . .' In answer Peter and the other apostles said: 'We must obey God as ruler rather than men.'"

Acts 5:19, 20 "During the night Jehovah's angel opened the doors of the prison, brought them out and said: 'Be on your way, and, having taken a stand in the temple, keep on speaking to the people all the sayings about this life.'"

Acts 4:18-20 "They called them and charged them, nowhere to make any utterance or to teach upon the basis of the name of Jesus. But in reply Peter and John said to them: 'Whether it is righteous in the sight of God to listen to you rather than to God, judge for yourselves. But as for us, we cannot stop speaking about the things we have seen and heard.'"

Dan. 3:16-18 "Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego answered, and they were saying to the king: 'O Nebuchadnezzar, we are under no necessity in this regard to say back a word to you. If it is to be, our God whom we are serving is able to rescue us. Out of the burning fiery furnace and out of your hand, O king, he will rescue us. But if not, let it become known to you, O king, that your gods are not the ones we are serving, and the image of gold that you have set up we will not worship.'"

Ex. 1:17, 20 "The midwives feared the true God, and they did not do as the king of Egypt had spoken to them, but they would preserve the male children alive. So God dealt well with the midwives."

Celebrations

Only Celebration Commanded for Christians Is in Commemoration of Christ's Death; Not a Showy Festival

1 Cor. 11:23-26 "I received from the Lord that which I also handed on to you, that the Lord Jesus in the night in which he was going to be handed over took a loaf and, after giving thanks, he broke it and said: 'This means my body which is in your behalf. Keep doing this in remembrance of me.' He did likewise respecting the cup also, after he had the evening meal, saying: 'This cup means the new covenant by virtue of my blood. Keep doing this, as often as you drink it, in remembrance of me.' For as often as you eat this loaf and drink this cup, you keep proclaiming the death of the Lord, until he arrives."

Luke 22:19 "Keep doing this in remembrance of me."

Wrong to Share in Religious Celebrations That, Although Associated with Scriptural Events, Are Saturated with Paganism

2 Cor. 6:14-18 "What sharing do righteousness and lawlessness have? Or what fellowship does light have with darkness? Further, what harmony is there between Christ and Belial? Or what portion does a faithful person have with an unbeliever? And what agreement does God's temple have with idols? For we are a temple of a living God; just as God said: 'I shall reside among them.' . . . 'Therefore get out from among them, and separate yourselves,' says Jehovah, 'and quit touching the unclean thing'; 'and I will take you in.'"

Eph. 5:11 "Quit sharing with them in the unfruitful works that belong to the darkness, but, rather, even be reproving them."

1 Cor. 10:21 "You cannot be drinking the cup of Jehovah and the cup of demons; you cannot be partaking of 'the table of Jehovah' and the table of demons."

See also the main heading "Interfaith," pages 257-263.

Christmas: Date and customs of pagan origin; Jesus not born in cold late northern December

"The celebration was not observed in the first centuries of the Christian church, since the Christian usage in general was to celebrate the death of remarkable persons rather than their birth. . . . a feast was established in memory [of Jesus' birth] in the 4th century. In the 5th century the Western church ordered the feast to be celebrated on the day of the Mithraic rites of the birth of the sun and at the close of the Saturnalia . . . Most of the customs now associated with Christmas were not originally Christmas customs but rather were pre-Christian and non-Christian customs taken up by the Christian church. Saturnalia, a Roman feast celebrated in mid-December, provided the model for many of the merry-making customs of Christmas. From this celebration, for example, were derived the elaborate feasting, the giving of gifts, and the burning of candles."—*The Encyclopedia Americana* (New York; 1956), Vol. VI, p. 622.

Luke 2:1-5 "Now in those days a decree went forth from Caesar Augustus for all the inhabited earth to be registered; . . . and all people went traveling to be registered, each one to his own city. Of course, Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judea, to David's city, which is called Bethlehem, because of his being a member of the house and family of David, to get registered with Mary, who had been given him in marriage as promised, at present heavy with child."

Luke 2:8, 12 "There were also in that same country shepherds living out of doors and keeping watches in the night over their flocks. . . . 'And this is a sign for you: you will find an infant bound in cloth bands and lying in a manger.'"

"At the birth of Christ every woman and child was to go to be taxed at the city whereto they belonged, whither some had long journeys; but the middle of winter was not fitting for such a business, especially for women with child, and children to travel in. Therefore, Christ could not be born in the depth of winter. Again, at the time of Christ's birth, the shepherds lay abroad watching with their flocks in the night time; but this was not likely to be in the middle of winter. And if any shall think the winter wind was not so extreme in these parts, let him remember the words of Christ in the gospel, 'Pray that your flight be not in the winter.' If the winter was so bad a time to flee in, it seems no fit time for shepherds to lie in the fields in, and women and children to travel in." —*Works* (London; 1672), Joseph Mede, British scholar, edited by John Worthington, *Discourse* xlviii, as quoted in *The Two Babylons* (London; 1957), Alexander Hislop, p. 92.

See also the main headings "Chronology," page 89, and "Holidays," pages 236-238.

Easter: Laden with pagan practices, honors goddess Ashtoreth or Astarte

"There is no indication of the observance of the Easter festival in the New Testament, or in the writings of the apostolic Fathers. The sanctity of special times was an idea absent from the minds of the first Christians. . . . The ecclesiastical historian Socrates (*Hist. Eccl.* v. 22) [c. 439 C.E.] states, with perfect truth, that neither the Lord nor his apostles enjoined the keeping of this or any other festival. He says: 'The apostles had no thought of appointing festival days, but of promoting a life of blamelessness and piety.' . . . This is doubtless the true statement of the case." —*The Encyclopædia Britannica* (New York; 1910), Vol. VIII, p. 828.

"What means the term Easter itself? It is not a Christian name. It bears its Chaldean origin on its very forehead. Easter is nothing else than Astarte . . . the queen of heaven, whose name, as pronounced by the people of Nineveh, was evidently identical with that now in common use in this country. That name, as found by Layard on the Assyrian monuments, is Ishtar. The worship of Bel and Astarte was very early introduced into Britain . . . Such is the history of Easter. The popular observances that still attend the period of its celebration amply confirm the testimony of history as to its Babylonian character. The hot cross buns of Good Friday, and the dyed eggs of Pasch or Easter Sunday, figured in the Chaldean rites just as they do now."—*The Two Babylons* (London; 1957), Alexander Hislop, pp. 103, 107, 108.

"Ashtoreth, Anath, Astarte, and Asherah are manifestations of a chief deity of W. Asia . . . Akin to the Canaanite Ashtoreth was the Babylonian Ishtar (Venus of the Romans). . . . Many scholars believe that the beginning of the fertility cult was Babylonia, whose Queen of Heaven was . . . Ishtar." —*Harper's Bible Dictionary* (New York; 1961), pp. 46, 47.

Jer. 7:18 "The sons are picking up sticks of wood, and the fathers are lighting the fire, and the wives are kneading flour dough in order to make sacrificial cakes to the 'queen of the heavens'; and there is a pouring out of drink offerings to other gods for the purpose of offending me."

2 Ki. 23:13 "The high places that were in front of Jerusalem, that were to the right of the Mount of Ruination, that Solomon the king of Israel had built to Ashtoreth the disgusting thing of the Sidonians."

"Christianity, when it reached the Teutons, incorporated in its celebration of the great Christian feast day many of the heathen rites and customs which accompanied their observance of the spring festival. . . . held in honour of the death of winter, the birth of a new year and the return of the sun. *Eostur-monath*, or Easter month, corresponding to our month of April and, according to Bede (*De Temp. Rat.*, ch. xv), dedicated to Eostre, or Ostara, goddess of the spring, gave its name to the Christian holy day." —*The Encyclopædia Britannica* (Chicago; 1959), Vol. 7, p. 859.

See also the main heading "Holidays," pages 239, 240.

Requirements of the Law Covenant Do Not Apply to Christians

Rom. 10:4 "Christ is the end of the Law."

Gal. 4:4, 5 "When the full limit of the time arrived, God sent forth his Son, who came to be out of a woman and who came to be under law, that he might release by purchase those under law."

Eph. 2:15 "By means of his flesh he abolished . . . the Law of commandments consisting in decrees."

Annual Jewish festivals ended when law covenant was replaced with new covenant

Gal. 4:9-11 "Now that you have come to know God, or rather now that you have come to be known by God, how is it that you are turning back again to the weak and beggarly elementary things and want to slave for them over again? You are scrupulously observing days and months and seasons and years. I fear for you, that somehow I have toiled to no purpose respecting you."

Heb. 8:7-13 "If that first covenant had been faultless, no place would have been sought for a second; for he does find fault with the people when he says: ' "Look! There are days coming," says Jehovah, "and I will conclude with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah a new covenant." ' . . . In his saying 'a new covenant' he has made the former one obsolete."

See also Heb. 9:1-3, 9, 10, 24.

Observance of sabbath day not required of Christians

Col. 2:16, 17 "Therefore let no man judge you in eating and drinking or in respect of a festival or of an observance of the new moon or of a sabbath; for those things are a shadow of the things to come, but the reality belongs to the Christ."

Ex. 31:16, 17 "The sons of Israel must keep the sabbath . . . Between me and the sons of Israel it is a sign."

See also the main heading "Sabbath," pages 434-437.

Christians, Who Are No Part of the World, Have No Share in Celebrating Events in a Nation's Political History

John 18:36 "Jesus answered: 'My kingdom is no part of this world. If my kingdom were part of this world, my attendants would have fought that I should not be delivered up to the Jews. But, as it is, my kingdom is not from this source.' "

John 15:19 "If you were part of the world, the world would be fond of what is its own. Now because you are no part of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, on this account the world hates you."

Jas. 4:4 "Adulteresses, do you not know that the friendship with the world is enmity with God? Whoever, therefore, wants to be a friend of the world is constituting himself an enemy of God."

See also the main heading "Neutrality," pages 351-359.

Those Who Have 'Beaten Their Swords into Plowshares' Do Not Share in Ceremonies Commemorating Wars of the Nations

Isa. 2:4 "They will have to beat their swords into plowshares and their spears into pruning shears. Nation will not lift up sword against nation, neither will they learn war any more." (See also Mic. 4:3.)

1 Cor. 2:12 "Now we received, not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is from God."

See also the main heading "War," pages 491, 492.

Worshipers of Jehovah Do Not Participate in Ceremonies That Give Worshipful Honors to the Memory of Prominent Men

Ex. 20:5 "I Jehovah your God am a God exacting exclusive devotion."

Rom. 1:25 "Those who exchanged the truth of God for the lie and venerated and rendered sacred service to the creation rather than the One who created, who is blessed forever."

Acts 12:21-23 "On a set day Herod clothed himself with royal raiment and sat down upon the judgment seat and began giving them a public address. In turn the assembled people began

shouting: 'A god's voice, and not a man's!' Instantly the angel of Jehovah struck him, because he did not give the glory to God; and he became eaten up with worms and expired."

See also Acts 14:11-15; Rev. 22:8, 9.

Servants of God Noted for Not Celebrating Birthdays; Only Pagans Observed Such Celebrations

"Origen [third century C.E. Bible commentator] . . . insists that 'of all the holy people in the Scriptures, no one is recorded to have kept a feast or held a great banquet on his birthday. It is only sinners (like Pharaoh and Herod) who make great rejoicings over the day on which they were born.'"—*The Catholic Encyclopedia* (New York; 1911), Vol. X, p. 709.

"Certainly we are told that the later Hebrews looked on the celebration of birth-days as a part of idolatrous worship, a view which would be abundantly confirmed by what they saw of the common observances associated with these days."—*The Imperial Bible-Dictionary* (London; 1874), edited by Patrick Fairbairn, Vol. I, p. 225.

Gen. 40:20 "Now on the third day it turned out to be Pharaoh's birthday, and he proceeded to make a feast for all his servants."

Matt. 14:6-10 "When Herod's birthday was being celebrated the daughter of Herodias danced at it and pleased Herod so much that he promised with an oath to give her whatever she asked. Then she, under her mother's coaching, said: 'Give me here upon a platter the head of John the Baptist.' Grieved though he was, the king out of regard for his oaths and for those reclining with him commanded it to be given; and he sent and had John beheaded in the prison." (See also Mark 6:21.)

Meeting Together Regularly for Study of God's Word Is Upbuilding, Faith-inspiring

Heb. 10:25 "Not forsaking the gathering of ourselves together, as some have the custom, but encouraging one another, and all the more so as you behold the day drawing near."

Acts 2:42 "They continued devoting themselves to the teaching of the apostles and to sharing with one another, to taking of meals and to prayers."

"We are a society with a common religious feeling, unity of discipline, a common bond of hope. We meet in gathering and congregation to approach God in prayer. . . . We meet to read the books of God. . . . In any case, with those holy words we feed our faith, we lift up our hope, we confirm our confidence; and no less we reinforce our teaching by inculcation of God's precepts. There is, besides, exhortation in our gatherings."—*Apology*, Tertullian, a convert to Christianity about 190 C.E., xxxix, 3, 4, translated from the Latin in "The Loeb Classical Library" (London; 1931), by T. R. Glover, p. 175.

"The account . . . , given by a Christian writer who flourished about the middle of the second century, is exceedingly instructive. 'On the day which is called Sunday,' says Justin Martyr, 'there is a meeting together in one place of all who dwell either in towns or in the country; and the memoirs of the apostles, or the writings of the prophets are read, as long as the time permits. When the reading ceases, the president delivers a discourse, in which he makes an application and exhorts to the imitation of these good things. We then rise all together and pray.'"—*The Ancient Church* (New York; 1859), William D. Killen, pp. 465, 466.

Special Conventions Where God's Word Is Discussed Instruct and Unify Attenders, Result in Praise to Jehovah

Acts 2:1-4 "Now while the day of the festival of Pentecost was in progress they were all together at the same place, and suddenly there occurred from heaven a noise just like that of a rushing stiff breeze, and it filled the whole house in which they were sitting. . . . and they all became filled with holy spirit and started to speak with different tongues."

Neh. 8:1-3, 7, 8 "All the people proceeded to gather themselves as one man at the public square . . . Then they said to Ezra the copyist to bring the book of the law of Moses, which Jehovah had commanded Israel. Accordingly Ezra the priest brought the law before the congregation of men as well as of women and of all intelligent enough to listen, on the first day of the seventh month. And he continued to read aloud from it before the public square . . . from daybreak till midday, in front of the men and the women and the other intelligent ones; . . . the Levites, were explaining the law to the people, while the people were in a standing position. And they continued reading aloud from the book, from the law of the true God, it being expounded, and there being a putting of meaning into it; and they continued giving understanding in the reading."

2 Chron. 5:1-3, 13; 6:3 "All the work that Solomon had to do for the house of Jehovah was at its completion, and Solomon began to bring in the things made holy by David his father . . . It was then that Solomon proceeded to congregate the older men of Israel and all the heads of the tribes, the chieftains of the paternal houses of the sons of Israel, to Jerusalem, to bring the ark of the covenant of Jehovah up from the city of David, that is to say, Zion. So all the men of Israel congregated themselves to the king at the festival . . . it came about that as soon as the trumpeters and the singers were as one in causing one sound to be heard in praising and thanking Jehovah, and as soon as they lifted up the sound with the trumpets and with the cymbals and with the instruments of song and with praising Jehovah . . . the house itself was filled with a cloud, the very house of Jehovah, . . . Then the king turned his face and began to bless all the congregation of Israel, while all the congregation of Israel were standing up."

See also Deut. 31:9-13; Josh. 24:1-25.

Charitable Works

Jehovah the Greatest Giver

Jas. 1:17 "Every good gift and every perfect present is from above, for it comes down from the Father of the celestial lights."

Acts 17:25 "Neither is he attended to by human hands as if he needed anything, because he himself gives to all persons life and breath and all things."

Ps. 145:15, 16 "To you the eyes of all look hopefully, and you are giving them their food in its season. You are opening your hand and satisfying the desire of every living thing."

John 3:16 "God loved the world so much that he gave his only-begotten Son."

Rom. 6:23 "The gift God gives is everlasting life by Christ Jesus our Lord."

2 Cor. 9:15 "Thanks be to God for his indescribable free gift."

Give Freely, Without Show, to Honor God

Rom. 12:8 "He that distributes, let him do it with liberality."

Heb. 13:16 "Do not forget the doing of good and the sharing of things with others, for with such sacrifices God is well pleased."

Matt. 6:1-4 "Take good care not to practice your righteousness in front of men in order to be observed by them; otherwise you will have no reward with your Father who is in the heavens. Hence when you go making gifts of mercy, do not blow a trumpet ahead of you, just as the hypocrites do . . . But you, when making gifts of mercy, do not let your left hand know what your right is doing, that your gifts of mercy may be in secret; then your Father who is looking on in secret will repay you."

Acts 20:35 "Bear in mind the words of the Lord Jesus, when he himself said, 'There is more happiness in giving than there is in receiving.'"

Gifts Given with Wrong Motive Bring No Favor from God

2 Cor. 9:7 "Let each one do just as he has resolved in his heart, not grudgingly or under compulsion, for God loves a cheerful giver."

Acts 5:1-5 "A certain man, Ananias by name, together with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession and secretly held back some of the price, his wife also knowing about it, and he brought just a part and deposited it at the feet of the apostles. But Peter said: 'Ananias, why has Satan emboldened you to play false to the holy spirit and to hold back secretly some of the price of the field? . . . You have played false, not to men, but to God.' On hearing these words Ananias fell down and expired."

1 Pet. 4:9 "Be hospitable to one another without grumbling."

Mark 7:11-13 "But you men say, 'If a man says to his father or his mother: "Whatever I have by which you may get benefit from me is corban, (that is, a gift dedicated to God,)" '—you men no longer let him do a single thing for his father or his mother, and thus you make the word of God invalid by your tradition which you handed down."

Organized Giving Voluntary, but Directed by Congregation's Appointed Men

1 Cor. 16:1-3 "Now concerning the collection that is for the holy ones, just as I gave orders to the congregations of Galatia, do that way also yourselves. Every first day of the week let each of you at his own house set something aside in store as he may be prospering, so that when I arrive collections will not take place then. But when I get there, whatever men you approve of by letters, these I shall send to carry your kind gift to Jerusalem."

2 Cor. 9:5, 7 "I thought it necessary to encourage the brothers to come to you in advance and to get ready in advance your bountiful gift previously promised, that thus this might be ready as a bountiful gift and not as something extorted. Let each one do just as he has resolved in his heart, not grudgingly or under compulsion, for God loves a cheerful giver."

Acts 11:29, 30 "Those of the disciples determined, each of them according as anyone could afford it, to send a relief ministration to the brothers dwelling in Judea; and this they did, dispatching it to the older men by the hand of Barnabas and Saul."

Rom. 15:25-27 "I am about to journey to Jerusalem to minister to the holy ones. For those in Macedonia and Achaia have been pleased to share up their things by a contribution to the poor of the holy ones in Jerusalem. True, they have been pleased to do so, and yet they were debtors to them; for if the nations have shared in their spiritual things, they also owe it to minister publicly to these with things for the physical body."

Acts 4:34, 35 "There was not one in need among them; for all those who were possessors of fields or houses would sell them and bring the values of the things sold and they would deposit them at the feet of the apostles. In turn distribution would be made to each one, just as he would have the need."

Christians' Special Responsibility to Their Brothers and Families

3 John 5-8 "You are doing a faithful work in whatever you do for the brothers, and strangers at that, who have borne witness to your love before the congregation. . . . For it was in behalf of his name that they went forth, not taking anything from the people of the nations. We, therefore, are under obligation to receive such persons hospitably."

1 Tim. 5:4, 8 "If any widow has children or grandchildren, let these learn first to practice godly devotion in their own household and to keep paying a due compensation to their parents and grandparents, for this is acceptable in God's sight. Certainly if anyone does not provide for those who are his own, and especially for those who are members of his household, he has disowned the faith and is worse than a person without faith."

2 Cor. 8:1, 4, 6, 14 "The congregations of Macedonia . . . of their own accord kept begging us with much entreaty for the privilege of kindly giving and for a share in the ministry destined for the holy ones. . . . This led us to encourage Titus that, just as he had been the one to initiate it among you, so too he should complete this same kind giving on your part . . . that by means of an equalizing your surplus just now might offset their deficiency, . . . that an equalizing might take place."

Matt. 25:34-36, 40 "Then the king will say to those on his right, 'Come, you who have my Father's blessing, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the founding of the world. For I became hungry and you gave me something to eat; I got thirsty and you gave me something to drink. I was a stranger and you received me hospitably; naked, and you clothed me. I fell sick and you looked after me. I was in prison and you came to me.' . . . 'To the extent that you did it to one of the least of these my brothers, you did it to me.'"

Rom. 12:13 "Share with the holy ones according to their needs. Follow the course of hospitality."

1 John 3:17, 18 "Whoever has this world's means for supporting life and beholds his brother having need and yet shuts the door of his tender compassions upon him, in what way does the love of God remain in him? Little children, let us love, neither in word nor with the tongue, but in deed and truth."

Jas. 2:15, 16 "If a brother or a sister is in a naked state and lacking the food sufficient for the day, yet a certain one of you says to them: 'Go in peace, keep warm and well fed,' but you do not give them the necessities for their body, of what benefit is it?"

True Religion Shows Concern for the Poor

Jas. 1:27 "The form of worship that is clean and undefiled from the standpoint of our God and Father is this: to look after orphans and widows in their tribulation, and to keep oneself without spot from the world."

Jas. 2:1-4 "My brothers, you are not holding the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, our glory, with acts of favoritism, are you? For, if a man with gold rings on his fingers and in splendid clothing enters into your public assembly, but a poor man in filthy clothing also enters, yet you look with

favor upon the one wearing the splendid clothing and say: 'You take this seat here in a fine place,' and you say to the poor one: 'You keep standing,' or: 'Take that seat there under my footstool,' you have class distinctions among yourselves and you *have become judges rendering wicked decisions.*"

Deut. 15:7, 8 "In case some one of your brothers becomes poor among you . . . you must not harden your heart or be close-fisted toward your poor brother. For you should generously open your hand to him and by all means lend him on pledge as much as he needs."

Luke 14:12-14 "When you spread a dinner or evening meal, *do not call your friends or your* brothers or your relatives or rich neighbors. Perhaps some time they might also invite you in return and it would become a repayment to you. But when you spread a feast, invite poor people, crippled, lame, blind; and you will be happy, because they have nothing with which to repay you. For you will be repaid in the resurrection of the righteous ones."

Ps. 41:1 "Happy is anyone acting with consideration toward the lowly one; in the day of calamity Jehovah will provide escape for him."

Prov. 28:27 "He that is giving to the one of little means will have no want, but he that is hiding his eyes will get many curses."

Prov. 19:17 "He that is showing favor to the lowly one is lending to Jehovah, and his treatment He will repay to him."

See also the main heading "Mercy," page 345.

Giving Spiritual Things More Important than Material

Matt. 5:3, 6 "Happy are those conscious of their spiritual need, since the kingdom of the heavens belongs to them. Happy are those hungering and thirsting for righteousness, since they will be filled."

John 6:26, 27 "Jesus . . . said: 'Most truly I say to you, You are looking for me, not because you saw signs, but because you ate from the loaves and were satisfied. Work, not for the food *that perishes, but for the food* that remains for life everlasting.'"

Luke 10:39-42 "Mary . . . sat down at the feet of the Lord and kept listening to his word. Martha, on the other hand, was distracted with attending to many duties. . . . In answer the Lord said to her: 'Martha, Martha, you are anxious and disturbed about many things. A few things, though, are needed, or just one. For her part, Mary chose the good portion, and it will not be taken away from her.'"

Matt. 11:4, 5 "Jesus said to them: 'Go your way and report to John what you are hearing and seeing: . . . the poor are having the good news declared to them.'"

1 Cor. 9:23 "I do all things for the sake of the good news, that I may become a sharer of it with others."

Matt. 24:14 "This good news of *the kingdom will be preached in* all the inhabited earth for a witness to all the nations; and then the end will come."

Eccl. 7:12 "For wisdom is for a protection the same as money is for a protection; but the advantage of knowledge is that wisdom itself preserves alive its owners."

To Get Life, Everything Must Be Given in Wholehearted Devotion to Jehovah

Luke 18:22 "Jesus said to him: 'There is yet one thing lacking about you: Sell all the things you have and distribute to poor people, and you will have treasure in the heavens; and come be my follower.'"

Luke 21:1-4 "Now as he looked up he saw the rich dropping their gifts into the treasury chests. Then he saw a certain needy widow drop two small coins of very little value there, and he said: 'I tell you truthfully, This widow, although poor, dropped in more than they all did. For all these dropped in gifts out of their surplus, but this woman out of her want dropped in all the means of living she had.'"

Mic. 6:6-8 "With what shall I confront Jehovah? . . . Shall I confront him with whole burnt offerings, with calves a year old? Will Jehovah be pleased with thousands of rams, with tens of thousands of torrents of oil? Shall I give my first-born son for my revolt, the fruitage of my belly for the sin of my soul? He has told you, O earthling man, *what is good. And what is Jehovah* asking back from you but to exercise justice and to love kindness and to be modest in walking with your God?"

1 Sam. 15:22 "Does Jehovah have as much delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices as in obeying the voice of Jehovah? Look! To obey is better than a sacrifice."

Ps. 40:6-8 "Burnt offering and sin offering you did not ask for. *In view of that, I said: 'Here* I have come, in the roll of the book it being written about me. To do your will, O my God, I have delighted, and your law is within my inward parts.'"

1 Tim. 6:17, 18 "Give orders to those who are rich in the present system of things not to be high-minded, and to rest their hope, not on uncertain riches, but on God, . . . to work at good, to be rich in fine works, to be liberal, ready to share."

See also Luke 12:33; Acts 10:1-4.

The World's Sacrifices Condemned

1 Cor. 10:20 "The things which the nations sacrifice they sacrifice to demons, and not to God."

Prov. 15:8 "The sacrifice of the wicked ones is something detestable to Jehovah." (See also Prov. 21:27.)

Matt. 23:23 "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because you give the tenth of the mint and the dill and the cummin, but you have disregarded the weightier matters of the Law, namely, justice and mercy and faithfulness. These things it was binding to do, yet not to disregard the other things."

See also Jer. 6:6, 7, 13, 20.

Children

Producing Children a Prime Purpose of Marriage

Gen. 1:27, 28 "God proceeded to create the man in his image, *in God's image he created him;* male and female he created them. Further, God blessed them and God said to them: 'Be fruitful and become many and fill the earth and subdue it, and have in subjection the fish of the sea and the flying creatures of the heavens and every living creature that is moving upon the earth.'"

Gen. 9:1 "God went on to bless Noah and his sons and to say to them: 'Be fruitful and become many and fill the earth.'"

Children a Reward from Jehovah to Godly Parents

Ps. 127:3-5 "Look! Sons are an inheritance from Jehovah; the fruitage of the belly is a reward. Like arrows in the hand of a mighty man, so are the sons of youth. Happy is the able-bodied

man that has filled his quiver with them."

Ps. 128:3, 4 "Your wife will be like a fruit-bearing vine in the innermost parts of your house. Your sons will be like slips of olive trees all around your table. Look! That is how the able-bodied man will be blessed who fears Jehovah."

Parents Have Duty to Train Their Children

Deut. 6:6, 7 "These words that I am commanding you today must prove to be on your heart; and you must inculcate them in your son and speak of them when you sit in your house and when you walk on the road and when you lie down and when you get up."

1 Tim. 3:2, 4 "The overseer should therefore be irreprehensible, a husband of one wife, . . . a man presiding over his own household in a fine manner, having children in subjection with all seriousness."

Prov. 29:17 "Chastise your son and he will bring you rest and give much pleasure to your soul."

Father bears prime responsibility

Eph. 6:4 "You, fathers, do not be irritating your children, but go on bringing them up in the discipline and authoritative advice of Jehovah."

Eph. 5:23 "A husband is head of his wife."

Mother's guidance a great influence on child's future course

Prov. 6:20-22 "Observe, O my son, the commandment of your father, and do not forsake the law of your mother. Tie them upon your heart constantly; bind them upon your throat. When you walk about, it will lead you; when you lie down, it will stand guard over you; and when you have waked up, it itself will make you its concern."

2 Tim. 1:5 "I recollect the faith which is in you without any hypocrisy, and which dwelt first in your grandmother Lois and your mother Eunice, but which I am confident is also in you."

Parents Should Look to God and His Word for Guidance in Rearing Children

Judg. 13:8 "Manoah began to entreat Jehovah and say: 'Excuse me, Jehovah. The man of the true God that you just sent, let him, please, come again to us and instruct us as to what we ought to do to the child that will be born.' "

Ps. 119:105, 130 "Your word is a lamp to my foot, and a light to my roadway. The very disclosure of your words gives light, making the inexperienced ones understand."

Teaching Children God's Ways to Begin in Infancy

2 Tim. 3:15 "From infancy you have known the holy writings, which are able to make you wise for salvation through the faith in connection with Christ Jesus."

Correction Must Be Administered, Since Adamic Inheritance Gives Children Sinful Bent

Prov. 22:15 "Foolishness is tied up with the heart of a boy; the rod of discipline is what will remove it far from him."

Prov. 23:13 "Do not hold back discipline from the mere boy. In case you beat him with the rod, he will not die."

Prov. 29:15 "The rod and reproof are what give wisdom; but a boy let on the loose will be causing his mother shame."

Prov. 19:18 "Chastise your son while there exists hope."

Discipline an expression of love

Heb. 12:6 "Whom Jehovah loves he disciplines; in fact, he scourges every one whom he receives as a son."

Prov. 3:11, 12 "The discipline of Jehovah, O my son, do not reject; and do not abhor his reproof, because the one whom Jehovah loves he reproves, even as a father does a son in whom he finds pleasure."

Prov. 13:24 "The one holding back his rod is hating his son, but the one loving him is he that does look for him with discipline."

Heb. 12:11 "No discipline seems for the present to be joyous, but grievous; yet afterward to those who have been trained by it it yields peaceable fruit, namely, righteousness."

Obedience to Parents a Divine Requirement

Eph. 6:1 "Children, be obedient to your parents in union with the Lord, for this is righteous."

Col. 3:20 "You children, be obedient to your parents in everything, for this is well-pleasing in the Lord."

Prov. 23:22 "Listen to your father who caused your birth, and do not despise your mother just because she has grown old."

Prov. 1:8 "Listen, my son, to the discipline of your father, and do not forsake the law of your mother."

Prov. 6:20 "Observe, O my son, the commandment of your father, and do not forsake the law of your mother."

Prov. 4:1 "Listen, O sons, to the discipline of a father and pay attention, so as to know understanding."

See also the main heading "Obedience," pages 359-362.

Children Trained in Godly Way Usually Continue in That Course

Prov. 22:6 "Train up a boy according to the way for him; even when he grows old he will not turn aside from it."

2 Tim. 3:14, 15 "You, however, continue in the things that you learned and were persuaded to believe, knowing from what persons you learned them and that from infancy you have known the holy writings, which are able to make you wise for salvation through the faith in connection with Christ Jesus."

Prov. 29:17 "Chastise your son and he will bring you rest and give much pleasure to your soul."

Some, despite having godly parents, manifest bad heart

Deut. 21:18-21 "In case a man happens to have a son who is stubborn and rebellious, he not listening to the voice of his father or the voice of his mother, and they have corrected him but he will not listen to them, his father and his mother must also take hold of him and bring him out to the older men of his city and to the gate of his place . . . Then all the men of his city must stone him with stones, and he must die."

1 Ki. 11:6 "Solomon began to do what was bad in the eyes of Jehovah, and he did not follow Jehovah fully like David his father."

2 Chron. 33:1-3 "Twelve years old was Manasseh when he began to reign, and for fifty-five years he reigned in Jerusalem. And he proceeded to do what was bad in Jehovah's eyes, according to the detestable things of the nations that Jehovah had driven out from before the sons of Israel. So he built again the high places that Hezekiah his father had pulled down, and set up altars to the Baals and made sacred poles, and he began to bow down to all the army of the heavens and serve them."

Children to Attend Congregation Meetings

Deut. 31:12, 13 "Congregate the people, the men and the women and the little ones and your alien resident who is within your gates, in order that they may listen and in order that they may learn, as they must fear Jehovah your God and take care to carry out all the words of this law. And their

sons who have not known should listen, and they must learn to fear Jehovah your God all the days that you are living upon the soil to which you are crossing the Jordan to take possession of it."

Matt. 19:13, 14 "Then young children were brought to him, for him to put his hands upon them and offer prayer; but the disciples reprimanded them. Jesus, however, said: 'Let the young children alone, and stop hindering them from coming to me, for the kingdom of the heavens belongs to suchlike ones.'"

Proper for Children to Share in God's Service

Eccl. 12:1 "Remember, now, your grand Creator in the days of your young manhood, before the calamitous days proceed to come, or the years have arrived when you will say: 'I have no delight in them.'"

Matt. 21:16 "Jesus said to them: 'Yes. Did you never read this, "Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings you have furnished praise"?'"

Ps. 148:12, 13 "You young men and also you virgins, you old men together with boys. Let them praise the name of Jehovah, for his name alone is unreachably high. His dignity is above earth and heaven."

Luke 2:42, 47 "And when he became twelve years old, they went up according to the custom of the festival . . . But all those listening to him were in constant amazement at his understanding and his answers."

1 Sam. 2:18 "Samuel was ministering before Jehovah, as a boy."

Children Should Show Concern for Welfare of Parents and Grandparents

1 Tim. 5:4, 8 "If any widow has children or grandchildren, let these learn first to practice godly devotion in their own household and to keep paying a due compensation to their parents and grandparents, for this is acceptable in God's sight. Certainly if anyone does not provide for those who are his own, and especially for those who are members of his household, he has disowned the faith and is worse than a person without faith."

Matt. 15:5, 6 "You say, 'Whoever says to his father or mother: "Whatever I have by which you might get benefit from me is a gift dedicated to God," he must not honor his father at all.' And so you have made the word of God invalid because of your tradition."

Deformities and Death of Children Result of Sinful Inheritance; God Not to Blame

Ps. 51:5 "Look! With error I was brought forth with birth pains, and in sin my mother conceived me."

Rom. 5:12 "Just as through one man sin entered into the world and death through sin, and thus death spread to all men because they had all sinned."

Matt. 19:12 "For there are eunuchs that were born such from their mother's womb."

Jesus, when healing, showed sin to be basis of affliction

Luke 5:18, 20, 23, 25 "Look! men carrying on a bed a man who was paralyzed, and they were seeking a way to bring him in and place him before him. And when he saw their faith he said: 'Man, your sins are forgiven you.' Which is easier, to say, 'Your sins are forgiven you,' or to say, 'Get up and walk'? And instantly he rose up before them, picked up what he used to lie on and went off to his home, glorifying God."

Jehovah has made provision to relieve humans of such afflictions

John 3:16 "God loved the world so much that he gave his only-begotten Son, in order that everyone exercising faith in him might not be destroyed but have everlasting life."

Rev. 21:4 "He will wipe out every tear from their eyes, and death will be no more, neither will mourning nor outcry nor pain be any more. The former things have passed away."

Acts 24:15 "I have hope toward God, which hope these men themselves also entertain, that there is going to be a resurrection of both the righteous and the unrighteous."

See also the main heading "Ransom," pages 408-412.

Divine Approval of Righteous Parents Extends to Dependent Children

1 Cor. 7:14 "The unbelieving husband is sanctified in relation to his wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified in relation to the brother; otherwise, your children would really be unclean, but now they are holy."

Gen. 19:12, 15 "Then the men said to Lot: 'Do you have anyone else here? Son-in-law and your sons and your daughters and all who are yours in the city, bring out of the place!' However, when the dawn ascended, then the angels became urgent with Lot, saying: 'Get up! Take your wife and your two daughters who are found here, for fear you may be swept away in the error of the city!'"

Obedience required on part of children to share God's favor to parents

Eph. 6:1, 3 "Children, be obedient to your parents in union with the Lord, . . . 'That it may go well with you and you may endure a long time on the earth.'"

Ex. 20:12 "Honor your father and your mother in order that your days may prove long upon the ground that Jehovah your God is giving you."

Col. 3:20 "You children, be obedient to your parents in everything, for this is well-pleasing in the Lord."

Divine Judgment Against Ungodly Ones Includes Dependent Children Along with Parents

Ezek. 9:5, 6 "To these others he said in my ears: 'Pass through the city after him and strike. Let not your eye feel sorry, and do not feel any compassion. Old man, young man and virgin and little child and women you should kill off—to a ruination.'"

Num. 16:25, 26, 32, 33 "After that Moses got up and went to Dathan and Abiram, and the older men of Israel went with him. Then he spoke to the assembly, saying: 'Turn aside, please, from before the tents of these wicked men and do not touch anything that belongs to them, that you may not be swept away in all their sin.' And the earth proceeded to open its mouth and to swallow up them and their households and all humankind that belonged to Korah and all the goods. So down they went, and all who belonged to them, alive into Sheol, and the earth went covering them over, so that they perished from the midst of the congregation."

Josh. 7:24, 25 "Joshua, and all Israel with him, now took Achan the son of Zerah and the silver and the official garment and the bar of gold and his sons and his daughters and his bull and his ass and his flock and his tent and everything that was his and they brought them up to the low plain of Achor. Then Joshua said: 'Why have you brought ostracism upon us? Jehovah will bring ostracism upon you on this day.' With that all Israel went pelting him with stones, after which they burned them with fire."

Deut. 2:31, 34 "At this Jehovah said to me, 'See, I have started to abandon Sihon and his land to you. Start to take possession of his land.' And we went capturing all his cities at that par-

ticular time and devoting every city to destruction, men and women and little children. We left no survivor."

Children spared if taking stand for Jehovah even though parents do not

Num. 26:10, 11 "Then the earth opened its mouth and swallowed them up. As for Korah, he died at the death of the assembly when the fire consumed two hundred and fifty men. And they came to be a symbol. However, the sons of Korah did not die."

When Grown Up, Children Must Answer for Own Conduct

Ezek. 18:20 "The soul that is sinning—it itself will die. A son himself will bear nothing because of the error of the father, and a father himself will bear nothing because of the error of the son. Upon his own self the very righteousness of the righteous one will come to be, and upon his own self the very wickedness of a wicked one will come to be."

Deut. 24:16 "Fathers should not be put to death on account of children, and children should not be put to death on account of fathers. Each one should be put to death for his own sin."

See also 2 Chron. 25:1, 3, 4.

Unprecedented Disobedience to Parents Foretold for This Critical Time

2 Tim. 3:1-3 "But know this, that in the last days critical times hard to deal with will be here. For men will be . . . disobedient to parents . . . having no natural affection."

Obedience to Parents Results in Extension of Life and Blessings

Eph. 6:1-3 "Children, be obedient to your parents in union with the Lord, for this is righteous: 'Honor your father and your mother'; which is the first command with a promise: 'That it may go well with you and you may endure a long time on the earth.' " (See also Ex. 20:12.)

Prov. 3:1, 2 "My son, my law do not forget, and my commandments may your heart observe, because length of days and years of life and peace will be added to you."

Prov. 6:20, 21, 23 "Observe, O my son, the commandment of your father, and do not forsake the law of your mother. Tie them upon your heart constantly; bind them upon your throat. For the commandment is a lamp, and a light the law is, and the reproofs of discipline are the way of life."

Rebellious Children Have No Place in the Association of God's People

Deut. 21:18-21 "In case a man happens to have a son who is stubborn and rebellious, he not listening to the voice of his father or the voice of his mother, and they have corrected him but he will not listen to them, his father and his mother must also take hold of him and bring him out to the older men of his city and to the gate of his place . . . Then all the men of his city must stone him with stones, and he must die."

Rom. 1:29, 30, 32 "Filled as they were with all unrighteousness, . . . disobedient to parents, . . . those practicing such things are deserving of death."

Worldly Associations Lead to Corrupt Conduct and Loss of Life

1 Cor. 15:33 "Do not be misled. Bad associations spoil useful habits."

Prov. 5:3-11 "As a honeycomb the lips of a strange woman keep dripping, and her palate is smoother than oil. But the aftereffect from her is as bitter as wormwood; it is as sharp as a two-edged sword. Her feet are descending to death. Her very steps take hold on Sheol itself. The path of life she does not contemplate. Her tracks have wandered she does not know where. So now, O sons, listen to me and do not turn away from the sayings of my mouth. Keep your way far off from alongside her, and do not get near to the entrance of her house, that you may not give to others your dignity, nor your years to what is cruel; that strangers may not satisfy themselves with your power, nor the things you got by pain be in the house of a foreigner, nor you have to groan in your future when your flesh and your organism come to an end."

Prov. 7:7-10, 21-27 "I was interested in discerning among the sons a young man in want of heart, passing along on the street near her corner, and in the way to her house he marches, in the twilight, in the evening of the day, at the approach of the night and the gloom. And, look! there was a woman to meet him, with the garment of a prostitute and cunning of heart. She has misled him by the abundance of her persuasiveness. By the smoothness of her lips she seduces him. All of a sudden he is going after her, like a bull that comes even to the slaughter, and just as if fettered for the discipline of a foolish man, until an arrow cleaves open his liver, just as a bird hastens into the trap, and he has not known that it involves his very soul. And now, O sons, listen to me and pay attention to the sayings of my mouth. May your heart not turn aside to her ways. Do not wander into her roadways. For many are the ones she has caused to fall down slain, and all those being killed by her are numerous. The ways to Sheol her house is; they are descending to the interior rooms of death."

Prov. 1:10-16, 18, 19 "My son, if sinners try to seduce you, do not consent. If they keep saying: 'Do go with us. Do let us lie in ambush for blood. Do let us lie in concealment for the innocent men without any cause. Let us swallow them down alive just like Sheol, even whole, like those going down into a pit. Let us find all sorts of precious valuables. Let us fill our houses with spoil. Your lot you ought to cast in among us. Let there come to be just one bag belonging to all of us'—my son, do not go in the way with them. Hold back your foot from their roadway. For their feet are those that run to sheer badness, and they keep hastening to shed blood. Consequently they themselves lie in ambush for the very blood of these; they lie in concealment for their souls. Thus are the paths of everyone making unjust profit. It takes away the very soul of its owners."

1 John 2:15, 16 "Do not be loving either the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him; because everything in the world—the desire of the flesh and the desire of the eyes and the showy display of one's means of life—does not originate with the Father, but originates with the world."

Gen. 34:1, 2 "Now Dinah the daughter of Leah, whom she had borne to Jacob, used to go out to see the daughters of the land. And Shechem the son of Hamor the Hivite, a chieftain of the land, got to see her and then took her and lay down with her and violated her."

Prov. 13:20 "He that is walking with wise persons will become wise, but he that is having dealings with the stupid ones will fare badly."

Christian Youths Should Seek Association with Fellow Believers

2 Tim. 2:22 "So, flee from the desires incidental to youth, but pursue righteousness, faith, love, peace, along with those who call upon the Lord out of a clean heart."

Christians

Term "Christians" First Applied to Jesus' Followers at Antioch in Syria

Acts 11:26 "It was first in Antioch that the disciples were by divine providence called Christians."

Christians Follow Jesus' Steps Closely

1 Pet. 2:21 "In fact, to this course you were called, because even Christ suffered for you, leaving you a model for you to follow his steps closely."

John 13:15 "For I set the pattern for you, that, just as I did to you, you should do also."

1 John 2:6 "He that says he remains in union with him is under obligation himself also to go on walking just as that one walked."

Phil. 2:5, 6 "Keep this mental attitude in you that was also in Christ Jesus, who, although he was existing in God's form, gave no consideration to a seizure, namely, that he should be equal to God."

True Love an Outstanding Identifying Characteristic

John 13:35 "By this all will know that you are my disciples, if you have love among yourselves."

John 15:17 "These things I command you, that you love one another."

See also 1 John 4:20.

They Look to Jesus Christ as Teacher and Exemplar

John 13:13 "You address me, 'Teacher,' and, 'Lord,' and you speak rightly, for I am such."

Matt. 23:8 "But you, do not you be called Rabbi, for one is your teacher, whereas all you are brothers."

Heb. 12:2 "Look intently at the Chief Agent and Perfecter of our faith, Jesus."

Recognize that Salvation Is God's Provision Through Jesus Christ

Rev. 7:10 "They keep on crying with a loud voice, saying: 'Salvation we owe to our God, who is seated on the throne, and to the Lamb.'"

Acts 5:30, 31 "The God of our forefathers raised up Jesus, whom you slew, hanging him upon a stake. God exalted this one as Chief Agent and Savior to his right hand, to give repentance to Israel and forgiveness of sins."

1 Thess. 5:9 "God assigned us, not to wrath, but to the acquiring of salvation through our Lord Jesus Christ."

Rom. 6:23 "The wages sin pays is death, but the gift God gives is everlasting life by Christ Jesus our Lord."

Not Involved in Affairs of World of Unbelieving Mankind

John 15:19 "If you were part of the world, the world would be fond of what is its own. Now because you are no part of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, on this account the world hates you."

Jas. 4:4 "Adulteresses, do you not know that the friendship with the world is enmity with God? Whoever, therefore, wants to be a friend of the world is constituting himself an enemy of God."

1 John 2:15 "Do not be loving either the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him."

See also the main headings "Friendship with the World," and "Neutrality."

Submit Themselves to Christ as Heavenly King

Eph. 5:24 "The congregation is in subjection to the Christ."

Col. 1:13 "He delivered us from the authority of the darkness and transplanted us into the kingdom of the Son of his love."

Eph. 1:19-22 "It is according to the operation of the mightiness of his strength, with which he has operated in the case of the Christ when he raised him up from the dead and seated him at his right hand in the heavenly places, far above every government and authority and power and lordship and every name named, not only in this system of things, but also in that to come. He also subjected all things under his feet, and made him head over all things to the congregation."

Phil. 2:9, 10 "For this very reason also God exalted him to a superior position and kindly gave him the name that is above every other name, so that in the name of Jesus every knee should bend of those in heaven and those on earth and those under the ground."

See also Dan. 7:13, 14.

Obey worldly rulers, unless there is a conflict with God's law

1 Pet. 2:13, 14 "For the Lord's sake subject yourselves to every human creation: whether to a king as being superior or to governors as being sent by him to inflict punishment on evildoers but to praise doers of good."

Rom. 13:1 "Let every soul be in subjection to the superior authorities, for there is no authority except by God; the existing authorities stand placed in their relative positions by God."

Matt. 22:21 "They said: 'Caesar's.' Then he said to them: 'Pay back, therefore, Caesar's things to Caesar, but God's things to God.'"

Titus 3:1 "Continue reminding them to be in subjection and be obedient to governments and authorities as rulers, to be ready for every good work."

Acts 4:19, 20 "But in reply Peter and John said to them: 'Whether it is righteous in the sight of God to listen to you rather than to God, judge for yourselves. But as for us, we cannot stop speaking about the things we have seen and heard.'"

See also Acts 5:27-29.

Serve as soldiers of Christ in spiritual warfare

2 Tim. 2:3 "As a fine soldier of Christ Jesus take your part in suffering evil."

2 Cor. 10:4 "For the weapons of our warfare are not fleshly, but powerful by God for overturning strongly entrenched things."

1 Tim. 1:18 "This mandate I commit to you, child, Timothy, in accord with the predictions that led directly on to you, that by these you may go on waging the fine warfare."

Eph. 6:12, 13 "We have a fight, not against blood and flesh, but against the governments, against the authorities, against the world rulers of this darkness, against the wicked spirit forces in the heavenly places. On this account take up the complete suit of armor from God, that you may be able to resist in the wicked day and, after you have done all things thoroughly, to stand firm."

See also the main heading "War," pages 491, 492.

Their Religion Is a Way of Life, Not Simply a Set of Teachings or Performance of Rituals

Acts 19:9 "When some went on hardening themselves and not believing, speaking injuriously about The Way before the multitude, he withdrew from them and separated the disciples from them."

Acts 19:23 "At that particular time there arose no little disturbance concerning The Way."

Acts 9:1, 2 "Saul, still breathing threat and murder against the disciples of the Lord, went to the high priest and asked him for letters to the synagogues in Damascus, in order that he might bring bound to Jerusalem any whom he found who belonged to The Way, both men and women."

Acts 22:4 "I persecuted this Way to the death, binding and handing over to prisons both men and women."

Acts 24:14 "I do admit this to you, that, according to the way that they call a 'sect,' in this manner I am rendering sacred service to the God of my forefathers, as I believe all the things set forth in the Law and written in the Prophets."

Acts 18:25 "This man had been orally instructed in the way of Jehovah."

2 Pet. 2:2 "Furthermore, many will follow their acts of loose conduct, and on account of these the way of the truth will be spoken of abusively."

Titus 2:6-8 "Keep on exhorting the younger men to be sound in mind, in all things showing yourself an example of fine works; showing uncorruptness in your teaching, seriousness, wholesome speech which cannot be condemned; so that the man on the opposing side may get ashamed, having nothing vile to say about us."

See also 1 Pet. 2:12; 4:4.

Christians Put Aside the Works of the Flesh, Manifest the Fruits of the Spirit

Eph. 4:17, 19-24 "This, therefore, I say and bear witness to in the Lord, that you no longer go on walking just as the nations also walk in the unprofitableness of their minds. Having come to be past all moral sense, they gave themselves over to loose conduct to work uncleanness of every sort with greediness. But you did not learn the Christ to be so, provided, indeed, that you heard him and were taught by means of him, just as truth is in Jesus, that you should put away the old personality which conforms to your former course of conduct and which is being corrupted according to his deceptive desires; but that you should be made new in the force actuating your mind, and should put on the new personality which was created according to God's will in true righteousness and loyalty."

Gal. 5:19-23 "Now the works of the flesh are manifest, and they are fornication, uncleanness, loose conduct, idolatry, practice of spiritism, hatreds, strife, jealousy, fits of anger, contentions, divisions, sects, envies, drunken bouts, revelries, and things like these. As to these things I am forewarning you, the same way as I did forewarn you, that those who practice such things will not inherit God's kingdom. On the other hand, the fruitage of the spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, kindness, goodness, faith, mildness, self-control."

1 Pet. 2:1-3 "Accordingly, put away all moral badness and all deceitfulness and hypocrisy and envies and all sorts of backbiting, and, as newborn infants, form a longing for the unadulterated milk belonging to the word, that through it you may grow to salvation, provided you have tasted that the Lord is kind."

Rom. 12:2 "Quit being fashioned after this system of things, but be transformed by making your mind over, that you may prove to yourselves the good and acceptable and perfect will of God."

1 Pet. 4:3, 4 "The time that has passed by is sufficient for you to have worked out the will of the nations when you proceeded in deeds of loose conduct, lusts, excesses with wine, revelries, drinking matches, and illegal idolatries. Because you do not continue running with them in this course to the same low sink of debauchery, they are puzzled and go on speaking abusively of you."

2 Cor. 7:1 "Therefore, since we have these promises, beloved ones, let us cleanse ourselves of every defilement of flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in God's fear."

Like Jesus, Christians Are Witnesses of Jehovah God

Rev. 1:5 "From Jesus Christ, 'the Faithful Witness.' "

Rev. 3:14 "To the angel of the congregation in Laodicea write: These are the things that the Amen says, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation by God."

John 17:6 "I have made your name manifest to the men you gave me out of the world." (See also v. 26.)

1 Tim. 6:13 "Christ Jesus, who as a witness made the fine public declaration before Pontius Pilate."

Rom. 15:5, 6 "Now may the God who supplies endurance and comfort grant you to have among yourselves the same mental attitude that Christ Jesus had, that with one accord you may with one mouth glorify the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ."

Isa. 43:10, 12 " 'You are my witnesses,' is the utterance of Jehovah, 'even my servant whom I have chosen, in order that you may know and have faith in me, and that you may understand that I am the same One. Before me there was no God formed, and after me there continued to be none. . . . So you are my witnesses,' is the utterance of Jehovah, 'and I am God.' "

Heb. 13:15 "Through him let us always offer to God a sacrifice of praise, that is, the fruit of lips which make public declaration to his name."

Witnesses Also Concerning Jesus Christ

Acts 1:8 "You will receive power when the holy spirit arrives upon you, and you will be witnesses of me both in Jerusalem and in all Judea and Samaria and to the most distant part of the earth."

Acts 5:42 "Every day in the temple and from house to house they continued without letup teaching and declaring the good news about the Christ, Jesus."

Acts 20:21 "I thoroughly bore witness both to Jews and to Greeks about repentance toward God and faith in our Lord Jesus."

Acts 18:5 "When, now, both Silas and Timothy came down from Macedonia, Paul began to be intensely occupied with the word, witnessing to the Jews to prove that Jesus is the Christ."

Rev. 12:17 "The dragon grew wrathful at the woman, and went off to wage war with the remaining ones of her seed, who observe the commandments of God and have the work of bearing witness to Jesus."

1 John 4:14 "In addition, we ourselves have beheld and are bearing witness that the Father has sent forth his Son as Savior of the world."

Acts 10:40-42 "God raised this One up on the third day and granted him to become manifest, not to all the people, but to witnesses appointed beforehand by God, to us, who ate and drank with him after his rising from the dead. Also, he ordered us to preach to the people and to give a thorough witness that this is the One decreed by God to be judge of the living and the dead." (See also Acts 13:31.)

Acts 5:30, 32 "The God of our forefathers raised up Jesus, whom you slew, hanging him upon a stake. And we are witnesses of these matters, and so is the holy spirit, which God has given to those obeying him as ruler."

All Christians Are to Be Preachers of the Good News

Matt. 28:19, 20 "Go therefore and make disciples of people of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the holy spirit,

teaching them to observe all the things I have commanded you."

Rom. 10:9, 10 "If you publicly declare that 'word in your own mouth,' that Jesus is Lord, and exercise faith in your heart that God raised him up from the dead, you will be saved. For with the heart one exercises faith for righteousness, but with the mouth one makes public declaration for salvation."

Rev. 22:17 "The spirit and the bride keep on saying: 'Come!' And let anyone hearing say: 'Come!' And let anyone thirsting come; let anyone that wishes take life's water free."

Luke 10:9 "Go on telling them, 'The kingdom of God has come near to you.'"

Isa. 61:1 "The spirit of the Lord Jehovah is upon me, for the reason that Jehovah has anointed me to tell good news to the meek ones. He has sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to those taken captive and the wide opening of the eyes even to the prisoners."

1 Cor. 9:16 "Woe is me if I did not declare the good news!"

1 Cor. 11:1 "Become imitators of me, even as I am of Christ."

See also the main heading "Minister of God," page 348.

Expect to Suffer Persecution; No Cause for Shame

1 Pet. 4:16 "If he suffers as a Christian, let him not feel shame, but let him keep on glorifying God in this name."

2 Tim. 3:12 "All those desiring to live with godly devotion in association with Christ Jesus will also be persecuted."

John 15:20 "Bear in mind the word I said to you, A slave is not greater than his master. If they have persecuted me, they will persecute you also."

Mark 13:9 "As for you, look out for yourselves; people will deliver you up to local courts, and you will be beaten in synagogues and be put on the stand before governors and kings for my sake, for a witness to them."

Rev. 2:10 "Do not be afraid of the things you are about to suffer. Look! The Devil will keep on throwing some of you into prison that you may be fully put to the test, and that you may have tribulation ten days. Prove yourself faithful even to death, and I will give you the crown of life."

1 Pet. 3:14 "Even if you should suffer for the sake of righteousness, you are happy."

Luke 6:22, 23 "Happy are you whenever men hate you, and whenever they exclude you and reproach you and cast out your name as wicked for the sake of the Son of man. Rejoice in that day and leap, for, look! your reward is great in heaven, for those are the same things their forefathers used to do to the prophets."

John 16:33 "I have said these things to you that by means of me you may have peace. In the world you will have tribulation, but take courage! I have conquered the world."

1 Pet. 5:9 "The same things in the way of sufferings are being accomplished in the entire association of your brothers in the world."

144,000 Are Called to Heavenly Life with Jesus Christ

Rev. 7:3, 4 "'Do not harm the earth or the sea or the trees, until after we have sealed the slaves of our God in their foreheads.' And I heard the number of those who were sealed, a hundred and forty-four thousand, sealed out of every tribe of the sons of Israel."

Rev. 14:1 "I saw, and, look! the Lamb standing upon the Mount Zion, and with him a hundred and forty-four thousand having his name and the name of his Father written on their foreheads."

Luke 12:32 "Have no fear, little flock, because your Father has approved of giving you the kingdom."

1 Pet. 1:3, 4 "Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, for according to his great mercy he gave us a new birth to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, to an incorruptible and undefiled and unfading inheritance. It is reserved in the heavens for you."

Others, Submitting Themselves to Christ, Have Hope of Eternal Life on Earth

Rev. 7:9, 10 "After these things I saw, and, look! a great crowd, which no man was able to number, out of all nations and tribes and peoples and tongues, standing before the throne and before the Lamb, dressed in white robes; and there were palm branches in their hands. And they keep on crying with a loud voice, saying: 'Salvation we owe to our God, who is seated on the throne, and to the Lamb.'"

Ps. 37:29 "The righteous themselves will possess the earth, and they will reside forever upon it."

Rev. 21:3, 4 "With that I heard a loud voice from the throne say: 'Look! The tent of God is with mankind, and he will reside with them, and they will be his peoples. And God himself will be with them. And he will wipe out every tear from their eyes, and death will be no more, neither will mourning nor outcry nor pain be any more. The former things have passed away.'"

John 3:16 "God loved the world so much that he gave his only-begotten Son, in order that everyone exercising faith in him might not be destroyed but have everlasting life."

A United, Organized People; Not Scattered Throughout Sects of Christendom

John 10:16 "I have other sheep, which are not of this fold; those also I must bring, and they will listen to my voice, and they will become one flock, one shepherd."

John 17:20, 21 "I make request, not concerning these only, but also concerning those putting faith in me through their word; in order that they may all be one, just as you, Father, are in union with me and I am in union with you, that they also may be in union with us, in order that the world may believe that you sent me forth."

1 Cor. 1:10 "Now I exhort you, brothers, through the name of our Lord Jesus Christ that you should all speak in agreement, and that there should not be divisions among you, but that you may be fitly united in the same mind and in the same line of thought."

Not All Who Bear the Name "Christian" Are Really Disciples of Jesus

Matt. 7:21-23 "Not everyone saying to me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter into the kingdom of the heavens, but the one doing the will of my Father who is in the heavens will. Many will say to me in that day, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your name, and expel demons in your name, and perform many powerful works in your name?' And yet then I will confess to them: I never knew you! Get away from me, you workers of lawlessness."

2 Cor. 11:13-15 "Such men are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into apostles of Christ. And no wonder, for Satan himself keeps transforming himself into an angel of light. It is therefore nothing great if his ministers also keep transforming themselves into ministers of righteousness. But their end shall be according to their works."

2 Pet. 2:1 "However, there also came to be false prophets among the people, as there will also be false teachers among you.

These very ones will quietly bring in destructive sects and will disown even the owner that bought them, bringing speedy destruction upon themselves."

Rom. 16:17, 18 "Now I exhort you, brothers, to keep your eye on those who cause divisions and occasions for stumbling contrary to the teaching that you have learned, and avoid them. For men of that sort are slaves, not of our Lord Christ, but of their own bellies; and by smooth talk and complimentary speech they seduce the hearts of guileless ones."

Chronology

Back to Adam's Creation

Secular chronologers generally agree Babylon fell in October of 539 B.C.E.; this event is recorded in the Bible

Dan. 5:30, 31 "In that very night Belshazzar the Chaldean king was killed, and Darius the Mede himself received the kingdom."

"In 539 B.C. Babylon fell without a struggle to the Achaemenid Persian, Cyrus the Great."—*The Encyclopedia Americana* (New York; 1956), Vol. III, p. 9.

"Nabunaid [Nabonidus] shared the kingship with his own oldest son Belshazzar. Belshazzar is named as the crown prince in Babylonian inscriptions . . . Belshazzar actually exercised the co-regency at Babylon . . . In the seventeenth year of King Nabunaid, Babylon fell to Cyrus the Persian. The Nabunaid chronicle gives exact dates. In the month of Tashritu on the fourteenth day, October 10, 539 B.C., the Persian forces took Sippar; on the sixteenth day, October 12, 'the army of Cyrus entered Babylon without battle.'" —*Light from the Ancient Past* (Princeton; 1959), Jack Finegan, pp. 227-229.

The Nabonidus Chronicle: "In the month of Tashritu [Tishri, Hebrew 7th month], when Cyrus attacked the army of Akkad in Opis on the Tigris . . . The 14th day, Sippar was seized without battle. Nabonidus fled. The 16th day [October 11-12, 539 B.C.E., Julian, or October 5-6, Gregorian] Gobryas (*Ugbaru*), the governor of Gutium and the army of Cyrus entered Babylon without battle. Afterwards Nabonidus was arrested in Babylon when he returned (there). . . . In the month of Arahshamnu [Heshvan, Hebrew 8th month], the 3rd day [October 28-29, Julian], Cyrus entered Babylon."—*Ancient Near Eastern Texts Relating to the Old Testament* (Princeton; 1955), James B. Pritchard, p. 306.

After brief reign of Darius the Mede, Cyrus issued liberation decree for Jews during his first year

Dan. 9:1, 2 "In the first year of Darius the son of Ahasuerus of the seed of the Medes, who had been made king over the kingdom of the Chaldeans; in the first year of his reigning I myself, Daniel, discerned by the books the number of the years concerning which the word of Jehovah had occurred to Jeremiah the prophet, for fulfilling the devastations of Jerusalem, namely, seventy years."

Ezra 1:1-3 "In the first year of Cyrus the king of Persia, that Jehovah's word from the mouth of Jeremiah might be accomplished, Jehovah roused the spirit of Cyrus the king of Persia so that he caused a cry to pass through all his realm, and also in writing, saying: 'This is what Cyrus the king of Persia has said, 'All the kingdoms of the earth Jehovah the God of the heavens has given me, and he himself has commissioned me to build him a house in Jerusalem, which is in Judah. Whoever there is among you of all his people, may his God prove to be with him. So let him go up to Jerusalem, which is in Judah, and rebuild the house of Jehovah the God of Israel.'"

After long overland trek, Jews were back in Jerusalem by seventh month, or early autumn of 537 B.C.E.

Ezra 3:1 "When the seventh month [September-October] arrived the sons of Israel were in their cities. And the people began to gather themselves as one man to Jerusalem."

"It was a risky business to leave this wealthy country of Babylon . . . and to set out on the difficult road back to the ruins of a ravaged land. Despite this, in the spring of 537 B.C., after long preparations a lengthy caravan set out on the trail toward the old homeland. . . . Almost 800 miles have to be covered between Babylon and distant Jerusalem." —*The Bible As History* (New York; 1956), Werner Keller, p. 313.

See also the main heading "Babylon the Great," page 38.

70 years from Jews' restoration to Judah in 537 B.C.E. back to time of the complete desolation of the land following Jerusalem's destruction in 607 B.C.E.

Dan. 9:2 "I myself, Daniel, discerned by the books the number of the years concerning which the word of Jehovah had occurred to Jeremiah the prophet, for fulfilling the devastations of Jerusalem, namely, seventy years."

Jer. 25:11, 12; 29:10 "All this land must become a devastated place, an object of astonishment, and these nations will have to serve the king of Babylon seventy years. And it must occur that when seventy years have been fulfilled I shall call to account against the king of Babylon and against that nation," "For this is what Jehovah has said, 'In accord with the fulfilling of seventy years at Babylon I shall turn my attention to you people, and I will establish toward you my good word in bringing you back to this place.'"

2 Chron. 36:20, 21 "He carried off those remaining from the sword captive to Babylon . . . to fulfill Jehovah's word by the mouth of Jeremiah, until the land had paid off its sabbaths. All the days of lying desolated it kept sabbath, to fulfill seventy years."

"I will now relate what hath been written concerning us in the Chaldean histories, which records have a great agreement with our books . . . Berosus [Babylonian priest and historian of the third century B.C.E.] shall be witness to what I say . . . relating the acts of [Nabopolassar], he describes to us,—'How he sent his son Nabuchodonosor [Nebuchadnezzar] . . . against our land . . . and how . . . he . . . set our temple that was at Jerusalem on fire; nay, and removed our people entirely out of their own country, and transferred them to Babylon; when it so happened, that our city was desolate during the interval of seventy years, until the days of Cyrus king of Persia.'" —Flavius Josephus, the Jewish historian, in *Antiquity of the Jews, Flavius Josephus Against Apion*, Book 1, section 19, as translated in *The Works of Flavius Josephus* (Philadelphia; 1875), William Whiston, Vol. 2, p. 483.

390 years from Jerusalem's destruction, in 607 B.C.E., back to the beginning of the "error of the house of Israel," at the time it broke away from Judah and set up its own government and calf worship

Ezek. 4:1, 2, 4-6 "And you, O son of man, take for yourself a

brick, and you must put it before you and engrave upon it a city, even Jerusalem. And you must lay siege against it . . . And as for you, lie upon your left side, and you must lay the error of the house of Israel upon it. For the number of the days that you will lie upon it you will carry their error. And I myself must give to you the years of their error to the number of three hundred and ninety days, and you must carry the error of the house of Israel. . . . A day for a year, a day for a year, is what I have given you."

2 Ki. 17:21 "He ripped Israel off from the house of David [in 997 B.C.E.], and they proceeded to make Jeroboam the son of Nebat king; and Jeroboam proceeded to part Israel from following Jehovah, and he caused them to sin with a great sin."

See also the "Table of Contemporary Kings and Prophets and Related Events" (with Scripture Proof-Texts) on pages 160-163 of the book *"Equipped for Every Good Work"* (Brooklyn; 1946), Watchtower Bible and Tract Society, Inc.

37 years from conclusion of Solomon's reign back to the beginning of construction of Jehovah's temple in Jerusalem

1 Ki. 11:42 "The days that Solomon had reigned in Jerusalem over all Israel were forty years."

1 Ki. 6:1 "It came about in the four hundred and eightieth year after the sons of Israel came out from the land of Egypt, in the fourth year, in the month of Ziv, that is, the second month, after Solomon became king over Israel, that he proceeded to build the house to Jehovah."

479 years from commencement of work on temple back to the exodus of Israelites from Egypt

1 Ki. 6:1 "It came about in the four hundred and eightieth year [note: 480th year, not 480 years] after the sons of Israel came out from the land of Egypt . . . that [Solomon] proceeded to build the house to Jehovah."

430 years from the exodus back to the time of Abram's entering the land of Canaan

Ex. 12:40, 41 "The dwelling of the sons of Israel, who had dwelt in Egypt, was four hundred and thirty years. And it came about at the end of the four hundred and thirty years, it even came about on this very day that all the armies of Jehovah went out of the land of Egypt."

Gal. 3:17 "As to the covenant [with Abram] previously validated by God, the Law that has come into being four hundred and thirty years later does not invalidate it."

427 years from Abram's entry into Canaan back to the Flood

Gen. 11:10 to 12:5 "Shem was a hundred years old when he became father to Arpachshad two years after the deluge. . . . And Arpachshad lived thirty-five years. Then he became father to Shelah. . . . And Shelah lived thirty years. Then he became father to Eber. . . . And Eber lived on for thirty-four years. Then he became father to Peleg. . . . And Peleg lived on for thirty years. Then he became father to Reu. . . . And Reu lived on for thirty-two years. Then he became father to Serug. . . . And Serug lived on for thirty years. Then he became father to Nahor. . . . And Nahor lived on for twenty-nine years. Then he became father to Terah. . . . And Terah . . . became father to Abram, Nahor and Haran. . . . And the days of Terah came to be two hundred and five years. Then Terah died in Haran. . . . At that Abram went just as Jehovah had spoken to him . . . And Abram was seventy-five years old when he went out from Haran. . . . Finally they came to the land of Canaan."

From the beginning of the Flood to Arpachshad's birth	2	years
Then to the birth of Shelah	35	"
To the birth of Eber	30	"
To the birth of Peleg	34	"
To the birth of Reu	30	"
To the birth of Serug	32	"
To the birth of Nahor	30	"
To the birth of Terah	29	"
To the death of Terah, when Abraham was 75 years old	205	"
	427	years

1,656 years from the Flood back to Adam's creation

Gen. 5:3-29; 7:6 "Adam lived on for a hundred and thirty years. Then he became father to . . . Seth. . . . And Seth lived on for a hundred and five years. Then he became father to Enosh. . . . And Enosh lived on for ninety years. Then he became father to Kenan. . . . And Kenan lived on for seventy years. Then he became father to Mahalalel. . . . And Mahalalel lived on for sixty-five years. Then he became father to Jared. . . . And Jared lived on for a hundred and sixty-two years. Then he became father to Enoch. . . . And Enoch lived on for sixty-five years. Then he became father to Methuselah. . . . And Methuselah lived on for a hundred and eighty-seven years. Then he became father to Lamech. . . . And Lamech lived on for a hundred and eighty-two years. Then he became father to . . . Noah." "And Noah was six hundred years old when the deluge of waters occurred on the earth."

From Adam's creation to the birth of Seth	130	years
Then to the birth of Enosh	105	"
To the birth of Kenan	90	"
To the birth of Mahalalel	70	"
To the birth of Jared	65	"
To the birth of Enoch	162	"
To the birth of Methuselah	65	"
To the birth of Lamech	187	"
To the birth of Noah	182	"
To the Flood	600	"
	1,656	years

Length of Each of the Seven "Days" of Creation About 7,000 Years

"Day" has various meanings

Gen. 1:5 "God began calling the light Day, but the darkness he called Night."

Gen. 2:4 "This is a history of the heavens and the earth in the time of their being created, in the day that Jehovah God made earth and heaven."

Ex. 20:11 "In six days Jehovah made the heavens and the earth, the sea and everything that is in them, and he proceeded to rest on the seventh day."

Luke 17:26-30 "Just as it occurred in the days of Noah, so it will be also in the days of the Son of man: . . . Likewise, just as it occurred in the days of Lot: . . . The same way it will be on that day when the Son of man is to be revealed."

2 Pet. 3:8 "Let this one fact not be escaping your notice, beloved ones, that one day is with Jehovah as a thousand years and a thousand years as one day."

God proceeded to rest on seventh day; no indication the "day" had concluded

Gen. 2:2, 3 "By the seventh day God came to the completion of his work that he had made, and he proceeded to rest on the seventh day from all his work that he had made. And God proceeded to bless the seventh day and make it sacred, because on it he has been resting from all his work that God has created for the purpose of making."

Ex. 20:11 "In six days Jehovah made the heavens and the earth, the sea and everything that is in them, and he proceeded to rest on the seventh day. That is why Jehovah blessed the sabbath day and proceeded to make it sacred."

Day of God's rest continues, now nearly 6,000 years

Heb. 3:17, 18; 4:1 "With whom did God become disgusted for forty years? Was it not with those who sinned, whose carcasses fell in the wilderness? But to whom did he swear that they should not enter into his rest except to those who acted disobediently?" "Therefore . . . a promise is left of entering into his rest."

Heb. 4:3-11 "We who have exercised faith do enter into the rest, just as he has said [*about 1500 B.C.E.*]: 'So I swore in my anger, "They shall not enter into my rest,"' although his works were finished from the founding of the world. For in one place he has said of the seventh day as follows: 'And God rested on the seventh day from all his works,' and again in this place: 'They shall not enter into my rest.' Since, therefore, it remains for some to enter into it, and those to whom the good news was first declared did not enter in because of disobedience, he again marks off a certain day by saying after so long a time in David's psalm [*about 1000 B.C.E.*] 'Today'; just as it has been said above: 'Today if you people listen to his own voice, do not harden your hearts.' For if Joshua had led them into a place of rest, God would not afterward [*about 400 years afterward, in David's time*] have spoken of another day. So there remains a sabbath resting for the people of God. For the man that has entered into God's rest has also himself rested from his own works, just as God did from his own. Let us therefore do our utmost to enter into that rest."

See also chronology "Back to Adam's Creation" on pages 84-87.

Thousand-year reign of Christ, the "Lord of the sabbath," yet to come

Rev. 20:4-6 "They came to life and ruled as kings with the Christ for a thousand years. . . . they will be priests of God and of the Christ, and will rule as kings with him for the thousand years."

Matt. 12:8 "For Lord of the sabbath is what the Son of man is."

Rev. 20:1-3 "An angel . . . seized the dragon, the original serpent, who is the Devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years. . . . that he might not mislead the nations any more until the thousand years were ended."

After Satan is destroyed following the thousand years, God will see that 'it is good'

Rev. 20:7-10, 14, 15 "Now as soon as the thousand years have been ended, Satan will be let loose out of his prison, and he will go out to mislead those nations in the four corners of the earth . . . But fire came down out of heaven and devoured them. And the Devil who was misleading them was hurled into the lake of fire and sulphur . . . This means the second death, the lake of fire. Furthermore, whoever was not found written in the book of life was hurled into the lake of fire."

Reasonably, each "day" of creation is same length as the others, even as days of week are of equal length

Ex. 20:8-11 "Remembering the sabbath day to hold it sacred, you are to render service and you must do all your work six days. But the seventh day is a sabbath to Jehovah your God. You must not do any work . . . For in six days Jehovah made the heavens and the earth, the sea and everything that is in them, and he proceeded to rest on the seventh day. That is why Jehovah blessed the sabbath day and proceeded to make it sacred."

Prophetic Days —"A Day for a Year"

Num. 14:34 "By the number of the days that you spied out the land, forty days, a day for a year, a day for a year, you will answer for your errors forty years."

Ezek. 4:6 "And you must lie upon your right side in the second case, and you must carry the error of the house of Judah forty days. A day for a year, a day for a year, is what I have given you."

Time of Appearance of Messiah Foretold Long in Advance

Dan. 9:24, 25 "There are seventy weeks ["weeks of years," *Moffatt, An American Translation*] that have been determined upon your people . . . you should know and have the insight that from the going forth of the word [issued by Artaxerxes I in 455 B.C.E.; see *Christology of the Old Testament* (Alexandria, D.C.; 1836), by E. W. Hengstenberg, vol. 2, p. 394, and Nehemiah 2:1-8] to restore and to rebuild Jerusalem until Messiah [= Anointed One or Christ] the Leader, there will be seven weeks [= 49 years], also sixty-two weeks [= 434 years]." (49 years plus 434 years = 483 years. From 455 B.C.E. to 1 C.E. is 455 years; from 1 C.E. to 29 C.E. is 28 years. 455 plus 28 = 483 years. In the year 29 C.E., after Jesus was baptized by John in the Jordan River, God poured out his spirit on him, anointed him; he became the Messiah, Christ, or Anointed One. See Luke 3:21, 22; 4:14-18.)

Jesus Born in Bethlehem About 2 B.C.E.

John the Baptist started baptizing in the fifteenth year of Tiberius Caesar

Luke 3:1-3, 21 "In the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Caesar [which ended in August, 29 C.E., according to *Light from the Ancient Past* (Princeton; 1959), Jack Finegan, p. 250; see also *The Encyclopedia Americana* (New York; 1956), Vol. 2, p. 548, and Vol. 26, p. 606] . . . God's declaration came to John the son of Zechariah in the wilderness. So he came into all the country around the Jordan, preaching baptism . . . Now when all the people were baptized, Jesus also was baptized."

(See also evidence concerning the date of Jesus' baptism based on Daniel's prophecy, above.)

Jesus was born "about thirty years" before his baptism, or in 2 B.C.E.

Luke 3:21-23 "Jesus also was baptized . . . Furthermore, Jesus himself, when he commenced his work, was about thirty years old." (From 29 C.E. back to 1 B.C.E. is 29 years; one more year brings us to 2 B.C.E.)

See also the main heading "Celebrations," page 63.

"Appointed Times of the Nations" Expired in 1914 C.E.

Line of rulers in typical kingdom of God interrupted, 607 B.C.E.

Ezek. 21:25-27 "As for you, O deadly wounded, wicked chieftain of Israel [King Zedekiah], whose day has come in the time of the error of the end, this is what the

Lord Jehovah has said, 'Remove the turban, and lift off the crown. This will not be the same. Put on high even what is low, and bring low even the high one. A ruin, a ruin, a ruin I shall make it. As for this also, it will certainly become no one's until he comes who has the legal right, and I must give it to him.'"

Luke 21:24 "Jerusalem will be trampled on by the nations, until the appointed times of the nations are fulfilled."

See also chronology "Back to Adam's Creation" on pages 84, 85.

Daniel 4 is a prophecy concerning the exercise of world domination by the kingdom of God

Dan. 4:17 "By the decree of watchers the thing is, and by the saying of holy ones the request is, to the intent that people living may know that the Most High is Ruler in the kingdom of mankind and that to the one whom he wants to, he gives it and he sets up over it even the lowliest one of mankind."

Seven times to pass until God gives the kingdom "to the one he wants to"

Dan. 4:31, 32, 16 "There was a voice that fell from the heavens: 'To you it is being said, O Nebuchadnezzar the king, "The kingdom itself has gone away from you, and from mankind they are driving even you away, and with the beasts of the field your dwelling will be. Vegetation they will give even to you to eat just like bulls, and seven times ["years," *An American Translation, Moffatt*] themselves will pass over you, until you know that the Most High is Ruler in the kingdom of mankind, and that to the one whom he wants to he gives it."' 'Let its heart be changed from that of mankind, and let the heart of a beast be given to it, and let seven times ["years," *An American Translation, Moffatt*] pass over it.'"

Prophetic year counted as twelve thirty-day months, or 360 days

Rev. 11:2, 3 "As for the courtyard that is outside the temple sanctuary, cast it clear out and do not measure it, because it has been given to the nations, and they will trample the holy city underfoot for forty-two months [42 x 30 days = 1,260 days]. And I will cause my two witnesses to prophesy a thousand two hundred and sixty days dressed in sackcloth."

Each prophetic day counted as a year, makes 2,520 years

Num. 14:34 "A day for a year, you will answer for your errors forty years."

Ezek. 4:6 "A day for a year, a day for a year, is what I have given you."

2,520 years from autumn of 607 B.C.E. runs to autumn of 1914

From about October 1, 607 B.C.E., to December 31, 1 B.C.E., is 606¼ years. From January 1 of the year 1 C.E. to about October 1 of 1914 C.E. is 1,913¾ years. 606¼ plus 1,913¾ = 2,520.

Kingdom power given to Jesus Christ, the One approved by God

Dan. 7:13, 14 "I kept on beholding in the visions of the night, and, see there! with the clouds of the heavens someone like a son of man happened to be coming; and to the Ancient of Days he gained access, and they brought him up close even before that One. And to him there were given rulership and dignity and kingdom, that the peoples, national groups and languages should all serve even him. His rulership is an indefinitely lasting rulership that will not pass away, and his kingdom one that will not be brought to ruin."

Rev. 12:1, 2, 5, 10 "A great sign was seen in heaven, a woman arrayed with the sun, and the moon was beneath her feet, and on her head was a crown of twelve stars, and she was pregnant. And she cries out in her pains and in her agony to give birth. And she gave birth to a son, a male, who is to shepherd all the nations with an iron rod. And her child was caught away to God and to his throne. . . . I heard a loud voice in heaven say: 'Now have come to pass the salvation and the power and the kingdom of our God and the authority of his Christ, because the accuser of our brothers has been hurled down, who accuses them day and night before our God!'"

See also the main heading "Sign of Christ's Presence," pages 451-456.

"Short time" until Satan is abyssed and righteousness prevails earth-wide

Rev. 12:12 "Woe for the earth and for the sea, because the Devil has come down to you, having great anger, knowing he has a short period of time."

Bible Sets No Date for Armageddon; Must Be Spiritually Awake

Matt. 24:36, 42 "Concerning that day and hour nobody knows, neither the angels of the heavens nor the Son, but only the Father. Keep on the watch, therefore, because you do not know on what day your Lord is coming."

Luke 21:34-36 "But pay attention to yourselves that your hearts never become weighed down with overeating and heavy drinking and anxieties of life, and suddenly that day be instantly upon you as a snare. For it will come in upon all those dwelling upon the face of all the earth. Keep awake, then, all the time making supplication that you may succeed in escaping all these things that are destined to occur, and in standing before the Son of man."

1 Thess. 5:6 "So, then, let us not sleep on as the rest do, but let us stay awake and keep our senses."

Rev. 16:15 "Look! I am coming as a thief. Happy is the one that stays awake and keeps his outer garments, that he may not walk naked and people look upon his shamefulness."

Beginning of Christ's Thousand-Year Reign After Putting Satan into Abyss

Rev. 20:2-6 "He seized the dragon, the original serpent, who is the Devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years. And he hurled him into the abyss and shut it and sealed it over him . . . And I saw thrones, and there were those who sat down on them, and power of judging was given them. Yes, I saw the souls of those executed with the ax for the witness they bore to Jesus and for speaking about God . . . And they came to life and ruled as kings with the Christ for a thousand years. . . . they will be priests of God and of the Christ, and will rule as kings with him for the thousand years."

Commandments

Ten Commandments

Four show responsibility toward Jehovah God

Ex. 20:1-11 "I am Jehovah your God, who have brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of slaves. [1] You must not have any other gods against my face. [2] You must not make for yourself a carved image or a form like anything that is in the heavens above or that is on the earth underneath or that

is in the waters under the earth. You must not bow down to them nor be induced to serve them, because I Jehovah your God am a God exacting exclusive devotion, bringing punishment for the error of fathers upon sons, upon the third generation and upon the fourth generation, in the case of those who hate me; but exercising loving-kindness toward the thousandth generation in the case of those who love me and keep my commandments. [3] You must not take up the name of Jehovah your God in a worthless way, for Jehovah will not leave the one unpunished who takes up his name in a worthless way. [4] Remembering the sabbath day to hold it sacred, you are to render service and you must do all your work six days. But the seventh day is a sabbath to Jehovah your God. You must not do any work."

Deut. 5:6-15 "I am Jehovah your God . . . You must never have any other gods against my face. You must not make for yourself a carved image, any form like anything that is in the heavens above or that is on the earth underneath or that is in the waters under the earth. You must not bow down to them or be led to serve them, because I Jehovah your God am a God exacting exclusive devotion . . . You must not take up the name of Jehovah your God in a worthless way, for Jehovah will not leave anyone unpunished who takes up his name in a worthless way. Keeping the sabbath day to hold it sacred, just as Jehovah your God commanded you, you are to render service, and you must do all your work six days. But the seventh day is a sabbath to Jehovah your God. You must not do any work."

Last six deal with human relations

Ex. 20:12-17 "[5] Honor your father and your mother in order that your days may prove long upon the ground that Jehovah your God is giving you. [6] You must not murder. [7] You must not commit adultery. [8] You must not steal. [9] You must not testify falsely as a witness against your fellow man. [10] You must not desire your fellow man's house. You must not desire your fellow man's wife, nor his slave man nor his slave girl nor his bull nor his ass nor anything that belongs to your fellow man."

Deut. 5:16-21 "Honor your father and your mother, just as Jehovah your God has commanded you; in order that your days may prove long and it may go well with you on the ground that Jehovah your God is giving you. You must not murder. Neither must you commit adultery. Neither must you steal. Neither must you testify to a falsehood against your fellow man. Neither must you desire your fellow man's wife. Neither must you selfishly crave your fellow man's house, his field or his slave man or his slave girl, his bull or his ass or anything that belongs to your fellow man."

More than 'keeping the Ten Commandments' is required for salvation

John 17:3 "This means everlasting life, their taking in knowledge of you, the only true God, and of the one whom you sent forth, Jesus Christ."

Heb. 5:9 "He became responsible for everlasting salvation to all those obeying him."

Rom. 10:9, 10 "If you publicly declare that 'word in your own mouth,' that Jesus is Lord, and exercise faith in your heart that God raised him up from the dead, you will be saved. For with the heart one exercises faith for righteousness, but with the mouth one makes public declaration for salvation."

1 Tim. 4:16 "Pay constant attention to yourself and to your teaching. Stay by these things, for by doing this you will save both yourself and those who listen to you."

Jas. 2:19, 20, 24 "You believe there is one God, do you? You are doing quite well. And yet the demons believe and shudder. But do you care to know, O empty man, that faith apart from works is inactive? You see that a man is to be declared righteous by works, and not by faith alone."

1 Tim. 4:10 "To this end we are working hard and exerting ourselves, because we have rested our hope on a living God, who is a Savior of all sorts of men, especially of faithful ones."

Rev. 12:17 "The dragon grew wrathful at the woman, and went off to wage war with the remaining ones of her seed, who observe the commandments of God and have the work of bearing witness to Jesus."

Matt. 10:22 "He that has endured to the end is the one that will be saved."

Matt. 5:21, 22 "You heard that it was said to those of ancient times, 'You must not murder; but whoever commits a murder will be accountable to the court of justice.' However, I say to you that everyone who continues wrathful with his brother will be accountable to the court of justice."

Entire Law Code Summarized

Matt. 22:37-40 "He said to him: '"You must love Jehovah your God with your whole heart and with your whole soul and with your whole mind." This is the greatest and first commandment. The second, like it, is this, "You must love your neighbor as yourself." On these two commandments the whole Law hangs, and the Prophets.'" (See also Mark 12:28-34; Luke 10:25-28.)

Rom. 13:8-10 "Do not you people be owing anybody a single thing, except to love one another; for he that loves his fellow man has fulfilled the law. For the law code, 'You must not commit adultery, You must not murder, You must not steal, You must not covet,' and whatever other commandment there is, is summed up in this word, namely, 'You must love your neighbor as yourself.' Love does not work evil to one's neighbor; therefore love is the law's fulfillment."

New Commandment to Christians Requires Even Greater Love

John 13:34, 35 "I am giving you a new commandment, that you love one another; just as I have loved you, that you also love one another. By this all will know that you are my disciples, if you have love among yourselves."

John 15:12, 13 "This is my commandment, that you love one another just as I have loved you. No one has love greater than this, that someone should surrender his soul in behalf of his friends."

Obedience to Commands of God and Christ Manifests Love, Leads to Life

1 John 5:2, 3 "By this we gain the knowledge that we are loving the children of God, when we are loving God and doing his commandments. For this is what the love of God means, that we observe his commandments; and yet his commandments are not burdensome."

John 12:50 "I know that his commandment means everlasting life. Therefore the things I speak, just as the Father has told me them, so I speak them."

John 14:21 "He that has my commandments and observes them, that one is he who loves me. In turn he that loves me will be loved by my Father, and I will love him and will plainly show myself to him."

1 John 2:4, 5 "He that says: 'I have come to know him,' and yet is not observing his commandments, is a liar, and the

truth is not in this person. But whoever does observe his word, truthfully in this person the love of God has been made perfect. By this we have the knowledge that we are in union with him."

Commandments of Men Not a Safe Guide in Worship

Isa. 29:13 "Jehovah says: 'For the reason that this people have come near with their mouth, and they have glorified me merely with their lips, and they have removed their heart itself far away from me, and their fear toward me becomes men's commandment that is being taught.'"

Matt. 15:3, 9 "In reply he said to them: 'Why is it you also overstep the commandment of God because of your tradition? "It is in vain that they keep worshiping me, because they teach commands of men as doctrines."'"

Col. 2:20-23 "If you died together with Christ toward the elementary things of the world, why do you, as if living in the world, further subject yourselves to the decrees: 'Do not handle, nor taste, nor touch,' respecting things that are all destined to destruction by being used up, in accordance with the commands and teachings of men? Those very things are, indeed, possessed of an appearance of wisdom in a self-imposed form of worship and mock humility, a severe treatment of the body; but they are of no value in combating the satisfying of the flesh."

Titus 1:13, 14 "Keep on reproving them with severity, that they may be healthy in the faith, paying no attention to Jewish fables and commandments of men who turn themselves away from the truth."

Communism

Early Christian Congregation Not Communistic

Texts misunderstood as supporting false claim

Acts 2:44, 45 "All those who became believers were together in having all things in common, and they went selling their possessions and properties and distributing the proceeds to all, just as anyone would have the need."

Acts 4:32 "Moreover, the multitude of those who had believed had one heart and soul, and not even one would say that any of the things he possessed was his own; but they had all things in common."

Acts 6:1-3 "Now in these days, when the disciples were increasing, a murmuring arose on the part of the Greek-speaking Jews against the Hebrew-speaking Jews, because their widows were being overlooked in the daily distribution. So the twelve called the multitude of the disciples to them and said: 'It is not pleasing for us to leave the word of God to distribute food to tables. So, brothers, search out for yourselves seven certified men from among you, full of spirit and wisdom, that we may appoint them over this necessary business.'"

Each had full control over his private possessions

Acts 5:3, 4 "Peter said: 'Ananias, why has Satan emboldened you to play false to the holy spirit and to hold back secretly some of the price of the field? As long as it remained with you did it not remain yours, and after it was sold did it not continue in your control?'"

1 Cor. 16:2 "Every first day of the week let each of you at his own house set something aside in store as he may be prospering, so that when I arrive collections will not take place then."

Philem. 1, 2 "To Philemon, our beloved one and fellow worker . . . and to the congregation that is in your house."

2 Cor. 9:7 "Let each one do just as he has resolved in his heart, not grudgingly or under compulsion, for God loves a cheerful giver."

Voluntary gifts were made, and appointed men helped to administer

Acts 4:34, 35 "In fact, there was not one in need among them; for all those who were possessors of fields or houses would sell them and bring the values of the things sold and they would deposit them at the feet of the apostles. In turn distribution would be made to each one, just as he would have the need."

Acts 11:29, 30 "So those of the disciples determined, each of them according as anyone could afford it, to send a relief ministration to the brothers dwelling in Judea; and this they did, dispatching it to the older men by the hand of Barnabas and Saul."

2 Cor. 9:5 "Therefore I thought it necessary to encourage the brothers to come to you in advance and to get ready in advance your bountiful gift previously promised, that thus this might be ready as a bountiful gift and not as something extorted."

Rom. 15:26, 28 "Those in Macedonia and Achaia have been pleased to share up their things by a contribution to the poor of the holy ones in Jerusalem. Hence after I have finished with this and have got this fruit securely to them, I shall depart by way of you for Spain."

Acts 24:17 "So after quite a number of years I arrived to bring gifts of mercy to my nation, and offerings."

Each responsible to provide for own household

1 Tim. 5:8 "Certainly if anyone does not provide for those who are his own, and especially for those who are members of his household, he has disowned the faith and is worse than a person without faith."

Christians recognize ownership rights of others, do not covet or demand share of another's property

Acts 20:33, 34 "I have coveted no man's silver or gold or apparel. You yourselves know that these hands have attended to the needs of me and of those with me."

Rom. 7:7 "I would not have known covetousness if the Law had not said: 'You must not covet.'"

See also Ex. 20:17.

Luke 3:12, 13 "Even tax collectors came to be baptized, and they said to him: 'Teacher, what shall we do?' He [John] said to them: 'Do not demand anything more than the tax rate.'"

2 Cor. 7:2 "We have wronged no one, we have corrupted no one, we have taken advantage of no one."

Atheistic Communists Are Lacking Good Sense

Ps. 14:1 "The senseless one has said in his heart: 'There is no Jehovah.' They have acted ruinously, they have acted detestably in their dealing."

Ps. 10:4 "The wicked one according to his supercilliousness makes no search; all his ideas are: 'There is no God.'"

Ps. 53:1 "The senseless one has said in his heart: 'There is no Jehovah.' They have acted ruinously and have acted detestably in unrighteousness; there is no one doing good."

Ps. 92:5, 6 "How great your works are, O Jehovah! Very deep your thoughts are. No unreasoning man himself can know them, and no one stupid can understand this."

Rom. 1:21 "Although they knew God, they did not glorify him as God nor did they thank him, but they became empty-headed in their reasonings and their unintelligent heart became darkened."

See also the main heading "Evolution," pages 177-184.

Visible creation gives ample evidence of God

Rom. 1:20, 28 "His invisible qualities are clearly seen from the world's creation onward, because they are perceived by the things made, even his eternal power and Godship, so that they are inexcusable. And just as they did not approve of holding God in accurate knowledge, God gave them up to a disapproved mental state, to do the things not fitting."

Ps. 19:1-3 "The heavens are declaring the glory of God; and of the work of his hands the expanse is telling. One day after another day causes speech to bubble forth, and one night after another night shows forth knowledge. There is no speech, and there are no words; no voice on their part is being heard."

The earth is Jehovah's; those who dwell on it are answerable to him

Dan. 4:32, 35 "Until you know that the Most High is Ruler in the kingdom of mankind, and that to the one whom he wants to he gives it. And all the inhabitants of the earth are being considered as merely nothing, and he is doing according to his own will among the army of the heavens and the inhabitants of the earth. And there exists no one that can check his hand or that can say to him, 'What have you been doing?' "

Ps. 24:1 "To Jehovah belong the earth and that which fills it, the productive land and those dwelling in it."

Acts 17:24 "The God that made the world and all the things in it, being, as this One is, Lord of heaven and earth, does not dwell in handmade temples."

Ps. 75:7 "For God is the judge. This one he abases, and that one he exalts."

Present Political Governments, Including Those Espousing Communism, Receive Their Power and Authority from Satan the Devil

Matt. 4:8, 9 "The Devil took him along to an unusually high mountain, and showed him all the kingdoms of the world and their glory, and he said to him: 'All these things I will give you if you fall down and do an act of worship to me.' "

1 John 5:19 "The whole world is lying in the power of the wicked one."

Rev. 13:1, 2 "I saw a wild beast ascending out of the sea, with ten horns and seven heads, and upon its horns ten diadems, but upon its heads blasphemous names. . . . And the dragon gave the beast its power and its throne and great authority." (Compare Dan. 8:1-22; Rev. 12:9.)

To be destroyed by God at Armageddon (Har-Magedon)

Dan. 2:44 "In the days of those kings the God of heaven will set up a kingdom that will never be brought to ruin. And the kingdom itself will not be passed on to any other people. It will crush and put an end to all these kingdoms."

Isa. 34:2 "Jehovah has indignation against all the nations, and rage against all their army. He must devote them to destruction; he must give them to the slaughter."

Rev. 16:14, 16 "They are, in fact, expressions inspired by demons and perform signs, and they go forth to the kings of the entire inhabited earth, to gather them together to the war of the great day of God the Almighty. And they gathered them together to the place that is called in Hebrew Har-Magedon."

Rev. 19:15, 17, 18 "Out of his mouth there protrudes a sharp long sword, that he may strike the nations with it, and he will shepherd them with a rod of iron. He treads too the press of the wine of the anger of the wrath of God the Almighty. I saw also an angel standing in the sun, and he cried out with a loud voice and said to all the birds that fly in midheaven: 'Come here, be gathered together to the great evening meal of God, that you may eat the fleshy parts of kings and the fleshy parts of military commanders and the fleshy parts of strong men and the fleshy parts of horses and of those seated upon them, and the fleshy parts of all, of freemen as well as of slaves and of small ones and great.' "

Isa. 60:12 "Any nation and any kingdom that will not serve you will perish; and the nations themselves will without fail come to devastation."

See also Ps. 2:8, 9; 110:5, 6; Jer. 25:31; Zeph. 3:8.

Jehovah's Witnesses Recognize, Do Not Try to Overthrow, Duly Constituted Governments, but Submit to God as Supreme

1 Pet. 2:13, 14 "For the Lord's sake subject yourselves to every human creation: whether to a king as being superior or to governors as being sent by him to inflict punishment on evildoers but to praise doers of good."

Rom. 13:1 "Let every soul be in subjection to the superior authorities, for there is no authority except by God; the existing authorities stand placed in their relative positions by God."

Matt. 22:21 "Pay back, therefore, Caesar's things to Caesar, but God's things to God."

Acts 5:29 "We must obey God as ruler rather than men."

God's Kingdom, Not Communism, to Bring Lasting Peace, Relief to All Men

Isa. 9:6, 7 "There has been a child born to us, there has been a son given to us; and the princely rule will come to be upon his shoulder. And his name will be called Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God, Eternal Father, Prince of Peace. To the abundance of the princely rule and to peace there will be no end, upon the throne of David and upon his kingdom in order to establish it firmly and to sustain it by means of justice and by means of righteousness, from now on and to time indefinite. The very zeal of Jehovah of armies will do this."

Isa. 32:1, 17 "Look! A king will reign for righteousness itself; and as respects princes, they will rule as princes for justice itself. And the work of the true righteousness must become peace; and the service of the true righteousness, quietness and security to time indefinite."

Ps. 46:8, 9 "Come, you people, behold the activities of Jehovah, how he has set astonishing events on the earth. He is making wars to cease to the extremity of the earth. The bow he breaks apart and does cut the spear in pieces; the wagons he burns in the fire."

Isa. 2:4 "He will certainly render judgment among the nations and set matters straight respecting many peoples. And they will have to beat their swords into plowshares and their spears into pruning shears. Nation will not lift up sword against nation, neither will they learn war any more.

Conduct of Christians

Christianity Not Merely a Belief, but a Way of Life

Acts 9:1, 2 "Saul . . . asked him for letters to the synagogues in Damascus, in order that he might bring bound to Jerusalem any whom he found who belonged to The Way, both men and women."

Acts 19:9, 23 "When some went on hardening themselves and not believing, speaking injuriously about The Way before the multitude, he withdrew from them . . . At that particular time there arose no little disturbance concerning The Way."

Acts 18:25, 26 "This man had been orally instructed in the way of Jehovah and . . . he went speaking and teaching with correctness the things about Jesus, but being acquainted with only the baptism of John. And this man started to speak boldly in the synagogue. When Priscilla and Aquila heard him, they took him into their company and expounded the way of God more correctly to him."

2 Pet. 2:2 "Many will follow their acts of loose conduct, and on account of these the way of the truth will be spoken of abusively."

Conduct of Christians Should Be Patterned After Christ's

1 Pet. 2:21 "To this course you were called, because even Christ suffered for you, leaving you a model for you to follow his steps closely."

John 13:15 "I set the pattern for you, that, just as I did to you, you should do also."

1 Cor. 11:1 "Become imitators of me, even as I am of Christ."

1 John 2:6 "He that says he remains in union with him is under obligation himself also to go on walking just as that one walked."

Right Conduct Important; What We Do Reflects Either Credit or Discredit upon God and His People

1 Pet. 2:12 "Maintain your conduct fine among the nations, that, in the thing in which they are speaking against you as evildoers, they may as a result of your fine works of which they are eyewitnesses glorify God in the day for his inspection."

2 Pet. 2:2 "Many will follow their acts of loose conduct, and on account of these the way of the truth will be spoken of abusively."

2 Cor. 6:3, 4 "In no way are we giving any cause for stumbling, that our ministry might not be found fault with; but in every way we recommend ourselves as God's ministers."

1 Pet. 3:1, 2 "You wives, be in subjection to your own husbands, in order that, if any are not obedient to the word, they may be won without a word through the conduct of their wives, because of having been eyewitnesses of your chaste conduct."

Titus 2:4-8 "Recall the young women to their senses to love their husbands, to love their children, to be sound in mind, chaste, workers at home, good, subjecting themselves to their own husbands, so that the word of God may not be spoken of abusively. Likewise keep on exhorting the younger men to be sound in mind, in all things showing yourself an example of fine works . . . so that the man on the opposing side may get ashamed, having nothing vile to say about us."

Wrong Conduct Starts with Wrong Desires

Jas. 1:14, 15 "Each one is tried by being drawn out and enticed by his own desire. Then the desire, when it has become fertile, gives birth to sin; in turn, sin, when it has been accomplished, brings forth death."

Gen. 3:6 "Consequently the woman saw that the tree's fruit was good for food and that it was something to be longed for to the eyes, yes, the tree was desirable to look upon. So she began taking of its fruit and eating it."

Matt. 15:19 "Out of the heart come wicked reasonings, murders, adulteries, fornications, thieveries, false testimonies, blasphemies."

Matt. 5:28 "I say to you that everyone that keeps on looking at a woman so as to have a passion for her has already committed adultery with her in his heart."

Rom. 1:24, 26 "Therefore God, in keeping with the desires of their hearts, gave them up to uncleanness, that their bodies might be dishonored among them . . . That is why God gave them up to disgraceful sexual appetites."

Eph. 2:2, 3 "You at one time walked according to the system of things of this world . . . Yes, among them we all at one time conducted ourselves in harmony with the desires of our flesh, doing the things willed by the flesh and the thoughts."

Ps. 7:14, 15 "Look! There is one that is pregnant with what is hurtful, and he has conceived trouble and is bound to give birth to falsehood. A pit he has excavated, and he proceeded to dig it; but he will fall into the hole that he went making."

Right Conduct Requires a Making Over of the Mind

Rom. 12:2 "Quit being fashioned after this system of things, but be transformed by making your mind over, that you may prove to yourselves the good and acceptable and perfect will of God."

1 Pet. 1:14-16 "As obedient children, quit being fashioned according to the desires you formerly had in your ignorance, but, in accord with the holy one who called you, do you also become holy yourselves in all your conduct, because it is written: 'You must be holy, because I am holy.'"

Eph. 4:22-24 "You should put away the old personality which conforms to your former course of conduct and which is being corrupted according to his deceptive desires; but that you should be made new in the force actuating your mind, and should put on the new personality which was created according to God's will in true righteousness and loyalty."

Col. 3:9, 10 "Strip off the old personality with its practices, and clothe yourselves with the new personality, which through accurate knowledge is being made new according to the image of the One who created it."

Phil. 4:8 "Whatever things are true, whatever things are of serious concern, whatever things are righteous, whatever things are chaste, whatever things are lovable, whatever things are well spoken of, whatever virtue there is and whatever praiseworthy thing there is, continue considering these things."

Wrong Attitudes to Be Avoided

Anxiety

Matt. 6:25-34 "I say to you: Stop being anxious about your souls as to what you will eat or what you will drink, or about your bodies as to what you will wear. . . . Who of you by being anxious can add one cubit to his life span? . . . So never be anxious and say, 'What are we to eat?' or, 'What are we to drink?' or, 'What are we to put on?'

. . . So, never be anxious about the next day, for the next day will have its own anxieties. Sufficient for each day is its own evil."

Mark 4:19 "The anxieties of this system of things and the deceptive power of riches and the desires for the rest of the things make inroads and choke the word, and it becomes unfruitful."

1 Pet. 5:7 "Throw all your anxiety upon him, because he cares for you."

Belligerence

1 Tim. 3:2, 3 "The overseer should therefore be . . . not belligerent."

Contentiousness

Phil. 2:3 "Doing nothing out of contentiousness."

Jas. 3:14-16 "If you have bitter jealousy and contentiousness in your hearts . . . This is not the wisdom that comes down from above, but is the earthly, animal, demonic. For where jealousy and contentiousness are, there disorder and every vile thing are."

Cowardice

2 Tim. 1:7 "God gave us not a spirit of cowardice, but that of power and of love and of soundness of mind."

Rev. 21:8 "As for the cowards . . . their portion will be in the lake that burns with fire and sulphur. This means the second death."

Disrespect

3 John 9, 10 "Diotrephes, who likes to have the first place among them, does not receive anything from us with respect. That is why, if I come, I will call to remembrance his works which he goes on doing, chattering about us with wicked words. Also, not being content with these things, neither does he himself receive the brothers with respect."

Ps. 74:10, 18 "How long, O God, will the adversary keep reproaching? Will the enemy keep treating your name with disrespect forever? . . . a senseless people have treated your name with disrespect."

Jude 8, 10 "These men . . . are . . . disregarding lordship and speaking abusively of glorious ones. . . . these men are speaking abusively."

Egotism

Gal. 5:26 "Let us not become egotistical, stirring up competition with one another."

Phil. 2:3 "Doing nothing . . . out of egotism."

Envy, covetousness

Gal. 5:26 "Let us not . . . [be] envying one another."

Titus 3:3 "Even we were once senseless . . . carrying on in maliciousness and envy."

Luke 12:15 "Keep your eyes open and guard against every sort of covetousness."

Col. 3:5 "Covetousness . . . is idolatry."

Fear of men

Matt. 10:28 "Do not become fearful of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul; but rather be in fear of him that can destroy both soul and body in Gehenna."

Prov. 29:25 "Trembling at men is what lays a snare."

Ps. 118:6 "Jehovah is on my side; I shall not fear. What can earthling man do to me?"

Greediness

Eph. 5:3 "Let fornication and uncleanness of every kind or greediness not even be mentioned among you, just as it befits holy people."

Eph. 5:5 "You know this, . . . that no fornicator or unclean person or greedy person—which means being an idolater—has any inheritance in the kingdom of the Christ and of God." (See also 1 Cor. 6:9, 10.)

1 Cor. 5:11 "I am writing you to quit mixing in company with anyone called a brother that is . . . a greedy person . . . , not even eating with such a man."

Hardheartedness

Matt. 19:8 "He said to them: 'Moses, out of regard for your hardheartedness, made the concession to you of divorcing your wives, but such has not been the case from the beginning.'"

See also Mark 3:5.

Hatred

Titus 3:3 "Even we were once senseless, . . . hateful, hating one another."

Prov. 10:12 "Hatred is what stirs up contentions, but love covers over even all transgressions."

Hypocrisy

2 Cor. 6:4, 6 "In every way we recommend ourselves as God's ministers, by . . . love free from hypocrisy." (See also Rom. 12:9.)

Jas. 3:17 "The wisdom from above is . . . not hypocritical."

Jealousy

1 Cor. 13:4 "Love is not jealous."

Prov. 14:30 "Jealousy is rottenness to the bones."

Laziness

Prov. 21:25 "The very craving of the lazy will put him to death, for his hands have refused to work."

Rom. 12:11 "Do not loiter at your business."

Prov. 19:15 "Laziness causes a deep sleep to fall, and a slack soul goes hungry."

Eccl. 10:18 "Through great laziness the beamwork sinks in, and through the letting down of the hands the house leaks."

Love of money, material things

1 Tim. 6:10 "The love of money is a root of all sorts of injurious things, and by reaching out for this love some have been led astray from the faith and have stabbed themselves all over with many pains."

Heb. 13:5 "Let your manner of life be free of the love of money."

1 John 2:15, 16 "Do not be loving either the world or the things in the world . . . because everything in the world—the desire of the flesh and the desire of the eyes and the showy display of one's means of life—does not originate with the Father, but originates with the world."

Malicious bitterness

Eph. 4:31 "Let all malicious bitterness and anger and wrath and screaming and abusive speech be taken away from you along with all injuriousness."

Presumptuousness

Prov. 11:2 "Has presumptuousness come? Then dishonor will come; but wisdom is with the modest ones."

Prov. 13:10 "By presumptuousness one only causes a struggle."

Prov. 21:24 "Presumptuous, self-assuming braggart is the name of the one who is acting in a fury of presumptuousness."

Pride, haughtiness

Prov. 16:18 "Pride is before a crash, and a haughty spirit before stumbling." (See also Prov. 18:12.)

Prov. 16:5 "Everyone that is proud in heart is something detestable to Jehovah."

Jas. 4:16 "You take pride in your self-assuming brags. All such taking of pride is wicked."

Prov. 21:4 "Haughty eyes and an arrogant heart, the lamp of the wicked ones, are sin."

Rebelliousness

1 Sam. 15:23 "Rebelliousness is the same as the sin of divination, and pushing ahead presumptuously the same as using uncanny power."

Stubbornness, self-will

Jer. 13:10 "This bad people who are refusing to obey my words,

who are walking in the stubbornness of their heart."

Titus 1:7 "An overseer must be free from accusation as God's steward, not self-willed."

2 Pet. 2:10 "Daring, self-willed, they do not tremble at glorious ones but speak abusively."

Uncontrolled anger

Col. 3:8 "But now really put them all away from you, wrath, anger, injuriousness, abusive speech."

Ps. 37:8, 9 "Let anger alone and leave rage; do not show yourself heated up only to do evil. For evildoers themselves will be cut off."

Prov. 14:17 "He that is quick to anger will commit foolishness."

Prov. 29:22 "A man given to anger stirs up contention, and anyone disposed to rage has many a transgression."

Unreasonableness

1 Pet. 2:15 "So the will of God is, that by doing good you may muzzle the ignorant talk of the unreasonable men."

Wicked suspicions

1 Tim. 6:4 "From these things spring envy, strife, abusive speeches, wicked suspicions."

Wrong Practices to Be Avoided

Abusive speech, reviling

Eph. 4:31 "Let all . . . abusive speech be taken away from you along with all injuriousness."

1 Pet. 2:23 "When he was being reviled, he did not go reviling in return."

1 Cor. 6:9, 10 "Neither fornicators . . . nor revilers . . . will inherit God's kingdom."

Accepting, offering bribes

Ex. 23:8 "You are not to accept a bribe, for the bribe blinds clear-sighted men and can distort the words of righteous men."

Prov. 17:23 "One who is wicked will take even a bribe from the bosom to bend the paths of judgment."

Ps. 26:9, 10 "Do not take away my soul along with sinners, nor my life along with bloodguilty men, in whose hands there is loose conduct, and whose right hand is full of bribery."

Bragging

Ps. 94:4 "All the practicers of what is hurtful keep bragging about themselves."

1 Cor. 13:4 "Love . . . does not brag."

Complaining

Jude 16 "These men are murmurers, complainers about their lot in life."

1 Cor. 10:10 "Neither be murmurers, just as some of them murmured, only to perish by the destroyer."

Num. 11:1 "Now the people became as men having something evil to complain about in the ears of Jehovah. When Jehovah got to hear it, then his anger grew hot, and a fire of Jehovah began to blaze against them and to consume some in the extremity of the camp."

Col. 3:13 "Continue putting up with one another and forgiving one another freely if anyone has a cause for complaint against another."

Drunkenness

1 Cor. 5:11; 6:9, 10 "Quit mixing in company with anyone called a brother that is . . . a drunkard. . . . Neither fornicators . . . nor drunkards . . . will inherit God's kingdom."

1 Pet. 4:3 "The time that has passed by is sufficient for you to have worked out the will of the nations when you proceeded in deeds of loose conduct, lusts, excesses with wine, revelries, drinking matches."

Extortion

1 Cor. 6:9, 10 "Neither fornicators . . . nor extortioners will inherit God's kingdom."

False to agreements

Rom. 1:28-31 "Just as they did not approve of holding God in accurate knowledge, God gave them up to a disapproved mental state, to do the things not fitting, filled as they were with all unrighteousness, . . . false to agreements."

Flattering others

1 Thess. 2:5 "At no time have we turned up . . . with flattering speech."

Prov. 29:5 "An able-bodied man that is flattering his companion is spreading out a mere net for his steps."

Foolish, idle talking

Eph. 5:3, 4 "Let fornication and uncleanness of every kind or greediness not even be mentioned among you, just as it befits holy people; neither shameful conduct nor foolish talking nor obscene jesting."

1 Tim. 1:6 "Certain ones have been turned aside into idle talk."

Gluttony

Prov. 23:20, 21 "Do not come to be among heavy drinkers of wine, among those who are gluttonous eaters of flesh. For a drunkard and a glutton will come to poverty."

Prov. 28:7 "One having companionship with gluttons humiliates his father."

Gossiping, busybodying

1 Tim. 5:12, 13 "They have disregarded their first expression of faith. At the same time they also learn to be unoccupied, gadding about to the houses; yes, not only unoccupied, but also gossipers and meddlers in other people's affairs, talking of things they ought not."

1 Pet. 4:15 "Let none of you suffer . . . as a busybody in other people's matters."

Idolatry

1 Cor. 10:14 "Flee from idolatry."

1 Cor. 5:11 "Quit mixing in company with anyone called a brother that is . . . an idolater."

Loose conduct, uncleanness, fornication, adultery

Gal. 5:19, 21 "The works of the flesh are . . . fornication, uncleanness, loose conduct . . . As to these things I am forewarning you . . . that those who practice such things will not inherit God's kingdom."

Eph. 5:5 "You know this . . . that no fornicator or unclean person . . . has any inheritance in the kingdom of the Christ and of God."

1 Pet. 4:3 "The time that has passed by is sufficient for you to have worked out the will of the nations when you proceeded in deeds of loose conduct."

Mark 7:21-23 "From inside, out of the heart of men, injurious reasonings issue forth: fornications, . . . adulteries, . . . loose conduct . . . All these wicked things issue forth from within and defile a man."

Lying, slander

Col. 3:9 "Do not be lying to one another."

John 8:44 "The Devil . . . is a liar and the father of the lie."

1 Tim. 3:11 "Women should likewise be serious, not slanderous." (See also Titus 2:3.)

Prov. 16:28 "A slanderer is separating those familiar with one another."

Misuse of blood

Acts 15:28, 29 "The holy spirit and we ourselves have favored adding no further burden to you, except these necessary things, to keep yourselves free . . . from blood and from things strangled and from fornication." (See also vss. 19, 20.)

Gen. 9:4 "Only flesh with its soul—its blood—you must not eat."

Murder

1 Pet. 4:15 "Let none of you suffer as a murderer."

Ex. 20:13 "You must not murder."

Matt. 15:19 "Out of the heart come wicked reasonings, murders."

Obscene jesting

Eph. 5:3, 4 "Let fornication . . . not even be mentioned among you, just as it befits holy people; neither . . . obscene jesting, things which are not becoming."

Physical strife

Gal. 5:19, 20 "The works of the flesh are . . . hatreds, strife."

Rom. 1:28, 29 "God gave them up to a disapproved mental state . . . , filled as they were with . . . strife."

Quarreling

Prov. 17:14 "The beginning of contention is as one letting out waters; so before the quarrel has burst forth, take your leave."

Prov. 26:17 "As one grabbing hold of the ears of a dog is anyone passing by that is becoming furious at the quarrel that is not his."

2 Tim. 2:23 "Turn down foolish and ignorant questionings, knowing they produce fights."

Revelries

1 Pet. 4:3 "The time that has passed by is sufficient for you to have worked out the will of the nations when you proceeded in . . . revelries."

Rom. 13:13 "As in the daytime let us walk decently, not in revelries and drunken bouts."

Gal. 5:19, 21 "The works of the flesh are manifest, and they are . . . revelries."

Ridiculing

2 Pet. 3:3, 4 "In the last days there will come ridiculers with their ridicule, proceeding according to their own desires and saying: 'Where is this promised presence of his?' "

Prov. 13:1 "The ridiculer is one that has not listened to rebuke."

Screaming at others

Eph. 4:31 "Let all . . . anger and wrath and screaming . . . be taken away from you."

Sectarianism

Titus 3:10, 11 "As for a man that promotes a sect, reject him after a first and a second admonition; knowing that such a man has been turned out of the way and is sinning."

2 Pet. 2:1 "There will also be false teachers among you. These very ones will quietly bring in destructive sects."

Stealing

Eph. 4:28 "Let the stealer steal no more, but rather let him do hard work."

Ex. 20:15 "You must not steal."

1 Pet. 4:15 "Let none of you suffer as a . . . thief."

Stirring up competitions

Gal. 5:26 "Let us not become egotistical, stirring up competition with one another."

Threatening

1 Pet. 2:23 "When he was suffering, he did not go threatening."

Eph. 6:9 "You masters, keep doing the same things to them, letting up on the threatening, for you know that the Master of both them and you is in the heavens."

Godly Fruitage to Be Cultivated

Chastity

1 Tim. 4:12; 5:1, 2 "Become an example to the faithful ones . . . in chasteness. . . . entreat . . . younger women as sisters with all chasteness."

1 Pet. 3:1, 2 "You wives, be in subjection to your own husbands, in order that, if any are not obedient to the word, they may be won without a word through the conduct of their wives, because of having been eyewitnesses of your chaste conduct."

2 Cor. 11:3 "I am afraid that somehow, as the serpent seduced

Eve by its cunning, your minds might be corrupted away from the sincerity and the chastity that are due the Christ."

Confidence in Jehovah

Prov. 3:26 "Jehovah himself will prove to be, in effect, your confidence."

Prov. 3:5 "Trust in Jehovah with all your heart and do not lean upon your own understanding."

Prov. 28:25 "He that is relying upon Jehovah will be made fat."

Prov. 20:22 "Hope in Jehovah, and he will save you."

Considering others superior to self

Phil. 2:3 "Considering that the others are superior to you."

See also Rom. 12:3; Col. 3:12.

Contentment

1 Tim. 6:8 "Having sustenance and covering, we shall be content with these things."

Heb. 13:5 "Let your manner of life be free of the love of money, while you are content with the present things."

Cooperative

Eph. 4:16 "From him [Christ] all the body, by being harmoniously joined together and being made to co-operate through every joint that gives what is needed . . . makes for the growth of the body for the building up of itself in love."

1 Cor. 16:16 "May you also keep submitting yourselves to persons of that kind and to everyone co-operating."

Courage

Phil. 1:14 "Most of the brothers in the Lord, feeling confidence by reason of my prison bonds, are showing all the more courage to speak the word of God fearlessly."

2 Cor. 5:6 "We are therefore always of good courage."

Encouraging, upbuilding

Heb. 10:24, 25 "Let us consider one another to incite to love and fine works, . . . encouraging one another, and all the more so as you behold the day drawing near."

Rom. 1:11, 12 "I am longing to see you, that . . . there may be an interchange of encouragement among you, by each one through the other's faith, both yours and mine."

Rom. 15:2 "Let each of us please his neighbor in what is good for his upbuilding."

Enduring, persevering, steadfast

Matt. 24:13 "He that has endured to the end is the one that will be saved."

Heb. 10:36 "You have need of endurance, in order that . . . you may receive the fulfillment of the promise."

Gal. 6:9 "So let us not give up in doing what is fine, for in due season we shall reap if we do not tire out."

Heb. 12:3 "Indeed, consider closely [Jesus Christ] . . . that you may not get tired and give out in your souls."

1 Cor. 15:58 "My beloved brothers, become steadfast, unmovable."

Faith

1 John 5:4 "This is the conquest that has conquered the world, our faith."

Heb. 10:39 "Now we are not the sort that shrink back to destruction, but the sort that have faith to the preserving alive of the soul."

Heb. 11:6 "Without faith it is impossible to please him well."

Faithful in small matters

Luke 16:10 "The person faithful in what is least is faithful also in much."

Fear of Jehovah

Prov. 1:7 "The fear of Jehovah is the beginning of knowledge."

Ps. 111:10 "The fear of Jehovah is the beginning of wisdom."

Prov. 8:13 "The fear of Jehovah means the hating of bad."

Ps. 33:8 "Let all those of the earth be in fear of Jehovah."

Forgiving

Mark 11:25 "When you stand praying, forgive whatever you have against anyone; in order that your Father who is in the heavens may also forgive you your trespasses."

Matt. 18:21, 22 "Peter came up and said to him: 'Lord, how many times is my brother to sin against me and am I to forgive him? Up to seven times?' Jesus said to him: 'I say to you, not, Up to seven times, but, Up to seventy-seven times.' "

Eph. 4:32 "Freely forgiving one another just as God also by Christ freely forgave you."

Generosity

2 Cor. 9:11 "In everything you are being enriched for every sort of generosity, which produces through us an expression of thanks to God."

See also Luke 6:38.

Godly devotion

1 Tim. 6:6 "To be sure, it is a means of great gain, this godly devotion along with self-sufficiency."

2 Pet. 2:9 "Jehovah knows how to deliver people of godly devotion out of trial."

Goodness

Gal. 5:22 "The fruitage of the spirit is . . . goodness."

Eph. 5:9 "The fruitage of the light consists of every sort of goodness."

Hospitality

Rom. 12:13 "Follow the course of hospitality."

Heb. 13:2 "Do not forget hospitality."

1 Pet. 4:9 "Be hospitable to one another without grumbling."

Humility, modesty

Matt. 23:12 "Whoever humbles himself will be exalted."

1 Pet. 5:6 "Humble yourselves, therefore, under the mighty hand of God."

Prov. 22:4 "The result of humility and the fear of Jehovah is riches and glory and life."

Mic. 6:8 "He has told you, O earthling man, what is good. And what is Jehovah asking back from you but to . . . be modest in walking with your God?"

1 Tim. 2:9 "I desire the women to adorn themselves in well-arranged dress, with modesty."

Impartiality

1 Pet. 1:17 "The Father . . . judges impartially."

Jas. 3:17 "The wisdom from above is first of all chaste, then . . . not making partial distinctions."

Prov. 28:21 "The showing of partiality is not good."

Industrious, whole-souled

Heb. 6:11 "We desire each one of you to show the same industriousness so as to have the full assurance of the hope down to the end."

Col. 3:23 "Whatever you are doing, work at it whole-souled as to Jehovah, and not to men."

Eph. 6:6 "As Christ's slaves, doing the will of God whole-souled."

Joy

Gal. 5:22 "The fruitage of the spirit is love, joy."

Phil. 3:1; 4:4 "Finally, my brothers, continue rejoicing in the Lord." "Always rejoice in the Lord. Once more I will say, Rejoice!"

Keen interest in welfare of others

Phil. 2:4 "Keeping an eye, not in personal interest upon just your own matters, but also in personal interest upon those of the others."

1 Cor. 10:24 "Let each one keep seeking, not his own advantage, but that of the other person."

1 Thess. 5:14, 15 "Speak consolingly to the depressed souls, support the weak, . . . always pursue what is good toward one another and to all others."

Kindness

Gal. 5:22 "The fruitage of the spirit is . . . kindness."

2 Cor. 6:4, 6 "In every way we recommend ourselves as God's ministers, . . . by kindness."

Mic. 6:8 "What is Jehovah asking back from you but to . . . love kindness?"

Eph. 4:32 "Become kind to one another."

Love

John 13:35 "By this all will know that you are my disciples, if you have love among yourselves."

Col. 3:14 "Clothe yourselves with love, for it is a perfect bond of union."

Gal. 5:22 "The fruitage of the spirit is love."

1 Cor. 14:1 "Pursue love."

1 Pet. 4:8 "Above all things, have intense love for one another."

Loyalty

Luke 1:74, 75 "The privilege of fearlessly rendering sacred service to him with loyalty."

Eph. 4:24 "Put on the new personality which was created according to God's will in true righteousness and loyalty."

Ps. 116:15 "Precious in the eyes of Jehovah is the death of his loyal ones."

Mercy

Jas. 3:17 "The wisdom from above is . . . full of mercy and good fruits."

Matt. 9:13 "Go, then, and learn what this means, 'I want mercy, and not sacrifice.' "

Matt. 5:7 "Happy are the merciful, since they will be shown mercy."

Mildness

Gal. 5:22, 23 "The fruitage of the spirit is . . . mildness."

Col. 3:10, 12 "Clothe yourselves with the new personality . . . clothe yourselves with . . . mildness."

Titus 3:2 "Speak injuriously of no one . . . exhibiting all mildness toward all men."

1 Tim. 6:11 "Pursue . . . mildness of temper."

Moderate in habits

1 Tim. 3:2, 11 "The overseer should therefore be . . . moderate in habits. . . . Women should likewise be . . . moderate in habits."

Titus 2:2 "Let the aged men be moderate in habits."

Orderly

Gal. 5:25 "Let us go on walking orderly." (See also Phil. 3:16.)

1 Tim. 3:2 "The overseer should therefore be . . . orderly."

Patience, long-suffering

Jas. 5:7 "Exercise patience . . . brothers."

Heb. 6:12 "Be imitators of those who through faith and patience inherit the promises."

Gal. 5:22 "The fruitage of the spirit is . . . long-suffering."

Col. 3:12 "Clothe yourselves with the tender affections of compassion . . . and long-suffering."

1 Thess. 5:14 "Be long-suffering toward all."

Peace

Heb. 12:14 "Pursue peace with all people."

Rom. 14:19 "Let us pursue the things making for peace."

Rom. 12:18 "If possible, as far as it depends upon you, be peaceable with all men."

1 Pet. 3:11 "Seek peace and pursue it."

2 Cor. 13:11 "Continue to . . . live peaceably."

Prayerfulness

Col. 4:2 "Be persevering in prayer, remaining awake in it with thanksgiving."

1 Pet. 4:7 "Be vigilant with a view to prayers."

1 Thess. 5:17 "Pray incessantly."

Rom. 12:12 "Persevere in prayer."

Putting spiritual matters first

Matt. 6:33 "Keep on, then, seeking first the kingdom and his righteousness, and all these other things will be added to you."

Ready to obey

Jas. 3:17 "The wisdom from above is . . . ready to obey."

Heb. 5:9 "He became responsible for everlasting salvation to all those obeying him."

Reasonableness

Phil. 4:5 "Let your reasonableness become known to all men."

Titus 3:2 "Be reasonable."

Jas. 3:17 "The wisdom from above is . . . reasonable."

1 Tim. 3:2, 3 "The overseer should therefore be . . . not a smiter, but reasonable."

Respectful

1 Pet. 3:15 "Always ready to make a defense before everyone that demands of you a reason for the hope in you, but doing so together with a mild temper and deep respect."

Eph. 5:33 "The wife should have deep respect for her husband." (See also 1 Pet. 3:1, 2.)

Self-control

Gal. 5:22, 23 "The fruitage of the spirit is . . . self-control."

2 Pet. 1:5, 6 "Supply to your faith virtue, to your virtue knowledge, to your knowledge self-control."

Titus 1:7, 8 "An overseer must be . . . self-controlled."

Serious-minded

Phil. 4:8 "Finally, brothers, whatever things are . . . of serious concern, . . . continue considering these things."

1 Tim. 3:8, 11 "Ministerial servants should likewise be serious. . . . Women should likewise be serious."

Titus 2:2 "Let the aged men be . . . serious."

Submissive

Heb. 13:17 "Be obedient to those who are taking the lead among you and be submissive, for they are keeping watch over your souls."

Col. 3:18 "You wives, be in subjection to your husbands, as it is becoming in the Lord."

Tender compassion

Col. 3:12 "Clothe yourselves with the tender affections of compassion."

Eph. 4:32 "Become kind to one another, tenderly compassionate."

Truthfulness

Eph. 4:25 "Wherefore, now that you have put away falsehood, speak truth each one of you with his neighbor."

2 Cor. 6:4, 7 "In every way we recommend ourselves as God's ministers, . . . by truthful speech."

Wholesomeness of speech

Titus 2:6-8 "Keep on exhorting the younger men to be sound in mind, in all things showing yourself an example of fine works; showing . . . wholesome speech which cannot be condemned."

Prov. 10:11 "The mouth of the righteous one is a source of life."

Confession

God the One to Whom to Confess for Forgiveness of Sins Through Christ

Matt. 6:9-14 "You must pray, then, this way: 'Our Father in the heavens, . . . forgive us our debts, as we also have forgiven our debtors.' . . . For if you forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you."

Ps. 32:5 "My sin I finally confessed to you, and my error I did not cover. I said: 'I shall make confession over my transgressions to Jehovah.' "

Eph. 1:7 "By means of him we have the release by ransom through the blood of that one [Christ], yes, the forgiveness of our trespasses, according to the riches of his undeserved kindness."

Christ the only mediator between God and men

1 Tim. 2:5 "There is one God, and one mediator between God and men, a man Christ Jesus."

Eph. 3:11, 12 "According to the eternal purpose that he formed in connection with the Christ, Jesus our Lord, by means of whom we have this freeness of speech and an approach with confidence through our faith in him."

Rom. 5:1, 2 "Therefore, now that we have been declared righteous as a result of faith, let us enjoy peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom also we have gained our approach by faith into this undeserved kindness in which we now stand."

Eph. 2:18 "Through him we, both peoples, have the approach to the Father by one spirit."

Sincere repentance must be shown

Acts 26:20 "Both to those in Damascus first and to those in Jerusalem, and over all the country of Judea, and to the nations I went bringing the message that they should repent and turn to God by doing works that befit repentance."

Luke 19: 8, 9 "Zacchaeus stood up and said to the Lord: 'Look! The half of my belongings, Lord, I am giving to the poor, and whatever I extorted from anyone by false accusation I am restoring fourfold.' At this Jesus said to him: 'This day salvation has come to this house.' "

Jas. 4:8-10 "Cleanse your hands, you sinners, and purify your hearts, you indecisive ones. Give way to misery and mourn and weep. Let your laughter be turned into mourning, and your joy into dejection. Humble yourselves in the eyes of Jehovah, and he will exalt you."

See also the main heading "Repentance," pages 420-423.

Accept God's forgiveness, not grieving endlessly over the wrongdoing

1 John 1:9 "If we confess our sins, he is faithful and righteous so as to forgive us our sins."

Ps. 103:2, 3, 8, 9 "Bless Jehovah, O my soul, and do not forget all his doings, him who is forgiving all your error, who is healing all your maladies . . . Jehovah is merciful and gracious, slow to anger and abundant in loving-kindness. He will not for all time keep finding fault, neither will he to time indefinite keep resentful."

Ps. 32:3-5 "When I kept silent my bones wore out through my

groaning all day long. For day and night your hand was heavy upon me. My life's moisture has been changed as in the dry heat of summer. *Selah.* My sin I finally confessed to you, and my error I did not cover. I said: 'I shall make confession over my transgressions to Jehovah.' And you yourself pardoned the error of my sins."

Isa. 55:7 "Let the wicked man leave his way, and the harmful man his thoughts; and let him return to Jehovah, who will have mercy upon him, and to our God, for he will forgive in a large way."

Luke 15:7 "I tell you that thus there will be more joy in heaven over one sinner that repents than over ninety-nine righteous ones who have no need of repentance."

2 Cor. 1:3 "Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of tender mercies."

Ezek. 33:14-16 "When I say to the wicked one: 'You will positively die,' and he actually turns back from his sin and carries on justice and righteousness, and the wicked one returns the very thing pledged, pays back the very things taken by robbery, and actually walks in the very statutes of life by not doing injustice, he will positively keep living. He will not die. None of his sins with which he has sinned will be remembered against him."

Prov. 28:13 "He that is covering over his transgressions will not succeed, but he that is confessing and leaving them will be shown mercy."

Sins Affecting the Acceptability of the Entire Congregation Before God Must Be Found Out

1 Cor. 5:1-7 "Actually fornication is reported among you . . . And are you puffed up, and did you not rather mourn, in order that the man that committed this deed should be taken away from your midst? . . . hand such a man over to Satan for the destruction of the flesh, in order that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord. . . . Do you not know that a little leaven ferments the whole lump? Clear away the old leaven, that you may be a new lump."

Heb. 12:15 "Carefully watching that no one may be deprived of the undeserved kindness of God; that no poisonous root may spring up and cause trouble and that many may not be defiled by it."

Josh. 7:1-26 "Achan . . . took some of the thing devoted to destruction. At this Jehovah's anger grew hot against the sons of Israel. . . . Jehovah said to Joshua: 'Get up, you! Why is it that you are falling upon your face? Israel has sinned, and they have also overstepped my covenant that I laid as a command upon them; and they have also taken some of the thing devoted to destruction and have also stolen and also kept it secret and have also put it among their own articles. And the sons of Israel will not be able to rise up against their enemies. The back is what they will turn before their enemies, because they have become a thing devoted to destruction. I shall not prove to be with you again unless you annihilate the thing devoted to destruction out of your midst.' . . . Achan answered Joshua and said: 'For a fact I—I have sinned against Jehovah the God of Israel, and this way and that way I have done.' . . . Joshua said: 'Why have you brought ostracism upon us? Jehovah will bring ostracism upon you on this day.' With that all Israel went pelting him with stones . . . At this Jehovah turned away from his hot anger."

See also Deut. 21:1-9.

Those aware of hurtful conduct under obligation to inform responsible overseers, to keep congregation clean

Lev. 5:1 "Now in case a soul sins in that he has heard public cursing and he is a witness or he has seen it or has come to know of it, if he does not report it, then he must answer for his error."

See also Zech. 13:2-6.

Responsible overseers, appointed by God's spirit and acting in harmony with God's inspired Word, may extend forgiveness to repentant ones, not by power of absolution but with confidence in how God desires mercy extended in behalf of congregation

Acts 20:28 "Pay attention to yourselves and to all the flock, among which the holy spirit has appointed you overseers, to shepherd the congregation of God."

Gal. 6:1 "Brothers, even though a man takes some false step before he is aware of it, you who have spiritual qualifications try to restore such a man in a spirit of mildness."

Jas. 5:14, 15 "Is there anyone sick among you? Let him call the older men of the congregation to him, and let them pray over him, greasing him with oil in the name of Jehovah. And the prayer of faith will make the indisposed one well, and Jehovah will raise him up. Also, if he has committed sins, it will be forgiven him."

Matt. 18:15-18 "If your brother commits a sin, go lay bare his fault between you and him alone. . . . If he does not listen, . . . speak to the congregation. If he does not listen even to the congregation, let him be to you just as a man of the nations and as a tax collector. Truly I say to you men, Whatever things you may bind on earth will be things bound in heaven, and whatever things you may loose on earth will be things loosed in heaven."

2 Cor. 2:10, 11 "Anything you kindly forgive anyone, I do too. In fact, as for me, whatever I have kindly forgiven, . . . it has been for your sakes in Christ's sight; that we may not be overreached by Satan."

See also Acts 15:14-21, 28, 29.

Entire Congregation May Publicly Confess Sin or Wrong Course Taken

Neh. 9:1, 2 "The sons of Israel gathered themselves together with fasting and with sackcloth and dirt upon themselves. And the seed of Israel proceeded to separate themselves from all the foreigners, and to stand and make confession of their own sins and the errors of their fathers."

Ps. 106:6 "We have sinned just the same as our forefathers; we have done wrong; we have acted wickedly."

Christians Publicly Acknowledge Faith in God's Provision of His Son

Matt. 10:32 "Everyone, then, that confesses union with me before men, I will also confess union with him before my Father who is in the heavens."

Rev. 7:10 "They keep on crying with a loud voice, saying: 'Salvation we owe to our God, who is seated on the throne, and to the Lamb.' "

Rom. 10:9 "If you publicly declare that 'word in your own mouth,' that Jesus is Lord, and exercise faith in your heart that God raised him up from the dead, you will be saved."

Phil. 2:11 "Every tongue should openly acknowledge that Jesus Christ is Lord to the glory of God the Father."

See also John 9:22; 12:42.

Congregation of God

Natural Israelites First Ones Referred To as Congregation of God

1 Chron. 28:8 "Now, before the eyes of all Israel, Jehovah's congregation, and in the ears of our God, take care and search for all the commandments of Jehovah."

Num. 16:3 "So they congregated themselves against Moses and Aaron and said to them: 'That is enough of you, because the whole assembly are all of them holy and Jehovah is in their midst. Why, then, should you lift yourselves up above the congregation of Jehovah?' "

See also Acts 7:38.

Called Out of Egypt, Then Brought into Covenant Relationship with God at Mt. Sinai

Ex. 6:6, 7; 19:1 "Say to the sons of Israel, 'I am Jehovah, and I shall certainly bring you out from under the burdens of the Egyptians . . . And I shall certainly take you to me as a people.' " "In the third month after the sons of Israel came out of the land of Egypt, on the same day, they came into the wilderness of Sinai."

Deut. 9:9, 10 "I went up the mountain to receive the stone tablets, the tablets of the covenant that Jehovah had concluded with you, and I kept dwelling in the mountain forty days and forty nights, (I neither ate bread nor drank water,) then Jehovah gave me the two tablets of stone written upon with God's finger; and upon them were all the words that Jehovah had spoken with you in the mountain out of the middle of the fire in the day of the congregation."

See also Ex. 19:3-9.

Jewish Congregation, with Its God-given Arrangements for Worship, Provided Prophetic Patterns of Greater Things to Come

Heb. 10:1 "Since the Law has a shadow of the good things to come, but not the very substance of the things, men can never with the same sacrifices from year to year which they offer continually make those who approach perfect."

Col. 2:16, 17 "Let no man judge you in eating and drinking or in respect of a festival or of an observance of the new moon or of a sabbath; for those things are a shadow of the things to come, but the reality belongs to the Christ."

Heb. 9:9-12 "This very tent is an illustration for the appointed time that is now here, and in keeping with it both gifts and sacrifices are offered. . . . However, when Christ came as a high priest of the good things that have come to pass through the greater and more perfect tent not made with hands, that is, not of this creation, he entered, no, not with the blood of goats and of young bulls, but with his own blood, once for all time into the holy place and obtained an everlasting deliverance for us."

Jewish Nation, with Its Temple for Worship, Cast Off Because of Rejecting God's Son

Matt. 21:43 "This is why I say to you, The kingdom of God will be taken from you and be given to a nation producing its fruits."

Matt. 23:37, 38 "Jerusalem, Jerusalem, the killer of the prophets and stoner of those sent forth to her,—how often I wanted to

gather your children together, the way a hen gathers her chicks together under her wings! But you people did not want it. Look! Your house is abandoned to you."

Matt. 24:1, 2 "Jesus was on his way from the temple, but his disciples approached to show him the buildings of the temple. In response he said to them: 'Do you not behold all these things? Truly I say to you, By no means will a stone be left here upon a stone and not be thrown down.' "

Luke 19:41-44 "When he got nearby, he viewed the city and wept over it, saying: 'If you, even you, had discerned in this day the things having to do with peace—but now they have been hid from your eyes. Because the days will come upon you when your enemies will build around you a fortification with pointed stakes and will encircle you and distress you from every side, and they will dash you and your children within you to the ground, and they will not leave a stone upon a stone in you, because you did not discern the time of your being inspected.' "

Requirements of Law Covenant Fulfilled by Christ, Taken Out of the Way by Jehovah

Matt. 5:17 "Do not think I came to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I came, not to destroy, but to fulfill."

Rom. 10:4 "For Christ is the end of the Law, so that everyone exercising faith may have righteousness."

2 Cor. 3:14 "The old covenant . . . is done away with by means of Christ."

Col. 2:13, 14 "He kindly forgave us all our trespasses and blotted out the handwritten document against us, which consisted of decrees and which was in opposition to us; and He [God] has taken it out of the way by nailing it to the torture stake."

Christian Congregation Built upon Christ as the Foundation

Eph. 2:20 "Christ Jesus himself is the foundation cornerstone."

Acts 4:11 "This is 'the stone that was treated by you builders as of no account that has become the head of the corner.' "

1 Pet. 2:4-6 "Coming to him as to a living stone, rejected, it is true, by men, but chosen, precious, with God, you yourselves also as living stones are being built up a spiritual house for the purpose of a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through Jesus Christ. For it is contained in Scripture: 'Look! I am laying in Zion a stone, chosen, a foundation cornerstone, precious; and no one exercising faith in it will by any means come to disappointment.' "

1 Cor. 3:11 "No man can lay any other foundation than what is laid, which is Jesus Christ."

Christ is head of the congregation

Eph. 1:22, 23 "He also subjected all things under his feet, and made him head over all things to the congregation, which is his body, the fullness of him who fills up all things in all."

Col. 1:18, 24 "He is the head of the body, the congregation. . . . I, in my turn, am filling up what is lacking of the tribulations of the Christ in my flesh on behalf of his body, which is the congregation."

See also the main heading "Bride of Christ," pages 57-59.

Called Out of World Starting with Ministry of Jesus Christ

John 1:35-37, 41-43 "John was standing with two of his disciples, and as he looked at Jesus walking he said: 'See, the Lamb of God!' . . . Jesus found Philip and said to him: 'Be my follower.' "

Members Chosen by God

2 Thess. 2:13 "God selected you from the beginning for salvation by sanctifying you with spirit and by your faith in the truth."

John 17:6 "I have made your name manifest to the men you gave me out of the world. They were yours, and you gave them to me, and they have observed your word."

Rom. 8:30 "Those whom he foreordained are the ones he also called; and those whom he called are the ones he also declared to be righteous. Finally those whom he declared righteous are the ones he also glorified."

Include Jews and Gentiles alike

Gal. 3:28 "There is neither Jew nor Greek . . . for you are all one person in union with Christ Jesus."

Rom. 10:12 "There is no distinction between Jew and Greek."

Eph. 2:11-16 "Keep bearing in mind that formerly you were people of the nations as to flesh; 'uncircumcision' you were called by that which is called 'circumcision' made in the flesh with hands—that you were at that particular time without Christ, alienated from the state of Israel and strangers to the covenants of the promise, and you had no hope and were without God in the world. But now in union with Christ Jesus you who were once far off have come to be near by the blood of the Christ. For he is our peace, he who made the two parties one and destroyed the wall in between that fenced them off. By means of his flesh he abolished the hatred, the Law of commandments consisting in decrees, that he might create the two peoples in union with himself into one new man and make peace; and that he might fully reconcile both peoples in one body to God through the torture stake."

Acts 15:7-9 "Peter rose and said to them: 'Brothers, you well know that from early days God made the choice among you that through my mouth people of the nations should hear the word of the good news and believe; and God, who knows the heart, bore witness by giving them the holy spirit, just as he did to us also. And he made no distinction at all between us and them.' "

Partake of benefits of new covenant

Heb. 12:22-24 "You have approached a Mount Zion and a city of the living God, heavenly Jerusalem, . . . and the congregation of the first-born who have been enrolled in the heavens, and God the Judge of all, and the spiritual lives of righteous ones who have been made perfect, and Jesus the mediator of a new covenant, and the blood of sprinkling, which speaks in a better way than Abel's blood."

Luke 22:20 "Also, the cup in the same way after they had the evening meal, he saying: 'This cup means the new covenant by virtue of my blood, which is to be poured out in your behalf.' "

See also Heb. 8:7-13.

Anointed with holy spirit, as kings and priests in Israel were anointed with oil

2 Cor. 1:21, 22 "He who guarantees that you and we belong to Christ and he who has anointed us is God. He has also put his seal upon us and has given us the token of what is to come, that is, the spirit, in our hearts."

1 John 2:20 "You have an anointing from the holy one."

2 Ki. 9:6 "He got up and came into the house; and he proceeded to pour the oil out upon his [Jehu's] head and say to him: 'This is what Jehovah the God of Israel has said, "I do anoint you as king over Jehovah's people, that is, over Israel." ' "

Ex. 30:25-30 "You must make out of it a holy anointing oil . . . And you will anoint Aaron and his sons, and you must sanctify them for acting as priests to me."

Adopted by God as his sons

Eph. 1:5-14 "He foreordained us to the adoption through Jesus Christ as sons to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will . . . By means of him also, after you believed, you were sealed with the promised holy spirit, which is a token in advance of our inheritance."

Rom. 8:14, 15 "All who are led by God's spirit, these are God's sons. For you did not receive a spirit of slavery causing fear again, but you received a spirit of adoption as sons, by which spirit we cry out: '*Abba*, Father!' "

Gal. 4:6, 7 "Now because you are sons, God has sent forth the spirit of his Son into our hearts and it cries out: '*Abba*, Father!' So, then, you are no longer a slave but a son; and if a son, also an heir through God."

See also the main heading "Born Again," pages 56, 57.

To Make Public Declaration Concerning the Name and Purpose of Jehovah God

1 Pet. 2:9 "You are 'a chosen race, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a people for special possession, that you should declare abroad the excellencies' of the one that called you out of darkness into his wonderful light."

Heb. 13:15 "Through him let us always offer to God a sacrifice of praise, that is, the fruit of lips which make public declaration to his name."

Acts 15:14 "Symeon has related thoroughly how God for the first time turned his attention to the nations to take out of them a people for his name."

Acts 2:11 "We hear them speaking in our tongues about the magnificent things of God."

Make Up Spiritual Temple for Jehovah

Eph. 2:20-22 "You have been built up upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, while Christ Jesus himself is the foundation cornerstone. In union with him the whole building, being harmoniously joined together, is growing into a holy temple for Jehovah. In union with him you, too, are being built up together into a place for God to inhabit by spirit."

1 Cor. 3:16 "Do you not know that you people are God's temple, and that the spirit of God dwells in you?"

Rewarded with Heavenly Glory as Joint Heirs of Christ

Rom. 8:16, 17 "The spirit itself bears witness with our spirit that we are God's children. If, then, we are children, we are also heirs: heirs indeed of God, but joint heirs with Christ, provided we suffer together that we may also be glorified together."

Heb. 3:1 "Consequently, holy brothers, partakers of the heavenly calling."

1 Pet. 1:3, 4 "Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, for according to his great mercy he gave us a new birth to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, to an incorruptible and undefiled and unfading inheritance. It is reserved in the heavens for you."

See also Gal. 3:16, 26, 29.

To be priests and kings with Christ in heaven

Rev. 1:6 "He made us to be a kingdom, priests to his God and Father."

Rev. 3:21 "To the one that conquers I will grant to sit down with me on my throne, even as I conquered and sat down with my Father on his throne."

Rev. 20:6 "They will be priests of God and of the Christ, and will rule as kings with him for the thousand years."

Those from among mankind chosen to be with the Lamb, Jesus Christ, in heaven number 144,000

Rev. 14:1-5 "And I saw, and, look! the Lamb standing upon the Mount Zion, and with him a hundred and forty-four thousand having his name and the name of his Father written on their foreheads. . . . These were bought from among mankind as a first fruits to God and to the Lamb."

Those who make up the 144,000 are spiritual Israelites

Rev. 7:4 "I heard the number of those who were sealed, a hundred and forty-four thousand, sealed out of every tribe of the sons of Israel."

Rom. 9:6-9 "Not all who spring from Israel are really 'Israel.' Neither because they are Abraham's seed are they all children, but: 'What will be called "your seed" will be through Isaac.' That is, the children in the flesh are not really the children of God, but the children by the promise are counted as the seed. For the word of promise was as follows: 'At this time I will come and Sarah will have a son.'"

Rom. 2:28, 29 "He is not a Jew who is one on the outside, nor is circumcision that which is on the outside upon the flesh. But he is a Jew who is one on the inside, and his circumcision is that of the heart by spirit."

See also Gal. 3:28, 29.

Receive reward by means of resurrection to spirit life

Rom. 6:5 "If we have become united with him in the likeness of his death, we shall certainly also be united with him in the likeness of his resurrection."

1 Cor. 15:42, 44, 45, 53 "So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption, it is raised up in incorruption. It is sown a physical body, it is raised up a spiritual body. . . . It is even so written: 'The first man Adam became a living soul.' The last Adam became a life-giving spirit. For this which is corruptible must put on incorruption, and this which is mortal must put on immortality."

'Christian Congregation' Generally Refers to 144,000 Spirit-anointed Followers of Christ

Eph. 1:22, 23 "He also subjected all things under his feet, and made him head over all things to the congregation, which is his body."

Eph. 5:32 "This sacred secret is great. Now I am speaking with respect to Christ and the congregation."

See also pages 114, 115.

"Congregation" May Refer to the Christians Living at Any Particular Time

1 Cor. 10:32 "Keep from becoming causes for stumbling to Jews as well as Greeks and to the congregation of God."

Gal. 1:13 "To the point of excess I kept on persecuting the congregation of God."

Local Assemblies of Christians Referred To as "Congregations"

Acts 8:1 "Great persecution arose against the congregation that was in Jerusalem."

1 Cor. 11:16 "If any man seems to dispute for some other custom, we have no other, neither do the congregations of God."

Rom. 16:3, 4 "Give my greetings to Prisca and Aquila my fellow workers in Christ Jesus, who have risked their own necks for my soul, to whom not only I but also all the congregations of the nations render thanks."

Buildings not the important thing; early Christians met in private homes and public places

Acts 17:24 "The God that made the world and all the things in it, being, as this One is, Lord of heaven and earth, does not dwell in handmade temples."

John 4:21, 23 "Jesus said . . . 'The hour is coming when neither in this mountain nor in Jerusalem will you people worship the Father. . . . the hour is coming, and it is now, when the true worshipers will worship the Father with spirit and truth, for, indeed, the Father is looking for suchlike ones to worship him.'"

Col. 4:15 "Give my greetings to the brothers at Laodicea and to Nympha and to the congregation at her house."

Rom. 16:5 "Greet the congregation that is in their house."

Acts 19:8, 9 "Entering into the synagogue, [Paul] spoke with boldness for three months, giving talks and using persuasion concerning the kingdom of God. But when some went on hardening themselves and not believing, speaking injuriously about The Way before the multitude, he withdrew from them and separated the disciples from them, daily giving talks in the school auditorium of Tyrannus."

Conscience

All Persons Have the Faculty of Conscience

2 Cor. 4:2 "We have renounced the underhanded things of which to be ashamed, not walking with cunning, neither adulterating the word of God, but by making the truth manifest recommending ourselves to every human conscience in the sight of God."

Rom. 2:14, 15 "Whenever people of the nations that do not have law do by nature the things of the law, these people, although not having law, are a law to themselves. They are the very ones who demonstrate the matter of the law to be written in their hearts, while their conscience is bearing witness with them and, between their own thoughts, they are being accused or even excused."

Some Consciences Are Wicked, Defiled

Titus 1:15 "All things are clean to clean persons. But to persons defiled and faithless nothing is clean, but both their minds and their consciences are defiled."

1 Tim. 4:2 "The hypocrisy of men who speak lies, marked in their conscience as with a branding iron."

Heb. 10:22 "Let us approach with true hearts in the full assurance of faith, having had our hearts sprinkled from a wicked conscience and our bodies bathed with clean water."

One May Conscientiously Do Wrong, Believing It to Be Right

John 16:2 "Men will expel you from the synagogue. In fact, the hour is coming when everyone that kills you will imagine he has rendered a sacred service to God."

Acts 26:9, 10 "I, for one, really thought within myself I ought to commit many acts of opposition against the name of Jesus the Nazarene; which, in fact, I did in Jerusalem, and many of the holy ones I locked up in prisons, as I had received authority from the chief priests; and when they were to be executed, I cast my vote against them."

Rom. 10:2, 3 "For I bear them witness that they have a zeal for God; but not according to accurate knowledge; for, because

of not knowing the righteousness of God but seeking to establish their own, they did not subject themselves to the righteousness of God."

1 Cor. 4:4 "I am not conscious of anything against myself. Yet by this I am not proved righteous, but he that examines me is Jehovah."

Conscience Must Be Properly Trained in Harmony with God's Word

Heb. 9:14 "How much more will the blood of the Christ, who through an everlasting spirit offered himself without blemish to God, cleanse our consciences from dead works that we may render sacred service to the living God?"

2 Tim. 3:16, 17 "All Scripture is inspired of God and beneficial for teaching, for reproving, for setting things straight, for disciplining in righteousness, that the man of God may be fully competent, completely equipped for every good work."

To Enjoy Clean Conscience Before God, Must Accept Benefits of Sacrifice of Jesus Christ

Heb. 9:9, 14 "This very tent is an illustration for the appointed time that is now here, and in keeping with it both gifts and sacrifices are offered. However, these are not able to make the man doing sacred service perfect as respects his conscience. . . . how much more will the blood of the Christ, who through an everlasting spirit offered himself without blemish to God, cleanse our consciences from dead works that we may render sacred service to the living God?"

1 Pet. 3:21 "That which corresponds to this is also now saving you, namely, baptism, (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the request made to God for a good conscience,) through the resurrection of Jesus Christ."

Proddings of Christian Conscience Not to Be Ignored

1 Tim. 1:19 "Holding faith and a good conscience, which some have thrust aside and have experienced shipwreck concerning their faith."

Acts 24:16 "In this respect, indeed, I am exercising myself continually to have a consciousness of committing no offense against God and men."

1 Pet. 3:16 "Hold a good conscience, so that in the particular in which you are spoken against they may get ashamed who are speaking slightingly of your good conduct in connection with Christ."

1 Tim. 1:5, 6 "Really the objective of this mandate is love out of a clean heart and out of a good conscience and out of faith without hypocrisy. By deviating from these things certain ones have been turned aside into idle talk."

Christians Lovingly Forego Personal Rights so as Not to Wound Conscience of Weaker Ones

1 Cor. 8:7, 10, 12, 13 "Nevertheless, there is not this knowledge in all persons; but some, being accustomed until now to the idol, eat food as something sacrificed to an idol, and their conscience, being weak, is defiled. For if anyone should see you, the one having knowledge, reclining at a meal in an idol temple, will not the conscience of that one who is weak be built up to the point of eating foods offered to idols? But when you people thus sin against your brothers and wound their conscience that is weak, you are sinning against Christ. Therefore, if food makes my brother stumble, I will never again eat flesh at all, that I may not make my brother stumble."

1 Cor. 10:28, 29 "If anyone should say to you: 'This is something offered in sacrifice,' do not eat on account of the one that disclosed it and on account of conscience. 'Conscience,' I say, not your own, but that of the other person."

One Faithful in God's Service Has Clear Conscience

Acts 23:1 "Brothers, I have behaved before God with a perfectly clear conscience down to this day."

2 Cor. 1:12 "The thing we boast of is this, to which our conscience bears witness, that with holiness and godly sincerity, not with fleshly wisdom but with God's undeserved kindness, we have conducted ourselves in the world, but more especially toward you."

Heb. 13:18 "Carry on prayer for us, for we trust we have an honest conscience, as we wish to conduct ourselves honestly in all things."

2 Tim. 1:3 "I am grateful to God, to whom I am rendering sacred service as my forefathers did and with a clean conscience, that I never leave off remembering you in my supplications."

Rom. 9:1 "I am telling the truth in Christ; I am not lying, since my conscience bears witness with me in holy spirit."

1 Tim. 3:8, 9 "Ministerial servants should likewise be serious, not double-tongued, not giving themselves to a lot of wine, not greedy of dishonest gain, holding the sacred secret of the faith with a clean conscience."

Counsel

RECEIVING COUNSEL

Wise to Seek Out Counsel from Others

Prov. 20:5 "Counsel in the heart of a man is as deep waters, but the man of discernment is one that will draw it up."

Prov. 15:22 "There is a frustrating of plans where there is no confidential talk, but in the multitude of counselors there is accomplishment."

See also Prov. 11:14; 20:18.

When Counseled, Listen and Learn, Rather than Trying to Justify Self

Prov. 12:15 "The way of the foolish one is right in his own eyes, but the one listening to counsel is wise."

Ps. 141:5 "Should the righteous one strike me, it would be a loving-kindness; and should he reprove me, it would be oil upon the head, which my head would not want to refuse."

Prov. 15:31 "The ear that is listening to the reproof of life lodges right in among wise people."

Prov. 19:20 "Listen to counsel and accept discipline, in order that you may become wise in your future."

Prov. 29:1 "A man repeatedly reproved but making his neck hard will suddenly be broken, and that without healing."

2 Chron. 25:15, 16 "Consequently Jehovah's anger became hot against Amaziah, and so he sent a prophet to him and said to him: 'Why have you searched for the people's gods that did not deliver their own people out of your hand?' And it came about when he spoke to him that the king immediately said to him: 'Was it a counselor of the king that we constituted you? Quit for your own sake. Why should they strike you down?' Accordingly the prophet quit, but he said: 'I certainly know that God has resolved to bring you to ruin, because you have done this and you have not listened to my counsel.'"

See also Prov. 1:23-26; 9:8; Heb. 12:5.

Show Respect for Overseers Who Offer Admonition

1 Thess. 5:12 "We request you, brothers, to have regard for those who are working hard among you and presiding over you in the Lord and admonishing you."

1 Tim. 5:17 "Let the older men who preside in a fine way be reckoned worthy of double honor, especially those who work hard in speaking and teaching."

Listen to What Older Persons Have to Say, Rather than Being Misled by Those Less Experienced

1 Ki. 12:8 "However, he left the counsel of the older men with which they had advised him, and he began to take counsel with the young men that had grown up with him, who were the ones attending upon him."

Prov. 1:22, 30 "How long will you inexperienced ones keep loving inexperience . . . They did not consent to my counsel; they disrespected all my reproof."

Reject Counsel of Those Who Do Not Respect the Word of Jehovah

Ps. 1:1 "Happy is the man that has not walked in the counsel of the wicked ones."

1 Chron. 10:13 "Saul died for his unfaithfulness with which he had acted faithlessly against Jehovah concerning the word of Jehovah that he had not kept and also for asking of a spirit medium to make inquiry."

2 Chron. 22: 4, 5 "He went on doing what was bad in Jehovah's eyes, the same as the house of Ahab, for they themselves became counselors to him after the death of his father, to his ruination. It was also in their counsel that he walked, so that he went with Jehoram the son of Ahab the king of Israel to the war against Hazael the king of Syria at Ramoth-gilead, at which the shooters got to strike Jehoram."

2 Chron. 22:3 "He himself also walked in the ways of the house of Ahab, for his mother herself became his counselor in doing wickedly."

Job 21:16 "The very counsel of wicked ones has kept far from me."

GIVING COUNSEL

Listen to Problem Before Trying to Counsel; Get All the Facts; Hear Both Sides

Prov. 18:13 "When anyone is replying to a matter before he hears it, that is foolishness on his part and a humiliation."

1 Tim. 5:19 "Do not admit an accusation against an older man, except only on the evidence of two or three witnesses." (See also 2 Cor. 13:1.)

Deut. 19:15 "No single witness should rise up against a man respecting any error or any sin, in the case of any sin that he may commit. At the mouth of two witnesses or at the mouth of three witnesses the matter should stand good."

Prov. 18:17 "The one first in his legal case is righteous; his fellow comes in and certainly searches him through."

Prayerfully Look to Jehovah for Guidance to Give Right Counsel

1 Ki. 3:9, 11, 12 "'You must give to your servant an obedient heart to judge your people, to discern between good and bad; for who is able to judge this difficult people of yours?' And God went on to say to him: 'For the reason that you have requested this thing and have not requested for yourself many days nor requested for yourself riches nor requested the soul of your enemies, and you have requested for yourself understanding to hear judicial cases, look! I shall certainly do according to your words.'"

Base Counsel on God's Written Word

2 Tim. 3:16, 17 "All scripture is inspired of God and beneficial for teaching, for reproving, for setting things straight, for disciplining in righteousness, that the man of God may be fully competent, completely equipped for every good work."

Ps. 119:24 "Your reminders are what I am fond of, as men of my counsel."

Wherever Possible, Good to Commend First

Rev. 2:1-4 "To the angel of the congregation in Ephesus write: . . . 'I know your deeds, and your labor and endurance, and that you cannot bear bad men, and that you put those to the test who say they are apostles, but they are not, and you found them liars. You are also showing endurance, and you have borne up for my name's sake and have not grown weary. Nevertheless, I hold this against you, that you have left the love you had at first.'" (See also Rev. 2:8, 9, 12-14, 18-20; Isa. 9:6.)

When One Complains that Another Has Wronged Him, Ask if He Has Discussed the Matter with That One Alone

Matt. 18:15-17 "Moreover, if your brother commits a sin, go lay bare his fault between you and him alone. If he listens to you, you have gained your brother. But if he does not listen, take along with you one or two more, in order that at the mouth of two or three witnesses every matter may be established. If he does not listen to them, speak to the congregation. If he does not listen even to the congregation, let him be to you just as a man of the nations and as a tax collector."

Luke 17:3 "Pay attention to yourselves. If your brother commits a sin give him a reproof, and if he repents forgive him."

Lev. 19:17 "You must not hate your brother in your heart. You should by all means reprove your associate, that you may not bear sin along with him."

See also the main heading "Settling Personal Differences," pages 446-448.

Encourage Complainants to Be Merciful, Long-suffering, Forgiving

Matt. 18:21, 22 "Then Peter came up and said to him: 'Lord, how many times is my brother to sin against me and am I to forgive him? Up to seven times?' Jesus said to him: 'I say to you, not, Up to seven times, but, Up to seventy-seven times.'"

Col. 3:13 "Continue putting up with one another and forgiving one another freely if anyone has a cause for complaint against another. Even as Jehovah freely forgave you, so do you also."

Mark 11:25 "When you stand praying, forgive whatever you have against anyone; in order that your Father who is in the heavens may also forgive you your trespasses."

Eph. 4:32 "Become kind to one another, tenderly compassionate, freely forgiving one another just as God also by Christ freely forgave you."

Luke 6:36 "Continue becoming merciful, just as your Father is merciful."

See also 1 Pet. 3:8, 9; Matt. 6:14.

Be Firm for What Is Right

1 Sam. 15:23-29 "'Since you have rejected the word of Jehovah, he accordingly rejects you from being king.' Then Saul said to Samuel: 'I have sinned; for I have overstepped the order of Jehovah and your words, because I feared the people and so obeyed their voice. And now, please, pardon my sin and return with me that I may prostrate myself to Jehovah.' But Samuel said to Saul: 'I shall not return with you, for you have rejected the word of Jehovah, and Jehovah re-

jects you from continuing as king over Israel.' As Samuel was turning about to go, he immediately grabbed hold of the skirt of his sleeveless coat, but it ripped away. At this Samuel said to him: 'Jehovah has ripped away the royal rule of Israel from off you today, and he will certainly give it to a fellow man of yours who is better than you. And, besides, the Excellency of Israel will not prove false, and He will not feel regrets, for He is not an earthling man so as to feel regrets.'"

1 Ki. 22:8, 18 "At that the king of Israel said to Jehoshaphat: 'There is still one man through whom to inquire of Jehovah; but I myself certainly hate him, for he does not prophesy good things concerning me but bad—Micaiah the son of Imlah.' However, Jehoshaphat said: 'Do not let the king say a thing like that.' Then the king of Israel said to Jehoshaphat: 'Did I not say to you, "He will prophesy concerning me, not good things, but bad"?'"

Give Encouragement so One Counseled Does Not Become Unnecessarily Downhearted

Heb. 12:11-13 "True, no discipline seems for the present to be joyous, but grievous; yet afterward to those who have been trained by it it yields peaceable fruit, namely, righteousness. Hence straighten up the hands that hang down and the enfeebled knees, and keep making straight paths for your feet, that what is lame may not be put out of joint, but rather that it may be healed."

Pray with Those Who Are Depressed

Jas. 5:14 "Is there anyone sick among you? Let him call the older men of the congregation to him, and let them pray over him, greasing him with oil in the name of Jehovah."

Show Love, Kindness; Objective Is to Restore Erring One

Gal. 6:1 "Brothers, even though a man takes some false step before he is aware of it, you who have spiritual qualifications try to restore such a man in a spirit of mildness, as you each keep an eye on yourself, for fear you also may be tempted."

Eph. 4:32 "Become kind to one another, tenderly compassionate."

Older Ones to Be Dealt with as One's Parents

1 Tim. 5:1, 2 "Do not severely criticize an older man. To the contrary, entreat him as a father, . . . older women as mothers."

Younger Ones to Be Treated as Brothers and Sisters

1 Tim. 5:1, 2 "Entreat . . . younger men as brothers, . . . younger women as sisters with all chasteness."

When Counsel Is Repeatedly Rejected by One Who Prefers Unrighteousness, He Should Be Expelled from Congregation

Titus 3:10 "As for a man that promotes a sect, reject him after a first and a second admonition."

1 Tim. 5:20 "Reprove before all onlookers persons who practice sin, that the rest also may have fear."

1 Cor. 5:9, 11, 13 "In my letter I wrote you to quit mixing in company with fornicators. But now I am writing you to quit mixing in company with anyone called a brother that is a fornicator or a greedy person or an idolater or a reviler or a drunkard or an extortioner, not even eating with such a man . . . 'Remove the wicked man from among yourselves.'"

Deut. 17:7 "You must clear out what is bad from your midst."

See also the main heading "Disfellowshiping," pages 162-165.

Covenants

Jehovah Made Covenant with Noah to Preserve Him and His Household Through the Flood

Gen. 6:18 "I do establish my covenant with you; and you must go into the ark, you and your sons and your wife and your sons' wives with you."

After the Flood, Jehovah Promised Never Again to Destroy All Flesh by a Deluge; Rainbow Is Sign of the Covenant

Gen. 9:8-11, 13, 15 "God went on to say to Noah and to his sons with him: 'And as for me, here I am establishing my covenant with you men and with your offspring after you, and with every living soul that is with you, among fowls, among beasts and among all living creatures of the earth with you, from all those going out of the ark to every living creature of the earth. Yes, I do establish my covenant with you: No more will all flesh be cut off by waters of a deluge, and no more will there occur a deluge to bring the earth to ruin. My rainbow I do give in the cloud, and it must serve as a sign of the covenant between me and the earth. And I shall certainly remember my covenant which is between me and you and every living soul among all flesh; and no more will the waters become a deluge to bring all flesh to ruin.'"

Covenant of Blessing Made with Abraham, to Benefit All Mankind

Gen. 12:1-3 "Jehovah proceeded to say to Abram: 'Go your way out of your country and from your relatives and from the house of your father to the country that I shall show you; and I shall make a great nation out of you and I shall bless you and I will make your name great; and prove yourself a blessing. And I will bless those who bless you, and him that calls down evil upon you I shall curse, and all the families of the ground will certainly bless themselves by means of you." (See also Acts 7:2-4.)

See also Luke 1:69-73; Acts 3:25; Heb. 6:13, 14.

Confirmed and enlarged on at various times

Gen. 12:7 "Jehovah now appeared to Abram and said: 'To your seed I am going to give this land.'" (See also Deut. 34:4; Ps. 105:8-11.)

Gen. 13:14-17 "Jehovah said to Abram after Lot had separated from him: 'Raise your eyes, please, and look from the place where you are, northward and southward and eastward and westward, because all the land at which you are looking, to you and to your seed I am going to give it until time indefinite. And I will constitute your seed like the dust particles of the earth, so that, if a man could be able to count the dust particles of the earth, then your seed could be numbered. Get up, go about in the land through its length and through its breadth, because to you I am going to give it.'"

Gen. 15:18 "On that day Jehovah concluded with Abram a covenant, saying: 'To your seed I will give this land, from the river of Egypt to the great river, the river Euphrates.'"

Gen. 17:2-8, 19 "'I will give my covenant between me and you, that I may multiply you very, very much.' At this Abram fell upon his face, and God continued to speak with him, saying: 'As for me, look! my covenant is with you, and you will certainly

become a father of a crowd of *nations. And your name* will not be called Abram any more, and your name must become Abraham, because a father of a crowd of nations I will make you. And I will make you very, very fruitful and will make you become nations, and kings will come out of you. And I will carry out my covenant between me and you and your seed after you according to their generations for a covenant to time indefinite, to prove myself God to you and to your seed after you. And I will give to you and to your seed after you the land of your alien residences, even the entire land of Canaan, for a possession to time indefinite; and I will prove myself God *to them.' To this God said:* 'Sarah your wife is indeed bearing you a son, and you must call his name Isaac. And I will establish my covenant with him for a covenant to time indefinite to his seed after him.'"

Gen. 22:15-18 "Jehovah's angel proceeded to call to Abraham the second time out of the heavens and to say: '"By myself I do swear," is the utterance of Jehovah, "that by reason of the fact that you have done this thing and you have not withheld your son, your only one, I shall surely bless you and I shall surely multiply your seed like the stars of the heavens and like the grains of sand that are on the sea*shore; and your seed* will take possession of the gate of his enemies. And by means of your seed all nations of the earth will certainly bless themselves due to the fact that you have listened to my voice."'"

Influenced God's dealings with his people in later times

Ex. 6:8 "I shall certainly bring you into the land that I raised my hand in oath to give to Abra*ham, Isaac* and *Jacob*; and I shall indeed give it to you as something to possess. I am Jehovah."

2 Ki. 13:23 "Jehovah showed them favor and had mercy upon them and turned to them for the sake of his covenant with Abraham, Isaac and Jacob; and he did not want to bring them to ruin, and he did not cast them away from before his face until now."

Jesus Christ is principal seed of Abraham through whom blessings flow; anointed Christians are secondary part of seed

Gal. 3:14, 16, 29 "The purpose was that the blessing of Abraham might come to be by means of Jesus Christ for the nations, that we might receive the promised spirit through our faith. Now the promises were spoken to Abraham and *to his seed.* It says, not: 'And to seeds,' as in the case of many such, but as in the case of one: 'And to your seed,' who is Christ. Moreover, if you belong to Christ, you are really Abraham's seed, heirs with reference to a promise."

Matt. 1:1 "The book of the history of Jesus Christ, son of David, son of Abraham."

Obedience to Covenant of Circumcision Demonstrated Purity. Circumcision Outward Seal of Righteousness

Gen. 17:9-11, 13, 14 "God said further to Abraham: 'As for you, you are to keep my covenant, you and your seed *after* you according to their generations. This is my covenant that you men will keep, between me and you men, even your seed after you: Every male of yours must get circumcised. And you must get circumcised in *the flesh* of your *foreskins*, and it must serve as a sign of the covenant between me and you. Every man born in your house and every man purchased with money of yours must without fail get circumcised; and my covenant in the flesh of you men must serve as a covenant to time indefinite. And an uncircumcised male who will not get the flesh of his foreskin circumcised, even that soul must be cut off from his people. He has broken my covenant.'"

Rom. 4:11 "He received a sign, namely, circumcision, as a seal of the righteousness by the faith he had while in his uncircumcised state, that he might be the father of all those having faith while in uncircumcision, in order for righteousness to be counted to them."

Law Covenant Made by Jehovah with Natural Israel

Ex. 24:3, 8 "Then Moses came and related to the people all the words of Jehovah and all the judicial decisions, and all the people *answered with one voice* and said: 'All the words that Jehovah has spoken we are willing to do.' So Moses took the blood and sprinkled it upon the people and said: 'Here is the blood of the covenant that Jehovah has concluded with you as respects all these words.'"

Ex. 34:27 "Jehovah went on to say to Moses: 'Write down for yourself these words, because it is in accordance with these words *that I do conclude* a covenant with you and Israel.'"

Deut. 4:12, 13 "Jehovah began to speak to you out of the middle of the fire. The sound of words was what you were hearing, but no form were you seeing—nothing but a voice. And he proceeded to state to you his covenant, which he commanded you to perform —the Ten Words, after which he wrote them upon two tablets of stone."

Given under awe-inspiring circumstances

Ex. 19:18, 20 "Mount Sinai smoked all over, due to the fact that Jehovah came down upon it in fire; and its smoke kept ascending like the smoke of a kiln, and the whole mountain was trembling very much. So Jehovah came down upon Mount Sinai to the top of the mountain. Then Jehovah called Moses to the top of the mountain, and Moses went on up."

Heb. 12:18, 19, 21 "For you have not approached that which can be felt and which has been set aflame with *fire*, and a dark cloud and thick darkness and a tempest, and the blare of a trumpet and the voice of words; on hearing which voice the people implored that no word should be added to them. Also, the display was so *fearsome that Moses said:* 'I am fearful and trembling.'"

See also Deut. 4:11-13; 5:4, 5.

Made only with Israel, not Gentile nations

Ps. 147:19, 20 "He is telling his word to Jacob, his regulations and his judicial decisions to Israel. He has not done that way to any other nation."

Deut. 4:8 "What great nation is there that has righteous regulations and judicial decisions like all this law that I am putting before you today?"

Ex. 31:16, 17 "The sons of Israel must keep the sabbath, so as to carry out the sabbath during their generations. It is a covenant *to time indefinite. Between me* and the sons of Israel it is a sign to time indefinite."

Deut. 5:3 "It was not with our forefathers that Jehovah concluded this covenant, but with us, all those of us alive here today."

Stated purpose

Ex. 19:5, 6 "'Now if you will strictly obey my voice and will indeed keep my covenant, then you will certainly become my *special property out of all other* peoples, because the whole earth belongs to me. And you yourselves will become to me a kingdom of priests and a holy nation.' These are the words that you are to say to the sons of Israel."

Gal. 3:19 "Why, then, the Law? It was added to make transgressions manifest, until the seed

should arrive to whom the promise had been made; and it was transmitted through angels by the hand of a mediator."

Did not produce righteous nation, because of fleshly imperfection

Rom. 8:3 "There being an incapability on the part of the Law, while it was weak through the flesh, God, by sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh and concerning sin, condemned sin in the flesh."

Acts 13:38, 39 "Let it therefore be known to you, brothers, that through this One a forgiveness of sins is being published to you; and that from all the things from which you could not be declared guiltless by means of the law of Moses, everyone who believes is declared guiltless by means of this One."

Rom. 9:31, 32 "Israel, although pursuing a law of righteousness, did not attain to the law. For what reason? Because he pursued it, not by faith, but as by works."

Gal. 3:21, 22 "Is the Law, therefore, against the promises of God? May that never happen! For if a law had been given that was able to give life, righteousness would actually have been by means of law. But the Scripture delivered up all things together to the custody of sin, that the promise resulting from faith toward Jesus Christ might be given to those exercising faith."

Led those with faith to Christ

Gal. 3:24 "Consequently the Law has become our tutor leading to Christ, that we might be declared righteous due to faith."

Rom. 10:4 "Christ is the end of the Law, so that everyone exercising faith may have righteousness."

Embodied prophetic patterns

Heb. 10:1 "Since the Law has a shadow of the good things to come, but not the very substance of the things, men can never with the same sacrifices from year to year which they offer continually make those who approach perfect."

Col. 2:16, 17 "Therefore let no man judge you in eating and drinking or in respect of a festival or of an observance of the new moon or of a sabbath; for those things are a shadow of the things to come, but the reality belongs to the Christ."

Heb. 8:4, 5 "If, now, he were upon earth, he would not be a priest, there being men who offer the gifts according to the Law, but which men are rendering sacred service in a typical representation and a shadow of the heavenly things."

Heb. 9:7-9, 23, 24 "Into the second compartment the high priest alone enters once a year, not without blood, which he offers for himself and for the sins of ignorance of the people. Thus the holy spirit makes it plain that the way into the holy place had not yet been made manifest while the first tent was standing. This very tent is an illustration for the appointed time that is now here, and in keeping with it both gifts and sacrifices are offered. However, these are not able to make the man doing sacred service perfect as respects his conscience. Therefore it was necessary that the typical representations of the things in the heavens should be cleansed by these means, but the heavenly things themselves with sacrifices that are better than such sacrifices. For Christ entered, not into a holy place made with hands, which is a copy of the reality, but into heaven itself, now to appear before the person of God for us."

Jesus fulfilled the Law and Jehovah terminated it

Matt. 5:17 "Do not think I came to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I came, not to destroy, but to fulfill."

Col. 2:13, 14 "Furthermore, though you were dead in your trespasses and in the uncircumcised state of your flesh, God made you alive together with him. He kindly forgave us all our trespasses and blotted out the handwritten document against us, which consisted of decrees and which was in opposition to us; and He has taken it out of the way by nailing it to the torture stake."

Eph. 2:14, 15 "For he is our peace, he who made the two parties one and destroyed the wall in between that fenced them off. By means of his flesh he abolished the hatred, the Law of commandments consisting in decrees, that he might create the two peoples in union with himself into one new man and make peace."

See also Rom. 10:4.

Principles embodied in the Law are beneficial for Christians

Rom. 13:8-10 "Do not you people be owing anybody a single thing, except to love one another; for he that loves his fellow man has fulfilled the law. For the law code, 'You must not commit adultery, You must not murder, You must not steal, You must not covet,' and whatever other commandment there is, is summed up in this word, namely, 'You must love your neighbor as yourself.' Love does not work evil to one's neighbor; therefore love is the law's fulfillment."

Eph. 6:1-3 "Children, be obedient to your parents in union with the Lord, for this is righteous: 'Honor your father and your mother'; which is the first command with a promise: 'That it may go well with you and you may endure a long time on the earth.'" (Compare Deut. 5:16.)

Rom. 12:19 "Do not avenge yourselves, beloved, but yield place to the wrath; for it is written: 'Vengeance is mine; I will repay, says Jehovah.'" (Compare Lev. 19:18.)

Covenant for the Priesthood in Israel

Num. 25:12, 13 "For that reason say, 'Here I am giving him my covenant of peace. And it must serve as the covenant of a priesthood to time indefinite for him and his offspring after him.'"

Mal. 2:4 "'You will have to know that I have sent to you this commandment, in order that my covenant with Levi may continue,' Jehovah of armies has said."

See also Ex. 40:15; Num. 3:11, 12.

Covenant Made on Plains of Moab; Law Repeated, Application to Life in Promised Land Emphasized

Deut. 29:1, 9 "These are the words of the covenant that Jehovah commanded Moses to conclude with the sons of Israel in the land of Moab aside from the covenant that he had concluded with them in Horeb. So you must keep the words of this covenant and do them, in order that you may make everything you will do turn out well."

Deut. 6:1 "Now these are the commandment, the regulations and the judicial decisions that Jehovah your God has commanded to teach you, so as to do them in the land to which you are passing over there to take possession of it."

New Covenant Made by Jehovah with Spiritual Israel, Including Both Jews and Gentiles

Jer. 31:31, 33 "'Look! There are days coming,' is the utterance of Jehovah, 'and I will conclude with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah a new covenant . . . For this is the covenant that I shall conclude with the house of Israel after those days,' is the utterance of Jehovah. 'I will put my law within them, and in their heart I shall write it. And I will become their God, and they themselves will become my people.'"

Rom. 2:28, 29 "He is not a Jew who is one on the outside, nor is circumcision that which is on the outside upon the flesh. But he is a Jew who is one on the inside, and his circumcision is that of the heart by spirit, and not by a written code. The praise of that one comes, not from men, but from God."

1 Cor. 11:25 "This cup means the new covenant by virtue of my blood."

Eph. 2:12, 13 "You were at that particular time without Christ, alienated from the state of Israel and strangers to the covenants of the promise, and you had no hope and were without God in the world. But now in union with Christ Jesus you who were once far off have come to be near by the blood of the Christ."

Glory surpasses that of law covenant

2 Cor. 3:7-11 "If the code which administers death and which was engraved in letters in stones came about in a glory, so that the sons of Israel could not gaze intently at the face of Moses because of the glory of his face, a glory that was to be done away with, why should not the administering of the spirit be much more with glory? For if the code administering condemnation was glorious, much more does the administering of righteousness abound with glory. In fact, even that which has once been made glorious has been stripped of glory in this respect, because of the glory that excels it. For if that which was to be done away with was brought in with glory, much more would that which remains be with glory."

Replaced the law covenant

Heb. 8:13 "In his saying 'a new covenant' he has made the former one obsolete. Now that which is made obsolete and growing old is near to vanishing away."

Heb. 9:15 "So that is why he is a mediator of a new covenant, in order that, because a death has occurred for their release by ransom from the transgressions under the former covenant, the ones who have been called might receive the promise of the everlasting inheritance."

Validated by blood of Jesus Christ

Heb. 9:17, 18, 23 "A covenant is valid over dead victims, since it is not in force at any time while the human covenanter is living. Consequently neither was the former covenant inaugurated without blood. Therefore it was necessary that the typical representations of the things in the heavens should be cleansed by these means, but the heavenly things themselves with sacrifices that are better than such sacrifices."

Luke 22:20 "This cup means the new covenant by virtue of my blood, which is to be poured out in your behalf."

Results in forgiveness of sins for spiritual Israelites

Jer. 31:31, 34 "'Look! There are days coming,' is the utterance of Jehovah, 'and I will conclude with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah a new covenant. . . . For I shall forgive their error, and their sin I shall remember no more.'" (See also Heb. 8:8-12.)

Matt. 26:28 "For this means my 'blood of the covenant,' which is to be poured out in behalf of many for forgiveness of sins."

Covenant for Everlasting Kingdom Made with David

1 Chron. 17:11-14 "It must occur that when your days have come to the full for you to go to be with your forefathers, I shall certainly raise up your seed after you that will come to be one of your sons, and I shall indeed firmly establish his kingship. He is the one that will build me a house, and I shall certainly establish his throne firmly to time indefinite. I myself shall become his father, and he himself will become my son; and my loving-kindness I shall not remove from him the way I removed it from the one that happened to be prior to you. And I will cause him to stand in my house and in my kingship to time indefinite, and his throne will itself become one lasting to time indefinite." (See also 2 Sam. 7:12-16.)

2 Sam. 23:5 "Is not my household like that with God? Because it is an indefinitely lasting covenant that he has assigned to me, nicely put in order in everything and secured."

Ps. 89:35-37 "Once I have sworn in my holiness, to David I will not tell lies. His seed itself will prove to be even to time indefinite, and his throne as the sun in front of me. As the moon it will be firmly established for time indefinite, and be a faithful witness in the skies."

Jesus Christ is heir to that kingdom covenant

Luke 1:32, 33 "This one will be great and will be called Son of the Most High; and Jehovah God will give him the throne of David his father, and he will rule as king over the house of Jacob forever, and there will be no end of his kingdom."

Isa. 9:6, 7 "For there has been a child born to us, there has been a son given to us; and the princely rule will come to be upon his shoulder. And his name will be called Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God, Eternal Father, Prince of Peace. To the abundance of the princely rule and to peace there will be no end, upon the throne of David and upon his kingdom in order to establish it firmly and to sustain it by means of justice and by means of righteousness, from now on and to time indefinite."

Jehovah Also Promised Heavenly Position of King-Priest to Jesus Christ

Ps. 110:2, 4 "The rod of your strength Jehovah will send out of Zion, saying: 'Go subduing in the midst of your enemies.' Jehovah has sworn and he will feel no regret: 'You are a priest to time indefinite according to the manner of Melchizedek.'"

Heb. 7:15-17 "It is still more abundantly clear that with a similarity to Melchizedek there arises another priest, who has become such, not according to the law of a commandment depending upon the flesh, but according to the power of an indestructible life, for in witness it is said: 'You are a priest forever according to the manner of Melchizedek.'"

See also Heb. 5:5, 6; 6:20.

Those with whom new covenant is made also taken by Jesus into a covenant

Luke 22:20-29 "The cup in the same way after they had the evening meal, he saying: 'This cup means the new covenant by virtue of my blood, which is to be poured out in your behalf. . . . However, you are the ones that have stuck with me in my trials; and I make a covenant with you, just as my Father has made a covenant with me, for a kingdom.'"

Rev. 20:6 "They will be priests of God and of the Christ, and will rule as kings with him."

See also Rev. 5:9, 10.

Reference to a Covenant as a "Covenant of Salt" Indicates Its Permanence; Salt Is a Preservative

Num. 18:19 "All the holy contributions, which the sons of Israel will contribute to Jehovah,

I have given to you and your sons and your daughters with you, as an allowance to time indefinite. It is a covenant of salt before Jehovah for you and your offspring with you."

2 Chron. 13:5 "Is it not for you to know that Jehovah the God of Israel himself gave a kingdom to David over Israel to time indefinite, to him and to his sons, by a covenant of salt?"

Covenants in Ancient Times Were Ratified by Cutting a Sacrificial Animal

Jer. 34:18 "The men side-stepping my covenant, in that they did not carry out the words of the covenant that they concluded before me with the calf that they cut in two that they might pass between its pieces."

Gen. 15:9, 10, 18 "In turn he said to him: 'Take for me a three-year-old heifer and a three-year-old she-goat and a three-year-old ram and a turtledove and a young pigeon.' So he took all these to himself and cut them in two and put each part of them so as to match the other, but the young birds he did not cut in pieces. On that day Jehovah concluded ["cut," 1950 Ed., ftn.] with Abram a covenant, saying: 'To your seed I will give this land, from the river of Egypt to the great river, the river Euphrates.'"

Covenants, or Binding Agreements, Were Frequently Made Between Men

Gen. 21:27 "With that Abraham took sheep and cattle and gave them to Abimelech, and both of them proceeded to conclude a covenant."

Gen. 31:43, 44 "Then Laban in answer said to Jacob: . . . 'come, let us conclude a covenant, I and you, and it must serve as a witness between me and you.'"

1 Sam. 23:18 "Then the two of them concluded a covenant before Jehovah; and David kept dwelling in Horesh, and Jonathan himself went to his own home."

1 Ki. 20:34 "Ben-hadad now said to him: 'The cities that my father took from your father I shall return; and streets you will assign to yourself in Damascus the same as my father assigned in Samaria. And as for me, in a covenant I shall send you away.' With that he concluded a covenant with him and sent him away."

1 Chron. 11:3 "So all the older men of Israel came to the king at Hebron and David concluded a covenant with them in Hebron before Jehovah."

Covenant Keeping Is Not to Be Viewed Lightly

Rom. 1:31, 32 "Without understanding, false to agreements, having no natural affection, merciless. Although these know full well the righteous decree of God, that those practicing such things are deserving of death, they not only keep on doing them but also approve those practicing them."

Ezek. 17:16, 18-20 "'As I am alive,' is the utterance of the Lord Jehovah, 'in the place of the king who put in as king the one that despised his oath and that broke his covenant, with him in the midst of Babylon he will die. And he has despised an oath in breaking a covenant, and, look! he had given his hand and has done even all these things. He will not make his escape.' Therefore this is what the Lord Jehovah has said: 'As I am alive, surely my oath that he has despised and my covenant that he has broken—I will even bring it upon his head. And I will spread over him my net, and he will certainly be caught in my hunting net; and I will bring him to Babylon and put myself on judgment with him there respecting his unfaithfulness with which he acted against me.'"

Jer. 11:10, 11 "They have returned to the errors of their forefathers, the first ones, who refused to obey my words, but who themselves have walked after other gods in order to serve them. The house of Israel and the house of Judah have broken my covenant that I concluded with their forefathers. Therefore this is what Jehovah has said, 'Here I am bringing upon them a calamity that they will not be able to get out of.'"

Creation

Jehovah Alone Before Creation Had a Beginning

Ps. 90:2 "Before the mountains themselves were born, or you proceeded to bring forth as with labor pains the earth and the productive land, even from time indefinite to time indefinite you are God."

1 Tim. 1:17 "Now to the King of eternity, incorruptible, invisible, the only God, be honor and glory forever and ever."

Jehovah the Only Creator

Isa. 45:18 "This is what Jehovah has said, the Creator of the heavens, He the true God, the Former of the earth and the Maker of it, He the One who firmly established it, who did not create it simply for nothing, who formed it even to be inhabited: 'I am Jehovah, and there is no one else.'"

Rev. 4:11 "You are worthy, Jehovah, even our God, to receive the glory and the honor and the power, because you created all things, and because of your will they existed and were created."

Isa. 40:28 "Jehovah, the Creator . . . . is a God to time indefinite."

Eph. 3:9 "God . . . created all things."

See also Amos 4:13.

Things Made Testify to His Godship and High Qualities

Rom. 1:20 "His invisible qualities are clearly seen from the world's creation onward, because they are perceived by the things made, even his eternal power and Godship, so that they are inexcusable."

Ps. 19:1-4 "The heavens are declaring the glory of God; and of the work of his hands the expanse is telling. One day after another day causes speech to bubble forth, and one night after another night shows forth knowledge. There is no speech, and there are no words; no voice on their part is being heard. Into all the earth their measuring line has gone out, and to the extremity of the productive land their utterances."

Isa. 40:26 "Raise your eyes high up and see. Who has created these things? It is the One who is bringing forth the army of them even by number, all of whom he calls even by name."

Creation Orderly, Not Chaotic or Left to Chance

1 Cor. 14:33 "God is a God, not of disorder, but of peace."

Job 38:1, 4, 5, 8, 11, 33 "Jehovah proceeded to answer Job out of the windstorm and say: 'Where did you happen to be when I founded the earth? Tell me, if you do know understand-

ing. Who set its measurements, in case you know, or who stretched out upon it the measuring line? And who barricaded the sea with doors, which began to go forth as when it burst out from the womb; and I went on to say, "This far you may come, and no farther; and here your proud waves are limited"? Have you come to know the statutes of the heavens?' "

Only-begotten Son the First Creation

Rev. 3:14 "To the angel of the congregation in Laodicea write: These are the things that the Amen says, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation by God."

Col. 1:15 "He is the image of the invisible God, the first-born of all creation."

Son Used as Master Worker in Creating All Other Things

John 1:3, 10 "All things came into existence through him, and apart from him not even one thing came into existence . . . the world came into existence through him."

Col. 1:16, 17 "By means of him all other things were created in the heavens and upon the earth, the things visible and the things invisible, no matter whether they are thrones or lordships or governments or authorities. All other things have been created through him and for him. Also, he is before all other things and by means of him all other things were made to exist."

Heb. 1:1, 2 "God . . . has at the end of these days spoken to us by means of a Son, whom he appointed heir of all things, and through whom he made the systems of things."

Prov. 8:22, 27, 30 "Jehovah himself produced me as the beginning of his way, the earliest of his achievements of long ago. When he prepared the heavens I was there; . . then I came to be beside him as a master worker." (Compare 1 Cor. 1:24, 30.)

Heavenly Angels Created Before Earth

Job 38:4, 7 "Where did you happen to be when I founded the earth? . . . When the morning stars joyfully cried out together, and all the sons of God began shouting in applause?"

See also the main heading "Angels," pages 9-14.

Heavens and Earth and All Elements

Gen. 1:1 "In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth."

Ps. 136:1-9 "Give thanks to Jehovah, . . . to the One making the heavens with understanding . . . to the One laying out the earth above the waters . . . to the One making the great lights . . . even the sun for dominion by day . . . the moon and the stars for combined dominion by night."

Ps. 33:6, 9 "By the word of Jehovah the heavens themselves were made, and by the spirit of his mouth all their army. For he himself said, and it came to be; he himself commanded, and it proceeded to stand so."

Neh. 9:6 "You are Jehovah alone; you yourself have made the heavens, even the heaven of the heavens, and all their army, the earth and all that is upon it, the seas and all that is in them."

Rev. 10:6 "The One who lives forever and ever, who created the heaven and the things in it and the earth and the things in it and the sea and the things in it."

Preparation of Earth for Human Habitation

Day 1: Light shone on watery deep covering the earth

Gen. 1:3-5 "And God proceeded to say: 'Let light come to be.' Then there came to be light. After that God saw that the light was good, and God brought about a division between the light and the darkness. And God began calling the light Day, but the darkness he called Night. And there came to be evening and there came to be morning, a first day."

Day 2: Expanse came to be between waters on earth and water canopy above

Gen. 1:6-8 "And God went on to say: 'Let an expanse come to be in between the waters and let a dividing occur between the waters and the waters.' Then God proceeded to make the expanse and to make a division between the waters that should be beneath the expanse and the waters that should be above the expanse. And it came to be so. And God began to call the expanse Heaven. And there came to be evening and there came to be morning, a second day."

Day 3: Dry land appeared above waters on earth; vegetation was produced

Gen. 1:9-13 "And God went on to say: 'Let the waters under the heavens be brought together into one place and let the dry land appear.' And it came to be so. And God began calling the dry land Earth, but the bringing together of the waters he called Seas. Further, God saw that it was good. And God went on to say: 'Let the earth cause grass to shoot forth, vegetation bearing seed, fruit trees yielding fruit according to their kinds, the seed of which is in it, upon the earth.' And it came to be so. And the earth began to put forth grass, vegetation bearing seed according to its kind and trees yielding fruit, the seed of which is in it according to its kind. Then God saw that it was good. And there came to be evening and there came to be morning, a third day."

Day 4: Heavenly luminaries became discernible within the expanse, through the water canopy

Gen. 1:14-19 "And God went on to say: 'Let luminaries come to be in the expanse of the heavens to make a division between the day and the night; and they must serve as signs and for seasons and for days and years. And they must serve as luminaries in the expanse of the heavens to shine upon the earth.' And it came to be so. And God proceeded to make the two great luminaries, the greater luminary for dominating the day and the lesser luminary for dominating the night, and also the stars. Thus God put them in the expanse of the heavens to shine upon the earth, and to dominate by day and by night and to make a division between the light and the darkness. Then God saw that it was good. And there came to be evening and there came to be morning, a fourth day."

Day 5: Marine souls and flying creatures

Gen. 1:20-23 "And God went on to say: 'Let the waters swarm forth a swarm of living souls and let flying creatures fly over the earth upon the face of the expanse of the heavens.' And God proceeded to create the great sea monsters and every living soul that moves about, which the waters swarmed forth according to their kinds, and every winged flying creature according to its kind. And God got to see that it was good. With that God blessed them, saying: 'Be fruitful and become many and fill the waters in the sea basins, and let the flying creatures become many in the earth.' And there came to be evening and there came to be morning, a fifth day."

Day 6: Land animals; man

Gen. 1:24-31 "And God went on to say: 'Let the earth put

forth living souls according to their kinds, domestic animal and moving animal and wild beast of the earth according to its kind.' And it came to be so. And God proceeded to make the wild beast of the earth according to its kind and the domestic animal according to its kind and every moving animal of the ground according to its kind. . . . And God went on to say: 'Let us make man in our image, according to our likeness, and let them have in subjection the fish of the sea and the flying creatures of the heavens and the domestic animals and all the earth and every moving animal that is moving upon the earth.' And God proceeded to create the man in his image, in God's image he created him; male and female he created them. . . . After that God saw everything he had made and, look! it was very good. And there came to be evening and there came to be morning, a sixth day."

See also the main heading "Evolution," pages 177-184.

Day 7: God proceeded to rest, or desist, from these creative works

Gen. 2:1-3 "Thus the heavens and the earth and all their army came to their completion. And by the seventh day God came to the completion of his work that he had made, and he proceeded to rest on the seventh day from all his work that he had made. And God proceeded to bless the seventh day and make it sacred, because on it he has been resting from all his work that God has created for the purpose of making."

Length of Each of the Seven "Days" of Creation About 7,000 Years

See the main heading "Chronology," pages 87-89.

God's Works Perfect, a Credit to Him

Deut. 32:4 "The Rock, perfect is his activity, for all his ways are justice. A God of faithfulness, with whom there is no injustice."

Eccl. 7:29 "See! This only I have found, that the true God made mankind upright, but they themselves have sought out many plans."

Gen. 1:31, 26, 27 "God saw everything he had made and, look! it was very good. . . . And God went on to say: 'Let us make man in our image, according to our likeness' . . . And God proceeded to create the man in his image, in God's image he created him; male and female he created them."

Eccl. 3:14 "Everything that the true God makes, it will prove to be to time indefinite. To it there is nothing to add and from it there is nothing to subtract."

Ps. 111:2, 3 "The works of Jehovah are great, searched for on the part of all those delighting in them. His activity is dignity and splendor themselves."

Body Members of Christ a "New Creation"

2 Cor. 5:17 "If anyone is in union with Christ, he is a new creation; the old things passed away, look! new things have come into existence."

Gal. 6:15 "Neither is circumcision anything nor is uncircumcision, but a new creation is something."

See also the main heading "Congregation of God," pages 113-116.

Man Cannot Fully Understand the Creative Works of God

Eccl. 8:17 "I saw all the work of the true God, how mankind are not able to find out the work that has been done under the sun; however much mankind keep working hard to seek, yet they do not find out. And even if they should say they are wise enough to know, they would be unable to find out."

Eccl. 11:5 "Just as you are not aware of what is the way of the spirit in the bones in the belly of her that is pregnant, in like manner you do not know the work of the true God, who does all things."

Eccl. 3:11 "Everything he has made pretty in its time. Even time indefinite he has put in their heart, that mankind may never find out the work that the true God has made from the start to the finish."

Creature Worship

Worship to Be Given Only to Jehovah

Matt. 4:10 "It is Jehovah your God you must worship, and it is to him alone you must render sacred service."

Ex. 20:2, 3 "I am Jehovah your God, who have brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of slaves. You must not have any other gods against my face."

Deut. 6:13-15 "Jehovah your God you should fear, and him you should serve, and by his name you should swear. You must not walk after other gods, any gods of the peoples who are all around you, for Jehovah your God in your midst is a God exacting exclusive devotion, for fear the anger of Jehovah your God may blaze against you and he must annihilate you from off the surface of the ground."

Deut. 10:20, 21 "Jehovah your God you should fear. Him you should serve, and to him you should cling, and by his name you should make sworn statements. He is the One for you to praise, and he is your God."

Nah. 1:2 "Jehovah is a God exacting exclusive devotion."

Creature Worship Forbidden

Rev. 19:10 "At that I fell down before his feet to worship him. But he tells me: 'Be careful! Do not do that! All I am is a fellow slave of you and of your brothers who have the work of witnessing to Jesus. Worship God.'" (See also Rev. 22:8, 9.)

Rom. 1:24, 25 "God, in keeping with the desires of their hearts, gave them up to uncleanness, that their bodies might be dishonored among them, even those who exchanged the truth of God for the lie and venerated and rendered sacred service to the creation rather than the One who created, who is blessed forever."

Acts 12:21-23 "But on a set day Herod clothed himself with royal raiment and sat down upon the judgment seat and began giving them a public address. In turn the assembled people began shouting: 'A god's voice, and not a man's!' Instantly the angel of Jehovah struck him, because he did not give the glory to God; and he became eaten up with worms and expired."

Parents

Due respect for living parents proper

Matt. 15:4 "God said, 'Honor your father and your mother'; and, 'Let him that reviles father or mother end up in death.'"

Prov. 23:22 "Listen to your father who caused your birth, and do not despise your mother just because she has grown old."

Ex. 21:17 "One who calls down evil upon his father and his mother is to be put to death without fail."

Deut. 27:16 "Cursed is the one who treats his father or his mother with contempt."

Prov. 19:26 "He that is maltreating a father and that chases a mother away is a son acting shamefully and disgracefully."

See also Deut. 5:16; Eph. 6:1-3.

Obedience to God and Christ comes before that to parents

Matt. 10:37 "He that has greater affection for father or mother than for me is not worthy of me."

Acts 5:29 "We must obey God as ruler rather than men."

Matt. 19:29 "Everyone that has left houses or brothers or sisters or father or mother or children or lands for the sake of my name will receive many times more and will inherit everlasting life."

See also Matt. 10:35.

Ancestors not conscious, unable to help

Job 14:1, 2, 10, 21 "Man, born of woman, is short-lived and glutted with agitation. Like a blossom he has come forth and is cut off, . . . an able-bodied man dies and lies vanquished; and an earthling man expires, and where is he? His sons get honored, but he does not know it; and they become insignificant, but he does not consider them."

Eccl. 9:5, 10 "The living are conscious that they will die; but as for the dead, they are conscious of nothing at all, neither do they any more have wages, because the remembrance of them has been forgotten. All that your hand finds to do, do with your very power, for there is no work nor devising nor knowledge nor wisdom in Sheol, the place to which you are going."

Ps. 146:4 "His spirit goes out, he goes back to his ground; in that day his thoughts do perish."

Animals

Man superior to animals, given dominion over them

Job 35:11 "He is the One teaching us more than the beasts of the earth, and he makes us wiser than even the flying creatures of the heavens."

Gen. 9:2 "A fear of you and a terror of you will continue upon every living creature of the earth and upon every flying creature of the heavens, upon everything that goes moving on the ground, and upon all the fishes of the sea. Into your hand they are now given."

Gen. 1:27, 28 "God proceeded to create the man in his image, . . . Further, God blessed them and God said to them: 'Be fruitful and become many and fill the earth and subdue it, and have in subjection the fish of the sea and the flying creatures of the heavens and every living creature that is moving upon the earth.'"

Ps. 8:4, 6-8 "What is mortal man that you keep him in mind, and the son of earthling man that you take care of him? You make him dominate over the works of your hands; everything you have put under his feet: Small cattle and oxen, all of them, and also the beasts of the open field, the birds of heaven and the fish of the sea, anything passing through the paths of the seas."

Jas. 3:7 "Every species of wild beast as well as bird and creeping thing and sea creature is to be tamed and has been tamed by humankind."

May be killed for food, clothing, protection

Gen. 9:3 "Every moving animal that is alive may serve as food for you. As in the case of green vegetation, I do give it all to you."

Luke 24:42, 43 "They handed him [Jesus] a piece of broiled fish; and he took it and ate it before their eyes."

Gen. 3:21 "Jehovah God proceeded to make long garments of skin for Adam and for his wife and to clothe them."

Prov. 27:26, 27 "The young rams are for your clothing, and the he-goats are the price of the field. And there is a sufficiency of goats' milk for your food, for the food of your household, and the means of life for your girls."

1 Sam. 17:34-36 "David went on to say to Saul: 'Your servant became a shepherd of his father among the flock, and there came a lion, and also a bear, and each carried off a sheep from the drove. And I went out after it and struck it down and made the rescue from its mouth. When it began rising against me, I grabbed hold of its beard and struck it down and put it to death. Both the lion and the bear your servant struck down.'"

See also Ex. 26:14; 2 Ki. 1:8; Mark 1:6.

Not inhabited by transmigrated souls of humans

Ezek. 18:4 "The soul that is sinning—it itself will die."

Eccl. 3:19, 20 "There is an eventuality as respects the sons of mankind and an eventuality as respects the beast, and they have the same eventuality. As the one dies, so the other dies; and they all have but one spirit, so that there is no superiority of the man over the beast, for everything is vanity. All are going to one place. They have all come to be from the dust, and they are all returning to the dust."

2 Pet. 2:12 "These men, like unreasoning animals born naturally to be caught and destroyed, will, in the things of which they are ignorant and speak abusively, even suffer destruction in their own course of destruction."

See also the main heading "Transmigration," pages 482-484.

Worship of animals prohibited by God

Deut. 4:15-18 "You must take good care of your souls, because you did not see any form on the day of Jehovah's speaking to you in Horeb out of the middle of the fire, that you may not act ruinously and may not really make for yourselves a carved image, the form of any symbol, the representation of male or female, the representation of any beast that is in the earth, the representation of any winged bird that flies in the heavens, the representation of anything moving on the ground, the representation of any fish that is in the waters under the earth."

Rom. 1:21-23 "Although they knew God, they did not glorify him as God nor did they thank him, but they became empty-headed in their reasonings and their unintelligent heart became darkened. Although asserting they were wise, they became foolish and turned the glory of the incorruptible God into something like the image of corruptible man and of birds and four-footed creatures and creeping things."

See also Ex. 32:4, 7; Ezek. 8:9-11.

Prominent Personalities

Honor may be given when due

1 Pet. 2:17 "Honor men of all sorts, have love for the whole association of brothers, be in fear of God, have honor for the king."

Rom. 13:7 "Render to all their dues, to him who calls for the tax, the tax; to him who calls for the tribute, the tribute; to him who calls for fear, such fear; to him who calls for honor, such honor."

Acts 26:25 "Your Excellency Festus."

Not to be idolized, worshiped

Acts 10:25, 26 "As Peter entered, Cornelius met him, fell

down at his feet and did obeisance to him. But Peter lifted him up, saying: 'Rise; I myself am also a man.'"

1 Cor. 3:21 "Let no one be boasting in men."

Jude 16 "These men are murmurers, complainers about their lot in life, proceeding according to their own desires, and their mouths speak swelling things, while they are *admiring personalities* for the sake of their own benefit."

Acts 14:11-15 "The crowds, seeing what Paul had done, raised their voices, saying in the Lycaonian tongue: 'The gods have become like humans and have come down to us!' And they went calling Barnabas Zeus, but Paul Hermes, since he was the one taking the lead in speaking. And the priest of Zeus, whose temple was before the city, brought bulls and garlands to the gates and was desiring to offer sacrifices with the crowds. However, when the apostles Barnabas and Paul heard of it, they ripped their outer garments and leaped out into the crowd, crying out and saying: 'Men, why are you doing these things? We also are humans having the same infirmities as you do, and are declaring the good news to you, for you to turn from these vain things to the living God, who made the heaven and the earth and the sea and all the things in them.'"

Improper to seek glory for oneself

John 8:50 "I am not seeking glory for myself."

Prov. 25:27 "For people to search out their own glory, is it glory?"

Matt. 23:12 "Whoever exalts himself will be humbled."

Isa. 14:13-15 "As for you, you have said in your heart, 'To the heavens I shall go up. Above the stars of God I shall lift up my throne, and I shall sit down upon the mountain of meeting, in the remotest parts of the north. I shall go up above the high places of the clouds; I shall make myself resemble the Most High.' However, down to Sheol you will be brought, to the remotest parts of the pit."

Mark 10:42-44 "Jesus, after calling them to him, said to them: 'You know that those who appear to be ruling the nations lord it over them and their great ones wield authority over them. This is not the way among you; but whoever wants to become great among you must be your minister, and whoever wants to be first among you must be the slave of all.'"

1 Thess. 2:6 "Neither have we been seeking glory from men, no, either from you or from others."

See also Acts 8:9-13.

Angels Not to Be Worshiped

Rev. 22:8, 9 "Well, I John was the one hearing and seeing these things. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel that had been showing me these things. But he tells me: 'Be careful! Do not do that! All I am is a fellow slave of you and of your brothers who are prophets and of those who are observing the words of this scroll. Worship God.'"

Col. 2:18 *"Let no man deprive* you of the prize who takes delight in a mock humility and a form of worship of the angels, 'taking his stand on' the things he has seen, puffed up without proper cause by his fleshly frame of mind."

"Saints" Cannot Intercede with God; Pray to Jehovah Through Jesus Christ

1 Tim. 2:5 "There is one God, and one mediator between God and men, a man Christ Jesus."

John 14:6, 14 "Jesus said to him: 'I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me. If you ask anything in my name, I will do it.'"

Acts 4:12 "Furthermore, there is no salvation in anyone else, for there is not another name under heaven that has been given among men by which we must get saved."

Cross

Meaning of Original Hebrew and Greek Words

"Cross" (*AV, AS, Dy, RS*) is translated from the Greek word *stau·ros'*, which "denotes, primarily, an upright pale or stake. On such malefactors were nailed *for execution.*" (*Expository Dictionary of New Testament Words*, London, England; 1962; W. E. Vine, Vol. I, page 256) The Greek verb *stau·ro'o* ("crucify," *AV*) meant "to fence with pales" as a stockade, or "to fasten or fix on a pole or stake," "to impale." (John 19:15) The Greek word *xylon*, meaning "tree or *stake*" *or* "*a piece of wood*," is also used in reference to the instrument used to put Jesus to death. (Acts 5:30; 10:39; 13:29) The Hebrew word *'ets*, meaning "stake" or "tree, wood, timber, stick," is used at Deuteronomy 21:22, 23, which Paul quotes at Galatians 3:13 in reference to the means of Jesus' death.

Early Pagan Use of Cross

The shape of the "cross," two beams at right angles, "had its origin in ancient Chaldea, and was used as the symbol of the god Tammuz (being in the shape of the mystic Tau, the initial of his name) in that country and in adjacent lands, including Egypt. By the middle of the 3rd cent. A.D. the churches had either departed from, or had travestied, certain doctrines of the Christian faith. In order to increase the prestige of the apostate ecclesiastical system pagans were received into the churches apart from regeneration by faith, and were permitted largely to retain their pagan signs and symbols. Hence the Tau or T, in its most frequent form, with the cross-piece lowered, was adopted to stand for the cross of Christ." *Expository Dictionary of New Testament Words* (London, England; 1962), W. E. Vine, Vol. I, page 256.

"Various objects, dating from periods long anterior to the Christian era, have been found, marked with crosses of different designs, in almost every part of the old world. India, Syria, Persia and Egypt have all yielded numberless examples, while numerous instances, dating from the later Stone age to Christian times, have been found in nearly every part of Europe. The use of the cross as a religious symbol in pre-Christian times and among non-Christian peoples may probably be regarded as almost universal, and in very many cases it was connected with some form of nature worship."—*The Encyclopædia Britannica*, 1946, Vol. 6, page 753.

Earliest Use of Cross by Professed Christians

"It may be safely asserted that only after the edict of Milan, A.D. 312, was the cross used as the permanent sign of our Re-

demption. De Rossi positively states that no monogram of Christ, discovered in the catacombs or other places, can be traced to a period anterior to the year 312. Even after that epoch-making year, the church, then free and triumphant, contented herself with having a simple monogram of Christ: the Greek letter *chi* vertically crossed by a *rho*, and horizontally sometimes, by an *iota*. [☧] The oldest crucifix mentioned as an object of public worship is the one venerated in the Church of Narbonne in southern France, as early as the 6th century."—*The Ecclesiastical Review* (Baltimore, Maryland; September 1920), No. 3, page 275.

Catholic and Protestant Bible Translations, in Certain Verses, Say that Jesus Died on a Tree

Acts 10:39, *Dy* "We are witnesses of all things that he did in the land of the Jews and in Jerusalem: whom they killed, hanging him [Jesus] upon a tree."

Acts 5:30, *AV* "The God of our fathers raised up Jesus, whom ye slew and hanged on a tree."

Gal. 3:13, *RS* "Christ redeemed us from the curse of the law, having become a curse for us—for it is written, 'Cursed be every one who hangs on a tree.'"

1 Pet. 2:24, *AS* "Who his own self bare our sins in his body upon the tree."

Instrument of Jesus' Death Was a Stake so that Jews Might Be Freed from Curse of Law

Gal. 3:13 "Christ by purchase released us from the curse of the Law by becoming a curse instead of us, because it is written: 'Accursed is every man hanged upon a stake.'"

Deut. 21:22, 23 "In case there comes to be in a man a sin deserving the sentence of death, and he has been put to death, and you have hung him upon a stake, his dead body should not stay all night on the stake; but you should by all means bury him on that day, because something accursed of God is the one hung up."

Col. 2:14 "[God] blotted out the handwritten document against us, which consisted of decrees and which was in opposition to us; and He has taken it out of the way by nailing it to the torture stake."

1 Pet. 2:24 "He [Jesus] himself bore our sins in his own body upon the stake, in order that we might be done with sins and live to righteousness."

Use of Cross as Object of Reverence Is Idolatry

Ex. 20:4, 5 "You must not make for yourself a carved image or a form like anything that is in the heavens above or that is on the earth underneath or that is in the waters under the earth. You must not bow down to them nor be induced to serve them."

1 John 5:21 "Little children, guard yourselves from idols."

Christ's Human Body Disposed of by God, Not to Be Worshiped as on Crucifix

1 Pet. 3:18 "He being put to death in the flesh, but being made alive in the spirit."

John 20:6, 7, 13 "And he [Peter] viewed the bandages lying, also the cloth that had been upon his [Jesus'] head not lying with the bandages but separately rolled up in one place. . . . She [Mary] said to them: 'They have taken my Lord away, and I do not know where they have laid him.'"

2 Cor. 5:16 "Even if we have known Christ according to the flesh, certainly we now know him so no more."

Preaching About the Torture Stake of Christ Means Preaching *About His Death as Ransom*

1 Cor. 1:17-23; 2:2 "Christ dispatched me, not to go baptizing, but to go declaring the good news, not with wisdom of speech, that the torture stake of the Christ should not be made useless. For the speech about the torture stake is foolishness to those who are perishing, but to us who are being saved it is God's power. . . . but we preach Christ impaled, to the Jews a cause for stumbling but to the nations foolishness." "For I decided not to know anything among you except Jesus Christ, and him impaled."

1 Tim. 2:5, 6 "There is one God, *and one mediator between* God and men, a man Christ Jesus, who gave himself a corresponding ransom for all—this is what is to be witnessed to at its own particular times."

Gal. 3:1 "O senseless Galatians, who is it that brought you under evil influence, you before whose *eyes Jesus Christ was openly* portrayed impaled?"

"Enemies of the Torture Stake" Are Those Denying that Ransom Was Provided by Christ's Death

Phil. 3:18, 19 "There are many, I used to mention them often but now I mention them also with *weeping, who are walking as the* enemies of the torture stake of the Christ, and their finish is destruction."

2 Pet. 2:1 "However, there also came to be false prophets among the people, as there will also be false teachers among you. These very ones will quietly bring in destructive sects and will disown even the owner that bought them, bringing speedy destruction upon themselves."

See also Heb. 6:4-6.

"Torture Stake" a Symbol of Death Under Shame, and *Reproach to Christians* from Enemies

Heb. 12:2 "We look intently at the Chief Agent and Perfecter of our faith, Jesus. For the joy that was set before him he endured a torture stake, despising shame, and has sat down at the right hand of the throne of God."

Heb. 6:6 "*They impale the Son* of God afresh for themselves and expose him to public shame."

Matt. 16:24 "Then Jesus said to his disciples: 'If anyone wants to come after me, let him disown himself and pick up his torture stake and continually follow me.'"

Gal. 6:12 "All those who want to make a pleasing appearance in the flesh are the ones that try to compel you to get circumcised, only that they may not be persecuted for the torture stake of the Christ, Jesus."

See also Matt. 27:39-44.

'Boasting in Torture Stake' *Means Gladly Bearing Reproach* for Name of Christ

Gal. 6:14 "Never may it occur that I should boast, except in the torture stake of our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom the world has been impaled to me and I to the world."

1 Pet. 4:16 "If he suffers as a Christian, let him not feel shame, but let him keep on glorifying God in this name."

2 Cor. 12:10 "Therefore I take pleasure in weaknesses, in insults, in cases of need, in persecutions and difficulties, for Christ."

Col. 1:24 "I am now rejoicing in my sufferings for you, and I, in my turn, am filling up what is lacking of the tribulations of the Christ in my flesh on behalf of his body, which is the congregation."

Death

CAUSE OF DEATH

Man Created to Live, Not to Die; God Warned Against Course That Would Lead to Death

Gen. 1:27-31 "God proceeded to create the man in his image, in God's image he created him; male and female he created them. Further, God blessed them and God said to them: 'Be fruitful and become many and fill the earth and subdue it, and have in subjection the fish of the sea and the flying creatures of the heavens and every living creature that is moving upon the earth.' . . . After that God saw everything he had made and, look! it was very good."

Gen. 2:16, 17 "Jehovah God also laid this command upon the man: 'From every tree of the garden you may eat to satisfaction. But as for the tree of the knowledge of good and bad you must not eat from it, for in the day you eat from it you will positively die.'"

Satan Introduced Sin, Caused Death

Gen. 3:4, 5, 14 "At this the serpent said to the woman: 'You positively will not die. For God knows that in the very day of your eating from it your eyes are bound to be opened and you are bound to be like God, knowing good and bad.' And Jehovah God proceeded to say to the serpent: 'Because you have done this thing, you are the cursed one out of all the domestic animals and out of all the wild beasts of the field.'"

Rev. 12:9 "The original serpent, the one called Devil and Satan, who is misleading the entire inhabited earth."

1 John 3:8 "He who carries on sin originates with the Devil, because the Devil has been sinning from the beginning."

Heb. 2:14 "Therefore, since the 'young children' are sharers of blood and flesh, he also similarly partook of the same things, that through his death he might bring to nothing the one having the means to cause death, that is, the Devil."

Adam's Disobedience to Law of Life-Giver Brought Sentence of Death

Gen. 3:17-19 "To Adam he said: 'Because you listened to your wife's voice and took to eating from the tree concerning which I gave you this command, "You must not eat from it," cursed is the ground on your account. In pain you will eat its produce all the days of your life. . . . In the sweat of your face you will eat bread until you return to the ground, for out of it you were taken. For dust you are and to dust you will return.'"

Acts 17:24, 25 "The God that made the world . . . gives to all persons life and breath and all things."

All Descendants of Adam Born in Sin (Imperfect, with Wayward Tendencies), Leading to Death

Rom. 5:12, 17, 19 "Through one man sin entered into the world and death through sin, and thus death spread to all men because they had all sinned . . . by the trespass of the one man death ruled as king through that one, . . . through the disobedience of the one man many were constituted sinners."

Job 14:1, 4 "Man, born of woman, is short-lived and glutted with agitation. Who can

produce someone clean out of someone unclean? There is not one."

Ps. 51:5 "Look! With error I was brought forth with birth pains, and in sin my mother conceived me."

Gen. 8:21 "The inclination of the heart of man is bad from his youth up."

Rom. 6:23 "The wages sin pays is death."

1 Cor. 15:22 "In Adam all are dying."

See also the main heading "Sin," pages 456-460.

CONDITION OF THE DEAD

A Dead Person Is Unconscious, Inactive

Eccl. 9:5, 10 "The living are conscious that they will die; but as for the dead, they are conscious of nothing at all, neither do they any more have wages, because the remembrance of them has been forgotten. All that your hand finds to do, do with your very power, for there is no work nor devising nor knowledge nor wisdom in Sheol, the place to which you are going."

Ps. 146:4 "His spirit goes out, he goes back to his ground; in that day his thoughts do perish."

Ps. 6:5 "In death there is no mention of you; in Sheol who will laud you?"

Isa. 38:18 "It is not Sheol that can laud you; death itself cannot praise you. Those going down into the pit cannot look hopefully to your trueness."

Eccl. 3:19, 20 "There is an eventuality as respects the sons of mankind and an eventuality as respects the beast, and they have the same eventuality. As the one dies, so the other dies; and they all have but one spirit, so that there is no superiority of the man over the beast, for everything is vanity. All are going to one place. They have all come to be from the dust, and they are all returning to the dust."

Ps. 115:17 "The dead themselves do not praise Jah."

Acts 13:36 "David, on the one hand, served the express will of God in his own generation and fell asleep in death and was laid with his forefathers and did see corruption."

See also the main heading "Sheol—Hades," pages 448-451.

The soul itself is dead

Ezek. 18:4 "The soul that is sinning—it itself will die."

Isa. 53:12 "He poured out his soul to the very death."

Lev. 23:30 "As for any soul that will do any sort of work on this very day, I must destroy that soul from among his people."

Ps. 22:29 "No one will ever preserve his own soul alive."

Josh. 10:28 "And Joshua captured Makkedah on that day and went striking it with the edge of the sword. As for its king, he devoted him and every soul that was in it to destruction."

Judg. 16:30 "And Samson proceeded to say: 'Let my soul die with the Philistines.'"

Ezek. 22:27 "Her princes in the midst of her are like wolves tearing prey in shedding blood, in destroying souls for the purpose of making unjust gain."

Acts 3:23 "Indeed, any soul that does not listen to that Prophet will be completely destroyed from among the people."

See also the main heading "Soul," pages 463-465.

Talking with the dead impossible; attempts condemned as spiritism

Eccl. 9:5 "The dead . . . are conscious of nothing at all."

Isa. 8:19 "In case they should say to you people: 'Apply to the spiritistic mediums or to those having a spirit of prediction who are chirping and making utterances in low tones,' is

it not to its God that any people should apply? Should there be application to dead persons in behalf of living persons?"

Deut. 18:10-12 "There should not be found in you anyone who . . . binds others with a spell or anyone who consults a spirit medium or a professional foreteller of events or anyone who inquires of the dead. For everybody doing these things is something detestable to Jehovah." (See also Gal. 5:19-21; Rev. 22:15.)

1 Chron. 10:13, 14 "Thus Saul died for his unfaithfulness with which he had acted faithlessly against Jehovah concerning the word of Jehovah that he had not kept and also for asking of a spirit medium to make inquiry. And he did not inquire of Jehovah. Consequently he put him to death and turned the kingship over to David the son of Jesse."

Rites performed by survivors of no benefit to the dead

2 Sam. 12:21-23 "Consequently his servants said to him [David]: 'What does this thing mean that you have done? For the sake of the child while alive you fasted and kept weeping; and just as soon as the child had died you got up and began to eat bread.' To this he said: 'While the child was yet alive I did fast and I kept weeping, because I said to myself, "Who is there knowing whether Jehovah may show me favor, and the child will certainly live?" Now that he has died, why is it I am fasting? Am I able to bring him back again? I am going to him, but, as for him, he will not return to me.'"

Unable to help or to harm human survivors

Eccl. 9:10 "There is no work nor devising nor knowledge nor wisdom in Sheol, the place to which you are going."

Eccl. 9:5, 6 "The living are conscious that they will die; but as for the dead, they are conscious of nothing at all. . . . Also, their love and their hate and their jealousy have already perished."

Isa. 26:14 "They are dead; they will not live. Impotent in death, they will not rise up."

Those Practicing Sin Considered Dead by God

1 Tim. 5:6 "The one that goes in for sensual gratification is dead though she is living."

Eph. 2:1 "Furthermore, it is you God made alive though you were dead in your trespasses and sins."

Col. 2:13 "Though you were dead in your trespasses and in the uncircumcised state of your flesh, God made you alive together with him."

Luke 9:60 "He [Jesus] said to him: 'Let the dead bury their dead, but you go away and declare abroad the kingdom of God.'"

See also 1 Pet. 4:6.

DELIVERANCE FROM DEATH

Dead Ones Under the Ransom, Both Righteous and Unrighteous, to Be Resurrected

John 5:28, 29 "Do not marvel at this, because the hour is coming in which all those in the memorial tombs will hear his voice and come out."

Acts 24:15 "I have hope toward God, which hope these men themselves also entertain, that there is going to be a resurrection of both the righteous and the unrighteous."

Rev. 20:13 "The sea gave up those dead in it, and death and Hades gave up those dead in them, and they were judged individually according to their deeds."

Isa. 26:19 "Your dead ones will live. A corpse of mine—they will rise up. Awake and cry out joyfully, you residents in the dust! For your dew is as the dew of mallows, and the earth itself will let even those impotent in death drop in birth."

Jesus demonstrated power to raise the dead

John 11:38-44 "Hence Jesus, after groaning again within himself, came to the memorial tomb. . . . he cried out with a loud voice: 'Lazarus, come on out!' The man that had been dead came out."

Luke 7:14, 15 "With that he approached and touched the bier, and the bearers stood still, and he said: 'Young man, I say to you, Get up!' And the dead man sat up and started to speak, and he gave him to his mother."

Luke 8:49-55 "While he was yet speaking, a certain representative of the presiding officer of the synagogue came, saying: 'Your daughter has died' . . . But he [Jesus] took her by the hand and called, saying: 'Girl, get up!' And her breath returned, and she rose instantly, and he ordered something to be given her to eat."

Resurrection of Christ is a guarantee

Acts 17:31 "[God] has set a day in which he purposes to judge the inhabited earth in righteousness by a man whom he has appointed [Jesus], and he has furnished a guarantee to all men in that he has resurrected him from the dead."

1 Cor. 15:20, 21 "Now Christ has been raised up from the dead, the first fruits of those who have fallen asleep in death. For since death is through a man, resurrection of the dead is also through a man."

Resurrection of Christ's Body Members a Triumph over Death

1 Cor. 15:54-57 "When this which is corruptible puts on incorruption and this which is mortal puts on immortality, then the saying will take place that is written: 'Death is swallowed up forever.' 'Death, where is your victory? Death, where is your sting?' The sting producing death is sin, but the power for sin is the Law. But thanks to God, for he gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ!" (See also Hos. 13:14.)

Rom. 6:5 "If we have become united with him in the likeness of his death, we shall certainly also be united with him in the likeness of his resurrection."

Rev. 20:6 "Happy and holy is anyone having part in the first resurrection; over these the second death has no authority, but they will be priests of God and of the Christ, and will rule as kings with him for the thousand years."

Redemption from Adamic Death Possible Through Ransom Sacrifice of Christ

Heb. 2:9 "We behold Jesus, who has been made a little lower than angels, crowned with glory and honor for having suffered death, that he by God's undeserved kindness might taste death for every man."

Heb. 9:27, 28 "As it is reserved for men to die once for all time, but after this a judgment, so also the Christ was offered once for all time to bear the sins of many; and the second time that he appears it will be apart from sin and to those earnestly looking for him for their salvation."

1 Tim. 2:5, 6 "There is one God, and one mediator between God and men, a man Christ Jesus, who gave himself a corresponding ransom for all."

Matt. 20:28 "The Son of man came, not to be ministered to, but to minister and to give his soul a ransom in exchange for many."

See also 1 Pet. 1:18, 19.

Persons exercising faith in Christ's ransom counted by God as being in the way of eternal life

John 5:24 "Most truly I say to you, He that hears my word and believes him that sent me has everlasting life, and he does not come into judgment but has passed over from death to life."

1 John 3:14 "We know we have passed over from death to life, because we love the brothers. He who does not love remains in death."

John 8:51 *"Most truly I say to* you, If anyone observes my word, he will never see death at all."

John 6:40 "This is the will of my Father, that everyone that beholds the Son and exercises faith in him should have everlasting life, and I will resurrect him at the last day."

Death as Unavoidable Eventuality at Present Will Be Completely Done Away With Under Christ's Kingdom Rule

1 Cor. 15:26 "As the last enemy, death is to be brought to nothing."

Rev. 21:4 "He will wipe out every tear from their eyes, and death will be no more, neither will mourning nor outcry nor pain be any more. The former things have passed away."

Rev. 20:13, 14 The sea gave up those dead in it, and death *and Hades gave up those dead* in them, and they were judged individually according to their deeds. And death and Hades were hurled into the lake of fire. This means the second death, the lake of fire."

Isa. 25:8 "He will actually swallow up death forever, and the Lord Jehovah will certainly wipe the tears from all faces."

"Second Death" Represents Eternal Destruction, as by Fire

Rev. 20:10, 14, 15 "The Devil who was misleading them was hurled into the lake of fire and sulphur, where both the wild beast and the false prophet already were . . . And death and Hades were hurled into the lake of fire. This means the second death, the lake of fire. Furthermore, whoever was not found written in the book of life was hurled into the lake of fire."

Rev. 21:8 *"As for the cowards* and those without faith and those who are disgusting in their filth and murderers and fornicators and those practicing spiritism and idolaters and all the liars, their portion will be in the lake that burns with fire and sulphur. This means the second death."

Decisions

Think Ahead—When You Hear or Read Good Counsel, Consider How to Apply It; Be Determined *to Do So*

Rom. 14:13 "Make this your decision, not to put before a brother a stumbling block or a cause for tripping."

Prov. 19:20 "Listen to counsel and accept discipline, in order that you may become wise in your future."

1 Cor. 10:6-11 "Now these things became our examples, for us not to be persons desiring *injurious things, even as they* desired them. . . . Now these things went on befalling them as examples, and they were written for a warning to us upon whom the ends of the systems of things have arrived."

See also the main heading "Study," pages 470-473.

Do Not Be Hasty in Making Your Decisions

Prov. 21:5 "The plans of the diligent one surely make for advantage, but everyone that is hasty surely heads for want."

Prov. 25:8 "Do not go forth to conduct a legal case hastily, that *it may not be a question of what* you will do in the culmination of it when your fellow man now humiliates you."

Prov. 29:20 "Have you beheld a man hasty with his words? There is more hope for someone stupid than for him."

1 Tim. 5:22 "Never lay your hands hastily upon any man."

Turn to God in Prayer When Weighty Decisions Must Be Made

Phil. 4:6, 7 "Do not be anxious over anything, but in everything by prayer and supplication along with thanksgiving let your petitions be made known to God; and the peace of God that excels all thought will guard your hearts and your mental powers by means of Christ Jesus."

Jas. 1:5, 6 "If any one of you is lacking in wisdom, let him keep on asking God, for he gives generously *to all and without* reproaching; and it will be given him. But let him keep on asking in faith, not doubting."

Luke 6:12, 13 "In the progress of these days he went out into the mountain to pray, and he continued the whole night in prayer to God. But when it became day he called his disciples to him and chose from among them twelve, whom he also named apostles."

Carefully Consider the Advice of God's Word on the Matter

Prov. 3:5, 6 "Trust in Jehovah with all your heart and do not lean upon your own understanding. In all your ways take notice of him, and he himself will make your paths straight."

Ps. 119:105 "Your word is a lamp to my foot, and a light to *my roadway.*"

2 Tim. 3:16, 17 "All Scripture is inspired of God and beneficial for teaching, for reproving, for setting things straight, for disciplining in righteousness, that the man of God may be fully competent, completely equipped for every good work."

Marriage

1 Cor. 7:39 "She is free to be married to whom she wants, only in the Lord."

Deut. 7:3 "You must form no marriage alliance with [worshipers of other gods]. Your daughter you must not give to his son, and his daughter you must not take for your son."

Eph. 5:22-25, 31-33 "Let wives be in subjection to their husbands as to the Lord, because a husband is head of his wife as the Christ also is head of the congregation, he being a savior of this body. In fact, as the congregation is in subjection to the Christ, so let wives also be to their husbands in everything. Husbands, continue loving your wives, just as the Christ also loved the congregation and delivered up himself for it. 'For this reason a man will leave his father and his mother and he will stick to his wife, and the two will become one flesh.' This sacred secret is great. Now I am speaking with respect to Christ and the congregation. Nevertheless, also, let each one of you individually so love his wife as he does himself; on the other hand, the wife should have deep respect for her husband."

See also 1 Pet. 3:1-9.

1 Cor. 7:10, 11 "To the married people I give instructions, yet not I but the Lord, that a wife should not depart from her husband; but if she should actually depart, let her remain unmarried or else make up again with her

husband; and a husband should not leave his wife."

See also the main heading "Marriage," pages 332-335.

Employment

1 Tim. 5:8 "Certainly if anyone does not provide for those who are his own, and especially for those who are members of his household, he has disowned the faith and is worse than a person without faith."

Matt. 6:33 "Keep on, then, seeking first the kingdom and his righteousness, and all these other things will be added to you."

Heb. 13:18 "We wish to conduct ourselves honestly in all things."

Prov. 20:23 "Two sorts of weights are something detestable to Jehovah, and a cheating pair of scales is not good."

Choosing entertainment

1 Tim. 4:8 "Bodily training is beneficial for a little; but godly devotion is beneficial for all things, as it holds promise of the life now and that which is to come."

2 Tim. 2:22 "Flee from the desires incidental to youth, but pursue righteousness, faith, love, peace, along with those who call upon the Lord out of a clean heart."

Phil. 4:8 "Finally, brothers, whatever things are true, whatever things are of serious concern, whatever things are righteous, whatever things are chaste, whatever things are lovable, whatever things are well spoken of, whatever virtue there is and whatever praiseworthy thing there is, continue considering these things."

1 Cor. 15:33 "Do not be misled. Bad associations spoil useful habits."

1 John 2:15-17 "Do not be loving either the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him; because everything in the world—the desire of the flesh and the desire of the eyes and the showy display of one's means of life—does not originate with the Father, but originates with the world. Furthermore, the world is passing away and so is its desire, but he that does the will of God remains forever."

See also the main heading "Friendship with the World," pages 197-203.

Use of time

Eph. 5:15-17 "So keep strict watch that how you walk is not as unwise but as wise persons, buying out the opportune time for yourselves, because the days are wicked. On this account cease becoming unreasonable, but go on perceiving what the will of Jehovah is." (See also Col. 4:5.)

All the affairs of life

Col. 3:17 "Whatever it is that you do in word or in work, do everything in the name of the Lord Jesus, thanking God the Father through him."

1 Cor. 10:31 "Whether you are eating or drinking or doing anything else, do all things for God's glory."

If You Do Not Know What Counsel the Bible Gives on a Matter, Seek Help from a Mature Christian, Not to Make Your Decision for You, but to Ascertain the Scriptural Principles That Apply

Titus 1:7, 9 "An overseer must be . . . holding firmly to the faithful word as respects his art of teaching, that he may be able both to exhort by the teaching that is healthful and to reprove those who contradict."

Prov. 11:14 "When there is no skillful direction, the people fall; but there is salvation in the multitude of counselors."

Heb. 5:14 "Mature people . . . through use have their perceptive powers trained to distinguish both right and wrong."

Show Firmness in Adhering to the Counsel of God's Word, Not Brushing It Aside as Unimportant

Job 23:11, 12 "His way I have kept, and I do not deviate. From the commandment of his lips I do not move away. I have treasured up the sayings of his mouth more than what is prescribed for me."

Ps. 141:5 "Should the righteous one strike me, it would be a loving-kindness; and should he reprove me, it would be oil upon the head, which my head would not want to refuse"

Prov. 8:33 "Listen to discipline and become wise, and do not show any neglect."

See also Luke 7:30.

Do Not Ignore the Proddings of a Christian Conscience

1 Pet. 3:16 "Hold a good conscience."

1 Tim. 1:19 "Holding faith and a good conscience, which some have thrust aside and have experienced shipwreck concerning their faith."

Acts 24:16 "I am exercising myself continually to have a consciousness of committing no offense against God and men."

See also Acts 23:1.

Consider the Effects of Your Decision

Gal. 6:7, 8 "Do not be misled: God is not one to be mocked. For whatever a man is sowing, this he will also reap; because he who is sowing with a view to his flesh will reap corruption from his flesh, but he who is sowing with a view to the spirit will reap everlasting life from the spirit."

Rom. 2:6 "He will render to each one according to his works."

On your relationship with God

Eph. 5:10 "Keep on making sure of what is acceptable to the Lord."

Rom. 8:7, 8 "The minding of the flesh means enmity with God, for it is not under subjection to the law of God, nor, in fact, can it be. So those who are in harmony with the flesh cannot please God."

Jude 21 "Keep yourselves in God's love."

On your own future

Prov. 6:26-33 "In behalf of a woman prostitute one comes down to a round loaf of bread; but as regards another man's wife, she hunts even for a precious soul. Can a man rake together fire into his bosom and yet his very garments not be burned? . . . Likewise with anyone having relations with the wife of his fellow man, no one touching her will remain unpunishable. . . . Anyone committing adultery with a woman is in want of heart; he that does it is bringing his own soul to ruin. A plague and dishonor he will find, and his reproach itself will not be wiped out."

See also Prov. 5:3-5; 7:7-23.

1 Tim. 6:9, 10 "Those who are determined to be rich fall into temptation and a snare and many senseless and hurtful desires, which plunge men into destruction and ruin. For the love of money is a root of all sorts of injurious things, and by reaching out for this love some have been led astray from the faith and have stabbed themselves all over with many pains."

Prov. 20:21 "An inheritance is being got by greed at first, but its own future will not be blessed."

Prov. 23:17, 18 "Let your heart not be envious of sinners, but be in the fear of Jehovah all day long. For in that case there will exist a future, and your own hope will not be cut off." (See also Prov. 24:20.)

On other persons

Rom. 14:19, 21 "So, then, let us pursue the things making for peace and the things that are upbuilding to one another. It is well not to eat flesh or to drink wine or do anything over which your brother stumbles."

Phil. 1:10 "Make sure of the more important things, so that you may be flawless and not be stumbling others."

Rom. 15:1, 2 "We, though, who are strong ought to bear the weaknesses of those not strong, and not to be pleasing ourselves. Let each of us please his neighbor in what is good for his upbuilding."

Be Willing to Shoulder Responsibility for Decisions

Gal. 6:5 "For each one will carry his own load."

Dedication

To Offer Worship Acceptable to Jehovah God, One Must Recognize that Jehovah Is the Only True God, the One Who Deserves Man's Exclusive Devotion

John 17:3 "This means everlasting life, their taking in knowledge of you, the only true God, and of the one whom you sent forth, Jesus Christ."

Luke 4:8 "Jesus said to him: 'It is written, "It is Jehovah your God you must worship, and it is to him alone you must render sacred service."' "

Ex. 20:5 "I Jehovah your God am a God exacting exclusive devotion."

Luke 10:25-28 "A certain man versed in the Law rose up, to test him out, and said: 'Teacher, by doing what shall I inherit everlasting life?' He said to him: 'What is written in the Law? How do you read?' In answer he said: ' "You must love Jehovah your God with your whole heart and with your whole soul and with your whole strength and with your whole mind," and, "your neighbor as yourself." ' He said to him: 'You answered correctly; "keep on doing this and you will get life." ' "

See also the main headings "Babylon the Great" and "Interfaith."

One Who Desires to Serve God Must Accept the Bible as God's Inspired Word, Follow It as His Guide

2 Tim. 3:16 "All Scripture is inspired of God and beneficial for teaching, for reproving, for setting things straight, for disciplining in righteousness."

1 Thess. 2:13 "When you received God's word, which you heard from us, you accepted it, not as the word of men, but, just as it truthfully is, as the word of God, which is also at work in you believers."

Ps. 119:105 "Your word is a lamp to my foot, and a light to my roadway."

See also the main heading "Bible," pages 45-53.

Any Person Who Turns to God Must Acknowledge that He Is a Sinner Who Needs Salvation and that Such Salvation Is Possible Only Through Jesus Christ

Rom. 3:23 "All have sinned and fall short of the glory of God."

Acts 4:12 "There is no salvation in anyone else, for there is not another name [other than that of Jesus] under heaven that has been given among men by which we must get saved."

John 14:6 "Jesus said to him: 'I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me.' "

Eph. 1:7 "By means of him we have the release by ransom through the blood of that one, yes, the forgiveness of our trespasses, according to the riches of his undeserved kindness."

Rev. 7:9, 10 "I saw, and, look! a great crowd . . . And they keep on crying with a loud voice, saying: 'Salvation we owe to our God, who is seated on the throne, and to the Lamb.' "

Gal. 1:4 "[Jesus Christ] gave himself for our sins that he might deliver us from the present wicked system of things according to the will of our God and Father."

Must repent of his former sinful course

Acts 3:19 "Repent, therefore, and turn around so as to get your sins blotted out, that seasons of refreshing may come from the person of Jehovah."

Acts 26:20 "Over all the country of Judea, and to the nations I went bringing the message that they should repent and turn to God by doing works that befit repentance."

Former way of life must be abandoned; new life course to be pursued by one who dedicates himself to Jehovah God

Rom. 12:1, 2 "I entreat you by the compassions of God, brothers, to present your bodies a sacrifice living, holy, acceptable to God, a sacred service with your power of reason. And quit being fashioned after this system of things, but be transformed by making your mind over, that you may prove to yourselves the good and acceptable and perfect will of God."

Eph. 4:17, 18, 22-24 "This, therefore, I say and bear witness to in the Lord, that you no longer go on walking just as the nations also walk in the unprofitableness of their minds, while they are in darkness mentally, and alienated from the life that belongs to God, . . . you should put away the old personality which conforms to your former course of conduct and which is being corrupted according to his deceptive desires; . . . you should be made new in the force actuating your mind, and should put on the new personality which was created according to God's will in true righteousness and loyalty."

1 Thess. 1:9 "They themselves keep reporting about the way we first entered in among you and how you turned to God from your idols to slave for a living and true God."

See also the main heading "Conduct of Christians," pages 98-108.

Before a Person Can Be Acceptable to God as His Servant He Must Be Morally Clean

1 Pet. 4:3, 4 "The time that has passed by is sufficient for you to have worked out the will of the nations when you proceeded in deeds of loose conduct, lusts, excesses with wine, revelries, drinking matches, and illegal idolatries. Because you do not continue running with them in this course to the same low sink of debauchery, they are puzzled and go on speaking abusively of you."

Col. 3:5-9 "Deaden, therefore, your body members that are upon the earth as respects fornication, uncleanness, sexual appetite, hurtful desire, and covetousness, which is idolatry. On account of those things the wrath of God is coming. In those very things you, too, once walked when you used to live in them. But now really put them all away from you, wrath, anger, injuriousness, abusive speech, and obscene talk out of your mouth. Do not be lying

to one another. Strip off the old personality with its practices."

1 Cor. 6:9-11 "Do you not know that unrighteous persons will not inherit God's kingdom? Do not be misled. Neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor men kept for unnatural purposes, nor men who lie with men, nor thieves, nor greedy persons, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners will inherit God's kingdom. And yet that is what some of you were. But you have been washed clean, but you have been sanctified, but you have been declared righteous in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ and with the spirit of our God."

1 Pet. 1:14, 15 "As obedient children, quit being fashioned according to the desires you formerly had in your ignorance, but, in accord with the holy one who called you, do you also become holy yourselves in all your conduct."

One Taking Up True Worship Must Avoid Involvement in the Affairs of the World

John 15:19 "If you were part of the world, the world would be fond of what is its own. Now because you are no part of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, on this account the world hates you."

Jas. 1:27 "The form of worship that is clean and undefiled from the standpoint of our God and Father is this: . . . to keep oneself without spot from the world."

Jas. 4:4 "Adulteresses, do you not know that the friendship with the world is enmity with God? Whoever, therefore, wants to be a friend of the world is constituting himself an enemy of God."

John 6:15 "Jesus, knowing they were about to come and seize him to make him king, withdrew again into the mountain all alone." (See also Luke 4:5-8.)

John 18:36 "Jesus answered: 'My kingdom is no part of this world. If my kingdom were part of this world, my attendants would have fought that I should not be delivered up to the Jews. But, as it is, my kingdom is not from this source.'"

Isa. 2:3, 4 "Many peoples will certainly go and say: 'Come, you people, and let us go up to the mountain of Jehovah, to the house of the God of Jacob; and he will instruct us about his ways, and we will walk in his paths.' . . . And they will have to beat their swords into plowshares and their spears into pruning shears. Nation will not lift up sword against nation, neither will they learn war any more."

See also the main headings "Friendship with the World" and "Neutrality."

All Who Serve God Must Respond to the Gulding Influence of His Holy Spirit

Eph. 5:18 "Keep getting filled with spirit."

Gal. 5:22, 23 "The fruitage of the spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, kindness, goodness, faith, mildness, self-control."

John 16:13 "When that one arrives, the spirit of the truth, he will guide you into all the truth."

Acts 1:8 "You will receive power when the holy spirit arrives upon you, and you will be witnesses of me both in Jerusalem and in all Judea and Samaria and to the most distant part of the earth."

Acts 20:28 "Pay attention to yourselves and to all the flock, among which the holy spirit has appointed you overseers."

Like Jesus Christ, His Followers Should Earnestly Desire to Do Whatever Is the Will of God; Their Dedication to God Is Without Reservations

Heb. 10:9 "He actually says: 'Look! I am come to do your will.'"

John 6:38 "I have come down from heaven to do, not my will, but the will of him that sent me."

John 4:34 "Jesus said to them: 'My food is for me to do the will of him that sent me and to finish his work.'"

Compare Lev. 8:9 and Heb. 9:11.

Ps. 112:1 "Happy is the man in fear of Jehovah, in whose commandments he has taken very much delight."

Luke 10:27 "You must love Jehovah your God with your whole heart and with your whole soul and with your whole strength."

See also the main heading "Preaching the Good News," pages 384-390.

Persons Who Thus Wholeheartedly Believe and Make Up Their Minds to Serve God Should Be Baptized as Jesus Was

Matt. 3:13-17 "Jesus came from Galilee to the Jordan to John, in order to be baptized by him. But the latter tried to prevent him, saying: 'I am the one needing to be baptized by you, and are you coming to me?' In reply Jesus said to him: 'Let it be, this time, for in that way it is suitable for us to carry out all that is righteous.' Then he quit preventing him. After being baptized Jesus immediately came up from the water; and, look! the heavens were opened up, and he saw descending like a dove God's spirit coming upon him. Look! Also, there was a voice from the heavens that said: 'This is my Son, the beloved, whom I have approved.'"

Matt. 28:19 "Go therefore and make disciples of people of all the nations, baptizing them."

Acts 2:40, 41 "He bore thorough witness and kept exhorting them, saying: 'Get saved from this crooked generation.' Therefore those who embraced his word heartily were baptized."

Acts 8:12 "When they believed Philip, who was declaring the good news of the kingdom of God and of the name of Jesus Christ, they proceeded to be baptized, both men and women."

Acts 8:36-38 "As they were going over the road, they came to a certain body of water, and the eunuch said: 'Look! A body of water; what prevents me from getting baptized?' With that he commanded the chariot to halt, and they both went down into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him."

See also the main heading "Baptism," pages 39-44.

Devil and Demons

Satan the Devil a Person, Not the Mere Abstract Quality of Evil

Matt. 4:1-11 "Then Jesus was led by the spirit up into the wilderness to be tempted by the Devil. . . . the Tempter came and said to him: . . . But in reply he said: . . . Then the Devil took him along into the holy city, and he stationed him upon the battlement of the temple and said to him: . . . Jesus said to him: . . . Again the Devil took him along to an unusually high mountain, and showed him all the kingdoms of the world and their glory, and he said to him: 'All these things I will give you if you fall down and do an act of worship to me.' Then Jesus said to him: 'Go away, Satan! For it is written, "It is Jehovah your God you

must worship, and it is to him alone you must render sacred service.'' Then the Devil left him." (See also Luke 4:1-13.)

Job 1:6, 7 "It came to be the day when the sons of the true God entered to take their station before Jehovah, and even Satan proceeded to enter right among them. Then Jehovah said to Satan: . . . At that Satan answered Jehovah."

Jude 9 "When Michael the archangel had a difference with the Devil and was disputing about Moses' body, he did not dare to bring a judgment against him in abusive terms, but said: 'May Jehovah rebuke you.'" (See also Zech. 3:1, 2.)

Eph. 6:12 "We have a fight, not against blood and flesh, but against the governments, against the authorities, against the world rulers of this darkness, against the wicked spirit forces in the heavenly places."

2 Tim. 2:25, 26 "Instructing with mildness . . . as . . . they may come back to their proper senses out from the snare of the Devil, seeing that they have been caught alive by him for the will of that one."

Satan's Original Perfection and Later Self-Corruption at the Garden of Eden Compares with Course of King of Tyre

Ezek. 28:12-15 "Son of man, lift up a dirge concerning the king of Tyre, and you must say to him, . . . 'In Eden, the garden of God, you proved to be. . . . of gold was the workmanship of your settings and your sockets in you. In the day of your being created they were made ready. You are the anointed cherub that is covering, and I have set you. On the holy mountain of God you proved to be. In the midst of fiery stones you walked about. You were faultless in your ways from the day of your being created until unrighteousness was found in you.'"

Identified as the One Who Used a Serpent in Eden as Visible Mouthpiece in Misleading Eve

Gen. 3:1-5 "[The serpent] began to say to the woman: 'Is it really so that God said you must not eat from every tree of the garden?' At this the woman said to the serpent: 'Of the fruit of the trees of the garden we may eat. But as for eating of the fruit of the tree that is in the middle of the garden, God has said, "You must not eat from it, no, you must not touch it that you do not die."' At this the serpent said to the woman: 'You positively will not die. For God knows that in the very day of your eating from it your eyes are bound to be opened and you are bound to be like God, knowing good and bad.'"

Rev. 12:9 "So down the great dragon was hurled, the original serpent, the one called Devil and Satan, who is misleading the entire inhabited earth." (See also Rev. 20:2.)

After Rebellion, Satan Continued to Have Access to Heaven; Not Confined to Fiery "Hell"

Job 1:6 "Now it came to be the day when the sons of the true God entered to take their station before Jehovah, and even Satan proceeded to enter right among them." (See also Job 2:1.)

Appears as "Angel of Light," but Is Father of Lies

2 Cor. 11:3, 14 "I am afraid that somehow, as the serpent seduced Eve by its cunning, your minds might be corrupted away from the sincerity and the chastity that are due the Christ. And no wonder, for Satan himself keeps transforming himself into an angel of light."

John 8:44 "You are from your father the Devil, and you wish to do the desires of your father. That one was a manslayer when he began, and he did not stand fast in the truth, because truth is not in him. When he speaks the lie, he speaks according to his own disposition, because he is a liar and the father of the lie."

2 Thess. 2:9, 10 "The lawless one's presence is according to the operation of Satan with every powerful work and lying signs and portents and with every unrighteous deception for those who are perishing."

Instigator of Sin, Cause of Mankind's Woes

1 John 3:8 "He who carries on sin originates with the Devil, because the Devil has been sinning from the beginning."

Rev. 12:12 "Woe for the earth and for the sea, because the Devil has come down to you, having great anger."

Acts 10:38 "Jesus who was from Nazareth, how God anointed him with holy spirit and power, and he went through the land doing good and healing all those oppressed by the Devil."

Heb. 2:14 "He [Jesus Christ] also similarly partook of the same things, that through his death he might bring to nothing the one having the means to cause death, that is, the Devil."

See also the main heading "Wickedness," pages 493-497.

Exercises Great Influence on Men as "Ruler of the World"

John 14:30 "I shall not speak much with you any more, for the ruler of the world is coming. And he has no hold on me."

1 John 5:19 "The whole world is lying in the power of the wicked one."

2 Cor. 4:4 "Among whom the god of this system of things has blinded the minds of the unbelievers, that the illumination of the glorious good news about the Christ . . . might not shine through."

Rev. 12:9 "The one called Devil and Satan . . . is misleading the entire inhabited earth."

Acts 26:17, 18 "I am sending you, to open their eyes, to turn them from darkness to light and from the authority of Satan to God."

Controls beastlike political governments

Rev. 13:1, 2, 7 "I saw a wild beast ascending out of the sea, with ten horns and seven heads, and upon its horns ten diadems, but upon its heads blasphemous names. Now the wild beast that I saw was like a leopard, but its feet were as those of a bear, and its mouth was as a lion's mouth. And the dragon gave the beast its power and its throne and great authority. . . . authority was give it over every tribe and people and tongue and nation." (Compare Rev. 12:9.)

Dan. 7:17; 8:20, 21 "As for these huge beasts, because they are four, there are four kings that will stand up from the earth." "The ram that you saw possessing the two horns stands for the kings of Media and Persia. And the hairy he-goat stands for the king of Greece."

Luke 4:2-7 "The Devil . . . brought [Jesus] up and showed him all the kingdoms of the inhabited earth in an instant of time; and the Devil said to him: 'I will give you all this authority and the glory of them, because it has been delivered to me, and to whomever I wish I give it. You, therefore, if you do an act of worship before me, it will all be yours.'" (See also Matt. 4:1-11.)

Satan Challenged Jehovah God's Truthfulness, His Ability to Rule Universe by Love; Questioned Man's Integrity Toward God

Gen. 3:4, 5 "The serpent said to the woman: 'You positively will not die. For God knows that

in the very day of your eating from it your eyes are bound to be opened and you are bound to be like God, knowing good and bad.'"

Job 1:6-12; 2:3-5 "It came to be the day when the sons of the true God entered to take their station before Jehovah, and even Satan proceeded to enter right among them. . . . And Jehovah went on to say to Satan: 'Have you set your heart upon my servant Job, that there is no one like him in the earth, a man blameless and upright, fearing God and turning aside from bad?' At that Satan answered Jehovah and said: 'Is it for nothing that Job has feared God? Have not you yourself put up a hedge about him and about his house and about everything that he has all around? The work of his hands you have blessed, and his livestock itself has spread abroad in the earth. But, for a change, thrust out your hand, please, and touch everything he has and see whether he will not curse you to your very face.' Accordingly Jehovah said to Satan: 'Look! Everything that he has is in your hand. Only against him himself do not thrust out your hand!' So Satan went out away from the person of Jehovah." "Jehovah went on to say to Satan: 'Have you set your heart upon my servant Job, that there is no one like him in the earth, a man blameless and upright, fearing God and turning aside from bad? Even yet he is holding fast his integrity, although you incite me against him to swallow him up without cause.' But Satan answered Jehovah and said: 'Skin in behalf of skin, and everything that a man has he will give in behalf of his soul. For a change, thrust out your hand, please, and touch as far as his bone and his flesh and see whether he will not curse you to your very face.'"

Rev. 12:10 "I heard a loud voice in heaven say: 'Now have come to pass the salvation and the power and the kingdom of our God and the authority of his Christ, because the accuser of our brothers has been hurled down, who accuses them day and night before our God!'"

Satan Allowed to Remain for a Time—His Challenge to Be Completely Answered, God's Name and Power to Be Made Known

Job 1:12 "Jehovah said to Satan: 'Look! Everything that [Job] has is in your hand. Only against him himself do not thrust out your hand!'"

Ezek. 38:23 "I shall certainly magnify myself and sanctify myself and make myself known before the eyes of many nations; and they will have to know that I am Jehovah."

Ex. 9:16 "For this cause I have kept you in existence, for the sake of showing you my power and in order to have my name declared in all the earth."

See also the main heading "Sanctification," pages 441, 442.

Afforded time to produce his wicked seed; also seed of God's woman produced

Gen. 3:14, 15 "And Jehovah God proceeded to say to the serpent: . . . 'And I shall put enmity between you and the woman and between your seed and her seed. He will bruise you in the head and you will bruise him in the heel.'"

Gal. 3:16 "It says, not: 'And to seeds,' as in the case of many such, but as in the case of one: 'And to your seed,' who is Christ." (Compare Heb. 2:14; 1 John 3:8.)

Matt. 13:38, 39 "The field is the world; as for the fine seed, these are the sons of the kingdom; but the weeds are the sons of the wicked one, and the enemy that sowed them is the Devil. The harvest is a conclusion of a system of things, and the reapers are angels." (Compare Rom. 16:20; Gal. 4:26.)

Matt. 12:24 "Beelzebub, the ruler of the demons."

John 8:44 "You are from your father the Devil, and you wish to do the desires of your father."

1 John 3:10 "The children of God and the children of the Devil are evident by this fact: Everyone who does not carry on righteousness does not originate with God."

Puts men to the test, seeking to turn them from God

Rev. 2:10 "Do not be afraid of the things you are about to suffer. Look! The Devil will keep on throwing some of you into prison that you may be fully put to the test."

Luke 22:31 "Simon, Simon, look! Satan has demanded to have you men to sift you as wheat."

1 Pet. 5:8 "Keep your senses, be watchful. Your adversary, the Devil, walks about like a roaring lion, seeking to devour someone."

Acts 5:3 "Peter said: 'Ananias, why has Satan emboldened you to play false to the holy spirit and to hold back secretly some of the price of the field?'"

John 13:2 "So, while the evening meal was going on, the Devil having already put it into the heart of Judas Iscariot . . . to betray him."

Divine patience has meant salvation for men

2 Pet. 3:9, 15 "Jehovah is not slow respecting his promise, as some people consider slowness, but he is patient with you because he does not desire any to be destroyed but desires all to attain to repentance. Consider the patience of our Lord as salvation."

See also Rom. 9:22, 23.

Put Up Fight Against Satanic Influence

Eph. 6:11-16 "Put on the complete suit of armor from God that you may be able to stand firm against the machinations of the Devil; because we have a fight, not against blood and flesh, but . . . against the world rulers of this darkness, against the wicked spirit forces in the heavenly places. On this account take up the complete suit of armor from God . . . Above all things, take up the large shield of faith, with which you will be able to quench all the wicked one's burning missiles."

2 Cor. 2:11 "That we may not be overreached by Satan, for we are not ignorant of his designs."

Devil flees from those who resist him

Jas. 4:7 "Oppose the Devil, and he will flee from you."

Matt. 4:10, 11 "Then Jesus said to him: 'Go away, Satan! For it is written, "It is Jehovah your God you must worship, and it is to him alone you must render sacred service."' Then the Devil left him."

Eph. 4:27 "Neither allow place for the Devil."

See also the main heading "Spiritism," pages 468-470.

Deadly Bruising of Satan the Serpent Foretold

Gen. 3:14, 15 "Jehovah God proceeded to say to the serpent: . . . 'I shall put enmity between you and the woman and between your seed and her seed. He will bruise you in the head.'"

Rom. 16:20 "For his part, the God who gives peace will crush Satan under your feet shortly."

Ousted from heaven at Kingdom's establishment

Rev. 12:7-12 "War broke out in heaven: Michael and his angels battled with the dragon, and the dragon and its angels battled but it did not prevail, neither was a place found for them any longer in heaven. So down the great dragon was hurled, the original serpent, the one called Devil and Satan, who is mis-

leading the entire inhabited earth; he was hurled down to the earth, and his angels were hurled down with him. And I heard a loud voice in heaven say: 'Now have come to pass the salvation and the power and the kingdom of our God and the authority of his Christ, because the accuser of our brothers has been hurled down . . . Woe for the earth and for the sea, because the Devil has come down to you.' "

Restrained in abyss for a thousand years

Rev. 20:1-3 "I saw an angel coming down out of heaven with the key of the abyss and a great chain in his hand. And he seized the dragon, the original serpent, who is the Devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years. And he hurled him into the abyss and shut it and sealed it over him, that he might not mislead the nations any more until the thousand years were ended."

Destroyed in lake of fire after thousand-year reign of Christ

Rev. 20:7-10 "Now as soon as the thousand years have been ended, Satan will be let loose out of his prison, and he will go out to mislead those nations in the four corners of the earth . . . And the Devil who was misleading them was hurled into the lake of fire and sulphur, where both the wild beast and the false prophet already were." (See also vs. 14.)

Devil and His Works Brought to Nothing by Means of Christ

Heb. 2:14 "[Jesus Christ] also similarly partook of the same things, that through his death he might bring to nothing the one having the means to cause death, that is, the Devil."

1 John 3:8 "For this purpose the Son of God was made manifest, namely, to break up the works of the Devil."

DEMONS

Originally Angels of God; These Disobediently Materialized as Humans Before the Flood

Gen. 6:2-4 "Then the sons of the true God began to notice the daughters of men, that they were good-looking; and they went taking wives for themselves, namely, all whom they chose. . . . The Nephilim proved to be in the earth in those days, and also after that, when the sons of the true God continued to have relations with the daughters of men and they bore sons to them, they were the mighty ones who were of old, the men of fame."

1 Pet. 3:19, 20 "In this state also he went his way and preached to the spirits in prison, who had once been disobedient when the patience of God was waiting in Noah's days, while the ark was being constructed."

Such Disobedient Angels Were Expelled from God's Enlightened Organization, Came Under Control of Satan

Matt. 12:24 "The Pharisees said: 'This fellow does not expel the demons except by means of Beelzebub [Beelzebub = Satan; see verse 26], the ruler of the demons.' "

2 Pet. 2:4 "God did not hold back from punishing the angels that sinned, but, by throwing them into Tartarus, delivered them to pits of dense darkness to be reserved for judgment."

Jude 6 "The angels that did not keep their original position but forsook their own proper dwelling place he has reserved with eternal bonds under dense darkness for the judgment of the great day."

See also the main heading "Hellfire," pages 229, 230.

Since the Flood, Use Human Mediums to Communicate with Men

Acts 16:16 "It happened that as we were going to the place of prayer, a certain servant girl with a spirit, a demon of divination, met us. She used to furnish her masters with much gain by practicing the art of prediction."

1 Sam. 28:7 "Saul said to his servants: 'Seek for me a woman who is a mistress of spirit mediumship, and I will go to her and consult her.' Then his servants said to him: 'Look! There is a woman who is a mistress of spirit mediumship in En-dor.' "

Lev. 19:31 "Do not turn yourselves to the spirit mediums, and do not consult professional foretellers of events, so as to become unclean by them."

May Gain Control of Minds and Bodies of Humans

Luke 8:27-30 "As he got out onto land a certain man from the city who had demons met him. And for a considerable time he had not worn clothing, and he was staying, not at home, but among the tombs. At the sight of Jesus he cried aloud and fell down before him, and with a loud voice he said: 'What have I to do with you, Jesus Son of the Most High God? I beg you, do not torment me.' (For he had been ordering the unclean spirit to come out of the man. For over a long time it had held him fast, and he was repeatedly bound with chains and fetters under guard, but he would burst the bonds and be driven by the demon into the lonely places.) Jesus asked him: 'What is your name?' He said: 'Legion,' because many demons had entered into him."

Matt. 4:24 "They brought him all those faring badly, distressed with various diseases and torments, demon-possessed and epileptic and paralyzed persons, and he cured them."

Matt. 15:22 "Have mercy on me, Lord, Son of David. My daughter is badly demonized."

Acts 19:11-16 "God kept performing extraordinary works of power through the hands of Paul, so that . . . the wicked spirits came out. But certain ones of the roving Jews who practiced the casting out of demons also undertook to name the name of the Lord Jesus over those having the wicked spirits, saying: 'I solemnly charge you by Jesus whom Paul preaches.' . . . But in answer the wicked spirit said to them: 'I know Jesus and I am acquainted with Paul; but who are you?' With that the man in whom the wicked spirit was leaped upon them, got the mastery of one after the other, and prevailed against them, so that they fled naked and wounded out of that house."

See also the main heading "Spiritism," pages 468-470.

Demons Receive Worship of Those Not Serving Jehovah God

Deut. 32:16, 17 "They began inciting him to jealousy with strange gods; with detestable things they kept offending him. They went sacrificing to demons, not to God."

Ps. 106:36, 37 "They kept serving their idols, and these came to be a snare to them. And they would sacrifice their sons and their daughters to demons."

1 Cor. 10:20 "The things which the nations sacrifice they sacrifice to demons, and not to God; and I do not want you to become sharers with the demons."

Rev. 9:20 "The rest of the men who were not killed by these plagues did not repent of the works of their hands, so that they should not worship the demons and the idols of gold and silver and copper and stone and wood, which can neither see nor hear nor walk."

1 Tim. 4:1 "In later periods of time some will fall away from the faith, paying attention to misleading inspired utterances and teachings of demons."

Gather Nations in Opposition to God at Armageddon

Rev. 16:13-16 "I saw three unclean inspired expressions that looked like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon and out of the mouth of the wild beast and out of the mouth of the false prophet. They are, in fact, expressions inspired by demons and perform signs, and they go forth to the kings of the entire inhabited earth, to gather them together to the war of the great day of God the Almighty. . . . And they gathered them together to the place that is called in Hebrew Har-Magedon [Armageddon]."

To Be Destroyed Along with Satan

Luke 4:33, 34 "In the synagogue there was a man with a spirit, an unclean demon, and he shouted with a loud voice: 'Ah! What have we to do with you, Jesus you Nazarene? Did you come to destroy us? I know exactly who you are, the Holy One of God.'"

Luke 8:31 "They kept entreating him [Jesus Christ] not to order them to go away into the abyss."

Matt. 25:41 "Then he will say, in turn, to those on his left, 'Be on your way from me, you who have been cursed, into the everlasting fire prepared for the Devil and his angels.'"

Discipline

Bible Provides Basis for Sound Discipline

2 Tim. 3:16 "All Scripture is inspired of God and beneficial for teaching, for reproving, for setting things straight, for disciplining in righteousness."

Prov. 1:1-3 "The proverbs . . . for one to know wisdom and discipline, to discern the sayings of understanding, to receive the discipline that gives insight."

All Persons Are in Need of Guidance and Correction

Jer. 10:23 "I well know, O Jehovah, that to earthling man his way does not belong. It does not belong to man who is walking even to direct his step."

Jer. 17:9 "The heart is more treacherous than anything else and is desperate. Who can know it?"

Prov. 16:25 "There exists a way that is upright before a man, but the ways of death are the end of it afterward." (See also Prov. 14:12.)

Prov. 16:2 "All the ways of a man are pure in his own eyes, but Jehovah is making an estimate of spirits."

Accept discipline as evidence of loving concern

Prov. 3:11, 12 "The discipline of Jehovah, O my son, do not reject; and do not abhor his reproof, because the one whom Jehovah loves he reproves, even as a father does a son in whom he finds pleasure."

Rev. 3:19 "All those for whom I have affection I reprove and discipline."

Take it seriously

Prov. 17:10 "A rebuke works deeper in one having understanding than striking a stupid one a hundred times."

Prov. 9:8 "Give a reproof to a wise person and he will love you."

Prov. 12:1 "A lover of discipline is a lover of knowledge, but a hater of reproof is unreasoning."

Keep in mind the benefits that can result from it

Prov. 4:13 "Take hold on discipline; do not let go. Safeguard it, for it itself is your life."

Heb. 12:10, 11 "They [human fathers] for a few days used to discipline us according to what seemed good to them, but he [God] does so for our profit that we may partake of his holiness. True, no discipline seems for the present to be joyous, but grievous; yet afterward to those who have been trained by it it yields peaceable fruit, namely, righteousness."

Titus 1:13 "Keep on reproving them with severity, that they may be healthy in the faith."

1 Cor. 11:32 "We are disciplined by Jehovah, that we may not become condemned with the world."

Profit from reproof administered to others

1 Tim. 5:20 "Reprove before all onlookers persons who practice sin, that the rest also may have fear."

Discipline yourself to apply the counsel in God's Word

Josh. 1:8 "This book of the law should not depart from your mouth, and you must in an undertone read in it day and night, in order that you may take care to do according to all that is written in it; for then you will make your way successful and then you will act wisely."

Results to those who reject discipline

Prov. 15:32 "Anyone shunning discipline is rejecting his own soul."

Jer. 5:3, 4 "They refused to take discipline. They made their faces harder than a crag. They refused to turn back. Even I myself had said: 'Surely they are of low class. They acted foolishly, for they have ignored the way of Jehovah, the judgment of their God.'"

Prov. 1:24-26 "Because I have called out but you keep refusing, I have stretched out my hand but there is no one paying attention, and you keep neglecting all my counsel, and my reproof you have not accepted, I also, for my part, shall laugh at your own disaster, I shall mock when what you dread comes."

Jer. 7:28 "You must say to them, 'This is the nation whose people have not obeyed the voice of Jehovah its God, and have not taken discipline. Faithfulness has perished, and it has been cut off from their mouth.'"

Zeph. 3:2, 7 "She did not listen to a voice; she did not accept discipline. In Jehovah she did not trust. To her God she did not draw near. I said, 'Surely you will fear me; you will accept discipline'; so that her dwelling might not be cut off—all that I must call to account against her. Truly they acted promptly in making all their dealings ruinous."

Prov. 13:18 "The one neglecting discipline comes to poverty and dishonor."

Prov. 29:1 "A man repeatedly reproved but making his neck hard will suddenly be broken, and that without healing."

Parents Who Love Their Children Discipline Them

Prov. 13:24 "The one holding back his rod is hating his son, but the one loving him is he that does look for him with discipline."

Eph. 6:4 "Fathers, do not be irritating your children, but go on bringing them up in the discipline and authoritative advice of Jehovah."

Heb. 12:7-9 "It is for discipline you are enduring. God is dealing with you as with sons. For what son is he that a father does not discipline? But if you are without the discipline of which all have become partakers, you are really illegitimate children, and not sons. Furthermore, we used to have fathers who were of our flesh to discipline us, and we used to give them respect."

See also the main heading "Children," pages 72, 73.

Reasons for the discipline

Prov. 22:15 "Foolishness is tied up with the heart of a boy; the rod of discipline is what will remove it far from him."

Prov. 29:15 "The rod and reproof are what give wisdom; but a boy let on the loose will be causing his mother shame."

Prov. 29:17 "Chastise your son and he will bring you rest and give much pleasure to your soul."

Prov. 23:13, 14 "Do not hold back discipline from the mere boy. In case you beat him with the rod, he will not die. With the rod you yourself should beat him, that you may deliver his very soul from Sheol itself."

How to respond to such discipline

Prov. 15:5 "Anyone foolish disrespects the discipline of his father, but anyone regarding reproof is shrewd."

Prov. 4:1, 2 "Listen, O sons, to the discipline of a father and pay attention, so as to know understanding. For good instruction is what I certainly shall give to you. My law do not leave."

Disfellowshiping

Vigilance Required to Keep Christian Congregation Clean

Jude 3, 4 "I found it necessary to write you to exhort you to put up a hard fight for the faith that was once for all time delivered to the holy ones. My reason is that certain men have slipped in who have long ago been appointed by the Scriptures to this judgment, ungodly men, turning the undeserved kindness of our God into an excuse for loose conduct."

2 Pet. 2:2 "Many will follow their acts of loose conduct, and on account of these the way of the truth will be spoken of abusively."

See also the main heading "Conduct of Christians," pages 98-108.

Standing of Entire Congregation Before God Affected by Conduct of Individual Members

1 Cor. 5:5, 6 "Hand such a man over to Satan for the destruction of the flesh, in order that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord. . . . Do you not know that a little leaven ferments the whole lump?"

Josh. 7:1-26 "The sons of Israel went committing an act of unfaithfulness respecting the thing devoted to destruction in that Achan . . . took some of the thing devoted to destruction. At this Jehovah's anger grew hot against the sons of Israel. . . . Jehovah said to Joshua: 'Get up, you! Why is it that you are falling upon your face? Israel has sinned, and they have also overstepped my covenant that I laid as a command upon them; and they have also taken some of the thing devoted to destruction and have also stolen and also kept it secret and have also put it among their own articles. And the sons of Israel will not be able to rise up against their enemies. . . . I shall not prove to be with you again unless you annihilate the thing devoted to destruction out of your midst.' . . . Achan answered Joshua and said: 'For a fact I—I have sinned against Jehovah the God of Israel, and this way and that way I have done.' . . . Then Joshua said: 'Why have you brought ostracism upon us? Jehovah will bring ostracism upon you on this day.' With that all Israel went pelting him with stones, . . . At this Jehovah turned away from his hot anger."

2 Cor. 7:11 "Look! this very thing, your being saddened in a godly way, what a great earnestness it produced in you, yes, clearing of yourselves, yes, indignation, yes, fear, yes, longing, yes, zeal, yes, righting of the wrong! In every respect you demonstrated yourselves to be chaste in this matter."

Sexually Immoral Persons, Extortioners, Drunkards, Revilers, Blasphemers, Idolaters, and Those Who Promote False Doctrine Have No Place in the Congregation of Jehovah's Worshipers

1 Cor. 5:11 "I am writing you to quit mixing in company with anyone called a brother that is a fornicator or a greedy person or an idolater or a reviler or a drunkard or an extortioner."

Rom. 16:17, 18 "I exhort you, brothers, to keep your eye on those who cause divisions and occasions for stumbling contrary to the teaching that you have learned, and avoid them. For men of that sort are slaves, not of our Lord Christ, but of their own bellies; and by smooth talk and complimentary speech they seduce the hearts of guileless ones."

Titus 3:10, 11 "As for a man that promotes a sect, reject him after a first and a second admonition; knowing that such a man has been turned out of the way and is sinning, he being self-condemned."

1 Tim. 1:20 "Hymenaeus and Alexander belong to these, and I have handed them over to Satan that they may be taught by discipline not to blaspheme."

Baptized Christians, "Brothers," Who Make Practice of Sin to Be Expelled from Congregation

1 Cor. 5:11, 13 "Quit mixing in company with anyone called a brother that is a fornicator or a greedy person or an idolater or a reviler or a drunkard or an extortioner. . . . 'Remove the wicked man from among yourselves.' "

1 John 2:1; 3:4, 6 "My little children, I am writing you these things that you may not commit a sin. And yet, if anyone does commit a sin, we have a helper with the Father, Jesus Christ, a righteous one." "Everyone who practices sin is also practicing lawlessness, and so sin is lawlessness. Everyone remaining in union with [God] does not practice sin."

All the evidence to be gathered before any decision is made

1 Tim. 5:21 "I solemnly charge you before God and Christ Jesus and the chosen angels to keep these things without prejudgment, doing nothing according to a biased leaning."

Prov. 18:13 "When anyone is replying to a matter before he hears it, that is foolishness on his part and a humiliation."

Deut. 13:12-14 "In case you hear it said in one of your cities, which Jehovah your God is giv-

ing you to dwell there, 'Good-for-nothing men have gone out *from your midst that they* may try to turn away the inhabitants of their city, saying: "Let us go and serve other gods," whom you have not known,' you must also search and investigate and inquire thoroughly . . . if the thing is established as the truth."

Deut. 17:2-4, 7 "In case there should be found in your midst . . . a man or a woman who should practice what is bad in the eyes of Jehovah . . . and it has been told you and you have heard it and have searched thoroughly, and, look! the thing is established as the truth, . . . you must clear out what is bad from your midst."

To establish a matter, it must be confirmed by two or three actual witnesses

1 Tim. 5:19 "Do not admit an accusation against an older man, except only on the evidence of two or three witnesses."

Matt. 18:16 "In order that at the mouth of two or three witnesses *every matter* may be established."

Formal congregation action taken; beneficial for all to be informed when one is disfellowshiped

1 Cor. 5:3-6 "I for one, although absent in body but present in spirit, have certainly judged already, *as if I were present, the* man who has worked in such a way as this, that in the name of our Lord Jesus, when you are gathered together, also my spirit with the power of our Lord Jesus, you hand such a man over to Satan for the destruction of the flesh, in order that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord."

1 Tim. 5:20 "Reprove before all onlookers persons who practice sin, that the rest also may have fear."

No fellowship with one who has been expelled from congregation

1 Cor. 5:11, 13 "*Quit mixing* in company with anyone called a brother that is a fornicator or a greedy person or an idolater or a reviler or a drunkard or an extortioner, not even eating with such a man. . . . 'Remove the wicked man from among yourselves.'"

2 John 9-11 "Everyone that pushes ahead and does *not* remain in the teaching of the Christ does not have God. . . . If anyone comes to you and does not bring this teaching, never receive him into your homes or say a greeting to him. For he that says a greeting to him is a sharer in his wicked works."

Reinstatement possible for one who is truly repentant

2 Cor. 2:6, 7 "This rebuke given by the majority is sufficient for such a man, so that, on the contrary now, you should kindly forgive and comfort him, that somehow such a man may not be swallowed up by his being overly sad."

See also the main *heading* "Repentance," pages 422, 423.

Every Member of Congregation Shares Responsibility to Keep Organization Clean—by Guarding Personal Conduct, by Exposing Serious Wrongdoing

Lev. 5:1 "Now in case a soul *sins in that he has heard public* cursing and he is a witness or he has seen it or has come to know of it, if he does not report it, then he must answer for his error."

Heb. 12:15, 16 "Carefully watching . . . that no poisonous root may spring up and cause trouble and that many may not be defiled by it; that there may be no fornicator."

Phil. 1:27 "Behave in a manner worthy of the good news about the Christ."

See also Zech. 13:2, 3.

One Overtaken in Sin, but Who Wants to Do What Is Right, Should Promptly Confess the Wrong and Seek Help

Jas. 5:14-16 "Is there anyone sick among you? Let him call the older men of the congregation to him . . . openly confess your sins to one another and pray for one another, that you may get healed."

Avoiding the Company of Those Unresponsive to Scriptural Counsel May Be Necessary Under Certain Circumstances, Even Though Their Conduct Does Not Warrant Disfellowshiping

2 Thess. 3:14, 15 "If anyone is not obedient to our word through this letter, keep this one marked, stop associating with him, that he may become ashamed. And yet do not be considering him as an enemy, but continue admonishing him as a brother."

Following Scriptural Counsel Will Do Much to Resolve Personal Difficulties Between Individuals

Matt. 18:15-17, 21, 22 "'Moreover, if your brother commits a sin, go lay bare his fault between you and him alone. If he listens to you, you have gained your brother. But if he does not listen, take along with you one or two more, in order that at the mouth of two or three witnesses *every matter may be established. If* he does not listen to them, speak to the congregation. If he does not listen even to the congregation, let him be to you just as a man of the nations and as a tax collector.' Then Peter came up and said to him: 'Lord, how many times is my brother to sin against me and am I to forgive him? Up to seven times?' Jesus said to him: 'I say to you, not, Up to seven times, but, Up to seventy-seven times.'"

1 Pet. 4:8 **"Above all things,** have intense love for one another, because love covers a multitude of sins."

Col. 3:12, 13 "As God's chosen ones, holy and loved, clothe yourselves with the tender affections of compassion, kindness, lowliness of mind, mildness, and long-suffering. Continue putting up with one another and forgiving one another freely if anyone has a cause for complaint against another. Even as Jehovah freely forgave you, so do you also."

See also the main heading "Settling Personal Differences," pages 446-448.

Mature Ones to Counsel and Endeavor to Restore One Who Is Acting Unwisely, Before He Commits Serious Wrong

Gal. 6:1 "Brothers, even though a man takes some false step before he is aware of it, you who have spiritual qualifications try to restore such a man in a spirit of mildness, as you each keep *an eye on yourself, for fear you* also may be tempted."

Earth and Its Destiny

God's Purpose for the Earth Clearly Stated

Gen. 1:28 "God blessed them and God said to them: 'Be fruitful and become many and fill the earth and subdue it, and have in subjection the fish of the sea and the flying creatures of the heavens and every living creature that is moving upon the earth.'"

Isa. 45:18 "This is what Jehovah has said, the Creator of

the heavens, He the true God, the Former of the earth and the Maker of it, He the One who firmly established it, who did not create it simply for nothing, who formed it even to be inhabited."

Ps. 37:9-11, 29 "Evildoers themselves will be cut off, but those hoping in Jehovah are the ones that will possess the earth. And just a little while longer, and the wicked one will be no more; and you will certainly give attention to his place, and he will not be. But the meek ones themselves will possess the earth, and they will indeed find their exquisite delight in the abundance of peace. The righteous themselves will possess the earth, and they will reside forever upon it."

Prov. 2:21, 22 "The upright are the ones that will reside in the earth, and the blameless are the ones that will be left over in it. As regards the wicked, they will be cut off from the very earth; and as for the treacherous, they will be torn away from it."

Matt. 6:9, 10 "You must pray, then, this way: 'Our Father in the heavens, let your name be sanctified. Let your kingdom come. Let your will take place, as in heaven, also upon earth.'"

See also the main heading "Creation," pages 132-134.

Literal Earth to Remain Forever

Ps. 104:5 "He has founded the earth upon its established places; it will not be made to totter to time indefinite, or forever."

Ps. 119:90 "Your faithfulness is for generation after generation. You have solidly fixed the earth, that it may keep standing."

Eccl. 1:4 "A generation is going, and a generation is coming; but the earth is standing even to time indefinite."

Man, with nuclear weapons, cannot change God's purpose for earth

Rev. 11:18 "The nations became wrathful, and your own wrath came, and the appointed time for the dead to be judged, and to give their reward to your slaves the prophets and to the holy ones . . . and to bring to ruin those ruining the earth."

Isa. 55:11 "So my word that goes forth from my mouth will prove to be. It will not return to me without results, but it will certainly do that in which I have delighted, and it will have certain success in that for which I have sent it."

Isa. 14:27 "Jehovah of armies himself has counseled, and who can break it up? And his hand is the one stretched out, and who can turn it back?"

Symbolic Earth, Wicked Human Society, to Be Destroyed

2 Pet. 3:7 "By the same word the heavens and the earth that are now are stored up for fire and are being reserved to the day of judgment and of destruction of the ungodly men."

Rev. 19:17, 18, 20; 21:1 "'Come here, be gathered together to the great evening meal of God, that you may eat the fleshy parts of kings and the fleshy parts of military commanders and the fleshy parts of strong men and the fleshy parts of horses and of those seated upon them, and the fleshy parts of all, of freemen as well as of slaves and of small ones and great.' And the wild beast was caught, and along with it the false prophet that performed in front of it the signs with which he misled those who received the mark of the wild beast and those who render worship to its image. While still alive, they both were hurled into the fiery lake that burns with sulphur. And I saw . . . a new earth; for the former . . . earth had passed away."

Jer. 25:31, 33 "'There is a controversy that Jehovah has with the nations. He must personally put himself in judgment with all flesh. As regards the wicked ones, he must give them

to the sword,' is the utterance of Jehovah. 'And those slain by Jehovah will certainly come to be in that day from one end of the earth clear to the other end of the earth. They will not be bewailed, neither will they be gathered up or be buried. As manure on the surface of the ground they will become.'"

Isa. 13:9 "Look! The day of Jehovah itself is coming, cruel both with fury and with burning anger, in order to make the land an object of astonishment, and that it may annihilate the land's sinners out of it."

Deliverance during past executions of divine judgment set a pattern for survivors among mankind at battle of Armageddon

Matt. 24:37-39; 1 Pet. 3:20 "Just as the days of Noah were, so the presence of the Son of man will be. For as they were in those days before the flood, eating and drinking, men marrying and women being given in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark; and they took no note until the flood came and swept them all away, so the presence of the Son of man will be." "The patience of God was waiting in Noah's days, while the ark was being constructed, in which a few people, that is, eight souls, were carried safely through the water." (See also Gen. 7:23.)

Luke 17:29, 30 "On the day that Lot came out of Sodom it rained fire and sulphur from heaven and destroyed them all. The same way it will be on that day when the Son of man is to be revealed." (See also Gen. 19:24-29.)

Isa. 24:1, 3, 6 "Look! Jehovah is emptying the land and laying it waste. . . . Without fail the land will be emptied. . . . That is why the inhabitants of the land have decreased in number, and very few mortal men have remained over."

See also 2 Pet. 2:4-9.

Wicked to be cut off; lovers of righteousness to remain

Ps. 145:20 "Jehovah is guarding all those loving him, but all the wicked ones he will annihilate."

Prov. 10:30 "As for the righteous one, to time indefinite he will not be caused to stagger; but as for the wicked ones, they will not keep residing on the earth."

2 Pet. 2:4-9 "God did not hold back from . . . punishing an ancient world, but kept Noah, a preacher of righteousness, safe with seven others when he brought a deluge upon a world of ungodly people; and by reducing the cities Sodom and Gomorrah to ashes he condemned them, setting a pattern for ungodly persons of things to come; and he delivered righteous Lot, who was greatly distressed by the indulgence of the law-defying people in loose conduct—for that righteous man by what he saw and heard while dwelling among them from day to day was tormenting his righteous soul by reason of their lawless deeds—Jehovah knows how to deliver people of godly devotion out of trial, but to reserve unrighteous people for the day of judgment to be cut off."

Prov. 12:7, 28 "There is an overthrowing of the wicked ones and they are no more, but the very house of the righteous ones will keep standing. In the path of righteousness there is life, and the journey in its pathway means no death."

Blessings to Come to Earth and Its Inhabitants by Means of God's Kingdom

Heavenly government, with God-fearing princely representatives on earth

Matt. 6:9, 10 "Our Father in the heavens, let your . . . kingdom come. Let your will take place, as in heaven, also upon earth."

Matt. 25:1 "The kingdom of the heavens."

Dan. 7:13, 14 "I kept on beholding in the visions of the night, and, see there! with the clouds of the heavens someone like a son of man happened to be coming; and to the Ancient of Days he gained access, and they brought him up close even before that One. And to him there were given rulership and dignity and kingdom, that the peoples, national groups and languages should all serve even him. His rulership is an indefinitely lasting rulership that will not pass away, and his kingdom one that will not be brought to ruin."

Dan. 2:44 "The God of heaven will set up a kingdom that will never be brought to ruin. And the kingdom itself will not be passed on to any other people. It . . . will stand to times indefinite."

Isa. 32:1 "Look! A king will reign for righteousness itself; and as respects princes, they will rule as princes for justice itself."

Ps. 45:16 "In place of your forefathers there will come to be your sons, whom you will appoint as princes in all the earth."

See also the main heading "Kingdom," pages 300-306.

Righteousness to prevail

2 Pet. 3:13 "There are new heavens and a new earth that we are awaiting according to his promise, and in these righteousness is to dwell."

Acts 17:31 "[God] has set a day in which he purposes to judge the inhabited earth in righteousness."

Isa. 11:3-5 "He will not judge by any mere appearance to his eyes, nor reprove simply according to the thing heard by his ears. And with righteousness he must judge the lowly ones, and with uprightness he must give reproof in behalf of the meek ones of the earth. And he must strike the earth with the rod of his mouth; and with the spirit of his lips he will put the wicked one to death. And righteousness must prove to be the belt of his hips, and faithfulness the belt of his loins."

Isa. 26:9 "Righteousness is what the inhabitants of the productive land will certainly learn."

See also Jer. 33:15; Heb. 1:8, 9.

Health and happiness

Rev. 21:1-4 "I saw a new heaven and a new earth; for the former heaven and the former earth had passed away. . . . I heard a loud voice from the throne say: 'Look! The tent of God is with mankind, and he will reside with them, and they will be his peoples. And God himself will be with them. And he will wipe out every tear from their eyes, and death will be no more, neither will mourning nor outcry nor pain be any more. The former things have passed away.' "

Ps. 144:15 "Happy is the people whose God is Jehovah!"

Isa. 65:21, 22 "They will certainly build houses and have occupancy; and they will certainly plant vineyards and eat their fruitage. They will not build and someone else have occupancy; they will not plant and someone else do the eating. For like the days of a tree will the days of my people be; and the work of their own hands my chosen ones will use to the full."

Children to be brought forth under righteous conditions

Isa. 65:17, 23 "Here I am creating new heavens and a new earth; and the former things will not be called to mind, neither will they come up into the heart. They will not toil for nothing, nor will they bring to birth for disturbance; because they are the offspring made up of the chosen ones of Jehovah, and their descendants with them."

Isa. 11:1, 5, 8, 9 "There must go forth a twig out of the stump of Jesse [the father of David and human forefather of Jesus Christ the King]; and out of his roots a sprout will be fruitful. And righteousness must prove to be the belt of his hips, and faithfulness the belt of his loins. And the sucking child will certainly play upon the hole of the cobra; and upon the light aperture of a poisonous snake will a weaned child actually put his own hand. They will not do any harm or cause any ruin in all my holy mountain."

Resurrection of the dead

John 5:28, 29 "The hour is coming in which all those in the memorial tombs will hear his voice and come out."

Acts 24:15 "I have hope toward God . . . that there is going to be a resurrection of both the righteous and the unrighteous."

Heb. 11:35 "Men were tortured because they would not accept release by some ransom, in order that they might attain a better resurrection."

Rev. 20:12, 13 "I saw the dead, the great and the small, standing before the throne, and scrolls were opened. But another scroll was opened; it is the scroll of life. And the dead were judged out of those things written in the scrolls according to their deeds. And the sea gave up those dead in it, and death and Hades gave up those dead in them, and they were judged individually according to their deeds."

Eternal life for those proving to be obedient

Rom. 6:23 "The gift God gives is everlasting life by Christ Jesus our Lord."

Heb. 5:9 "He became responsible for everlasting salvation to all those obeying him."

Rev. 21:1, 4 "I saw a . . . new earth; for the former . . . earth had passed away. . . . and death will be no more."

1 Cor. 15:25, 26 "He must rule as king until God has put all enemies under his feet. As the last enemy, death is to be brought to nothing."

Isa. 25:8 "He will actually swallow up death forever, and the Lord Jehovah will certainly wipe the tears from all faces."

Rev. 20:14 "Death and Hades were hurled into the lake of fire. This means the second death, the lake of fire."

All mankind united in the worship of the true God

Isa. 11:9 "The earth will certainly be filled with the knowledge of Jehovah as the waters are covering the very sea."

Isa. 54:5 "Jehovah of armies being his name . . . The God of the whole earth he will be called."

Isa. 66:23 " 'And it will certainly occur that from new moon to new moon and from sabbath to sabbath all flesh will come in to bow down before me,' Jehovah has said."

Earth itself to become a paradise

Luke 23:42, 43 "He went on to say: 'Jesus, remember me when you get into your kingdom.' And he said to him: 'Truly I tell you today, You will be with me in Paradise.' "

Gen. 2:8, 15, *Dy* "The Lord God had planted a paradise of pleasure from the beginning: wherein he placed man whom he had formed. And the Lord God took man, and put him into the paradise of pleasure, to dress it, and to keep it."

Eccl. 2:5 "I made gardens and parks ["paradises," 1957 Ed. ftn.] for myself, and I planted in them fruit trees of all sorts."

Abundance of the necessities of life

Ps. 72:16 "There will come to be plenty of grain on the earth; on the top of the mountains there will be an overflow. His fruit will be as in Lebanon, and those who are from the city will blossom like the vegetation of the earth."

Ps. 67:6 "The earth itself will certainly give its produce; God, our God, will bless us."

Ezek. 34:27 "The tree of the field must give its fruitage, and the land itself will give its yield, and they will actually prove to be on their soil in security."

Global peace and security

Isa. 9:6, 7 "The princely rule will come to be upon his shoulder. And his name will be called Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God, Eternal Father, Prince of Peace. To the abundance of the princely rule and to peace there will be no end, upon the throne of David and upon his kingdom in order to establish it firmly and to sustain it by means of justice and by means of righteousness, from now on and to time indefinite. The very zeal of Jehovah of armies will do this."

Mic. 4:3, 4 "He will certainly render judgment among many peoples, and set matters straight respecting mighty nations far away. And they will have to beat their swords into plowshares and their spears into pruning shears. They will not lift up sword, nation against nation, neither will they learn war any more. And they will actually sit, each one under his vine and under his fig tree, and there will be no one making them tremble; for the very mouth of Jehovah of armies has spoken it." (See also Isa. 2:4.)

Ps. 46:8-11 "Come, you people, behold the activities of Jehovah, how he has set astonishing events on the earth. He is making wars to cease to the extremity of the earth. The bow he breaks apart and does cut the spear in pieces; the wagons he burns in the fire. . . . Jehovah of armies is with us; the God of Jacob is a secure height for us."

Ezek. 34:25-27 "I will conclude with them a covenant of peace, and I shall certainly cause the injurious wild beast to cease out of the land, and they will actually dwell in the wilderness in security and sleep in the forests. And I will make them and the surroundings of my hill a blessing, and I will cause the pouring rain to descend in its time. Pouring rains of blessing there will prove to be . . . and they will actually prove to be on their soil in security."

Animals and man at peace with one another

Isa. 11:6-9 "The wolf will actually reside for a while with the male lamb, and with the kid the leopard itself will lie down, and the calf and the maned young lion and the well-fed animal all together; and a mere little boy will be leader over them. And the cow and the bear themselves will feed; together their young ones will lie down. And even the lion will eat straw just like the bull. And the sucking child will certainly play upon the hole of the cobra; and upon the light aperture of a poisonous snake will a weaned child actually put his own hand. They will not do any harm or cause any ruin in all my holy mountain."

Hos. 2:18 "For them I shall certainly conclude a covenant in that day in connection with the wild beast of the field and with the flying creature of the heavens and the creeping thing of the ground, and . . . I will make them lie down in security."

See also the main heading "Creation," pages 134, 135.

Encouragement

Each One Should Upbuild Others, Encourage to Faithfulness

1 Thess. 5:11 "Therefore keep comforting one another and building one another up, just as you are in fact doing."

Acts 14:22 "Strengthening the souls of the disciples, encouraging them to remain in the faith and saying: 'We must enter into the kingdom of God through many tribulations.'"

Isa. 35:3, 4 "Strengthen the weak hands, you people, and make the knees that are wobbling firm. Say to those who are anxious at heart: 'Be strong. Do not be afraid. Look! Your own God will come with vengeance itself, God even with a repayment. He himself will come and save you people.'"

Acts 11:23 "When he arrived and saw the undeserved kindness of God, he rejoiced and began to encourage them all to continue in the Lord with hearty purpose."

Those in positions of oversight particularly should consider the need of others for encouragement

Deut. 3:28 "Commission Joshua and encourage him and strengthen him, because he is the one to pass over before this people and he is the one to cause them to inherit the land that you will see."

2 Chron. 35:2 "So [King Josiah] stationed the priests over the things under their care and encouraged them in the service of the house of Jehovah."

See also Matt. 11:28-30.

Commendation Is a Source of Encouragement

1 Cor. 11:2 "Now I commend you because in all things you have me in mind and you are holding fast the traditions just as I handed them on to you."

Judg. 11:40 "From year to year the daughters of Israel would go to give commendation to the daughter of Jephthah the Gileadite, four days in the year."

Prov. 31:28, 29 "Her sons have risen up and proceeded to pronounce her happy; her owner rises up, and he praises her. There are many daughters that have shown capableness, but you —you have ascended above them all."

Faithful Example of Others Encourages One in Right Course

Heb. 12:1, 2 "So, then, because we have so great a cloud of witnesses surrounding us, let us also put off every weight and the sin that easily entangles us, and let us run with endurance the race that is set before us, as we look intently at the Chief Agent and Perfecter of our faith, Jesus. For the joy that was set before him he endured a torture stake, despising shame, and has sat down at the right hand of the throne of God."

John 16:33 *"I have said these* things to you that by means of me you may have peace. In the world you will have tribulation, but take courage! I have conquered the world."

Phil. 1:13, 14 "My prison bonds have become public knowledge in association with Christ among all the praetorian guard and all the rest; and most of the brothers in the Lord, feeling confidence by reason of my prison bonds, are showing all the more

courage to speak the word of God fearlessly."

Loyal Support and Faithful Obedience Encourage, Strengthen

Heb. 13:17 "Be obedient to those who are taking the lead among you and be submissive, for they are keeping watch over your souls as those who will render an account; that they may do this with joy and not with sighing, for this would be damaging to you."

2 Cor. 7:13, 15, 16 "That is why we have been comforted. However, in addition to our comfort we rejoiced still more abundantly due to the joy of Titus, because his spirit has been refreshed by all of you. Also, his tender affections are more abundant toward you, while he calls to mind the obedience of all of you, how you receive him with fear and trembling. I rejoice that in every way I may have good courage by reason of you."

1 Sam. 23:16 "Jonathan the son of Saul now rose up and went to David at Horesh, that he might strengthen his hand in regard to God."

Disrespect and complaining discourage

Num. 11:10-15 "Moses got to hear the people weeping . . . Then Moses said to Jehovah: '. . . I am not able, I by myself, to carry all this people, because they are too heavy for me. So if this is the way you are doing to me, please kill me off altogether.' "

Num. 13:31, 32; 14:2-6 "The men who went up with him said: 'We are not able to go up against the people, because they are stronger than we are.' And they kept on bringing forth to the sons of Israel a bad report of the land that they had spied out." "All the sons of Israel began to murmur against Moses and Aaron, and all the assembly began to say against them: 'If only we had died in the land of Egypt, or if only we had died in this wilderness!' . . . At this Moses and Aaron fell upon their faces before all the congregation . . . And Joshua the son of Nun and Caleb the son of Jephunneh, who were of those who spied out the land, ripped their garments apart."

Association with Fellow Believers Imparts Courage

Heb. 10:24, 25 "Let us consider one another to incite to love and fine works, not forsaking the gathering of ourselves together, as some have the custom, but encouraging one another, and all the more so as you behold the day drawing near."

Rom. 1:11, 12 "I am longing to see you, that I may impart some spiritual gift to you in order for you to be made firm; or, rather, that there may be an interchange of encouragement among you, by each one through the other's faith, both yours and mine."

Acts 28:15 "From there the brothers, when they heard the news about us, came to meet us as far as the Market Place of Appius and Three Taverns and, upon catching sight of them, Paul thanked God and took courage."

Maintaining Right Outlook Encourages One to Persevere Under Difficult Circumstances

1 Pet. 1:6, 7 "In this fact you are greatly rejoicing, though for a little while at present, if it must be, you have been grieved by various trials, in order that the tested quality of your faith, of much greater value than gold that perishes despite its being proved by fire, may be found a cause for praise and glory and honor at the revelation of Jesus Christ."

Acts 5:40, 41 "They summoned the apostles, flogged them, and ordered them to stop speaking upon the basis of Jesus' name, and let them go. These, therefore, went their way from before the Sanhedrin, rejoicing because they had been counted worthy to be dishonored in behalf of his name."

2 Cor. 4:16, 17 "Therefore we do not give up, but even if the man we are outside is wasting away, certainly the man we are inside is being renewed from day to day. For though the tribulation is momentary and light, it works out for us a glory that is of more and more surpassing weight and is everlasting."

1 Cor. 4:12, 13 "When being reviled, we bless; when being persecuted, we bear up; when being defamed, we entreat."

See also the main heading "Persecution," pages 374-378.

Bible Itself Is a Source of Encouragement

Heb. 13:22 "Now I exhort you, brothers, to bear with this word of encouragement, for I have, indeed, composed a letter to you in few words."

1 Pet. 5:12 "Through Silvanus, a faithful brother, as I account him, I have written you in few words, to give encouragement and an earnest witness that this is the true undeserved kindness of God; in which stand firm."

Bible assures us that Jehovah cares for his servants, will not forsake them

Ps. 55:22 "Throw your burden upon Jehovah himself, and he himself will sustain you. Never will he allow the righteous one to totter."

Ps. 94:14 "Jehovah will not forsake his people, nor will he leave his own inheritance."

Rom. 8:38, 39 "I am convinced that neither death nor life nor angels nor governments nor things now here nor things to come nor powers nor height nor depth nor any other creation will be able to separate us from God's love that is in Christ Jesus our Lord."

1 Cor. 10:13 "No temptation has taken you except what is common to men. But God is faithful, and he will not let you be tempted beyond what you can bear, but along with the temptation he will also make the way out in order for you to be able to endure it."

Informs us of his patience, mercy

Neh. 9:17 "You are a God of acts of forgiveness, gracious and merciful, slow to anger and abundant in loving-kindness."

Ps. 103:13, 14 "As a father shows mercy to his sons, Jehovah has shown mercy to those fearing him. For he himself well knows the formation of us, remembering that we are dust."

2 Pet. 3:9, 15 "Jehovah is not slow respecting his promise, as some people consider slowness, but he is patient with you because he does not desire any to be destroyed but desires all to attain to repentance. . . . consider the patience of our Lord as salvation."

Tells us that he will strengthen us, make up for our lack

Phil. 4:13 "For all things I have the strength by virtue of him who imparts power to me."

Isa. 12:2 "Look! God is my salvation. I shall trust and be in no dread; for Jah Jehovah is my strength and my might, and he came to be the salvation of me."

Ps. 46:1 "God is for us a refuge and strength, a help that is readily to be found during distresses."

Isa. 40:29-31 "He is giving to the tired one power; and to the one without dynamic energy he makes full might abound. Boys will both tire out and grow weary, and young men themselves will without fail stumble, but those who are hoping in Jehovah will regain power. They

will mount up with wings like eagles. They will run and not grow weary; they will walk and not tire out."

Holds out hope of sure reward, so stimulating to faithfulness

2 Chron. 15:7 "Be courageous and do not let your hands drop down, because there exists a reward for your activity."

1 Cor. 15:57, 58 "Thanks to God, for he gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ! Consequently, my beloved brothers, become steadfast, unmovable, always having plenty to do in the work of the Lord, knowing that your labor is not in vain in connection with the Lord."

Heb. 12:2 "We look intently at the Chief Agent and Perfecter of our faith, Jesus. For the joy that was set before him he endured a torture stake, despising shame, and has sat down at the right hand of the throne of God."

Heb. 6:17-19 "In this manner God, when he purposed to demonstrate more abundantly to the heirs of the promise the unchangeableness of his counsel, stepped in with an oath, in order that, through two unchangeable things in which it is impossible for God to lie, we who have fled to the refuge may have strong encouragement to lay hold on the hope set before us. This hope we have as an anchor for the soul, both sure and firm."

Focusing One's Thoughts on Jehovah, as in Prayer, Strengthens One

1 Sam. 30:6 "And it became very distressing to David . . . So David took to strengthening himself by Jehovah his God."

Ps. 56:4 "In God I have put my trust; I shall not be afraid. What can flesh do to me?"

Good Reports, Experiences, Shared with Others Encourage

Acts 15:3 "Accordingly, after being conducted part way by the congregation, these men continued on their way through both Phoenicia and Samaria, relating in detail the conversion of people of the nations, and they were causing great joy to all the brothers."

Endurance

Endurance Necessary for All Christians

2 Pet. 1:5, 6 "Supply to your faith . . . endurance."

1 Tim. 6:11 "However, you, O man of God, flee from these things. But pursue righteousness, godly devotion, faith, love, endurance."

Faithfulness in Jehovah's service until one's death

Rev. 2:10 "Do not be afraid of the things you are about to suffer. Look! The Devil will keep on throwing some of you into prison that you may be fully put to the test, and that you may have tribulation ten days. Prove yourself faithful even to death, and I will give you the crown of life."

2 Tim. 4:6, 7 "I am already being poured out like a drink offering, and the due time for my releasing is imminent. I have fought the fine fight, I have run the course to the finish, I have observed the faith."

Matt. 10:28 "Do not become fearful of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul; but rather be in fear of him that can destroy both soul and body in Gehenna."

Preaching even when faced with indifference or opposition

Ezek. 2:7 "You must speak my words to them, regardless of whether they hear or they refrain, for they are a case of rebellion."

2 Tim. 4:2 "Preach the word, be at it urgently in favorable season, in troublesome season."

2 Cor. 6:4, 5 "In every way we recommend ourselves as God's ministers, by the endurance of much, by tribulations, by cases of need, by difficulties, by beatings, by prisons, by disorders, by labors, by sleepless nights, by times without food."

See also **2 Tim. 3:10-12.**

In the face of opposition from family members

Matt. 10:22, 36-38 "You will be objects of hatred by all people on account of my name . . . Indeed, a man's enemies will be persons of his own household. He that has greater affection for father or mother than for me is not worthy of me; and he that has greater affection for son or daughter than for me is not worthy of me. And whoever does not accept his torture stake and follow after me is not worthy of me."

Job 2:9; Jas. 5:11 "Finally his wife said to him: 'Are you yet holding fast your integrity? Curse God and die!'" "Look! We pronounce happy those who have endured. You have heard of the endurance of Job and have seen the outcome Jehovah gave, that Jehovah is very tender in affection and merciful."

Not quitting when disciplined

Heb. 12:5-7 "'My son, do not belittle the discipline from Jehovah, neither give out when you are corrected by him; for whom Jehovah loves he disciplines; in fact, he scourges every one whom he receives as a son.' It is for discipline you are enduring. God is dealing with you as with sons. For what son is he that a father does not discipline?"

When others prove unfaithful

John 6:66-68 "Owing to this many of his disciples went off to the things behind and would no longer walk with him. Therefore Jesus said to the twelve: 'You do not want to go also, do you?' Simon Peter answered him: 'Lord, whom shall we go away to? You have sayings of everlasting life.'"

Num. 13:31, 32; 14:6-8 "But the men who went up with him said: 'We are not able to go up against the people, because they are stronger than we are.' And they kept on bringing forth to the sons of Israel a bad report of the land that they had spied out." "And Joshua . . . and Caleb . . . proceeded to say this to all the assembly of the sons of Israel: 'The land that we passed through to spy it out is a very, very good land. If Jehovah has found delight in us, then he will certainly bring us into this land and give it to us.'"

Aids to Endurance

Studying and meditating on God's Word, thus equipping oneself with knowledge

Rom. 15:4 "All the things that were written aforetime were written for our instruction, that through our endurance and through the comfort from the Scriptures we might have hope."

2 Pet. 3:17 "You, therefore, beloved ones, having this advance knowledge, be on your guard that you may not be led away with them by the error of the lawdefying people and fall from your own steadfastness."

Eccl. 7:12 "Wisdom is for a protection the same as money is for a protection; but the advan-

tage of knowledge is that wisdom itself preserves alive its owners."

Regular association with fellow believers to consider God's Word

Heb. 10:23-25 "Let us hold fast the public declaration of our hope without wavering, for he is faithful that promised. And let us consider one another to incite to love and fine works, not forsaking the gathering of ourselves together, as some have the custom, but encouraging one another, and all the more so as you behold the day drawing near."

Rom. 1:11, 12 "I am longing to see you, that I may impart some spiritual gift to you in order for you to be made firm; or, rather, that there may be an interchange of encouragement among you, by each one through the other's faith, both yours and mine."

Reliance on Jehovah, approaching him in prayer

Rom. 12:12 "Endure under tribulation. Persevere in prayer."

1 Pet. 4:7 "But the end of all things has drawn close. Be sound in mind, therefore, and be vigilant with a view to prayers."

Col. 1:10, 11 "Go on bearing fruit in every good work and increasing in the accurate knowledge of God, being made powerful with all power to the extent of his glorious might so as to endure fully and be long-suffering with joy."

Keeping mind focused on reward for faithfulness promised by God

Rom. 8:25 "If we hope for what we do not see, we keep on waiting for it with endurance."

1 Thess. 1:3 "We bear incessantly in mind your faithful work and your loving labor and your endurance due to your hope in our Lord Jesus Christ before our God and Father."

Heb. 12:1, 2 "Let us run with endurance the race that is set before us, as we look intently at the Chief Agent and Perfecter of our faith, Jesus. For the joy that was set before him he endured a torture stake, despising shame, and has sat down at the right hand of the throne of God."

Love for Jehovah, one's Christian brothers, righteousness

1 John 4:18, 19 "There is no fear in love, but perfect love throws fear outside, because fear exercises a restraint. . . . As for us, we love, because he first loved us."

1 Thess. 3:12, 13 "May the Lord cause you to increase, yes, make you abound, in love to one another and to all, even as we also do to you; to the end that he may make your hearts firm."

1 Cor. 13:4-7 "Love . . . does not rejoice over unrighteousness, but rejoices with the truth. It bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things."

Strong faith

1 John 5:4 "This is the conquest that has conquered the world, our faith."

Eph. 6:16 "Above all things, take up the large shield of faith, with which you will be able to quench all the wicked one's burning missiles."

Right attitude toward suffering

Jas. 1:2, 3 "Consider it all joy, my brothers, when you meet with various trials, knowing as you do that this tested quality of your faith works out endurance."

1 Pet. 3:14 "Even if you should suffer for the sake of righteousness, you are happy."

1 Pet. 4:16 "If he suffers as a Christian, let him not feel shame, but let him keep on glorifying God in this name."

Acts 5:40, 41 "They summoned the apostles, flogged them, and ordered them to stop speaking upon the basis of Jesus' name, and let them go. These, therefore, went their way from before the Sanhedrin, rejoicing because they had been counted worthy to be dishonored in behalf of his name."

Results of Faithful Endurance

Heb. 10:36 "You have need of endurance, in order that, after you have done the will of God, you may receive the fulfillment of the promise."

1 Cor. 15:58 "Consequently, my beloved brothers, become steadfast, . . . knowing that your labor is not in vain in connection with the Lord."

Brings honor to God

1 Pet. 1:7 "In order that the tested quality of your faith, of much greater value than gold that perishes despite its being proved by fire, may be found a cause for praise and glory and honor at the revelation of Jesus Christ."

See also John 15:6-8.

Encourages others to faithfulness

Phil. 1:13, 14 "My prison bonds have become public knowledge in association with Christ among all the praetorian guard and all the rest; and most of the brothers in the Lord, feeling confidence by reason of my prison bonds, are showing all the more courage to speak the word of God fearlessly."

Fruitful in Christian ministry

Luke 8:15 "As for that on the fine soil, these are the ones that, after hearing the word with a fine and good heart, retain it and bear fruit with endurance."

2 Pet. 1:5-8 "Supply to your faith virtue, . . . to your self-control endurance . . . For if these things exist in you and overflow, they will prevent you from being either inactive or unfruitful regarding the accurate knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ."

Divine approval; reward of everlasting life

Rom. 5:3-5 "Let us exult while in tribulations, since we know that tribulation produces endurance; endurance, in turn, an approved condition; the approved condition, in turn, hope, and the hope does not lead to disappointment."

Matt. 24:13 "He that has endured to the end is the one that will be saved."

Rom. 2:6, 7 "He will render to each one according to his works: everlasting life to those who are seeking glory and honor and incorruptibleness by endurance in work that is good."

Jas. 1:12 "Happy is the man that keeps on enduring trial, because on becoming approved he will receive the crown of life, which Jehovah promised to those who continue loving him."

Luke 21:19 "By endurance on your part you will acquire your souls."

Evolution

Denies Central Truth to Which All the Universe Testifies —the Existence of God

Ps. 19:1 "The heavens are declaring the glory of God; and of the work of his hands the expanse is telling."

Rom. 1:20 "His invisible qualities are clearly seen from the world's creation onward, because they are perceived by the things made, even his eternal power and Godship, so that they are inexcusable."

Ps. 10:4 "The wicked one according to his superciliousness makes no search; all his ideas are: 'There is no God.'"

Isa. 29:16 "The perversity of you men! Should the potter himself be accounted just like the clay? For should the thing made say respecting its maker: 'He did not make me'?"

Life Originates with Jehovah, Existed in Him Before Inanimate Matter

Ps. 36:9 "With you is the source of life."

Ps. 90:2 "Before the mountains themselves were born, or you proceeded to bring forth as with labor pains the earth and the productive land, even from time indefinite to time indefinite you are God."

1 Tim. 1:17 "Now to the King of eternity, incorruptible, invisible, the only God, be honor and glory forever and ever."

Jer. 10:10 "Jehovah is in truth God. He is the living God and the King to time indefinite."

God's First Creation Possessed Life, Not Evolved from Lifeless Matter

Rev. 3:14 "These are the things that the Amen says, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation by God."

Prov. 8:22, 23, 30 "Jehovah himself produced me as the beginning of his way, the earliest of his achievements of long ago. From time indefinite I was installed, from the start, from times earlier than the earth. . . . I came to be beside him as a master worker."

Inanimate Matter and Living Things All Produced by Jehovah God Through His Son

Gen. 1:1 "In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth."

Ps. 100:3 "Know that Jehovah is God. It is he that has made us, and not we ourselves."

Rev. 4:11 "You are worthy, Jehovah, even our God, to receive the glory and the honor and the power, because you created all things, and because of your will they existed and were created."

Jer. 27:4, 5 "This is what Jehovah of armies, the God of Israel, has said; this is what you should say to your masters, 'I myself have made the earth, mankind and the beasts that are upon the surface of the earth by my great power and by my stretched-out arm.'"

John 1:1-3, 10 "In the beginning the Word was, and the Word was with God, and the Word was a god. This one was in the beginning with God. All things came into existence through him, and apart from him not even one thing came into existence. . . . He was in the world, and the world came into existence through him."

Col. 1:13, 15, 16 "The Son . . . is the image of the invisible God, the first-born of all creation; because by means of him all other things were created in the heavens and upon the earth, the things visible and the things invisible, no matter whether they are thrones or lordships or governments or authorities. All other things have been created through him and for him."

No Evolution from One Created Kind to Another; Each Produced 'After Its Kind,' in Its Likeness

Gen. 1:11, 12, 21, 24, 25 "God went on to say: 'Let the earth cause grass to shoot forth, vegetation bearing seed, fruit trees yielding fruit according to their kinds, the seed of which is in it, upon the earth.' And it came to be so. And the earth began to put forth grass, vegetation bearing seed according to its kind and trees yielding fruit, the seed of which is in it according to its kind. Then God saw that it was good. And God proceeded to create the great sea monsters and every living soul that moves about, which the waters swarmed forth according to their kinds, and every winged flying creature according to its kind. And God got to see that it was good. And God went on to say: 'Let the earth put forth living souls according to their kinds, domestic animal and moving animal and wild beast of the earth according to its kind.' And it came to be so. And God proceeded to make the wild beast of the earth according to its kind and the domestic animal according to its kind and every moving animal of the ground according to its kind. And God got to see that it was good."

Gen. 5:3 "Adam lived on for a hundred and thirty years. Then he became father to a son in his likeness, in his image."

1 Cor. 15:39 "Not all flesh is the same flesh, but there is one of mankind, and there is another flesh of cattle, and another flesh of birds, and another of fish."

Only One Human Pair Created

Gen. 1:27 "God proceeded to create the man in his image, in God's image he created him; male and female he created them."

Gen. 3:20 "Adam called his wife's name Eve, because she had to become the mother of everyone living."

Acts 17:26 "He made out of one man every nation of men, to dwell upon the entire surface of the earth, and he decreed the appointed seasons and the set limits of the dwelling of men."

Each Organ of Body Designed, Created Directly in First Man

Job 10:8, 9 "Your own hands have shaped me so that they made me in entirety round about . . . Remember, please, that out of clay you have made me."

Ps. 139:14-16 "I shall laud you because in a fear-inspiring way I am wonderfully made. . . . My bones were not hidden from you . . . Your eyes saw even the embryo of me, and in your book all its parts were down in writing."

Prov. 20:12 "The hearing ear and the seeing eye—Jehovah himself has made even both of them."

Varieties Largely the Result of Qualities Within Genetic Makeup of Created Kind

"What is the source of the differences between individuals? This is a very general biological problem, for just as there are no two absolutely identical persons, so there are probably no two identical individuals of any biological species. Part of this variation we recognized as environmental, and part we know is inherited. . . . Every person is born with a certain genetic endowment inherited by him in the egg and the sperm from which he arose. This endowment enables the individual to survive under a certain range of environmental conditions. What, then, determines the path which the development of a person will take? The genetic endowment, the individual's genotype, interacts with the particular environments—intrauterine, individual, family, group, class, regional, and national—in which the person lives his particular life. These interactions determine the characteristics by which we know the person."—*Radiation, Genes and Man* by Prof. Bruce Wallace and Prof. Th. Dobzhansky, Henry Holt and Co. (New York; 1959), pp. 15, 17.

"As has been stressed earlier, individual hereditary differences are a matter of gene differences. . . . As variability within almost every human group is very great, the amateur's comparisons are, except in a few conspicuous characters, meaningless. For instance, he may venture the generalization that 'Irish have red hair and Fijians have black hair,' whereas actual counts will show

many black-haired Irish and red-haired Fijians."—*Heredity and Human Life* by Prof. Hampton L. Carson, Columbia University Press (New York; 1963), p. 158.

Each Living Thing Created to Fit the Element in Which It Lives, Not Evolved to Fit

Gen. 1:20, 24 "God went on to say: 'Let the waters swarm forth a swarm of living souls and let flying creatures fly over the earth upon the face of the expanse of the heavens.' And God went on to say: 'Let the earth put forth living souls according to their kinds, domestic animal and moving animal and wild beast of the earth according to its kind.' And it came to be so."

See also the main heading "Creation," pages 132-134.

Provisions for Sustaining All, the Work of Supreme Creator

Ps. 145:15 "To you the eyes of all look hopefully, and you are giving them their food in its season."

Gen. 2:9 "Thus Jehovah God made to grow out of the ground every tree desirable to one's sight and good for food."

Job 38:39, 41 "Can you hunt prey for a lion itself and can you satisfy the lively appetite of young lions . . .? Who prepares for the raven its food?"

Matt. 6:26 "Observe intently the birds of heaven, because they do not sow seed or reap or gather into storehouses; still your heavenly Father feeds them."

Man Degraded Rather than Evolving Higher

Gen. 5:5; Ps. 90:10 "All the days of Adam that he lived amounted to nine hundred and thirty years and he died." "In themselves the days of our years are seventy years; and if because of special mightiness they are eighty years, yet their insistence is on trouble and hurtful things."

Eccl. 7:29 "See! This only I have found, that the true God made mankind upright, but they themselves have sought out many plans."

Deut. 32:4, 5 "The Rock, perfect is his activity . . . They have acted ruinously on their own part; they are not his children, the defect is their own. A generation crooked and twisted!"

Man's forsaking Jehovah led to mental and physical degradation

Jer. 8:9 "Look! They have rejected the very word of Jehovah, and what wisdom do they have?"

Jas. 1:14, 15 "Each one is tried by being drawn out and enticed by his own desire. Then the desire, when it has become fertile, gives birth to sin; in turn, sin, when it has been accomplished, brings forth death."

Offspring affected by sinfulness of Adam their father

Rom. 5:12 "Through one man sin entered into the world and death through sin, and thus death spread to all men because they had all sinned."

Job 14:4 "Who can produce someone clean out of someone unclean? There is not one."

See also Ps. 51:5; Lam. 5:7.

Archaeological Evidence

"One of the most famous fakes exposed by scientific proof was Piltdown man, found in Sussex, England, between 1908 and 1915 and thought by some to be 500,000 years old. After much controversy, it turned out to be not a primitive man at all but a composite of a skull of modern man and the jawbone of an ape. The hoax was exposed by microchemical tests, X-ray spectroscopy and crystallographic analysis . . . The jawbone had been 'doctored' with bichromate of potash and iron to make it look mineralized." —*Science News Letter* (Vol. 79, No. 8), February 25, 1961, p. 119.

"For decades, people accepted an evolutionary sequence leading from Heidelberg and Peking man, via the Neanderthalians, to Homo sapiens . . . New excavations, far-reaching discoveries and, above all, more painstaking scientific research have combined to damage irreparably the old illusion of an evolutionary progression from ape-man to creative intellect. . . . early men . . . were neither brute beasts nor semi-apes nor cretins. Hence the ineffable stupidity of all attempts to reconstruct Neanderthal or even Peking man. Exaggeratedly hirsute plaster figures of bestial mien glower savagely at us in museums all over the world, their features usually chocolate-brown in color, their hair wild and unkempt, their jaws prognathous and their foreheads receding —and this despite the fact that we have absolutely no idea what color Paleolithic man's skin was or how his hair grew and virtually no idea of his physiognomy. The American authority T. D. Stewart rightly pointed out in 1948 the impossibility of reconstructing hair, eyes, nose, lips or facial expression. 'The probabilities are that the expression of early man was not less benign than our own,' he wrote. When a museum displays models of Peking man, Neanderthal man and modern Homo sapiens side by side, it encourages a conception of physical and intellectual development which is not in accord with the views of contemporary science. . . . In point of fact, Homo sapiens has made his uninterrupted way down the millennia from the very beginning. There have been many varieties of the sapiens type, but the varieties and the forms of life which were distinct from the sapiens type from the first never merged with it and sometimes wandered off down the blind alleys which led to extinction." —*Man, God and Magic* (New York, 1961), by Ivar Lissner, pp. 303-305.

"No serious student believes that man is derived from any of the existing apes or monkeys, or from any of their immediate phylogenetic forbears. . . . On the positive side we have the fact that the number of fragments of fossil hominoid bones that have been described, although relatively small, has increased fairly rapidly in the past thirty years. Against this we have to reckon that the evaluation of most of these remains has been embroiled in much controversy. Here the fundamental difficulty has been that in the great majority of cases the descriptions of the specimens that have been provided by their discoverers have been so turned as to indicate that the fossils in question have some special place or significance in the line of direct human descent, as opposed to that of the family of apes. It is so unlikely that they could all enjoy this distinction that, in the circumstances, an outside observer might well imagine that an enterprising anatomist would find little difficulty in substantiating a claim that an artificially fossilized skeletal fragment of any one of the living great apes had a greater relevance to the story of Man's evolution than to that of the skeleton of which it was a part. . . . In the case of primate evolution the inferences are sometimes very insecurely based because of inadequacies of the evidence—as must have been the case, for example, when a fossil tooth now recognized as that of a peccary was assigned to a Primate genus of its own called Hesperopithecus, which was supposed to resemble the human type more than any known ape."—*Evolution as a Process*, edited by Julian Huxley, George Allen & Unwin Ltd. (Lon-

don; 1958), article by S. Zuckerman, pp. 300-302.

Early Fossil Record

"The geological record, viewed as a whole, is extremely imperfect; but if we confine our attention to any one formation, it becomes much more difficult to understand why we do not therein find closely graduated varieties between the allied species . . . There is another and allied difficulty, which is much more serious. I allude to the manner in which species belonging to several of the main divisions of the animal kingdom suddenly appear in the lowest known fossiliferous rocks. . . . To the question why we do not find rich fossiliferous deposits belonging to these assumed earliest periods prior to the Cambrian system, I can give no satisfactory answer."—*The Origin of Species* by Charles Darwin, in The Harvard Classics (New York, 1909), edited by Charles W. Eliot, Vol. 11, pp. 346, 359, 360.

"Undoubtedly the most intriguing question in the whole evolutionary story is, What was the ultimate origin of man? . . . Unfortunately, any answers which can at present be given to these questions are based on indirect evidence and thus are largely conjectural, for the paleontological record of the Hominidae is still incomplete."—*The Fossil Evidence for Human Evolution*, second edition (Chicago; 1964), by W. E. LeGros Clark, p. 174.

"The chief puzzle in the record of life's history on earth: the sudden appearance . . . of most basic divisions of the plant and animal kingdoms. There is virtually no record of how these divisions came about. Thus the entire first part of evolutionary history is missing."—The New York *Times*, October 25, 1964, sec. 4, p. 8E.

"Each group, order, or family seems to be born suddenly and we hardly ever find the forms which link them to the preceding strain. When we discover them they are already completely differentiated. Not only do we find practically no transitional forms, but in general it is impossible to authentically connect a new group with an ancient one."—*Human Destiny* (New York; 1947), by Lecomte du Noüy, p. 79.

Dating Methods

"Any increase in radiation levels . . . most certainly would ruin some of our carefully developed methods of dating things from the past. . . . If the level of carbon-14 was less in the past, due to a greater magnetic shielding from cosmic rays, then our estimate of the time that has elapsed since the life of the organism will be too long."—*Science Digest*, December 1960, p. 19.

"The carbon method, with a limit of 50,000 years, has also been tested against objects of known age. However, sometimes samples from the same site have been cut into several pieces and given to different scientific institutions for carbon dating. Each laboratory has come up with a different answer."—*Science News Letter*, August 5, 1961, p. 83.

"Through radioactive dating methods, the age of the earth has been approximated at 4,500 million years. A new and higher figure—6,500 million years—has been given by E. K. Gerling of the Laboratory of Pre-Cambrian Geology of the U. S. S. R. Academy of Sciences. Pre-Cambrian rocks that had been formed at great depths below the surface of the earth were dated by Prof. Gerling and his associates using the potassium-40 argon-40 method. . . . the Soviet's new age for the earth may be the result of some overlooked factor in the potassium-argon dating technique."—*Science Digest*, December 1962, p. 35.

"Present information depends for the most part on conjecture and interpretation."—*Science*, December 30, 1960, Vol. 132, No. 3444, p. 1914.

Mutations

"Mutant genes are usually so deleterious in their action that they tend to kill the organism. When they are not positively lethal they are usually retrograde in direction, and hinder rather than help the organism to fulfil the functions of its existence. Such results are to be expected of accidental changes occurring in any complicated organization. A race, therefore, will tend gradually to undergo degeneration in any respect in which selection (natural or artificial) does not persistently weed out the degenerative mutations that continue to occur."—*The Encyclopædia Britannica* (1946), Vol. 22, p. 989.

"Today the whole concept of evolution centers about these mutations. . . . Whether mutations of any kind are induced in laboratories or occur naturally, in the great majority of cases they are of harmful types, leading to defects and abnormalities. Only once in many times does a mutation produce a change which can be considered beneficial. Nonetheless, it is through the rare instances of favorable mutations, of innumerable kinds and in countless numbers, occurring successively over very extended periods, that the whole process of evolution may now be explained."—*The New You and Heredity* by Amram Scheinfeld, J. B. Lippincott Co. (New York; 1950), pp. 473, 476.

"Mutational changes in any one gene are (with infrequent exceptions which we need not consider here) rare events. This is a different way of saying that, ordinarily, the genes reproduce themselves accurately."—*Radiation, Genes, and Man* by Prof. Bruce Wallace and Prof. Th. Dobzhansky, Henry Holt and Co. (New York; 1959), p. 35.

"For some time much emphasis has been placed upon gene-mutations in the belief that these must have played a most decisive role in the evolution of species. There is little doubt that gene-mutations, and probably also chromosomal and other heritable deviations occurring within the reproductive cell, have always worked to diversify genetic content within living populations. However, the relative rarity of these aberrant or mutant changes, together with their usually maladaptive and more often than not lethal effects upon development, does not incline us to assign to them an important role in the maintenance of group-adaptability. . . . It should be observed that the great importance currently attached to gene-mutations as a factor in evolutionary history is in part the result of erroneous expectations initially aroused by their discovery (it was for some time believed that single mutations could suddenly originate new species, overnight so to speak), and in part a reflection of the experimental value which increasingly attaches to the mutant forms, these often being so strikingly deviant that the geneticist can use them as tracers of lines of inheritance and descent, so that they reveal the movement of genotype in laboratory-bred or natural populations."—*Progress and Decline* by Prof. Hugh Miller, The Ward Ritchie Press (Los Angeles; 1963), p. 38.

Why Evolution Is Believed

"Many people believe in evolution because so much has been written on the subject. A look at one of the large volumes on evolution impresses one that surely the subject is proved; but

on reading it one finds data on genetic experiments, cytological studies, fossils from far and near, comparisons of skeletons, etc., showing slight changes in some species and great stability in others. The result is that before one is through one has gone off into a number of interesting side lanes and has lost sight of the usual definition of evolution. But the tendency on the part of the reader is to feel that a man who can cite so much that actually has been observed must be correct in his main thesis, and to forget the fact that the data do not all support his thesis." —*Modern Science and Christian Faith* (Wheaton, Illinois; 1950), by members of The American Scientific Affiliation, p. 65.

"I repeatedly observed the dissatisfaction in the minds of students over the existing 'proof' for evolution. The thing which repeatedly won them over to acceptance of the theory was sheer weight of authority on the part of scientists through a not always highly refined method of browbeating. All too frequently if the young aspirant was to keep face with the more seasoned scientists, he was obliged to accept the evolution theory."—*Evolution, Creation, and Science* (Washington, D.C.; 1947), by Prof. Frank L. Marsh, p. 10.

"The more one studies palaeontology, the more certain one becomes that evolution is based on faith alone."—*The Dogma of Evolution* (Princeton University Press; 1925), by Prof. Louis Trenchard More, p. 160.

"The average biologist, accepting as he does evolution as a creed, falls, when writing, to distinguish between established fact and theory, and in consequence, sets forth theories as if they were proved truths. In my view such procedure is inexcusable in a treatise dealing with any science."—*More Difficulties of the Evolution Theory* (London; 1938), by Douglas Dewar, preface.

Faith

Jehovah, the Faithful God

Deut. 7:9 "You well know that Jehovah your God is the true God, the faithful God, keeping covenant and loving-kindness in the case of those who love him and those who keep his commandments to a thousand generations."

1 Cor. 1:9 "God is faithful, by whom you were called into a sharing with his Son Jesus Christ our Lord."

1 John 1:9 "If we confess our sins, he is faithful and righteous so as to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness."

Faith a Fruitage of God's Spirit

Gal. 5:22 "On the other hand, the fruitage of the spirit is . . . faith."

Faith Acceptable to God Now Involves Acceptance of Jesus Christ

Rom. 3:21, 22 "God's righteousness has been made manifest, . . . yes, God's righteousness through the faith in Jesus Christ, for all those having faith."

1 Tim. 1:14 "The undeserved kindness of our Lord abounded exceedingly along with faith and love that is in connection with Christ Jesus."

Eph. 3:11, 12 "According to the eternal purpose that he formed in connection with the Christ, Jesus our Lord, by means of whom we have this freeness of speech and an approach with confidence through our faith in him."

John 14:6 "Jesus said to him: 'I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me.'"

Acts 4:12 "Furthermore, there is no salvation in anyone else, for there is not another name under heaven that has been given among men by which we must get saved."

True Faith Has a Sound Foundation

Heb. 11:1 "Faith is the assured expectation of things hoped for, the evident demonstration of realities though not beheld."

Rom. 10:17 "So faith follows the thing heard. In turn the thing heard is through the word about Christ."

Creative works testify to existence of Almighty Creator

Rom. 1:20 "His invisible qualities are clearly seen from the world's creation onward, because they are perceived by the things made, even his eternal power and Godship, so that they are inexcusable."

Ps. 19:1 "The heavens are declaring the glory of God; and of the work of his hands the expanse is telling."

Ps. 139:14 "I shall laud you because in a fear-inspiring way I am wonderfully made."

Occurrences associated with Jesus' earthly life and ministry show him to be God's Son

Luke 1:35 "The angel said to her: 'Holy spirit will come upon you, and power of the Most High will overshadow you. For that reason also what is born will be called holy, God's Son.'"

Luke 2:7-13 "She gave birth to her son, the first-born, and she bound him with cloth bands and laid him in a manger . . . There were also in that same country shepherds living out of doors and keeping watches in the night over their flocks. And suddenly Jehovah's angel stood by them, and Jehovah's glory gleamed around them, and they became very fearful. But the angel said to them: 'Have no fear, for, look! I am declaring to you good news of a great joy that all the people will have, because there was born to you today a Savior, who is Christ the Lord, in David's city.' . . . And suddenly there came to be with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host, praising God."

Matt. 3:16, 17 "After being baptized Jesus immediately came up from the water; and, look! the heavens were opened up, and he saw descending like a dove God's spirit coming upon him. Look! Also, there was a voice from the heavens that said: 'This is my Son, the beloved, whom I have approved.'" (See also John 1:33, 34.)

Luke 8:28, 29 "At the sight of Jesus he cried aloud and fell down before him, and with a loud voice he said: 'What have I to do with you, Jesus Son of the Most High God? I beg you, do not torment me.' (For he had been ordering the unclean spirit to come out of the man.)"

Matt. 14:25-33 "[Jesus] came to them, walking over the sea. When they caught sight of him walking on the sea, the disciples were troubled, saying: 'It is an apparition!' And they cried out in their fear. At once Jesus spoke to them with the words: 'Take courage, it is I; have no fear.' In reply Peter said to him: 'Lord, if it is you, command me to come to you over the waters.' He said: 'Come!' Thereupon Peter, getting down off the boat, walked over the waters and went toward Jesus. But looking at the

windstorm, he got afraid and, after starting to sink, he cried out: 'Lord, save me!' . . . And after they got up into the boat, the windstorm abated. Then those in the boat did obeisance to him, saying: 'You are really God's Son.'"

Matt. 17:2, 5 "He was transfigured before them, and his face shone as the sun, and his outer garments became brilliant as the light. While he was yet speaking, look! a bright cloud overshadowed them, and, look! a voice out of the cloud, saying: 'This is my Son, the beloved, whom I have approved; listen to him.'"

Matt. 27:54 "The army officer and those with him watching over Jesus, when they saw the earthquake and the things happening, grew very much afraid, saying: 'Certainly this was God's Son.'"

Jehovah's record as provider for his creatures instills faith that he will provide for material necessities of his servants

Matt. 6:26, 30, 33 "Observe intently the birds of heaven, because they do not sow seed or reap or gather into storehouses; still your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not worth more than they are? If, now, God thus clothes the vegetation of the field, which is here today and tomorrow is thrown into the oven, will he not much rather clothe you, you with little faith? Keep on, then, seeking first the kingdom and his righteousness, and all these other things will be added to you."

Neh. 9:20 "Your good spirit you gave to make them prudent, and your manna you did not hold back from their mouth, and water you gave them for their thirst."

Ps. 37:25 "A young man I used to be, I have also grown old, and yet I have not seen anyone righteous left entirely, nor his offspring looking for bread."

Jehovah's past deeds provide basis for confidence that he will destroy the wicked

2 Pet. 2:4-6 "God did not hold back from punishing the angels that sinned, but, by throwing them into Tartarus, delivered them to pits of dense darkness to be reserved for judgment; and he did not hold back from punishing an ancient world, but kept Noah, a preacher of righteousness, safe with seven others when he brought a deluge upon a world of ungodly people; and by reducing the cities Sodom and Gomorrah to ashes he condemned them, setting a pattern for ungodly persons of things to come."

Gen. 6:5, 7; 7:23 "Consequently Jehovah saw that the badness of man was abundant in the earth and every inclination of the thoughts of his heart was only bad all the time. So Jehovah said: 'I am going to wipe men whom I have created off the surface of the ground.'" "Thus he wiped out every existing thing that was on the surface of the ground, from man to beast, . . . and only Noah and those who were with him in the ark kept on surviving."

Gen. 18:20; 19:24, 25 "The cry of complaint about Sodom and Gomorrah, yes, it is loud, and their sin, yes, it is very heavy." "Then Jehovah made it rain sulphur and fire from Jehovah, from the heavens, upon Sodom and upon Gomorrah. So he went ahead overthrowing these cities, even the entire District and all the inhabitants of the cities and the plants of the ground."

God's record as Giver and Restorer of life assures validity of resurrection hope

Gen. 2:7 "Jehovah God proceeded to form the man out of dust from the ground and to blow into his nostrils the breath of life, and the man came to be a living soul."

1 Cor. 15:3-8, 20, 21 "Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures; and . . . he appeared to Cephas, then to the twelve. After that he appeared to upward of five hundred brothers at one time, the most of whom remain to the present . . . After that he appeared to James, then to all the apostles; but last of all he appeared also to me . . . Christ has been raised up from the dead, the first fruits of those who have fallen asleep in death. For since death is through a man, resurrection of the dead is also through a man."

1 Ki. 17:21, 22 "[Elijah] proceeded to stretch himself upon the child three times and call to Jehovah and say: 'O Jehovah my God, please, cause the soul of this child to come back within him.' Finally Jehovah listened to Elijah's voice, so that the soul of the child came back within him and he came to life."

Heb. 11:17-19 "By faith Abraham, when he was tested, as good as offered up Isaac, and the man that had gladly received the promises attempted to offer up his only-begotten son . . . But he reckoned that God was able to raise him up even from the dead; and from there he did receive him also in an illustrative way."

Jehovah's faithfulness in fulfilling his Word gives sound reason for confidence that all his promises will come to pass

Isa. 55:11 "So my word that goes forth from my mouth will prove to be. It will not return to me without results, but it will certainly do that in which I have delighted, and it will have certain success in that for which I have sent it."

Josh. 23:14 "You well know with all your hearts and with all your souls that not one word out of all the good words that Jehovah your God has spoken to you has failed. They have all come true for you. Not one word of them has failed."

1 Ki. 8:56 "Blessed be Jehovah, who has given a resting place to his people Israel according to all that he has promised."

Isa. 44:26 "The One making the word of his servant come true, and the One that carries out completely the counsel of his own messengers."

Dan. 9:12 "He proceeded to carry out his words that he had spoken against us and against our judges who judged us, by bringing upon us great calamity."

Righteous Standing with God Possible Through Faith

Gal. 2:16 "Knowing as we do that a man is declared righteous . . . through faith toward Christ Jesus, even we have put our faith in Christ Jesus."

Rom. 5:1 "Therefore, now that we have been declared righteous as a result of faith, let us enjoy peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ."

Gal. 3:24 "Consequently the Law has become our tutor leading to Christ, that we might be declared righteous due to faith."

Jas. 2:23 "The scripture was fulfilled which says: 'Abraham put faith in Jehovah, and it was counted to him as righteousness.'" (See also Rom. 3:20-22.)

Heb. 11:7 "By faith Noah, after being given divine warning of things not yet beheld, showed godly fear and constructed an ark for the saving of his household; and through this faith he condemned the world, and he became an heir of the righteousness that is according to faith."

Rom. 1:17 "In it God's righteousness is being revealed by reason of faith and toward faith, just as it is written: 'But the righteous one—by means of faith he will live.'"

See also the main heading "Justification, or Being Declared Righteous," pages 295-298.

Works of Mosaic law not required

Rom. 3:20 "By works of law no flesh will be declared righteous before him, for by law is the accurate knowledge of sin."

Gal. 2:16 "Knowing as we do that a man is declared righteous, not due to works of law, but only through faith toward Christ Jesus, even we have put our faith in Christ Jesus, that we may be declared righteous due to faith *toward Christ, and not due to* works of law, because due to works of law no flesh will be declared righteous."

Gal. 3:11 "Moreover, that by law no one is declared righteous with God is evident, because 'the righteous one will live by reason of faith.'"

Faith must be accompanied by works consistent with the faith

Jas. 2:21, 22, 24, 26 "Was not Abraham our father declared righteous by works after he had offered up Isaac his son upon the altar? You behold that his faith worked along with his works and by his works his faith was *perfected. You see* that a man is to be declared righteous by works, and not by faith alone. Indeed, as the body without breath is dead, so also faith without works is dead."

Jas. 2:17 "Thus, too, faith, if it does not have works, is dead in itself."

Titus 3:8 "Faithful is the saying, and concerning *these things* I desire you to make firm assertions constantly, in order that those who have believed God may keep their minds on maintaining fine works. These things are fine and beneficial to men."

Faith Governs a Christian's Life Course

2 Cor. 5:7 "We are walking by faith, not by sight."

Gal. 2:20 "The life that I now live in flesh I live by the faith that is toward the Son of God, who loved me and handed himself over for me."

2 Tim. 4:7 "I have fought the fine fight, I have run the course to the finish, I have observed the faith."

With Faith One Can Overcome Mountainlike Obstacles Hindering One in the Service of God

Matt. 21:21, 22 "Jesus said to them: 'Truly I say to you, If *only you have faith and do not* doubt, not only will you do what I did to the fig tree, but also if you say to this mountain, "Be lifted up and cast into the sea," it will happen. And all the things you ask in prayer, having faith, you will receive.'"

Mark 9:23 "Jesus said to him: 'That expression, "If you can"! *Why, all things can be to one* if he has faith.'"

One Should Grow in Faith

2 Thess. 1:3 "We are obligated to give God thanks always for you, brothers, as it is fitting, because your faith is growing exceedingly and the love of each and all of you is increasing one toward the other."

Necessary to Put Forth Earnest Effort to Keep One's Faith Firm

Jude 3 "Beloved ones, though I was making every effort to write you about the salvation we hold in common, I found it necessary to write you to exhort *you to put up a hard fight for* the faith that was once for all time delivered to the holy ones."

1 Cor. 16:13 "Stay awake, stand firm in the faith."

2 Cor. 13:5 "Keep testing whether you are in the faith, keep proving what you yourselves are."

1 Tim. 6:12 "Fight the fine fight of the faith, get a firm hold on the everlasting life for which you were called."

1 Pet. 5:9 "Take your stand against him, solid in the faith, knowing that the same things in the way of sufferings are being accomplished in the entire association of your brothers in the world."

Persons Lacking Faith Are Rejected by God

Rom. 11:20 "For their lack of faith they were broken off."

Heb. 10:38 "'My righteous one will live by reason of faith,' and, 'if he shrinks back, my soul has no pleasure in him.'"

Heb. 11:6 "Without faith it is impossible to please him well, for he that approaches God must believe that he is and that he becomes the rewarder of those earnestly seeking him."

Fear

Man Should Have Reverent Fear Toward Jehovah God

Eccl. 12:13 "The conclusion of the matter, everything having *been heard, is: Fear the* true God and keep his commandments. For this is the whole obligation of man."

Isa. 8:13 "Jehovah of armies —he is the One whom you should treat as holy, and he should be the object of your fear, and he should be the One causing you to tremble."

Deut. 6:24 "Jehovah commanded us to carry out all these regulations, to fear Jehovah our God for our good always, that we might keep alive as at this day."

Prov. 3:7 "Do not become wise in your own eyes. Fear Jehovah and turn away from bad."

2 Ki. 17:39 *"It is Jehovah your* God that you should fear, as he is the one that will deliver you out of the hand of all your enemies."

Prov. 14:26 "In the fear of Jehovah there is strong confidence, and for his sons there will come to be a refuge."

Matt. 10:28 "Do not become fearful of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul; but rather be in fear of him that can destroy both soul and body in Gehenna."

Fear of Jehovah is basic to wisdom, which is the ability to use knowledge in a right way

Prov. 9:10 "The fear of Jehovah is the start of wisdom, and the knowledge of the Most Holy One is what understanding is." (See also Ps. 111:10.)

Job 28:28 "He went on to say to man, 'Look! The fear of Jehovah—that is wisdom.'"

Prov. 15:33 "The fear of Jehovah is a discipline toward wisdom."

Fear of God inspires right conduct, causes one to turn away from sin

Prov. 8:13 "The fear of Jehovah means the hating of bad."

Prov. 3:7 "Do not become wise in your own eyes. Fear Jehovah and turn away from bad."

Prov. 16:6 *"In the fear of* Jehovah one turns away from bad."

2 Cor. 7:1 "Therefore, since we have these promises, beloved ones, let us cleanse ourselves of every defilement of flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in God's fear."

Ex. 20:20 "For the sake of putting you to the test the true God has come, and *in order that* the fear of him may continue before your faces that you may not sin."

See also Deut. 10:12.

God blesses those who fear him

Ps. 34:7 "The angel of Jehovah is camping all around those fearing him, and he rescues them."

Ps. 85:9 "Surely his salvation is near to those fearing him."

Ps. 103:13 "As a father shows mercy to his sons, Jehovah has shown mercy to those fearing him."

Ps. 115:13 "He will bless those fearing Jehovah, the small ones as well as the great ones."

Ps. 145:19 "The desire of those fearing him he will perform, and their cry for help he will hear, and he will save them."

Ps. 147:11 "Jehovah is finding pleasure in those fearing him."

Worshipers of Jehovah Have No Cause to Fear Other Gods

Ps. 96:4, 5 "Jehovah is great and very much to be praised. He is fear-inspiring above all other gods. For all the gods of the peoples are valueless gods."

2 Ki. 17:38, 39 "The covenant that I have concluded with you, you must not forget; and you must not fear other gods. But it is Jehovah your God that you should fear, as he is the one that will deliver you out of the hand of all your enemies."

Isa. 44:6-11 "This is what Jehovah has said, . . . 'I am the first and I am the last, and besides me there is no God. . . . Do not be in dread, you people, and do not become stupefied. Have I not from that time on caused you individually to hear and told it out? And you are my witnesses. Does there exist a God besides me? No, there is no Rock' . . . Who has formed a god or cast a mere carved image? Of no benefit at all has it been. Look! All his partners themselves will be ashamed . . . They will be in dread."

Superstitious Fear Not Pleasing to God

2 Ki. 17:33, 40 "It was of Jehovah that they became fearers, but it was of their own gods that they proved to be worshipers, according to the religion of the nations from among whom they had led them into exile. And they did not obey."

Isa. 29:13, 14 "This people have come near with their mouth, and they have glorified me merely with their lips, and they have removed their heart itself far away from me, and their fear toward me becomes men's commandment that is being taught, therefore . . . the wisdom of their wise men must perish."

Acts 17:22, 23 "Men of Athens, I behold that in all things you seem to be more given to the fear of the deities than others are. For instance, while passing along and carefully observing your objects of devotion I also found an altar on which had been inscribed 'To an Unknown God.'"

Freedom from Fear of Calamity Comes from Knowledge of Jehovah's Purposes, Confidence in His Protection

Luke 21:26, 28 "Men become faint out of fear and expectation of the things coming upon the inhabited earth . . . But as these things start to occur, raise yourselves erect and lift your heads up, because your deliverance is getting near."

Prov. 3:24-26 "Whenever you lie down you will feel no dread; and you will certainly lie down, and your sleep must be pleasurable. You will not need to be afraid of any sudden dreadful thing, nor of the storm upon the wicked ones, because it is coming. For Jehovah himself will prove to be, in effect, your confidence, and he will certainly keep your foot against capture."

Ps. 4:8 "In peace I will both lie down and sleep, for you yourself alone, O Jehovah, make me dwell in security."

Ps. 27:1, 3 "Jehovah is my light and my salvation. Of whom shall I be in fear? Jehovah is the stronghold of my life. Of whom shall I be in dread? Though against me an encampment should pitch tent, my heart will not fear. Though against me war should rise, even then I shall be trusting."

Ps. 118:6 "Jehovah is on my side; I shall not fear. What can earthling man do to me?" (See also Ps. 56:4.)

Ps. 46:1-3 "God is for us a refuge and strength, a help that is readily to be found during distresses. That is why we shall not fear, though the earth undergo change and though the mountains totter into the heart of the vast sea; though its waters be boisterous, foam over, though the mountains rock at its uproar."

Mic. 4:2-4 " 'Come, you people, and let us go up to the mountain of Jehovah and to the house of the God of Jacob; and he will instruct us about his ways, and we will walk in his paths.' For out of Zion law will go forth, and the word of Jehovah out of Jerusalem. . . . And they will have to beat their swords into plowshares and their spears into pruning shears. They will not lift up sword, nation against nation, neither will they learn war any more. And they will actually sit, each one under his vine and under his fig tree, and there will be no one making them tremble; for the very mouth of Jehovah of armies has spoken it."

Emancipation from fear of death promised

Heb. 2:14, 15 "Therefore, since the 'young children' are sharers of blood and flesh, he also similarly partook of the same things, that through his death he might bring to nothing the one having the means to cause death, that is, the Devil; and that he might emancipate all those who for fear of death were subject to slavery all through their lives."

Proper Fear, Deep Respect, to Be Shown Those in Responsible Positions

Rom. 13:7 "Render to all their dues, to him who calls for the tax, the tax; to him who calls for the tribute, the tribute; to him who calls for fear, such fear; to him who calls for honor, such honor."

1 Pet. 2:18 "Let house servants be in subjection to their owners with all due fear, not only to the good and reasonable, but also to those hard to please."

Eph. 6:5 "You slaves, be obedient to those who are your masters in a fleshly sense, with fear and trembling in the sincerity of your hearts, as to the Christ."

1 Pet. 3:1, 2 "You wives, be in subjection to your own husbands, in order that, if any are not obedient to the word, they may be won without a word through the conduct of their wives, because of having been eyewitnesses of your chaste conduct together with deep respect [fear]."

Cowardly Fear of Man Leads to Compromise

Prov. 29:25 "Trembling at men is what lays a snare, but he that is trusting in Jehovah will be protected."

Matt. 26:69, 70, 72 "Now Peter was sitting outside in the courtyard; and a servant girl came up to him, saying: 'You, too, were with Jesus the Galilean!' But he denied it before them all, saying: 'I do not know what you are talking about.' And again he denied it, with an oath: 'I do not know the man!'"

John 12:42 "All the same, many even of the rulers actually put faith in him, but because of the Pharisees they would not confess

him, in order not to be expelled from the synagogue."

Mark 11:31-33 "They began to reason among themselves, saying: 'If we say, From heaven, he will say, "Why is it, therefore, you did not believe him?" But dare we say, From men?'—They were in fear of the crowd, for these all held that John had really been a prophet. Well, in reply to Jesus they said: 'We do not know.'"

1 Sam. 15:24 "Then Saul said to Samuel: 'I have sinned; for I have overstepped the order of Jehovah and your words, because I feared the people and so obeyed their voice.'"

Real love expels such fear

1 John 4:18 "There is no fear in love, but perfect love throws fear outside."

Food

Jehovah God Is the Provider of Food

Ps. 136:1, 25 "Give thanks to Jehovah, O you people, for he is good: . . . The One giving food to all flesh."

Ps. 145:15, 16 "To you the eyes of all look hopefully, and you are giving them their food in its season. You are opening your hand and satisfying the desire of every living thing."

Gen. 9:3 "Every moving animal that is alive may serve as food for you. As in the case of green vegetation, I do give it all to you."

Should give thanks to God for it, ask his blessing on our use of it

Rom. 14:6 "He who eats, eats to Jehovah, for he gives thanks to God."

1 Tim. 4:4, 5 "Every creation of God is fine, and nothing is to be rejected if it is received with thanksgiving, for it is sanctified through God's word and prayer over it."

Matt. 15:35, 36 "After instructing the crowd to recline upon the ground, he took the seven loaves and the fishes and, after offering thanks, he broke them and began distributing to the disciples, the disciples in turn to the crowds."

Acts 27:34, 35 "'I encourage you to take some food,' . . . After [Paul] said this, he also took a loaf, gave thanks to God before them all and broke it and started eating."

Dietary Restrictions of Mosaic Law Not Binding on Christians

Col. 2:16, 13, 14 "Let no man judge you in eating and drinking." "[God] kindly forgave us all our trespasses and blotted out the handwritten document against us, which consisted of decrees and which was in opposition to us; and He has taken it out of the way by nailing it to the torture stake."

Acts 10:9-15 "Peter . . . became very hungry and wanted to eat. While they were preparing, he fell into a trance and beheld heaven opened and some sort of vessel descending like a great linen sheet being let down by its four extremities upon the earth; and in it there were all sorts of four-footed creatures and creeping things of the earth and birds of heaven. And a voice came to him: 'Rise, Peter, slaughter and eat!' But Peter said: 'Not at all, Lord, because never have I eaten anything defiled and unclean.' And the voice spoke again to him, the second time: 'You stop calling defiled the things God has cleansed.'"

Blood Is Not to Be Eaten

Acts 15:20, 28, 29 "Abstain from things polluted by idols and from fornication and from what is strangled and from blood. For the holy spirit and we ourselves have favored adding no further burden to you, except these necessary things, to keep yourselves free from things sacrificed to idols and from blood and from things strangled and from fornication. If you carefully keep yourselves from these things, you will prosper."

Gen. 9:4 "Only flesh with its soul—its blood—you must not eat."

Moderate Use of Wine and Other Intoxicating Beverages Not Condemned, but Drunkenness Is

1 Tim. 5:23 "Do not drink water any longer, but use a little wine for the sake of your stomach and your frequent cases of sickness."

Deut. 14:26 "You must also give the money for whatever your soul may crave in the way of cattle and sheep and goats and wine and intoxicating liquor and anything that your soul may ask of you; and you must eat there before Jehovah your God and rejoice, you and your household."

Eph. 5:18 "Do not be getting drunk with wine."

1 Cor. 6:9, 10 "Do not be misled. Neither fornicators . . . nor drunkards . . . will inherit God's kingdom."

1 Cor. 5:11 "Quit mixing in company with anyone called a brother that is a fornicator . . . or a drunkard . . . not even eating with such a man."

Gluttony classed with drunkenness

Prov. 23:20, 21 "Do not come to be among heavy drinkers of wine, among those who are gluttonous eaters of flesh. For a drunkard and a glutton will come to poverty."

Deut. 21:20, 21 "They must say to the older men of his city, 'This son of ours is stubborn and rebellious; he is not listening to our voice, being a glutton and a drunkard.' Then all the men of his city must stone him with stones, and he must die. So you must clear away what is bad from your midst."

Some May, for Personal Reasons, Abstain from Certain Kinds of Food

Rom. 14:2, 3 "One man has faith to eat everything, but the man who is weak eats vegetables. Let the one eating not look down on the one not eating, and let the one not eating not judge the one eating, for God has welcomed that one."

If Eating Certain Food or Drinking Intoxicating Beverages May Stumble a Brother, Better to Abstain

Rom. 14:15, 20, 21 "If because of food your brother is being grieved, you are no longer walking in accord with love. Do not by your food ruin that one for whom Christ died. Stop tearing down the work of God just for the sake of food. True, all things are clean, but it is injurious to the man who with an occasion for stumbling eats. It is well not to eat flesh or to drink wine or do anything over which your brother stumbles."

1 Cor. 10:28-31 "If anyone should say to you: 'This is something offered in sacrifice,' do not eat on account of the one that disclosed it and on account of conscience. 'Conscience,' I say, not your own, but that of the other person. . . . Therefore, whether you are eating or drinking or doing anything else, do all things for God's glory."

1 Cor. 8:12, 13 "When you people thus sin against your brothers and wound their conscience that is weak, you are sinning against Christ. Therefore, if food

makes my brother stumble, I will never again eat flesh at all, that I may not make my brother stumble."

What One Eats Does Not Make Him Any More Acceptable to God or Less So

1 Cor. 8:8 "Food will not commend us to God; if we do not eat, we do not fall short, and, if we eat, we have no credit to ourselves."

Rom. 14:14, 17 "I know and am persuaded in the Lord Jesus that nothing is defiled in itself; only where a man considers something to be defiled, to him it is defiled. For the kingdom of God does not mean eating and drinking, but means righteousness and peace and joy with holy spirit."

Matt. 15:11 "Not what enters into his mouth defiles a man; but it is what proceeds out of his mouth that defiles a man."

Material Food Not the Most Important Thing in Life; Spiritual Matters Deserve First Place

Matt. 6:25-33 "On this account I say to you: Stop being anxious about your souls as to what you will eat or what you will drink . . . Observe intently the birds of heaven, because they do not sow seed or reap or gather into storehouses; still your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not worth more than they are? . . . So never be anxious and say, 'What are we to eat?' or, 'What are we to drink?' . . . For all these are the things the nations are eagerly pursuing. For your heavenly Father knows you need all these things. Keep on, then, seeking first the kingdom and his righteousness, and all these other things will be added to you."

Matt. 4:4 "Man must live, not on bread alone, but on every utterance coming forth through Jehovah's mouth."

John 4:34 "Jesus said to them: 'My food is for me to do the will of him that sent me and to finish his work.'"

John 6:27 "Work, not for the food that perishes, but for the food that remains for life everlasting."

Freedom

Jehovah God Alone Has Absolute Freedom, No One Being Superior to Him

Rom. 9:20, 21 "O man, who, then, really are you to be answering back to God? Shall the thing molded say to him that molded it, 'Why did you make me this way?' What? Does not the potter have authority over the clay to make from the same lump one vessel for an honorable use, another for a dishonorable use?"

Isa. 40:13, 15 "Who has taken the proportions of the spirit of Jehovah, and who as his man of counsel can make him know anything? Look! The nations are as a drop from a bucket; and as the film of dust on the scales they have been accounted. Look! He lifts the islands themselves as mere fine dust."

Rom. 11:33-36 "O the depth of God's riches and wisdom and knowledge! How unsearchable his judgments are and past tracing out his ways are! For 'who has come to know Jehovah's mind, or who has become his counselor?' Or, 'Who has first given to him, so that it must be repaid to him?' Because from him and by him and for him are all things. To him be the glory forever."

All Creatures Come Under Some Headship, Have Relative Freedom

1 Cor. 11:3 "I want you to know that the head of every man is the Christ; in turn the head of a woman is the man; in turn the head of the Christ is God."

Heb. 13:17 "Be obedient to those who are taking the lead among you and be submissive, for they are keeping watch over your souls as those who will render an account."

Rom. 13:1, 5, 7 "Let every soul be in subjection to the superior authorities. . . . There is therefore compelling reason for you people to be in subjection, not only on account of that wrath but also on account of your conscience. Render to all their dues, to him who calls for the tax, the tax; to him who calls for the tribute, the tribute; to him who calls for fear, such fear; to him who calls for honor, such honor."

Rom. 7:3 "While her husband is living, she would be styled an adulteress if she became another man's. But if her husband dies, she is free from his law, so that she is not an adulteress if she becomes another man's."

Eph. 6:1 "Children, be obedient to your parents in union with the Lord."

Welfare and rights of others to be considered

1 Thess. 4:6 "That no one go to the point of harming and encroach upon the rights of his brother in this matter, because Jehovah is one who exacts punishment for all these things, just as we told you beforehand."

Matt. 7:12 "All things, therefore, that you want men to do to you, you also must likewise do to them; this, in fact, is what the Law and the Prophets mean."

Jehovah's Servants Enjoy Climate of Freedom

2 Cor. 3:17 "Now Jehovah is the Spirit; and where the spirit of Jehovah is, there is freedom."

Gal. 4:25, 26; 5:1 "Now this Hagar means Sinai, a mountain in Arabia, and she corresponds with the Jerusalem today, for she is in slavery with her children. But the Jerusalem above is free, and she is our mother." "For such freedom Christ set us free. Therefore stand fast, and do not let yourselves be confined again in a yoke of slavery."

Gal. 2:4 "False brothers . . . sneaked in to spy upon our freedom which we have in union with Christ Jesus."

All are servants, but not coerced; take pleasure in doing his will

Josh. 1:1 "Moses the servant of Jehovah."

Heb. 11:24-26 "By faith Moses, when grown up, refused to be called the son of the daughter of Pharaoh, choosing to be ill-treated with the people of God rather than to have the temporary enjoyment of sin, because he esteemed the reproach of the Christ as riches greater than the treasures of Egypt; for he looked intently toward the payment of the reward."

Josh. 24:15 "Now if it is bad in your eyes to serve Jehovah, choose for yourselves today whom you will serve, whether the gods that your forefathers who were on the other side of the River served or the gods of the Amorites in whose land you are dwelling. But as for me and my household, we shall serve Jehovah."

Acts 4:30 "Signs and portents occur through the name of your holy servant Jesus."

Ps. 40:8 "To do your will, O my God, I have delighted, and your law is within my inward parts."

Gen. 18:3 "Then he [Abraham] said: 'Jehovah, if, now, I have

found favor in your eyes, please do not pass by your servant.'"

See also the main heading "Preaching the Good News," page 386.

Freedom from bondage to sin and death through faith in Jesus Christ

Rom. 6:18, 22 "Since you were set free from sin, you became slaves to righteousness. However, now, because you were set free from sin but became slaves to God, you are having your fruit in the way of holiness, and the end everlasting life."

John 8:36 "If the Son sets you free, you will be actually free."

Rom. 8:2 "The law of that spirit which gives life in union with Christ Jesus has set you free from the law of sin and of death."

Service in harmony with Jehovah's requirements leads one in ways of righteousness

Rom. 6:16 "Do you not know that if you keep presenting yourselves to anyone as slaves to obey him, you are slaves of him because you obey him, either of sin with death in view or of obedience with righteousness in view?"

Jas. 1:22, 25; 2:24 "Become doers of the word, and not hearers only. . . . he who peers into the perfect law that belongs to freedom and who persists in it, this man, because he has become, not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, will be happy in his doing it." "You see that a man is to be declared righteous by works, and not by faith alone."

God-given freedom not to be abused

Gal. 5:13 "You were, of course, called for freedom, brothers; only do not use this freedom as an inducement for the flesh, but through love slave for one another."

1 Pet. 2:16 "Be as free people, and yet holding your freedom, not as a blind for moral badness, but as slaves of God."

See also "Conduct of Christians," pages 98-108.

Lovingly yield personal freedoms to assist others

1 Cor. 9:19; 10:23, 24, 32, 33 "Though I am free from all persons, I have made myself the slave to all, that I may gain the most persons." "All things are lawful; but not all things are advantageous. All things are lawful; but not all things build up. Let each one keep seeking, not his own advantage, but that of the other person. Keep from becoming causes for stumbling to Jews as well as Greeks and to the congregation of God, even as I am pleasing all people in all things, not seeking my own advantage but that of the many in order that they might get saved."

1 Cor. 13:4, 5 "Love . . . does not look for its own interests."

Preach message of spiritual liberation

Luke 4:18 "Jehovah's spirit is upon me, because he anointed me to declare good news to the poor, he sent me forth to preach a release to the captives and a recovery of sight to the blind, to send the crushed ones away with a release."

Rom. 8:21 "The creation itself also will be set free from enslavement to corruption and have the glorious freedom of the children of God."

Persons Throwing Off All Restraint Become Slaves of Corruption

2 Pet. 2:18-20 "By loose habits they entice those who are just escaping from people who conduct themselves in error. While they are promising them freedom, they themselves are existing as slaves of corruption. For whoever is overcome by another is enslaved by this one. Certainly if, after having escaped from the defilements of the world by an accurate knowledge of the Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, they get involved again with these very things and are overcome, the final conditions have become worse for them than the first."

John 8:34 "Jesus answered them: 'Most truly I say to you, Every doer of sin is a slave of sin.'"

One's Standing with God Not Affected by Social Status of Freedom or Servitude

Col. 3:10, 11 "Clothe yourselves with the new personality, which through accurate knowledge is being made new according to the image of the One who created it, where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, foreigner, Scythian, slave, freeman, but Christ is all things and in all."

Gal. 3:27, 28 "All of you who were baptized into Christ have put on Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither slave nor freeman, there is neither male nor female; for you are all one person in union with Christ Jesus."

1 Cor. 12:13 "Truly by one spirit we were all baptized into one body, whether Jews or Greeks, whether slaves or free, and we were all made to drink one spirit."

Eph. 6:7, 8 "Be slaves with good inclinations, as to Jehovah, and not to men, for you know that each one, whatever good he may do, will receive this back from Jehovah, whether he be slave or freeman."

1 Cor. 7:22 "Anyone in the Lord that was called when a slave is the Lord's freedman."

Friendship with the World

World of Unbelieving Mankind Controlled by Satan

1 John 5:19 "We know we originate with God, but the whole world is lying in the power of the wicked one."

Eph. 2:2 "You at one time walked according to the system of things of this world, according to the ruler of the authority of the air, the spirit that now operates in the sons of disobedience."

Friendship with This World Shows Lack of Love for God, Makes One God's Enemy

Jas. 4:4 "Adulteresses, do you not know that the friendship with the world is enmity with God? Whoever, therefore, wants to be a friend of the world is constituting himself an enemy of God."

1 John 2:15, 16 "Do not be loving either the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him; because everything in the world—the desire of the flesh and the desire of the eyes and the showy display of one's means of life—does not originate with the Father, but originates with the world."

Jas. 1:27 "The form of worship that is clean and undefiled from the standpoint of our God and Father is this: to look after orphans and widows in their tribulation, and to keep oneself without spot from the world."

2 Chron. 19:2 "Jehu the son of Hanani the visionary now went out before him and said to King Jehoshaphat: 'Is it to the wicked that help is to be given, and is it for those hating Jehovah that

you should have love? And for this there is indignation against you from the person of Jehovah.'"

Christians No Part of This World, Do Not Imitate Its Ways

John 15:19 "You are no part of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world."

John 17:16 "They are no part of the world, just as I am no part of the world."

Do not seek its association socially

1 Pet. 4:3, 4 "The time that has passed by is sufficient for you to have worked out the will of the nations when you proceeded in deeds of loose conduct, lusts, excesses with wine, revelries, drinking matches, and illegal idolatries. Because you do not continue running with them in this course to the same low sink of debauchery, they are puzzled and go on speaking abusively of you."

1 John 2:15 "Do not be loving . . . the world."

2 Tim. 2:22 "Pursue righteousness, faith, love, peace, along with those who call upon the Lord out of a clean heart."

Ps. 26:4-6 "I have not sat with men of untruth; and with those who hide what they are I do not come in. I have hated the congregation of evildoers, and with the wicked ones I do not sit. I shall wash my hands in innocency itself, and I will march around your altar, O Jehovah."

See also the main heading "Associations," pages 30-33.

Do not copy world in its materialistic pursuits

Matt. 6:19-33 "Stop storing up for yourselves treasures upon the earth, where moth and rust consume, and where thieves break in and steal. Rather, store up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust consumes, and where thieves do not break in and steal. . . . On this account I say to you: Stop being anxious about your souls as to what you will eat or what you will drink, or about your bodies as to what you will wear. . . . For all these are the things the nations are eagerly pursuing. . . . Keep on, then, seeking first the kingdom and his righteousness."

1 Tim. 6:8-10 "Having sustenance and covering, we shall be content with these things. However, those who are determined to be rich fall into temptation and a snare and many senseless and hurtful desires, which plunge men into destruction and ruin. For the love of money is a root of all sorts of injurious things, and by reaching out for this love some have been led astray from the faith and have stabbed themselves all over with many pains."

Luke 12:15, 31 "Keep your eyes open and guard against every sort of covetousness, because even when a person has an abundance his life does not result from the things he possesses. Nevertheless, seek continually his kingdom, and these things will be added to you."

See also the main heading "Materialism," pages 338-342.

Do not give in to its immoral fleshly desires

1 Thess. 4:3-5 "This is what God wills, the sanctifying of you, that you abstain from fornication; that each one of you should know how to get possession of his own vessel in sanctification and honor, not in covetous sexual appetite such as also those nations have which do not know God."

1 Pet. 1:14, 15; 2:11 "As obedient children, quit being fashioned according to the desires you formerly had in your ignorance, but, in accord with the holy one who called you, do you also become holy yourselves in all your conduct." "Beloved, I exhort you as aliens and temporary residents to keep abstaining from fleshly desires."

Gal. 5:19-21 "Now the works of the flesh are manifest, and they are fornication, uncleanness, loose conduct, idolatry, practice of spiritism, hatreds, strife, jealousy, fits of anger, contentions, divisions, sects, envies, drunken bouts, revelries, and things like these. As to these things I am forewarning you, the same way as I did forewarn you, that those who practice such things will not inherit God's kingdom."

Do not join with it in idolizing men and organizations

Matt. 4:10 "It is Jehovah your God you must worship, and it is to him alone you must render sacred service."

1 Cor. 10:14 "Flee from idolatry."

Acts 12:21-23 "On a set day Herod clothed himself with royal raiment and sat down upon the judgment seat and began giving them a public address. In turn the assembled people began shouting: 'A god's voice, and not a man's!' Instantly the angel of Jehovah struck him, because he did not give the glory to God; and he became eaten up with worms and expired."

Rom. 1:25 "Those who exchanged the truth of God for the lie and venerated and rendered sacred service to the creation rather than the One who created."

See also Rev. 22:8, 9.

Do not get involved in its political affairs

Matt. 4:8-10 "The Devil took him along to an unusually high mountain, and showed him all the kingdoms of the world and their glory, and he said to him: 'All these things I will give you if you fall down and do an act of worship to me.' Then Jesus said to him: 'Go away, Satan!'"

John 6:15 "Therefore Jesus, knowing they were about to come and seize him to make him king, withdrew again into the mountain all alone."

John 18:36 "Jesus answered: 'My kingdom is no part of this world. If my kingdom were part of this world, my attendants would have fought that I should not be delivered up to the Jews. But, as it is, my kingdom is not from this source.'"

See also the main heading "Neutrality," pages 353, 354.

Do not share its nationalistic outlook

Acts 17:26 "He made out of one man every nation of men, to dwell upon the entire surface of the earth."

Acts 10:34, 35 "Peter opened his mouth and said: 'For a certainty I perceive that God is not partial, but in every nation the man that fears him and works righteousness is acceptable to him.'"

Rev. 7:9, 10 "I saw, and, look! a great crowd, which no man was able to number, out of all nations and tribes and peoples and tongues, standing before the throne and before the Lamb, dressed in white robes; and there were palm branches in their hands. And they keep on crying with a loud voice, saying: 'Salvation we owe to our God, who is seated on the throne, and to the Lamb.'"

See also the main heading "War," pages 489-492.

Do not suffer from its fears

Luke 21:25-31 "There will be . . . on the earth anguish of nations, not knowing the way out because of the roaring of the sea and its agitation, while men become faint out of fear and expectation of the things coming upon the inhabited earth . . . But as these things start to occur, raise yourselves erect and lift your heads up, because your deliverance is getting near. . . . when you see these things

occurring, know that the kingdom of God is near."

Matt. 10:28 "Do not become fearful of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul; but rather be in fear of him that can destroy both soul and body in Gehenna."

Ps. 112:1, 7, 8 "Happy is the man in fear of Jehovah. . . . He will not be afraid even of bad news. His heart is steadfast, made reliant upon Jehovah. His heart is unshakable; he will not be afraid."

Isa. 8:12, 13 "The object of their fear you men must not fear, nor must you tremble at it. Jehovah of armies—he is the One whom you should treat as holy, and he should be the object of your fear."

See also the main heading "Fear," pages 189-192.

Do not imitate worldly class distinctions

Jas. 2:1-4, 8, 9 "My brothers, you are not holding the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ . . . with acts of favoritism, are you? For, if a man with gold rings on his fingers and in splendid clothing enters into your public assembly, but a poor man in filthy clothing also enters, yet you look with favor upon the one wearing the splendid clothing and say: 'You take this seat here in a fine place,' and you say to the poor one: 'You keep standing,' or: 'Take that seat there under my footstool,' you have class distinctions among yourselves and you have become judges rendering wicked decisions, is that not so? If, now, you practice carrying out the kingly law according to the Scriptures: 'You must love your neighbor as yourself,' you are doing quite well. But if you continue showing favoritism, you are working a sin, for you are reproved by the law as transgressors."

See also the heading "Social Distinctions," pages 462, 463.

Do not copy its unrighteous manner of speech

Eph. 4:29, 31; 5:3, 4 "Let a rotten saying not proceed out of your mouth, but whatever saying is good for building up as the need may be . . . Let all malicious bitterness and anger and wrath and screaming and abusive speech be taken away from you along with all injuriousness." "Let fornication and uncleanness of every kind or greediness not even be mentioned among you, just as it befits holy people; neither shameful conduct nor foolish talking nor obscene jesting, things which are not becoming."

Titus 2:7, 8 "Showing uncorruptness in your teaching, seriousness, wholesome speech which cannot be condemned."

Do not manifest its corrupt mental inclination

1 Cor. 2:12 "Now we received, not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is from God."

2 Tim. 3:1-5 "Know this, that in the last days critical times hard to deal with will be here. For men will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, self-assuming, haughty, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, disloyal, having no natural affection, not open to any agreement, slanderers, without self-control, fierce, without love of goodness, betrayers, headstrong, puffed up with pride, lovers of pleasures rather than lovers of God, . . . and from these turn away."

Rom. 1:28-32 "God gave them up to a disapproved mental state, to do the things not fitting, filled as they were with all unrighteousness, wickedness, covetousness, injuriousness, being full of envy, murder, strife, deceit, malicious disposition, being whisperers, backbiters, haters of God, insolent, haughty, self-assuming, inventors of injurious things, disobedient to parents, without understanding, false to agreements, having no natural affection, merciless. Although these know full well the righteous decree of God, that those practicing such things are deserving of death, they not only keep on doing them but also approve those practicing them."

See also the main heading "Conduct of Christians," pages 98-108.

Do not indulge in its dishonest ways

Eph. 4:28 "Let the stealer steal no more, but rather let him do hard work, doing with his hands what is good work, that he may have something to distribute to someone in need."

1 Pet. 4:15 "Let none of you suffer as . . . a thief."

Heb. 13:18 "We wish to conduct ourselves honestly in all things."

2 Cor. 8:21 "We 'make honest provision, not only in the sight of Jehovah, but also in the sight of men.' "

Titus 2:10 "Not committing theft, but exhibiting good fidelity to the full."

Eph. 4:25 "Wherefore, now that you have put away falsehood, speak truth each one of you with his neighbor, because we are members belonging to one another."

Do not participate in its religious affairs

2 Cor. 6:14-17 "Do not become unevenly yoked with unbelievers. For what sharing do righteousness and lawlessness have? Or what fellowship does light have with darkness? Further, what harmony is there between Christ and Belial? Or what portion does a faithful person have with an unbeliever? And what agreement does God's temple have with idols? . . . '"Therefore get out from among them, and separate yourselves," says Jehovah, "and quit touching the unclean thing" '; ' "and I will take you in." ' "

Rev. 18:4, 5 "I heard another voice out of heaven say: 'Get out of her, my people, if you do not want to share with her in her sins, and if you do not want to receive part of her plagues. For her sins have massed together clear up to heaven, and God has called her acts of injustice to mind.' "

2 Tim. 3:1-5 "In the last days . . . men will be . . . having a form of godly devotion but proving false to its power; and from these turn away."

See also the main heading "Interfaith," pages 257-263.

Do not share its disregard for the counsel of God

1 Thess. 4:7, 8 "God called us, not with allowance for uncleanness, but in connection with sanctification. So, then, the man that shows disregard is disregarding, not man, but God, who puts his holy spirit in you."

Luke 7:30 "The Pharisees . . . disregarded the counsel of God to them, they not having been baptized by him."

Luke 10:16 "He that listens to you listens to me too. And he that disregards you disregards me too. Moreover, he that disregards me disregards also him that sent me forth."

2 Tim. 4:3-5 "There will be a period of time when they will not put up with the healthful teaching, but, in accord with their own desires, they will accumulate teachers for themselves to have their ears tickled; and they will turn their ears away from the truth, whereas they will be turned aside to false stories. You, though, keep your senses in all things."

Col. 2:8 "Look out: perhaps there may be someone who will carry you off as his prey through the philosophy and empty deception according to the tradition of men, according to the elemen-

tary things of the world and not according to Christ."

Do not join world in lining up under demonic control

Rev. 16:13, 14 "I saw three unclean inspired expressions that looked like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon and out of the mouth of the wild beast and out of the mouth of the false prophet. They are, in fact, expressions inspired by demons and perform signs, and they go forth to the kings of the entire inhabited earth, to gather them together to the war of the great day of God the Almighty."

Eph. 6:12 "We have a fight, not against blood and flesh, but against the governments, against the authorities, against the world rulers of this darkness, against the wicked spirit forces in the heavenly places."

Christians Must Have Some Dealings with This World (Preaching, Secular Work)

John 17:15 "I request you, not to take them out of the world, but to watch over them because of the wicked one."

Matt. 28:19, 20 "Go therefore and make disciples of people of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the holy spirit, teaching them to observe all the things I have commanded you."

1 Tim. 5:8 "Certainly if anyone does not provide for those who are his own, and especially for those who are members of his household, he has disowned the faith and is worse than a person without faith."

World Hates, Persecutes God's Servants

John 15:18-20 "If the world hates you, you know that it has hated me before it hated you. If you were part of the world, the world would be fond of what is its own. Now because you are no part of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, on this account the world hates you. Bear in mind the word I said to you, A slave is not greater than his master. If they have persecuted me, they will persecute you also."

John 17:9, 14 "I make request, not concerning the world, but concerning those you have given me; because they are yours. I have given your word to them, but the world has hated them, because they are no part of the world, just as I am no part of the world."

1 John 3:13 "Do not marvel, brothers, that the world hates you."

World of Unbelievers, Together with Their Ways, to Pass Away

1 John 2:17 "The world is passing away and so is its desire, but he that does the will of God remains forever."

Christians Demonstrate Kindness to All Men

Gal. 6:10 "Really, then, as long as we have time favorable for it, let us work what is good toward all, but especially toward those related to us in the faith."

Rom. 12:18-20 "If possible, as far as it depends upon you, be peaceable with all men. Do not avenge yourselves, beloved, but yield place to the wrath; for it is written: 'Vengeance is mine; I will repay, says Jehovah.' But, 'If your enemy is hungry, feed him; if he is thirsty, give him something to drink; for by doing this you will heap fiery coals upon his head.'"

Show deep concern for lasting welfare of others by calling on them with God's message of salvation

1 Cor. 9:22, 23 "I have become all things to people of all sorts, that I might by all means save some. But I do all things for the sake of the good news, that I may become a sharer of it with others."

Matt. 28:19, 20 "Go therefore and make disciples of people of all the nations . . . teaching them to observe all the things I have commanded you."

1 Tim. 4:16 "Pay constant attention to yourself and to your teaching. Stay by these things, for by doing this you will save both yourself and those who listen to you."

Christians Manifest Proper Respect for Rulers, Obedience to Laws

Matt. 22:21 "Pay back, therefore, Caesar's things to Caesar, but God's things to God."

Rom. 13:1-7 "Let every soul be in subjection to the superior authorities . . . For those ruling are an object of fear, not to the good deed, but to the bad. . . . Render to all their dues, to him who calls for the tax, the tax; to him who calls for the tribute, the tribute; to him who calls for fear, such fear; to him who calls for honor, such honor."

Acts 25:8 "Neither against the Law of the Jews nor against the temple nor against Caesar have I committed any sin."

Acts 26:2, 25 "'Concerning all the things of which I am accused by Jews, King Agrippa, I count myself happy that it is before you I am to make my defense this day.' But Paul said: 'I am not going mad, Your Excellency Festus, but I am uttering sayings of truth and of soundness of mind.'"

Fruits of the Spirit

Love

1 John 4:8 "God is love."

1 John 4:19 "As for us, we love, because he first loved us."

Rom. 5:8 "God recommends his own love to us in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us."

Rom. 5:5 "The love of God has been poured out into our hearts through the holy spirit."

1 John 4:10, 11 "The love is in this respect, not that we have loved God, but that he loved us and sent forth his Son as a propitiatory sacrifice for our sins . . . if this is how God loved us, then we are ourselves under obligation to love one another."

1 John 5:3 "This is what the love of God means, that we observe his commandments." (See also 2 John 6.)

1 John 4:20, 21 "If anyone makes the statement: 'I love God,' and yet is hating his brother, he is a liar. For he who does not love his brother, . . . cannot be loving God . . . the one who loves God should be loving his brother also."

John 13:35 "By this all will know that you are my disciples, if you have love among yourselves."

1 Pet. 2:17 "Have love for the whole association of brothers."

1 Pet. 4:8 "Above all things, have intense love for one another, because love covers a multitude of sins."

John 15:12, 13 "This is my commandment, that you love one another just as I have loved you. No one has love greater than this, that someone should surrender his soul in behalf of his friends."

Matt. 22:35-39 "One of them . . . asked . . . 'Teacher, which is the greatest commandment in

the Law?' He said to him: '"You must love Jehovah your God with your whole heart and with your whole soul and with your whole mind." This is the greatest and first commandment. The second, like it, is this, "You must love your neighbor as yourself."'"

Luke 10:29-37 "The man said to Jesus: 'Who really is my neighbor?' In reply Jesus said: 'A certain man was going down from Jerusalem to Jericho and fell among robbers, who both stripped him and inflicted blows, and went off, leaving him half-dead. . . . But a certain Samaritan traveling the road came upon him and, at seeing him, he was moved with pity. So he approached him and bound up his wounds, pouring oil and wine upon them. Then he mounted him upon his own beast and brought him to an inn' . . . Jesus then said to him: 'Go your way and be doing the same yourself.'"

Matt. 5:43, 44 "You heard that it was said, 'You must love your neighbor and hate your enemy.' However, I say to you: Continue to love your enemies."

Eph. 5:25, 33 "Husbands, continue loving your wives, just as the Christ also loved the congregation . . . let each one of you individually so love his wife as he does himself."

Titus 2:4 "Recall the young women to their senses to love their husbands, to love their children."

Col. 3:14 "Clothe yourselves with love, for it is a perfect bond of union."

1 John 4:18 "There is no fear in love, but perfect love throws fear outside."

1 Cor. 13:4-8 "Love is long-suffering and kind. Love is not jealous, it does not brag, does not get puffed up, does not behave indecently, does not look for its own interests, does not become provoked. It does not keep account of the injury. It does not rejoice over unrighteousness. . . . Love never fails."

1 John 2:15 "Do not be loving either the world or the things in the world."

Joy

Neh. 8:10 "The joy of Jehovah is your stronghold."

Isa. 65:18 "But exult, you people, and be joyful forever in what I am creating."

Rom. 12:12 "Rejoice in the hope ahead."

Heb. 12:2 "Look intently at the Chief Agent and Perfecter of our faith, Jesus. For the joy that was set before him he endured a torture stake, despising shame, and has sat down at the right hand of the throne of God."

1 Pet. 1:8 "You exercise faith in him and are greatly rejoicing with an unspeakable and glorified joy."

Phil. 4:1, 4 "My brothers beloved and longed for, my joy . . . Always rejoice in the Lord. Once more I will say, Rejoice!"

Ps. 100:2 "Serve Jehovah with rejoicing. Come in before him with a joyful cry."

Isa. 65:14 "Look! My own servants will cry out joyfully because of the good condition of the heart."

Matt. 25:21 "You were faithful over a few things. I will appoint you over many things. Enter into the joy of your master."

Matt. 5:11, 12 "Happy are you when people reproach you and persecute you and lyingly say every sort of wicked thing against you for my sake. Rejoice and leap for joy, since your reward is great in the heavens."

Acts 5:41 "These . . . went their way from before the Sanhedrin, rejoicing because they had been counted worthy to be dishonored in behalf of his name."

Eccl. 8:15 "I myself commended rejoicing, because mankind have nothing better under the sun than to eat and drink and rejoice, and that it should accompany them in their hard work."

Prov. 24:17 "When your enemy falls, do not rejoice; and when he is caused to stumble, may your heart not be joyful."

Prov. 2:11, 12, 14 "Discernment itself will safeguard you, to deliver you from the bad way, . . . from those who are rejoicing in doing bad, who are joyful in the perverse things of badness."

Prov. 15:21 "Foolishness is a rejoicing to one who is in want of heart."

Peace

Rom. 12:18 "If possible, as far as it depends upon you, be peaceable with all men."

1 Pet. 3:10, 11 "He that would love life and see good days, let him restrain his tongue from what is bad . . . let him seek peace and pursue it."

Rom. 14:19, 20 "Let us pursue the things making for peace and the things that are upbuilding to one another. Stop tearing down the work of God just for the sake of food."

Eph. 4:2, 3 "Putting up with one another in love, earnestly endeavoring to observe the oneness of the spirit in the uniting bond of peace."

2 Cor. 13:11 "Finally, brothers, continue . . . to live peaceably; and the God of love and of peace will be with you."

Matt. 5:9 "Happy are the peaceable, since they will be called 'sons of God.'"

Phil. 4:6, 7 "Do not be anxious over anything, but in everything by prayer and supplication along with thanksgiving let your petitions be made known to God; and the peace of God that excels all thought will guard your hearts and your mental powers by means of Christ Jesus."

Col. 3:15 "Let the peace of the Christ control in your hearts."

John 16:33 "I have said these things to you that by means of me you may have peace."

John 14:27 "I leave you peace, I give you my peace. I do not give it to you the way that the world gives it. Do not let your hearts be troubled nor let them shrink for fear."

Eph. 6:14, 15 "Stand firm . . . with your feet shod with the equipment of the good news of peace."

Jas. 3:17, 18 "The wisdom from above is . . . peaceable . . . Moreover, the fruit of righteousness has its seed sown under peaceful conditions for those who are making peace."

Luke 2:14 "Glory in the heights above to God, and upon earth peace among men of good will."

Long-suffering

1 Thess. 5:14 "Be long-suffering toward all."

Matt. 18:21, 22 "Peter came up and said to him: 'Lord, how many times is my brother to sin against me and am I to forgive him? Up to seven times?' Jesus said to him: 'I say to you, not, Up to seven times, but, Up to seventy-seven times.'"

Col. 3:12, 13 "Clothe yourselves with the tender affections of compassion . . . and long-suffering. Continue putting up with one another and forgiving one another freely if anyone has a cause for complaint against another."

Eph. 4:1, 2 "Walk worthily of the calling with which you were called, with complete lowliness of mind and mildness, with long-suffering, putting up with one another in love."

2 Tim. 4:2 "Preach the word . . . exhort, with all long-suffering and art of teaching."

Rom. 9:22, 23 "God, although having the will to demonstrate his wrath and to make his power known, tolerated with much long-suffering vessels of wrath made fit for destruction, in order that he might make known the riches of his glory upon vessels of mercy."

1 Tim. 1:16 "The reason why I was shown mercy was that by means of me as the foremost case Christ Jesus might demonstrate all his long-suffering for a sample of those who are going to rest their faith on him for everlasting life."

Kindness

Mic. 6:8 "What is Jehovah asking back from you but to exercise justice and to love kindness?"

Hos. 6:6 "In loving-kindness I have taken delight."

Titus 3:4 "The kindness and the love for man on the part of our Savior, God, was manifested."

Eph. 2:8 "By this undeserved kindness, indeed, you have been saved through faith; and this not owing to you, it is God's gift."

2 Cor. 6:1 "Working together with him, we also entreat you not to accept the undeserved kindness of God and miss its purpose."

Eph. 4:32 "Become kind to one another, tenderly compassionate, freely forgiving one another just as God also by Christ freely forgave you."

2 Cor. 6:4, 6 "In every way we recommend ourselves as God's ministers, . . . by kindness."

2 Cor. 10:1 "I myself, Paul, entreat you by the mildness and kindness of the Christ."

Prov. 31:10, 26 "A capable wife . . . Her mouth she has opened in wisdom, and the law of loving-kindness is upon her tongue."

Prov. 22:9 "He that is kindly in eye will be blessed, for he has given of his food to the lowly one."

Prov. 11:17 "A man of loving-kindness is dealing rewardingly with his own soul."

Prov. 21:21 "He that is pursuing righteousness and loving-kindness will find life, righteousness and glory."

Goodness

3 John 11 "Be an imitator, not of what is bad, but of what is good. He that does good originates with God."

2 Thess. 1:11, 12 "We always pray for you, that our God may count you worthy of his calling and perform completely all he pleases of goodness . . . in order that the name of our Lord Jesus may be glorified in you."

Luke 10:39, 42 "Mary . . . sat down at the feet of the Lord and kept listening to his word. . . . 'Mary chose the good portion.' "

Rom. 10:15 "How, in turn, will they preach unless they have been sent forth? Just as it is written: 'How comely are the feet of those who declare good news of good things!' "

Eph. 4:28 "Let the stealer steal no more, but rather let him do hard work, doing with his hands what is good work."

Gal. 6:10 "Really, then, as long as we have time favorable for it, let us work what is good toward all, but especially toward those related to us in the faith."

Rom. 15:2 "Let each of us please his neighbor in what is good for his upbuilding."

1 Tim. 1:18, 19 "Go on waging the fine warfare; holding faith and a good conscience."

Rom. 15:14 "I myself also am persuaded about you, my brothers, that you yourselves are also full of goodness, as you have been filled with all knowledge, and that you can also admonish one another."

1 Thess. 5:15 "See that no one renders injury for injury to anyone else, but always pursue what is good toward one another and to all others."

Luke 6:33, 35 "If you do good to those doing good to you, really of what credit is it to you? Even the sinners do the same. To the contrary, continue to love your enemies and to do good and to lend without interest, not hoping for anything back."

1 Pet. 2:15 "So the will of God is, that by doing good you may muzzle the ignorant talk of the unreasonable men."

John 5:28, 29 "The hour is coming in which all those in the memorial tombs will hear his voice and come out, those who did good things to a resurrection of life."

Rom. 12:2 "Prove to yourselves the good and acceptable and perfect will of God."

Ex. 33:18, 19; 34:6, 7 "[Moses] said: 'Cause me to see, please, your glory?' But he said: 'I myself shall cause all my goodness to pass before your face.' " "And Jehovah went passing by before his face and declaring: 'Jehovah, Jehovah, a God merciful and gracious, slow to anger and abundant in loving-kindness and truth, preserving loving-kindness for thousands, pardoning error and transgression and sin.' "

Faith

Heb. 11:6 "Without faith it is impossible to please him well, for he that approaches God must believe that he is and that he becomes the rewarder of those earnestly seeking him."

Heb. 11:1, 2, 13 "Faith is the assured expectation of things hoped for, the evident demonstration of realities though not beheld. For by means of this the men of old times had witness borne to them. In faith all these died, although they did not get the fulfillment of the promises, but they saw them afar off and welcomed them."

Gal. 3:8, 9, 11 "The Scripture, seeing in advance that God would declare people of the nations righteous due to faith, declared the good news beforehand to Abraham. . . . Consequently those who adhere to faith are being blessed together with faithful Abraham. . . . because 'the righteous one will live by reason of faith.' "

John 3:16, 18 "God loved the world so much that he gave his only-begotten Son, in order that everyone exercising faith in him might not be destroyed but have everlasting life. He that exercises faith in him is not to be judged. He that does not exercise faith has been judged already."

Rom. 10:9, 10 "If you publicly declare that 'word in your own mouth,' that Jesus is Lord, and exercise faith in your heart that God raised him up from the dead, you will be saved. For with the heart one exercises faith for righteousness, but with the mouth one makes public declaration for salvation."

Jas. 2:17 "Faith, if it does not have works, is dead in itself."

Eph. 6:16 "Above all things, take up the large shield of faith, with which you will be able to quench all the wicked one's burning missiles."

2 Cor. 5:7 "We are walking by faith, not by sight."

1 John 5:4 "This is the conquest that has conquered the world, our faith."

Rom. 11:7, 20 "The very thing Israel is earnestly seeking he did not obtain. . . . For their lack of faith they were broken off, but you are standing by faith."

Heb. 3:12, 14 "Beware, brothers, for fear there should ever develop in any one of you a wicked heart lacking faith by drawing away from the living God . . . make fast our hold on the confidence we had at the beginning firm to the end."

Mildness

Matt. 11:28, 29 "Come to me, all you who are toiling and loaded down, and I will refresh you. Take my yoke upon you and become my disciples, for I am mild-tempered and lowly in heart." (See also Matt. 21:5.)

1 Pet. 3:15 "Sanctify the Christ as Lord in your hearts, always

ready to make a defense before everyone that demands of you a reason for the hope in you, but doing so together with a mild temper."

2 Tim. 2:24, 25 "A slave of the Lord does not need to fight, but needs to be gentle toward all . . . keeping himself restrained under evil, instructing with mildness those not favorably disposed."

Gal. 6:1 "Brothers, even though a man takes some false step before he is aware of it, you who have spiritual qualifications try to restore such a man in a spirit of mildness."

Titus 3:2 "Speak injuriously of no one . . . exhibiting all mildness toward all men."

1 Tim. 6:11 "Pursue . . . mildness of temper."

Matt. 5:5 "Happy are the mild-tempered ones, since they will inherit the earth."

1 Pet. 3:1-4 "You wives, . . . do not let your adornment be that of the external braiding of the hair and of the putting on of gold ornaments or the wearing of outer garments, but let it be the secret person of the heart in the incorruptible apparel of the quiet and mild spirit."

Prov. 25:15 "By patience a commander is induced, and a mild tongue itself can break a bone."

Prov. 15:1 "An answer, when mild, turns away rage."

Self-Control

1 Cor. 9:25, 27 "Every man taking part in a contest exercises self-control in all things. . . . I browbeat my body and lead it as a slave, that, after I have preached to others, I myself should not become disapproved somehow."

Titus 1:7, 8 "An overseer must be . . . self-controlled."

Prov. 16:32; 25:28 "He that is slow to anger is better than a mighty man, and he that is controlling his spirit than the one capturing a city." "As a city broken through, without a wall, is the man that has no restraint for his spirit."

1 Cor. 7:9 "If they do not have self-control, let them marry, for it is better to marry than to be inflamed with passion."

Isa. 42:13, 14 "Jehovah himself will go forth. . . . over his enemies he will show himself mightier. 'I have kept quiet for a long time. I continued silent. I kept exercising self-control.'"

See also Matt. 27:12-14.

How to Obtain Jehovah's Spirit, so as to Manifest Its Fruitage

Luke 11:13 "If you, although being wicked, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more so will the Father in heaven give holy spirit to those asking him!"

John 6:63 "The sayings that I have spoken to you are spirit and are life."

John 15:5, 7 "I am the vine, you are the branches. He that remains in union with me, and I in union with him, this one bears much fruit; because apart from me you can do nothing at all. If you remain in union with me and my sayings remain in you, ask whatever you wish and it will take place for you."

1 Cor. 2:12-15 "Now we received, not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is from God, that we might know the things that have been kindly given us by God. These things we also speak, not with words taught by human wisdom, but with those taught by the spirit, as we combine spiritual matters with spiritual words. But a physical man does not receive the things of the spirit of God, for they are foolishness to him; and he cannot get to know them, because they are examined spiritually. However, the spiritual man examines indeed all things."

Constant Personal Cultivation of Spirit's Fruitage Required

Gal. 5:16, 17, 22-25 "Keep walking by spirit and you will carry out no fleshly desire at all. For the flesh is against the spirit in its desire, and the spirit against the flesh. . . . the fruitage of the spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, kindness, goodness, faith, mildness, self-control. . . . those who belong to Christ Jesus impaled the flesh together with its passions and desires. If we are living by spirit, let us go on walking orderly also by spirit."

2 Pet. 1:5-7 "Supply to your faith virtue, to your virtue knowledge, to your knowledge self-control, to your self-control endurance, to your endurance godly devotion, to your godly devotion brotherly affection, to your brotherly affection love."

Eph. 5:8-18 "Go on walking as children of light, for the fruitage of the light consists of every sort of goodness and righteousness and truth. Keep on making sure of what is acceptable to the Lord; and quit sharing with them in the unfruitful works that belong to the darkness . . . So keep strict watch that how you walk is not as unwise but as wise persons, buying out the opportune time for yourselves, because the days are wicked. On this account cease becoming unreasonable, but go on perceiving what the will of Jehovah is. Also, . . . keep getting filled with spirit."

Gehenna

Valley of Hinnom (Gehenna) Lay to South and West of Jerusalem

Josh. 15:8 "The boundary [of the tribe of Judah] went up to the valley of the son of Hinnom to the slope of the Jebusite at the south, that is to say, Jerusalem; and the boundary went up to the top of the mountain that faces the valley of Hinnom [Hebrew: *Ge-Hinnom*] to the west."

Disgusting false religious rites were practiced there for a time

2 Chron. 28:3 "[Ahaz] made sacrificial smoke in the valley of the son of Hinnom and proceeded to burn up his sons in the fire, according to the detestable things of the nations that Jehovah had driven out from before the sons of Israel."

2 Chron. 33:6 "[Manasseh] made his own sons pass through the fire in the valley of the son of Hinnom . . . He did on a grand scale what was bad in the eyes of Jehovah, to offend him."

Jer. 32:35 "They built the high places of Baal that are in the valley of the son of Hinnom, in order to make their sons and their daughters pass through the fire to Molech, a thing that I did not command them, neither did it come up into my heart to do this detestable thing, for the purpose of making Judah sin."

To prevent further misuse of the place, King Josiah had it polluted and it became the incinerator for Jerusalem

2 Ki. 23:10 "He made unfit for worship Topheth, which is in the valley of the sons of Hinnom, that no one might make his son or his daughter pass through the fire to Molech."

"In consequence of these abominations the valley was polluted by Josiah (2 Kings xxiii, 10); subsequently to which it became the common lay-stall of the city,

where the dead bodies of criminals, and the carcasses of animals, and every other kind of filth was cast."—M'Clintock and Strong's *Cyclopædia of Biblical, Theological, and Ecclesiastical Literature* (New York; 1882), Vol. III, page 764.

Debris thrown into the valley was apparently consumed by fire or by maggots, if it did not land in the fire

Mark 9:47, 48 "Pitched into Gehenna, where their maggot does not die and the fire is not put out."

Jesus Christ Used Gehenna to Represent the Worst Punishment That Could Befall a Human, Complete Destruction with No Hope of Resurrection

Matt. 5:22 "Everyone who continues wrathful with his brother will be accountable to the court of justice; but whoever addresses his brother with an unspeakable word of contempt will be accountable to the Supreme Court; whereas whoever says, 'You despicable fool!' will be liable to the fiery Gehenna."

Matt. 10:28 "Do not become fearful of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul; but rather be in fear of him that can destroy both soul and body in Gehenna."

Luke 12:4, 5 "Do not fear those who kill the body and after this are not able to do anything more. But I will indicate to you whom to fear: Fear him who after killing has authority to throw into Gehenna. Yes, I tell you, fear this One."

See also the main heading "Hellfire," pages 229-234.

Being cast into Gehenna was contrasted with gaining life in the kingdom of God

Mark 9:43-47 "If ever your hand makes you stumble, cut it off; it is finer for you to enter into life maimed than with two hands to go off into Gehenna . . . And if your eye makes you stumble, throw it away; it is finer for you to enter one-eyed into the kingdom of God than with two eyes to be pitched into Gehenna."

Matt. 18:9 "If your eye is making you stumble, tear it out and throw it away from you; it is finer for you to enter one-eyed into life than to be thrown with two eyes into the fiery Gehenna."

Matt. 23:13-15, 33 "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because you shut up the kingdom of the heavens before men; for you yourselves do not go in, neither do you permit those on their way in to go in. Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because you traverse sea and dry land to make one proselyte, and when he becomes one you make him a subject for Gehenna twice as much so as yourselves. Serpents, offspring of vipers, how are you to flee from the judgment of Gehenna?"

See also Isa. 66:22-24.

"Lake of Fire" Symbolizes Everlasting Destruction Without Hope of Resurrection, as Does Gehenna

Rev. 20:14, 15 "Death and Hades were hurled into the lake of fire. This means the second death, the lake of fire. Furthermore, whoever was not found written in the book of life was hurled into the lake of fire."

Rev. 21:8 "As for the cowards and those without faith and those who are disgusting in their filth and murderers and fornicators and those practicing spiritism and idolaters and all the liars, their portion will be in the lake that burns with fire and sulphur. This means the second death."

Gifts from God

All God's Gifts Are Good

Jas. 1:17 "Every good gift and every perfect present is from above, for it comes down from the Father of the celestial lights."

Matt. 7:11 "If you . . . know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more so will your Father who is in the heavens give good things to those asking him?"

Prov. 10:22 "The blessing of Jehovah—that is what makes rich, and he adds no pain with it."

God's Gifts Are to Be Used for the Benefit of Fellowmen, and to the Glory of God

1 Pet. 4:10, 11 "In proportion as each one has received a gift, use it in ministering to one another as fine stewards of God's undeserved kindness expressed in various ways. . . . so that in all things God may be glorified through Jesus Christ."

1 Cor. 14:1, 12 "Keep zealously seeking the spiritual gifts. . . . since you are zealously desirous of gifts of the spirit, seek to abound in them for the upbuilding of the congregation."

Rom. 12:6 "Since, then, we have gifts differing according to the undeserved kindness given to us, whether prophecy, let us prophesy according to the faith proportioned to us."

Life, Enjoyment of Good Things Are Gifts of God to All Men

Acts 17:24, 25 "The God that made the world and all the things in it . . . gives to all persons life and breath and all things."

Eccl. 3:13 "Every man should eat and indeed drink and see good for all his hard work. It is the gift of God."

Eccl. 5:19 "Every man to whom the true God has given riches and material possessions, he has even empowered him to eat from it and to carry off his portion and to rejoice in his hard work. This is the gift of God."

1 Tim. 6:17 "God, who furnishes us all things richly for our enjoyment."

Isa. 42:5 "The true God, Jehovah, . . . the Creator of the heavens and the grand One stretching them out; the One laying out the earth and its produce, the One giving breath to the people on it, and spirit to those walking in it."

Matt. 5:45 "Your Father who is in the heavens . . . makes his sun rise upon wicked people and good and makes it rain upon righteous people and unrighteous."

Assignments of Service in God's Organization Are Gifts from God

Num. 18:7 "You and your sons with you should safeguard your priesthood as regards every concern of the altar and as regards what is inside the curtain; and you men must render service. As a service of gift I shall give your priesthood."

2 Tim. 1:6 "Stir up like a fire the gift of God which is in you through the laying of my hands upon you."

Eph. 3:2, 7 "The stewardship of the undeserved kindness of God that was given me with you in view. I became a minister of this according to the free gift of the undeserved kindness of God that was given me according to the way his power operates."

Rom. 12:6-8 "Since, then, we have gifts differing according to the undeserved kindness given to

us, whether . . . a ministry, let us be at this ministry; or he that teaches, let him be at his teaching; or he that exhorts, let him be at his exhortation; he that distributes, let him do it with liberality; he that presides, let him do it in real earnest; he that shows mercy, let him do it with cheerfulness."

Such gifts must be cultivated

1 Tim. 4:14 "Do not be neglecting the gift in you that was given you through a prediction and when the body of older men laid their hands upon you."

Anyone can cultivate ability to perform any assignment of service with the help of God

Phil. 4:13 "For all things I have the strength by virtue of him who imparts power to me."

Ex. 4:10-12 "Moses now said to Jehovah: 'Excuse me, Jehovah, but I am not a fluent speaker, neither since yesterday nor since before that nor since your speaking to your servant, for I am slow of mouth and slow of tongue.' At that Jehovah said to him: 'Who appointed a mouth for man or who appoints the speechless or the deaf or the clear-sighted or the blind? Is it not I, Jehovah? So now go, and I myself shall prove to be with your mouth and I will teach you what you ought to say.'"

1 Pet. 4:11 "If anyone ministers, let him minister as dependent on the strength that God supplies; so that in all things God may be glorified through Jesus Christ."

2 Tim. 2:15 "Do your utmost to present yourself approved to God, a workman with nothing to be ashamed of, handling the word of the truth aright."

Prov. 28:25, 26 "He that is relying upon Jehovah will be made fat. He that is trusting in his own heart is stupid."

To Those Who Serve Him, God Gives Knowledge, Wisdom

Eccl. 2:26 "To the man that is good before him he has given wisdom and knowledge and rejoicing."

Jas. 1:5 "So, if any one of you is lacking in wisdom, let him keep on asking God, for he gives generously to all and without reproaching; and it will be given him."

Prov. 2:6 "Jehovah himself gives wisdom; out of his mouth there are knowledge and discernment."

God Imparts His Spirit to His People

Luke 11:13 "If you . . . know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more so will the Father in heaven give holy spirit to those asking him!"

Acts 2:38 "Peter said to them: 'Repent, and let each one of you be baptized . . . and you will receive the free gift of the holy spirit.'"

Acts 8:20 "Peter said to him: 'May your silver perish with you, because you thought through money to get possession of the free gift of God.'"

Acts 10:45 "The faithful ones that had come with Peter who were of those circumcised were amazed, because the free gift of the holy spirit was being poured out also upon people of the nations."

John 3:34 "The one whom God sent forth speaks the sayings of God, for he does not give the spirit by measure."

Singleness and Marriage Are Gifts from God, to Be Enjoyed in Harmony with His Requirements

Matt. 19:11, 12 "Not all men make room for the saying, but only those who have the gift. For . . . there are eunuchs that have made themselves eunuchs on account of the kingdom of the heavens. Let him that can make room for it make room for it."

1 Cor. 7:7 "I wish all men were as I myself am. Nevertheless, each one has his own gift from God, one in this way, another in that way."

Eph. 5:3 "Let fornication and uncleanness of every kind or greediness not even be mentioned among you, just as it befits holy people."

Heb. 13:4 "Let marriage be honorable among all, and the marriage bed be without defilement, for God will judge fornicators and adulterers."

Matt. 19:9 "I say to you that whoever divorces his wife, except on the ground of fornication, and marries another commits adultery."

Jehovah's Undeserved Kindness a Priceless Gift

Eph. 2:8 "By this undeserved kindness, indeed, you have been saved through faith; and this not owing to you, it is God's gift."

2 Cor. 9:8, 15 "God, moreover, is able to make all his undeserved kindness abound toward you . . . Thanks be to God for his indescribable free gift."

Rom. 5:15-17 "It is not with the gift as it was with the trespass. For if by one man's trespass many died, the undeserved kindness of God and his free gift with the undeserved kindness by the one man Jesus Christ abounded much more to many. . . . For if by the trespass of the one man death ruled as king through that one, much more will those who receive the abundance of the undeserved kindness and of the free gift of righteousness rule as kings in life through the one person, Jesus Christ."

Eph. 1:7 "By means of him we have the release by ransom through the blood of that one, yes, the forgiveness of our trespasses, according to the riches of his undeserved kindness."

Jas. 4:6 "God opposes the haughty ones, but he gives undeserved kindness to the humble ones."

Everlasting Life a Gift from God to Those Exercising Faith

Rom. 6:23 "The gift God gives is everlasting life by Christ Jesus our Lord."

John 4:10, 14 "Jesus said to her: 'If you had known the free gift of God and who it is that says to you, "Give me a drink," you would have asked him, and he would have given you living water. Whoever drinks from the water that I will give him will never get thirsty at all, but the water that I will give him will become in him a fountain of water bubbling up to impart everlasting life.'"

John 3:16 "God loved the world so much that he gave his only-begotten Son, in order that everyone exercising faith in him might not be destroyed but have everlasting life."

Miraculous Gifts to Early Christian Congregation

1 Cor. 12:4-10, 28 "Now there are varieties of gifts, but there is the same spirit . . . to one there is given through the spirit speech of wisdom, to another speech of knowledge according to the same spirit, to another faith by the same spirit, to another gifts of healings by that one spirit, to yet another operations of powerful works, to another prophesying, to another discernment of inspired utterances, to another different tongues, and to another interpretation of tongues. And God has set the respective ones in the congregation, first, apostles; second, prophets; third, teachers; then powerful works; then gifts of healings; helpful services, abilities to direct, different tongues."

Proved new Christian system of things to be of God, aided in growth of congregation to maturity

Heb. 2:4 "God joined in bearing witness with signs as well as portents and various powerful works and with distributions of holy spirit according to his will."

Eph. 4:11-16 "And he gave some as apostles, some as prophets, some as evangelizers, some as shepherds and teachers, with a view to the training of the holy ones, for ministerial work, for the building up of the body of the Christ, until we all attain to the oneness in the faith and in the accurate knowledge of the Son of God, to a full-grown man, to the measure of growth that belongs to the fullness of the Christ; in order that we should no longer be babes, tossed about as by waves and carried hither and thither by every wind of teaching by means of the trickery of men, by means of cunning in contriving error. But speaking the truth, let us by love grow up in all things into him who is the head, Christ. From him all the body, by being harmoniously joined together and being made to co-operate through every joint that gives what is needed, according to the functioning of each respective member in due measure, makes for the growth of the body for the building up of itself in love."

Miraculous gifts of spirit transmitted only when one or more of the twelve apostles were present

Acts 2:1, 4, 14 "While the day of the festival of Pentecost was in progress . . . they all became filled with holy spirit and started to speak with different tongues, just as the spirit was granting them to make utterance. But Peter stood up with the eleven and raised his voice."

Acts 8:14-18 "When the apostles in Jerusalem heard that Samaria had accepted the word of God, they dispatched Peter and John to them; and these went down and prayed for them to get holy spirit. For it had not yet fallen upon any one of them, but they had only been baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus. Then they went laying their hands upon them, and they began to receive holy spirit. . . . Simon saw that through the laying on of the hands of the apostles the spirit was given."

Acts 10:44 "While Peter was yet speaking about these matters the holy spirit fell upon all those hearing the word."

Acts 19:6 "When Paul laid his hands upon them, the holy spirit came upon them, and they began speaking with tongues and prophesying."

Miraculous gifts to be done away with when Christian congregation reached maturity

1 Cor. 13:2, 8-11 "If I have the gift of prophesying and am acquainted with all the sacred secrets and all knowledge, and if I have all the faith so as to transplant mountains, but do not have love, I am nothing. Love never fails. But whether there are gifts of prophesying, they will be done away with; whether there are tongues, they will cease; whether there is knowledge, it will be done away with. For we have partial knowledge and we prophesy partially; but when that which is complete arrives, that which is partial will be done away with. When I was a babe, I used to speak as a babe, to think as a babe, to reason as a babe; but now that I have become a man, I have done away with the traits of a babe."

Performing apparently miraculous works does not by itself prove that one is serving the true God

Matt. 7:21-23 "Not everyone saying to me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter into the kingdom of the heavens, but the one doing the will of my Father who is in the heavens will. Many will say to me in that day, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your name, and expel demons in your name, and perform many powerful works in your name?' And yet then I will confess to them: I never knew you! Get away from me, you workers of lawlessness."

2 Thess. 2:9, 10 "The lawless one's presence is according to the operation of Satan with every powerful work and lying signs and portents and with every unrighteous deception for those who are perishing, as a retribution because they did not accept the love of the truth that they might be saved."

Ex. 7:19, 20, 22 "Subsequently Jehovah said to Moses: 'Say to Aaron, "Take your rod and stretch your hand out over the waters of Egypt, over their rivers, over their Nile canals and over their reedy pools and over all their impounded waters, that they may become blood." And there will certainly be blood in all the land of Egypt and in the wooden vessels and in the stone vessels.' Immediately Moses and Aaron did so, just as Jehovah had commanded, and he lifted up the rod and struck the water that was in the Nile River under the eyes of Pharaoh and his servants, and all the water that was in the Nile River was turned into blood. Nevertheless, the magic-practicing priests of Egypt proceeded to do the same thing with their secret arts."

God

Creative Works Are Evidence of the Existence of Intelligent God

Gen. 1:1 "In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth."

Rom. 1:20 "His invisible qualities are clearly seen from the world's creation onward, because they are perceived by the things made, even his eternal power and Godship, so that they are inexcusable."

Ps. 19:1-4 "The heavens are declaring the glory of God; and of the work of his hands the expanse is telling. One day after another day causes speech to bubble forth, and one night after another night shows forth knowledge. There is no speech, and there are no words; no voice on their part is being heard. Into all the earth their measuring line has gone out, and to the extremity of the productive land their utterances."

Isa. 40:26 "Raise your eyes high up and see. Who has created these things? It is the One who is bringing forth the army of them even by number, all of whom he calls even by name. Due to the abundance of dynamic energy, he [Jehovah] also being vigorous in power, not one of them is missing."

Isa. 29:16 "The perversity of you men! Should the potter himself be accounted just like the clay? For should the thing made say respecting its maker: 'He did not make me'? And does the very thing formed actually say respecting its former: 'He showed no understanding'?"

Ps. 94:9 "The One planting the ear, can he not hear? Or the One forming the eye, can he not look?"

Ps. 100:3 "Know that Jehovah is God. It is he that has made us, and not we ourselves."

Jehovah, the True God, Is Almighty

Ex. 6:2, 3 "God went on to speak to Moses and to say to him: 'I am Jehovah. And I used to appear to Abraham, Isaac and Jacob as God Almighty, but as respects my name Jehovah I did not make myself known to them.' "

Gen. 17:1 "Jehovah appeared to Abram and said to him: 'I am God Almighty.' "

Rev. 4:8 "Holy, holy, holy is Jehovah God, the Almighty, who was and who is and who is coming."

Ex. 18:11 "Now I do know that Jehovah is greater than all the other gods."

Ps. 95:3-6 "Jehovah is a great God and a great King over all other gods, he in whose hand are the inmost depths of the earth and to whom the peaks of the mountains belong; to whom the sea, which he himself made, belongs and whose own hands formed the dry land itself. O come in, let us worship and bow down; let us kneel before Jehovah our Maker."

See also the main heading "Jehovah," pages 264-269.

Important to know and use his name

Ps. 83:18 "That people may know that you, whose name is Jehovah, you alone are the Most High over all the earth."

Matt. 6:9 "You must pray, then, this way: 'Our Father in the heavens, let your name be sanctified.' "

John 17:25, 26 "Righteous Father, . . . I have made your name known to them and will make it known, in order that the love with which you loved me may be in them and I in union with them."

Rom. 10:13 "Everyone who calls on the name of Jehovah will be saved."

Acts 15:14 "Symeon has related thoroughly how God for the first time turned his attention to the nations to take out of them a people for his name."

Isa. 12:4, 5 "In that day you will certainly say: 'Give thanks to Jehovah, you people! Call upon his name. Make known among the peoples his dealings. Make mention that his name is to be put on high. Make melody to Jehovah, for he has done surpassingly. This is to be made known in all the earth.' "

Jesus Christ Is a God, but Not the Almighty God

Isa. 9:6 "There has been a child born to us, there has been a son given to us; and the princely rule will come to be upon his shoulder. And his name will be called Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God."

John 1:1 "In the beginning the Word was, and the Word was with God, and the Word was a god."

1 John 5:19, 20 "We know we originate with God, but the whole world is lying in the power of the wicked one. But we know that the Son of God has come, and he has given us intellectual capacity that we may gain the knowledge of the true one. And we are in union with the true one, by means of his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God and life everlasting."

John 1:14, 18 "So the Word became flesh and resided among us, and we had a view of his glory, a glory such as belongs to an only-begotten son from a father; and he was full of undeserved kindness and truth. No man has seen God at any time; the only-begotten god who is in the bosom position with the Father is the one that has explained him."

Mighty Ones Among Men Are Referred To as Gods

John 10:34 "Jesus answered them: 'Is it not written in your Law, "I said: 'You are gods' "?' " (See also Ps. 82:6.)

There Are Many False Gods

1 Cor. 8:5 "There are those who are called 'gods,' whether in heaven or on earth, just as there are many 'gods' and many 'lords.' "

Jer. 10:14, 15 "His molten image is a falsehood, and there is no spirit in them. They are vanity, a work of mockery. In the time of their being given attention they will perish."

Valueless gods, unable to help worshipers

Hab. 2:18 "Of what benefit has a carved image been, when the former of it has carved it, a molten statue, and an instructor in falsehood? when the former of its form has trusted in it, to the extent of making valueless gods that are speechless?"

Lev. 19:4 "Do not turn yourselves to valueless gods, and you must not make molten gods for yourselves. I am Jehovah your God."

Isa. 44:14-20; 45:5 "He planted the laurel tree, and the pouring rain itself keeps making it get big. And it has become something for man to keep a fire burning. . . . He also works on a god to which he may bow down. He has made it into a carved image, and he prostrates himself to it. Half of it he actually burns up in a fire. Upon half of it he roasts well the flesh that he eats, and he becomes satisfied. . . . But the remainder of it he actually makes into a god itself, into his carved image. He prostrates himself to it and bows down and prays to it and says: 'Deliver me, for you are my God.' They have not come to know, nor do they understand, because their eyes have been besmeared so as not to see, their heart so as to have no insight. And no one recalls to his heart or has knowledge or understanding, saying: 'The half of it I have burned up in a fire, and upon its coals I have also baked bread; I roast flesh and eat. But the rest of it shall I make into a mere detestable thing? To the dried-out wood of a tree shall I prostrate myself?' He is feeding on ashes. His own heart that has been trifled with has led him astray." "I am Jehovah, and there is no one else. With the exception of me there is no God."

Jer. 14:22 "Do there exist among the vain idols of the nations any that can pour down rain, or can even the heavens themselves give copious showers? Are you not the One, O Jehovah our God? And we hope in you, for you yourself have done all these things."

Not all serve the same God

1 Cor. 10:20 "The things which the nations sacrifice they sacrifice to demons, and not to God."

Ps. 106:37, 38 "They would sacrifice their sons and their daughters to demons. So they kept spilling innocent blood, the blood of their sons and their daughters, whom they sacrificed to the idols of Canaan; and the land came to be polluted with bloodshed."

Ps. 96:5 "All the gods of the peoples are valueless gods; but as for Jehovah, he has made the very heavens."

See also the main heading "Religion," pages 412-420.

Satan the Devil is god of this system of things

2 Cor. 4:4 "The god of this system of things has blinded the minds of the unbelievers, that the illumination of the glorious good news about the Christ, who is the image of God, might not shine through."

1 John 5:19 "We know we originate with God, but the whole world is lying in the power of the wicked one."

Healing

Jehovah God Has Power to Make Sick and to Heal

Deut. 7:15 "Jehovah will certainly remove from you every sickness; and as for all the evil diseases of Egypt that you have known, he will not place them upon you, and he will indeed put them upon all those who hate you."

Ex. 15:26 "He went on to say: 'If you will strictly listen to the voice of Jehovah your God and will do what is right in his eyes and will indeed give ear to his commandments and keep all his regulations, I shall put none of the maladies upon you that I put upon the Egyptians; because I am Jehovah who is healing you.'"

Acts 4:29, 30 "Now, Jehovah, give attention to their threats, and grant your slaves to keep speaking your word with all boldness, while you stretch out your hand for healing and while signs and portents occur through the name of your holy servant Jesus."

Power Given to Jesus Christ During Earthly Ministry to Heal and Raise the Dead

Acts 10:37, 38 "You know the subject that was talked about throughout the whole of Judea, starting from Galilee after the baptism that John preached, namely, Jesus who was from Nazareth, how God anointed him with holy spirit and power, and he went through the land doing good and healing all those oppressed by the Devil; because God was with him."

Luke 5:17 "In the course of one of the days he was teaching, and Pharisees and teachers of the law who had come out of every village of Galilee and Judea and Jerusalem were sitting there; and Jehovah's power was there for him to do healing."

John 11:43, 44 "When he had said these things, he cried out with a loud voice: 'Lazarus, come on out!' The man that had been dead came out with his feet and hands bound with wrappings and his countenance was bound about with a cloth."

See also the main heading "Jesus Christ," pages 285, 286.

Jesus Gave Gift of Miraculous Healing First to Twelve Apostles, Later to Seventy Other Disciples

Matt. 10:1, 5, 8 "He summoned his twelve disciples and gave them authority over unclean spirits, in order to expel these and to cure every sort of disease and every sort of infirmity. These twelve Jesus sent forth, giving them these orders: . . . 'Cure sick people, raise up dead persons, make lepers clean, expel demons. You received free, give free.'"

Luke 10:1, 2, 8, 9 "After these things the Lord designated seventy others and sent them forth by twos in advance of him into every city and place to which he himself was going to come. Then he began to say to them: . . . 'Wherever you enter into a city and they receive you, eat the things set before you, and cure the sick ones in it, and go on telling them, "The kingdom of God has come near to you."'"

Miraculous Healing Was Evidence that Jesus Was Sent by God, that Early Christians Had God's Spirit

Mark 2:10-12 "'But in order for you men to know that the Son of man has authority to forgive sins upon the earth,'—he said to the paralytic: 'I say to you, Get up, pick up your cot, and go to your home.' At that he did get up, and immediately picked up his cot and walked out in front of them all, so that they were all simply carried away, and they glorified God, saying: 'We never saw the like of it!'"

Luke 7:14-16 "With that he approached and touched the bier, and the bearers stood still, and he said: 'Young man, I say to you, Get up!' And the dead man sat up and started to speak, and he gave him to his mother. Now fear seized them all, and they began to glorify God, saying: 'A great prophet has been raised up among us,' and, 'God has turned his attention to his people.'"

Luke 19:37, 38 "As soon as he got near the road down the Mount of Olives all the multitude of the disciples started to rejoice and praise God with a loud voice concerning all the powerful works they had seen, saying: 'Blessed is the One coming as the King in Jehovah's name! Peace in heaven, and glory in the highest places!'"

Acts 2:22, 23 "Men of Israel, hear these words: Jesus the Nazarene, a man publicly shown by God to you through powerful works and portents and signs that God did through him in your midst, just as you yourselves know, this man, as one delivered up by the determined counsel and foreknowledge of God, you fastened to a stake by the hand of lawless men and did away with."

Heb. 2:3, 4 "How shall we escape if we have neglected a salvation of such greatness in that it began to be spoken through our Lord and was verified for us by those who heard him, while God joined in bearing witness with signs as well as portents and various powerful works and with distributions of holy spirit according to his will?"

Acts 15:12 "At that the entire multitude became silent, and they began to listen to Barnabas and Paul relate the many signs and portents that God did through them among the nations."

Miraculous Healing a Gift of God's Spirit

1 Cor. 12:4, 8, 9 "Now there are varieties of gifts, but there is the same spirit. For example, to one there is given through the spirit speech of wisdom, to another speech of knowledge according to the same spirit, . . . to another gifts of healings by that one spirit."

Miraculous gifts of spirit were passed on only through apostles or in their presence

Acts 8:18-20 "Now when Simon saw that through the laying on of the hands of the apostles the spirit was given, he offered them money, saying: 'Give me also this authority, that anyone upon whom I lay my hands may receive holy spirit.' But Peter said to him: 'May your silver perish with you, because you thought through money to get possession of the free gift of God.'"

Acts 8:14, 15, 17 "When the apostles in Jerusalem heard that Samaria had accepted the word of God, they dispatched Peter and John to them; and these went down and prayed for them to get holy spirit. Then they went laying their hands upon them, and they began to receive holy spirit."

Acts 10:44 "While Peter was yet speaking about these matters the holy spirit fell upon all those hearing the word."

Acts 19:1, 6 "In the course of events, while Apollos was in Corinth, Paul went through the inland parts and came down to Ephesus, and found some disciples. And when Paul laid his hands upon them, the holy spirit came upon them, and they be-

gan speaking with tongues and prophesying."

Last recorded miraculous healings occurred during ministry of the apostle Paul, in first century

Acts 28:8, 9 "But it happened that the father of Publius was lying down distressed with fever and dysentery, and Paul went in to him and prayed, laid his hands upon him and healed him. After this occurred, the rest of the people on the island who had sicknesses also began to come to him and be cured."

Faithful Servants of God Accepted No Money for Curing the Sick

Matt. 10:8 "Cure sick people, raise up dead persons, make lepers clean, expel demons. You received free, give free."

2 Ki. 5:9, 14-16, 20, 26 "So Naaman . . . went down and began to plunge into the Jordan seven times according to the word of the man of the true God; after which his flesh came back like the flesh of a little boy and he became clean. Then he went back to the man of the true God, he with all his camp, and came and stood before him and said: 'Here, now, I certainly know that there is no God anywhere in the earth but in Israel. And now accept, please, a blessing gift from your servant.' However, he said: 'As Jehovah before whom I stand is living, I will not accept it.' And he began to urge him to accept it, but he kept refusing. Then Gehazi the attendant of Elisha the man of the true God said: 'Here my master has spared Naaman this Syrian by not accepting from his hand what he brought. As Jehovah is living, I will run after him and take something from him.' At that [Elisha] said to him: . . . 'Is it a time to accept silver or to accept garments or olive groves or vineyards or sheep or cattle or menservants or maidservants?' "

Inability to Perform Cure Blamed on Disciples' Lack of Faith, Not Lack of Faith of One Seeking a Cure

Matt. 17:14-16, 18-20 "When they came toward the crowd, a man approached him, kneeling down to him and saying: 'Lord, have mercy on my son, because he is an epileptic and is ill, for he falls often into the fire and often into the water; and I brought him to your disciples, but they could not cure him.' Then Jesus rebuked it, and the demon came out of him; and the boy was cured from that hour. Thereupon the disciples came up to Jesus privately and said: 'Why is it we could not expel it?' He said to them: 'Because of your little faith.' "

Lack of faith did not prevent healing, but limited number who came in touch with Jesus

John 5:5-9, 13 "But a certain man was there who had been in his sickness for thirty-eight years. Seeing this man lying down, and being aware that he had already been sick a long time, Jesus said to him: 'Do you want to become sound in health?' The sick man answered him: 'Sir, I do not have a man to put me into the pool when the water is disturbed; but while I am coming another steps down ahead of me.' Jesus said to him: 'Get up, pick up your cot and walk.' With that the man immediately became sound in health, and he picked up his cot and began to walk. . . . But the healed man did not know who he was, for Jesus had turned aside, there being a crowd in the place."

Matt. 13:57, 58 "So they began to stumble at him. But Jesus said to them: 'A prophet is not unhonored except in his home territory and in his own house.' And he did not do many powerful works there on account of their lack of faith."

See also Mark 6:5, 6.

Dead persons raised though obviously unable to manifest faith

Luke 7:12-15 "As he got near the gate of the city, why, look! there was a dead man being carried out, the only-begotten son of his mother. Besides, she was a widow. A considerable crowd from the city was also with her. And when the Lord caught sight of her, he was moved with pity for her, and he said to her: 'Stop weeping.' With that he approached and touched the bier, and the bearers stood still, and he said: 'Young man, I say to you, Get up!' And the dead man sat up and started to speak, and he gave him to his mother."

2 Ki. 13:21 "It came about that as they were burying a man, why, here they saw the marauding band. At once they threw the man into Elisha's burial place and went off. When the man touched the bones of Elisha, he immediately came to life and stood upon his feet."

"One and All" Healed by Jesus and, After Pentecost, by the Apostles; No Failures

Matt. 12:15 "Many also followed him, and he cured them all."

Matt. 8:16 "But after it became evening, people brought him many demon-possessed persons; and he expelled the spirits with a word, and he cured all who were faring badly."

Luke 6:19 "All the crowd were seeking to touch him, because power was going out of him and healing them all."

Acts 5:15, 16 "They brought the sick out even into the broad ways and laid them there upon little beds and cots, in order that, as Peter would go by, at least his shadow might fall upon some one of them. Also, the multitude from the cities around Jerusalem kept coming together, bearing sick people and those troubled with unclean spirits, and they would one and all be cured."

Miraculous Cures by Jesus and Apostles Were Instantaneous and Complete

Matt. 8:2, 3 "Look! a leprous man came up and began doing obeisance to him, saying: 'Lord, if you just want to, you can make me clean.' And so, stretching out his hand, he touched him, saying: 'I want to. Be made clean.' And immediately his leprosy was cleansed away."

Luke 18:35, 40-43 "Now as he was getting near to Jericho a certain blind man was sitting beside the road begging. Then Jesus stood still and commanded the man to be led to him. After he got near, Jesus asked him: 'What do you want me to do for you?' He said: 'Lord, let me recover sight.' So Jesus said to him: 'Recover your sight; your faith has made you well.' And instantly he recovered sight."

John 5:5, 8, 9 "A certain man was there who had been in his sickness for thirty-eight years. Jesus said to him: 'Get up, pick up your cot and walk.' With that the man immediately became sound in health, and he picked up his cot and began to walk."

Acts 9:33, 34 "There he found a certain man named Aeneas, who had been lying flat on his cot for eight years, as he was paralyzed. And Peter said to him: 'Aeneas, Jesus Christ heals you. Rise and make up your bed.' And he rose immediately."

Matt. 14:35, 36 "Upon recognizing him the men of that place sent forth into all that surrounding country, and people brought him all those who were ill. And they went entreating him that they might just touch the fringe of his outer garment; and all those who touched it were made completely well."

See also Acts 3:1, 2, 4, 7.

Not All Had Miraculous Gift of Healing; Not Listed as Most Important Gift

1 Cor. 12:7-9 "The manifestation of the spirit is given to each one for a beneficial purpose. For example, to one there is given through the spirit speech of wisdom, to another speech of knowledge according to the same spirit, to another faith by the same spirit, to another gifts of healings by that one spirit."

1 Cor. 12:28-30 "God has set the respective ones in the congregation, first, apostles; second, prophets; third, teachers; then powerful works; then gifts of healings; helpful services, abilities to direct, different tongues. Not all are apostles, are they? Not all are prophets, are they? Not all are teachers, are they? Not all perform powerful works, do they? Not all have gifts of healings, do they?"

Ability to Perform Powerful Works Not Proof by Itself that One Has True Religion; Must Work in Harmony with God's Will, Adhere to His Word of Truth

Matt. 7:21-23 "Not everyone saying to me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter into the kingdom of the heavens, but the one doing the will of my Father who is in the heavens will. Many will say to me in that day, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your name, and expel demons in your name, and perform many powerful works in your name?' and yet then I will confess to them: I never knew you! Get away from me, you workers of lawlessness."

Acts 8:9-13 "Now in the city there was a certain man named Simon, who, prior to this, had been practicing magical arts and amazing the nation of Samaria, saying he himself was somebody great. And all of them, from the least to the greatest, would pay attention to him and say: 'This man is the Power of God, which can be called Great.' So they would pay attention to him because of his having amazed them for quite a while by his magical arts. But when they believed Philip, who was declaring the good news of the kingdom of God and of the name of Jesus Christ, they proceeded to be baptized, both men and women. Simon himself also became a believer, and, after being baptized, he was in constant attendance upon Philip; and he was amazed at beholding great signs and powerful works taking place."

2 Thess. 2:9, 10 "The lawless one's presence is according to the operation of Satan with every powerful work and lying signs and portents and with every unrighteous deception for those who are perishing, as a retribution because they did not accept the love of the truth that they might be saved."

Matt. 24:24 "False Christs and false prophets will arise and will give great signs and wonders so as to mislead, if possible, even the chosen ones."

See also the main heading "Religion," pages 412-415.

Christians Avail Themselves of Customary Treatment for Ailments

Col. 4:14 "Luke the beloved physician sends you his greetings."

1 Tim. 5:23 "Do not drink water any longer, but use a little wine for the sake of your stomach and your frequent cases of sickness."

Lasting Relief from Physical Ailments Promised in God's Perfect New System of Things

Rev. 21:4 "He will wipe out every tear from their eyes, and death will be no more, neither will mourning nor outcry nor pain be any more. The former things have passed away."

Isa. 25:8 "He will actually swallow up death forever, and the Lord Jehovah will certainly wipe the tears from all faces."

Spiritual Healing Available Now

1 Pet. 2:24 "He himself bore our sins in his own body upon the stake, in order that we might be done with sins and live to righteousness. And 'by his stripes you were healed.'"

Isa. 53:5 "He was being pierced for our transgression; he was being crushed for our errors. The chastisement meant for our peace was upon him, and because of his wounds there has been a healing for us."

See also Matt. 13:15; Ezek. 34: 2, 4, 31.

Christians help to restore those spiritually sick due to sin

Jas. 5:14, 15, 19, 20 "Is there anyone sick among you? Let him call the older men of the congregation to him, and let them pray over him, greasing him with oil in the name of Jehovah. And the prayer of faith will make the indisposed one well, and Jehovah will raise him up. Also, if he has committed sins, it will be forgiven him. My brothers, if anyone among you is misled from the truth and another turns him back, know that he who turns a sinner back from the error of his way will save his soul from death and will cover a multitude of sins."

Gal. 6:1, 2 "Brothers, even though a man takes some false step before he is aware of it, you who have spiritual qualifications try to restore such a man in a spirit of mildness, as you each keep an eye on yourself, for fear you also may be tempted. Go on carrying the burdens of one another, and thus fulfill the law of the Christ."

Happy those conscious of spiritual need

Matt. 5:3 "Happy are those conscious of their spiritual need, since the kingdom of the heavens belongs to them."

Heart

Heart, Used Symbolically of Capacity for Interested Concern and Motivation, Frequently Focuses Attention on What a Person Is Inside

Luke 5:22 "Jesus, discerning their reasonings, said in answer to them: 'What are you reasoning out in your hearts?'"

Ps. 49:3 "The meditation of my heart will be of things of understanding."

Prov. 16:9 "The heart of earthling man may think out his way, but Jehovah himself does the directing of his steps."

1 Pet. 3:3, 4 "Do not let your adornment be that of the external braiding of the hair and of the putting on of gold ornaments or the wearing of outer garments, but let it be the secret person of the heart in the incorruptible apparel of the quiet and mild spirit, which is of great value in the eyes of God."

Rev. 18:7 "In her heart she keeps saying, 'I sit a queen, and I am no widow, and I shall never see mourning.'"

Seat of Affections or Desire Referred To as Heart

Deut. 6:5 "You must love Jehovah your God with all your heart and all your soul and all your vital force."

1 Sam. 12:20 "Samuel said to the people: 'Do not be afraid. You—you have done all this evil. Only do not turn aside from following Jehovah, and you must

serve Jehovah with all your heart.'"

Deut. 15:7 "In case some one of your brothers becomes poor among you in one of your cities, in your land that Jehovah your God is giving you, you must not harden your heart or be close-fisted toward your poor brother."

Judg. 16:15 "She now said to him: 'How dare you say, "I do love you," when your heart is not with me?'"

Matt. 5:28 "I say to you that everyone that keeps on looking at a woman so as to have a passion for her has already committed adultery with her in his heart."

Rom. 1:24 "Therefore God, in keeping with the desires of their hearts, gave them up to uncleanness."

Importance of a Good Heart, Spiritually Speaking

Prov. 4:23 "More than all else that is to be guarded, safeguard your heart, for out of it are the sources of life."

Isa. 65:14 "Look! My own servants will cry out joyfully because of the good condition of the heart, but you yourselves will make outcries because of the pain of heart and you will howl because of sheer breakdown of spirit."

Prov. 19:8 "He that is acquiring heart is loving his own soul. He that is guarding discernment is going to find good."

Ps. 27:14 "Hope in Jehovah; be courageous and let your heart be strong."

How to Safeguard the Symbolic Heart

Ps. 19:14 "Let the sayings of my mouth and the meditation of my heart become pleasurable before you, O Jehovah my Rock and my Redeemer."

Phil. 4:8 "Finally, brothers, whatever things are true, whatever things are of serious concern, whatever things are righteous, whatever things are chaste, whatever things are lovable, whatever things are well spoken of, whatever virtue there is and whatever praiseworthy thing there is, continue considering these things."

Ps. 119:11 "In my heart I have treasured up your saying, in order that I may not sin against you."

Prov. 23:12 "Do bring your heart to discipline and your ear to the sayings of knowledge."

Prov. 3:3, 5 "May loving-kindness and trueness themselves not leave you. Tie them about your throat. Write them upon the tablet of your heart. Trust in Jehovah with all your heart and do not lean upon your own understanding."

Luke 21:34 "Pay attention to yourselves that your hearts never become weighed down with overeating and heavy drinking and anxieties of life."

Evidence of a Good Heart

Matt. 12:34, 35 "Out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaks. The good man out of his good treasure sends out good things, whereas the wicked man out of his wicked treasure sends out wicked things."

Prov. 15:28 "The heart of the righteous one meditates so as to answer."

Prov. 10:8 "The one wise in heart will accept commandments."

Ps. 119:97, 104 "How I do love your law! All day long it is my concern. Owing to your orders I behave with understanding. That is why I have hated every false path."

Evidence of a Bad Heart

Luke 6:45 "A wicked man brings forth what is wicked out of his wicked treasure; for out of the heart's abundance his mouth speaks."

Matt. 15:18, 19 "However, the things proceeding out of the mouth come out of the heart, and those things defile a man. For example, out of the heart come wicked reasonings, murders, adulteries, fornications, thieveries, false testimonies, blasphemies."

Prov. 6:12, 14 "A good-for-nothing man, a man of hurtfulness, is walking with crookedness of speech. Perverseness is in his heart. He is fabricating something bad all the time. He keeps sending out merely contentions."

Prov. 12:20 "Deception is in the heart of those fabricating mischief."

Jehovah Examines Our Heart

1 Chron. 28:9 "All hearts Jehovah is searching, and every inclination of the thoughts he is discerning."

2 Chron. 6:30 "You yourself alone well know the heart of the sons of mankind."

Prov. 21:2 "Every way of a man is upright in his own eyes, but Jehovah is making an estimate of hearts."

Prov. 24:12 "In case you should say: 'Look! We did not know of this,' will not he himself that is making an estimate of hearts discern it?"

1 Sam. 16:7 "Jehovah said to Samuel: 'Do not look at his appearance and at the height of his stature, for I have rejected him. For not the way man sees is the way God sees, because mere man sees what appears to the eyes; but as for Jehovah, he sees what the heart is.'"

Jer. 17:10 "I, Jehovah, am searching the heart, examining the kidneys, even to give to each one according to his ways, according to the fruitage of his dealings."

Heaven

Jehovah's Dwelling Place

Isa. 66:1 "This is what Jehovah has said: 'The heavens are my throne.'"

Heb. 9:24 "Christ entered, not into a holy place made with hands, which is a copy of the reality, but into heaven itself, now to appear before the person of God for us."

Eph. 1:20 "He raised [Christ] up from the dead and seated him at his right hand in the heavenly places."

1 Ki. 8:30 "You must listen to the request for favor on the part of your servant . . . and may you yourself hear at the place of your dwelling, in the heavens."

Deut. 10:14 "Behold, to Jehovah your God belong the heavens, even the heavens of the heavens."

God's Organization of Spirit Creatures

Rev. 12:12 "On this account be glad, you heavens and you who reside in them!"

See also Rev. 9:16; Dan. 7:10.

Hope of Share in Heavenly Kingdom Held Out to "Little Flock" of Christians

Luke 12:32 "Have no fear, little flock, because your Father has approved of giving you the kingdom."

John 14:2, 3 "In the house of my Father there are many abodes. Otherwise, I would have told you, because I am going my way to prepare a place for you. Also, if I go my way and prepare a place for you, I am coming again and will receive you home to myself, that where I am you also may be."

1 Pet. 1:3, 4 "Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, for according to his great mercy he gave us a new birth to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, to an incorruptible and undefiled and unfading inheritance. It is reserved in the heavens for you."

Col. 1:5 "The hope that is being reserved for you in the heavens."

Heb. 12:22, 23 "You have approached a Mount Zion and a city of the living God, heavenly Jerusalem, and myriads of angels, in general assembly, and the congregation of the first-born who have been enrolled in the heavens."

To be priests and kings with Christ

Rev. 20:6 "They will be priests of God and of the Christ, and will rule as kings with him for the thousand years."

Rev. 5:9, 10 "They sing a new song, saying: 'You are worthy to take the scroll and open its seals, because you were slaughtered and with your blood you bought persons for God out of every tribe and tongue and people and nation, and you made them to be a kingdom and priests to our God, and they will rule as kings over the earth.'"

Only a limited number from among mankind to be in heaven with the Lamb Jesus Christ

Rev. 14:1-4 "I saw, and, look! the Lamb standing upon the Mount Zion, and with him a hundred and forty-four thousand having his name and the name of his Father written on their foreheads. . . . And they are singing as if a new song before the throne and before the four living creatures and the older persons; and no one was able to master that song but the hundred and forty-four thousand, who have been bought from the earth. . . . These were bought from among mankind as a first fruits to God and to the Lamb."

144,000 are spiritual Israelites, include both Jews and Gentiles

Rev. 7:4 "I heard the number of those who were sealed, a hundred and forty-four thousand, sealed out of every tribe of the sons of Israel."

Rom. 2:10, 11, 28, 29 "Glory and honor and peace for everyone who works what is good, for the Jew first and also for the Greek. For there is no partiality with God. For he is not a Jew who is one on the outside . . . But he is a Jew who is one on the inside, and his circumcision is that of the heart by spirit."

Eph. 3:6 "People of the nations should be joint heirs and fellow members of the body and partakers with us of the promise in union with Christ Jesus."

Rom. 9:23, 24 "In order that he might make known the riches of his glory upon vessels of mercy, which he prepared beforehand for glory, namely, us, whom he called not only from among Jews but also from among nations."

Gal. 3:28 "There is neither Jew nor Greek, . . . for you are all one person in union with Christ Jesus."

Chosen by God for heavenly life

2 Thess. 2:13, 14 "God selected you . . . To this very destiny he called you through the good news we declare, for the purpose of acquiring the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ."

Rom. 8:14-17 "All who are led by God's spirit, these are God's sons. For you did not receive a spirit of slavery causing fear again, but you received a spirit of adoption as sons, by which spirit we cry out: '*Abba*, Father!' The spirit itself bears witness with our spirit that we are God's children. If, then, we are children, we are also heirs: heirs indeed of God, but joint heirs with Christ, provided we suffer together that we may also be glorified together."

2 Pet. 1:4, 10, 11 "He has freely given us the precious and very grand promises, that through these you may become sharers in divine nature . . . For this reason, brothers, all the more do your utmost to make the calling and choosing of you sure for yourselves; . . . thus there will be richly supplied to you the entrance into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ."

See also the main heading "Born Again," pages 56, 57.

Other Faithful Servants of God to Be Rewarded with Life on Earth, Not in Heaven

Ps. 37:9, 11 "Evildoers themselves will be cut off, but those hoping in Jehovah are the ones that will possess the earth. But the meek ones themselves will possess the earth, and they will indeed find their exquisite delight in the abundance of peace."

Rev. 21:1-4 "I saw . . . a new earth; for the former . . . earth had passed away . . . With that I heard a loud voice from the throne say: 'Look! The tent of God is with mankind, and he will reside with them, and they will be his peoples. And God himself will be with them. And he will wipe out every tear from their eyes, and death will be no more, neither will mourning nor outcry nor pain be any more.'"

Prov. 2:21, 22 "The upright are the ones that will reside in the earth, and the blameless are the ones that will be left over in it. As regards the wicked, they will be cut off from the very earth; and as for the treacherous, they will be torn away from it."

Men of faith who lived and died before Jesus' death and resurrection not in heaven

Matt. 11:11 "Truly I say to you people, Among those born of women there has not been raised up a greater than John the Baptist; but a person that is a lesser one in the kingdom of the heavens is greater than he is."

John 3:13 "No man has ascended into heaven but he that descended from heaven, the Son of man."

Acts 2:34 "Actually David did not ascend to the heavens."

Elijah's ascension in a windstorm did not mark end of his earthly life

2 Ki. 2:11, 12 "It came about that as they were walking along, speaking as they walked, why, look! a fiery war chariot and fiery horses, and they proceeded to make a separation between them both; and Elijah went ascending in the windstorm to the heavens. All the while Elisha was seeing it, and he was crying out: 'My father, my father, the war chariot of Israel and his horsemen!' And he did not see him any more."

2 Chron. 21:12-14 "Eventually there came a writing to him [King Jehoram of Judah at Jerusalem] from Elijah the prophet [more than seven years after his ascension], saying: 'This is what Jehovah the God of David your forefather has said, "Due to the fact that you have not walked in the ways of Jehoshaphat your father . . . look! Jehovah is dealing a great blow to your people and to your sons and to your wives and to all your goods.'"

"New Heavens" Promised; Righteous Heavenly Kingdom

2 Pet. 3:13 "There are new heavens . . . that we are awaiting according to his promise, and in these righteousness is to dwell."

Dan. 2:44; 7:13, 14 "In the days of those kings the God of heaven will set up a kingdom that will never be brought to ruin. And the kingdom itself will not be passed on to any other people. It will crush and put an end to

all these kingdoms, and it itself will stand to times indefinite." "I kept on beholding in the visions of the night, and, see there! with the clouds of the heavens someone like a son of man happened to be coming; and to the Ancient of Days he gained access, and they brought him up close even before that One. And to him there were given rulership and dignity and kingdom, that the peoples, national groups and languages should all serve even him. His rulership is an indefinitely lasting rulership that will not pass away, and his kingdom one that will not be brought to ruin."

Position of Divine Favor Referred To as Heaven

Eph. 1:3; 2:6 "Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, for he has blessed us with every spiritual blessing in the heavenly places in union with Christ." "And he raised us up together and seated us together in the heavenly places in union with Christ Jesus."

Rev. 11:12 "They heard a loud voice out of heaven say to them: 'Come on up here.' And they went up into heaven in the cloud, and their enemies beheld them."

Organization of Wicked Spirit Forces

Eph. 6:12 "We have a fight, not against blood and flesh, but against the governments, against the authorities, against the world rulers of this darkness, against the wicked spirit forces in the heavenly places."

To be destroyed

2 Pet. 3:7, 10 "The heavens . . . that are now are stored up for fire and are being reserved to the day of judgment and of destruction . . . Jehovah's day will come as a thief, in which the heavens will pass away with a hissing noise."

Rev. 20:11 "I saw a great white throne and the one seated on it. From before him the earth and the heaven fled away, and no place was found for them."

2 Pet. 2:4 "God did not hold back from punishing the angels that sinned, but, by throwing them into Tartarus, delivered them to pits of dense darkness to be reserved for judgment."

Matt. 25:41 "Be on your way from me, you who have been cursed, into the everlasting fire prepared for the Devil and his angels."

Expanse Immediately Surrounding Earth Called Heaven

Gen. 1:6-8 "God went on to say: 'Let an expanse come to be in between the waters and let a dividing occur between the waters and the waters.' Then God proceeded to make the expanse and to make a division between the waters that should be beneath the expanse and the waters that should be above the expanse. And it came to be so. And God began to call the expanse Heaven."

Gen. 7:11 "In the six hundredth year of Noah's life . . . all the springs of the vast watery deep were broken open and the floodgates of the heavens were opened."

Luke 17:24 "Lightning, by its flashing, shines from one part under heaven to another part under heaven."

The Physical Universe

Gen. 1:1 "In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth."

Ps. 19:1 "The heavens are declaring the glory of God; and of the work of his hands the expanse is telling."

Gen. 22:17 "I shall surely multiply your seed like the stars of the heavens."

Isa. 40:12 "Who has measured the waters in the mere hollow of his hand, and taken the proportions of the heavens themselves with a mere span?"

Hellfire

Impossible for the Dead to Be Tormented; They Are Unconscious

Eccl. 9:5, 10 "The living are conscious that they will die; but as for the dead, they are conscious of nothing at all . . . All that your hand finds to do, do with your very power, for there is no work nor devising nor knowledge nor wisdom in Sheol ["the grave," *AV;* "hell," *Dy*], the place to which you are going."

Ps. 146:4 "His spirit goes out, he goes back to his ground; in that day his thoughts do perish."

Ps. 31:17 "May the wicked ones be ashamed; may they keep silent in Sheol ["the grave," *AV;* "hell," *Dy* at Ps. 30:18]."

The soul itself is dead

Ezek. 18:4, 20 "The soul that is sinning—it itself will die. The soul that is sinning—it itself will die."

Matt. 26:36, 38 "Jesus . . . said to them: 'My soul is deeply grieved, even to death.'" (See also Isa. 53:12.)

Acts 3:23 "Any soul that does not listen to that Prophet will be completely destroyed from among the people."

See also the main heading "Soul," pages 463-465.

True Meaning of "Hell" Confused by Failure of Translators to Distinguish Between Original-Language Words

"Much confusion and misunderstanding has been caused through the early translators of the Bible persistently rendering the Hebrew Sheol and the Greek Hades and Gehenna by the word hell. The simple transliteration of these words by the translators of the revised editions of the Bible has not sufficed to appreciably clear up this confusion and misconception."—*The Encyclopedia Americana* (New York; 1942), Vol. 14, p. 81.

Greek "Hades" equivalent to Hebrew "Sheol"; those in Sheol-Hades unconscious

Ps. 16:10 "You will not leave my soul in Sheol ["hell," *AV; Dy* at Ps. 15:10]."

Acts 2:27, 31 "'You will not leave my soul in Hades ["hell," *AV; Dy*].' . . . he saw beforehand and spoke concerning the resurrection of the Christ, that neither was he forsaken in Hades ["hell," *AV; Dy*]."

"HADES . . . It corresponds to 'Sheol' in the O.T. [Old Testament]. In the A.V. [Authorized Version] of the O.T. [Old Testament] and N.T. [New Testament], it has been unhappily rendered 'Hell.'"—*An Expository Dictionary of New Testament Words* (London; 1962), W. E. Vine, Vol. II, p. 187.

"Hell . . . First it stands for the Hebrew Sheol of the Old Testament and the Greek Hades of the Septuagint and New Testament. Since Sheol in Old Testament times referred simply to the abode of the dead and suggested no moral distinctions, the word 'hell,' as understood today, is not a happy translation."—*Collier's Encyclopedia* (United States; 1965), Vol. 12, p. 27.

See also the main heading "Sheol—Hades," pages 448-451.

Tartarus used only with reference to abasement of spirit angels that sinned

2 Pet. 2:4 "God did not hold back from punishing the angels that sinned, but, by throwing them into Tartarus ["hell," *AV;* "lower hell," *Dy*], delivered them to pits of dense darkness to be reserved for judgment."

"The verb *tartaroó*, translated 'cast down to hell' in 2 Pet. 2:4, [AV] signifies to consign to Tartarus, which is neither Sheol nor Hades nor Hell."—*An Expository Dictionary of New Testament Words* (London; 1962), W. E. Vine, Vol. II, p. 213.

Gehenna alludes to city dump and incinerator outside Jerusalem; symbolizes second death

"The Valley of Hinnom near Jerusalem where Solomon built 'an high place' for Moloch. . . . Because some of the Israelites . . . sacrificed their children to Moloch there, the valley came to be regarded as a place of abomination. In a later period it was made a place for the dumping of refuse, and perpetual fires were maintained to prevent pestilence."—*The New Funk & Wagnalls Encyclopedia* (New York; 1950), Vol. 15, p. 5576.

"GEHENNA . . . It became the common lay-stall of the city, where the dead bodies of criminals, and the carcases of animals, and every other kind of filth was cast."—*Smith's Dictionary of the Bible* (Boston; 1889), Vol. 1, p. 879.

Mark 9:43, 45 "If ever your hand makes you stumble, cut it off; it is finer for you to enter into life maimed than with two hands to go off into Gehenna ["hell," *AV; Dy* at Mark 9:42; "Gehenna," *ED*], into the fire that cannot be put out. And if your foot makes you stumble, cut it off; it is finer for you to enter into life lame than with two feet to be pitched into Gehenna ["hell," *AV; Dy* at Mark 9:44; "Gehenna," *ED*]."

Rev. 21:8 "As for the cowards and those without faith and those who are disgusting in their filth and murderers and fornicators and those practicing spiritism and idolaters and all the liars, their portion will be in the lake that burns with fire and sulphur. This means the second death."

Hell (Hades) Not a Lake of Fire, but Eventually Cast into Lake of Fire, Meaning Eternal Destruction

Rev. 20:14, 15 "Death and Hades ["hell," *AV; Dy*] were hurled into the lake of fire. This means the second death, the lake of fire. Furthermore, whoever was not found written in the book of life was hurled into the lake of fire."

Upright as Well as Wicked People Go to Hell

Ps. 16:10 "You will not leave my soul in Sheol ["hell," *AV; Dy* at Ps. 15:10]. You will not allow your loyal one to see the pit."

Gen. 37:34, 35 "Jacob . . . kept refusing to take comfort and saying: 'For I shall go down mourning to my son into Sheol ["the grave," *AV;* "hell," *Dy*]!'"

Job 14:13 "O that in Sheol ["the grave," *AV;* "hell," *Dy*] you would conceal me, that you would keep me secret until your anger turns back, that you would set a time limit for me and remember me!"

Ps. 9:17 "Wicked people will turn back to Sheol ["hell," *AV; Dy* in v. 18], even all the nations forgetting God."

Hope Held Out for Those in Hell; Deliverance Possible

Acts 2:31, 32 "He saw beforehand and spoke concerning the resurrection of the Christ, that neither was he forsaken in Hades ["hell," *AV; Dy*] nor did his flesh see corruption. This Jesus God resurrected, of which fact we are all witnesses."

Rev. 1:18 "I became dead, but, look! I am living forever and ever, and I have the keys of death and of Hades ["hell," *AV; Dy*]."

Hos. 13:14 "From the hand of Sheol ["the grave," *AV;* "death," *Dy*] I shall redeem them; from death I shall recover them. Where are your stings, O Death? Where is your destructiveness, O Sheol ["grave," *AV;* "hell," *Dy*]?"

Rev. 20:13 "Death and Hades ["hell," *AV; Dy*] gave up those dead in them."

Associated with Death and the Dead, Not Life and the Living

Prov. 7:27 "The ways to Sheol ["hell," *AV; Dy*] her house is; they are descending to the interior rooms of death."

Rev. 6:8 "And I saw, and, look! a pale horse; and the one seated upon it had the name Death. And Hades ["hell," *AV; Dy*] was closely following him."

2 Sam. 22:5, 6 "Deadly breaking waves encircled me; there were flash floods of good-for-nothing men that kept terrifying me. The ropes of Sheol ["hell," *AV; Dy*] themselves surrounded me; the snares of death confronted me."

Hab. 2:5 "Because the wine is dealing treacherously, an able-bodied man is self-assuming; and he will not reach his goal, he who has made his soul spacious just like Sheol ["hell," *AV; Dy*], and who is like death and cannot be satisfied."

Scriptures Contrast Life and Death, Not Life in Happiness and Life in Torment

Deut. 30:15, 19 "I do put before you today life and good, and death and bad. . . . I have put life and death before you, the blessing and the malediction; and you must choose life in order that you may keep alive."

Prov. 18:21 "Death and life are in the power of the tongue."

1 John 3:14 "We know we have passed over from death to life."

2 Cor. 4:12 "Death is at work in us, but life in you."

Satan Not Confined to Hell to Stoke the Fires; Had Access to Heaven Until Ousted at Time of Kingdom's Birth

Job 1:6, 7 "It came to be the day when the sons of the true God entered to take their station before Jehovah, and even Satan proceeded to enter right among them. Then Jehovah said to Satan: 'Where do you come from?' At that Satan answered Jehovah and said: 'From roving about in the earth and from walking about in it.'" (See also Job 2:1, 2.)

Rev. 12:7-10 "War broke out in heaven: Michael and his angels battled with the dragon, and the dragon and its angels battled but it did not prevail, neither was a place found for them any longer in heaven. So down the great dragon was hurled, the original serpent, the one called Devil and Satan, who is misleading the entire inhabited earth; he was hurled down to the earth, and his angels were hurled down with him. And I heard a loud voice in heaven say: 'Now have come to pass the salvation and the power and the kingdom of our God and the authority of his Christ, because the accuser of our brothers has been hurled down.'"

Satan not cast into "lake of fire" until after thousand-year reign of Christ

Rev. 20:7-10 "As soon as the thousand years have been ended, Satan will be let loose out of his prison, and he will go out to mislead those nations in the four corners of the earth. . . . But fire came down out of heaven and devoured them. And the Devil who was misleading them was hurled into the lake of fire and sulphur."

Any Suffering One Experiences Before Death; Afterward He Is Aware of No "Pain of Loss" or "Separation from God"

Matt. 8:6 "My manservant is laid up in the house with paralysis, being terribly tormented."

Heb. 11:36, 37 "Yes, others received their trial by mockings

and scourgings, indeed, more than that, by bonds and prisons. They were stoned, they were tried, they were sawn asunder, . . . they went about in sheepskins, in goatskins, while they were in want, in tribulation, under ill-treatment."

Eccl. 9:5 "As for the dead, they are conscious of nothing at all."

Ps. 139:7, 8 "Where can I go from your spirit, and where can I run away from your face? If I should ascend to heaven, there you would be; and if I should spread out my couch in Sheol ["hell," *AV; Dy* at Ps. 138:8], look! you would be there."

Prov. 15:11 "Sheol ["hell," *AV; Dy*] and the place of destruction are in front of Jehovah."

Rich Man and Lazarus (Luke 16:19-31) a Parable or Illustration

Matt. 13:34, 35 "All these things Jesus spoke to the crowds by illustrations ["parables," *AV; Dy*]. Indeed, without an illustration ["parable," *AV*; "parables," *Dy*] he would not speak to them; that there might be fulfilled what was spoken through the prophet who said: 'I will open my mouth with illustrations ["parables," *AV; Dy*], I will publish things hidden since the founding.' "

Abraham was dead in the grave; therefore, Lazarus was not literally in his bosom; consistently, fire is not literal

Luke 16:22-24 "Now in course of time the beggar died and he was carried off by the angels to the bosom position of Abraham. Also, the rich man died and was buried. And in Hades he lifted up his eyes, he existing in torments, and he saw Abraham afar off and Lazarus in the bosom position with him. So he called and said, 'Father Abraham, have mercy on me and send Lazarus to dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue, because I am in anguish in this blazing fire.' "

Gen. 25:8-10 "Then Abraham expired and died in a good old age, old and satisfied, and was gathered to his people. So Isaac and Ishmael his sons buried him in the cave of Machpelah . . . There Abraham was buried."

John 3:10, 13 "Jesus said to him: . . . 'no man has ascended into heaven but he that descended from heaven, the Son of man.' "

Eccl. 9:5, 6, 10 "The living are conscious that they will die; but as for the dead, they are conscious of nothing at all, neither do they any more have wages, because the remembrance of them has been forgotten. Also, their love and their hate and their jealousy have already perished, and they have no portion any more to time indefinite in anything that has to be done under the sun. All that your hand finds to do, do with your very power, for there is no work nor devising nor knowledge nor wisdom in Sheol ["the grave," *AV*; "hell," *Dy*], the place to which you are going."

Jer. 23:29 " 'Is not my word correspondingly like a fire?' is the utterance of Jehovah."

Money-loving, self-righteous religious leaders pictured by rich man decked out in linen and royal purple

Luke 16:14, 15, 19 "Now the Pharisees, who were money lovers, were listening to all these things, and they began to sneer at him. Consequently he said to them: 'You are those who declare yourselves righteous before men, but God knows your hearts; because what is lofty among men is a disgusting thing in God's sight. But a certain man was rich, and he used to deck himself with purple and linen, enjoying himself from day to day with magnificence.' "

Matt. 21:43-45 " 'The kingdom of God will be taken from you and be given to a nation producing its fruits.' . . . Now when the chief priests and the Pharisees had heard his illustrations, they took note that he was speaking about them."

Jesus' teachings caused torment to religious leaders who, though physically alive, were dead in God's eyes

Luke 16:22, 23 "The rich man died and was buried. And in Hades ["hell," *AV; Dy*] he lifted up his eyes, he existing in torments."

Matt. 23:13, 33 "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because you shut up the kingdom of the heavens before men; for you yourselves do not go in, neither do you permit those on their way in to go in. Serpents, offspring of vipers, how are you to flee from the judgment of Gehenna ["hell," *AV; Dy*]?"

Luke 19:47 "He went teaching daily in the temple. But the chief priests and the scribes and the principal ones of the people were seeking to destroy him."

See also Acts 5:27-33.

Matt. 23:27, 34, 35 "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! . . . here I am sending forth to you prophets and wise men and public instructors. Some of them you will kill and impale, and some of them you will scourge in your synagogues and persecute from city to city; that there may come upon you all the righteous blood spilled on earth, from the blood of righteous Abel to the blood of Zechariah son of Barachiah, whom you murdered between the sanctuary and the altar."

See also the main heading "Death," page 144.

Persons formerly despised but now favored represented by beggar Lazarus

Luke 16:25 "Abraham said [to the rich man], 'Child, remember that you received in full your good things in your lifetime, but Lazarus correspondingly the injurious things. Now, however, he is having comfort here but you are in anguish.' "

Matt. 21:23, 31, 32 "Now after he went into the temple, the chief priests and the older men of influence of the people came up to him. . . . Jesus said to them: 'Truly I say to you that the tax collectors and the harlots are going ahead of you into the kingdom of God. For John came to you in a way of righteousness, but you did not believe him. However, the tax collectors and the harlots believed him, and you, although you saw this, did not feel regret afterwards so as to believe him.' "

Luke 18:9-14 "He spoke this illustration also to some who trusted in themselves that they were righteous and who considered the rest as nothing: 'Two men went up into the temple to pray, the one a Pharisee and the other a tax collector. The Pharisee stood and began to pray these things to himself, "O God, I thank you I am not as the rest of men, extortioners, unrighteous, adulterers, or even as this tax collector. I fast twice a week, I give the tenth of all things I acquire." But the tax collector standing at a distance was not willing even to raise his eyes heavenward, but kept beating his breast, saying, "O God, be gracious to me a sinner." I tell you, This man went down to his home proved more righteous than that man.' "

Luke 5:30-32 "The Pharisees and their scribes began murmuring to his disciples, saying: 'Why is it you eat and drink with tax collectors and sinners?' In reply Jesus said to them: "Those who are healthy do not need a physician, but those who are ailing do. I have come to call, not righteous persons, but sinners to repentance.' "

Symbolic Torment by Locusts for Five Months Not Eternal Torment in Fire

Rev. 1:1; 9:5 "A revelation by Jesus Christ, which God gave him, to show his slaves the things that must shortly take place. And he sent forth his angel and presented it in signs." "And it was granted the locusts, not to kill them, but that these should be tormented five months, and the torment upon them was as torment by a scorpion when it strikes a man."

References to "Wild Beast" and "Lamb" in Revelation 14:9-11 Indicate 'Torment with Fire' Also Symbolic

Rev. 14:9-11 "Another angel, a third, followed them, saying in a loud voice: 'If anyone worships the wild beast and its image, and receives a mark on his forehead or upon his hand, he will also drink of the wine of the anger of God that is poured out undiluted into the cup of his wrath, and he shall be tormented with fire and sulphur in the sight of the holy angels and in the sight of the Lamb. And the smoke of their torment ascends forever and ever, and day and night they have no rest, those who worship the wild beast and its image, and whoever receives the mark of its name.'"

Pronouncements of impending destruction torment those condemned

Rev. 11:10 "Those dwelling on the earth rejoice over them and enjoy themselves, and they will send gifts to one another, because these two prophets tormented those dwelling on the earth."

Jer. 25:15, 29, 34-36 "This is what Jehovah the God of Israel said to me: 'Take this cup of the wine of rage out of my hand, and you must make all the nations to whom I am sending you drink it. For, look! it is upon the city upon which my name is called that I am starting off in bringing calamity, and should you yourselves in any way go free of punishment? Howl, you shepherds, and cry out! And wallow about, you majestic ones of the flock, because your days for slaughtering and for your scatterings have been fulfilled, and you must fall like a desirable vessel! And a place to flee to has perished from the shepherds, and a means of escape from the majestic ones of the flock. Listen! The outcry of the shepherds, and the howling of the majestic ones of the flock, for Jehovah is despoiling their pasturage.'"

Jer. 26:8, 9 "So it came about that when Jeremiah had completed speaking all that Jehovah had commanded him to speak to all the people, then the priests and the prophets and all the people laid hold of him, saying: 'You will positively die. Why is it that you have prophesied in the name of Jehovah, saying, "Like that in Shiloh is how this house will become, and this very city will be devastated so as to be without an inhabitant"?' And all the people kept congregating themselves about Jeremiah in the house of Jehovah."

Satan's Fiery "Torment" Is Confinement in Everlasting Death

Rev. 20:10, 14, 15 "The Devil . . . was hurled into the lake of fire and sulphur, where both the wild beast and the false prophet already were; and they will be tormented day and night forever and ever. . . . This means the second death, the lake of fire. Furthermore, whoever was not found written in the book of life was hurled into the lake of fire."

Matt. 18:34 "His master, provoked to wrath, delivered him to the jailers ["tormenters," 1950 Ed., footnote], until he should pay back all that was owing."

Holidays

Christians Not Commanded to Observe Certain Days as Holidays

Gal. 4:9-11 "Now that you have come to know God, or rather now that you have come to be known by God, how is it that you are turning back again to the weak and beggarly elementary things and want to slave for them over again? You are scrupulously observing days and months and seasons and years. I fear for you, that somehow I have toiled to no purpose respecting you."

Col. 2:16, 17 "Therefore let no man judge you in eating and drinking or in respect of a festival or of an observance of the new moon or of a sabbath; for those things are a shadow of the things to come, but the reality belongs to the Christ."

No part of world, commanded not to love world of unbelievers and their way of life; do not share in their festivities

John 15:19 "If you were part of the world, the world would be fond of what is its own. Now because you are no part of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, on this account the world hates you."

1 John 2:15, 16 "Do not be loving either the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him; because everything in the world—the desire of the flesh and the desire of the eyes and the showy display of one's means of life—does not originate with the Father, but originates with the world."

Rom. 12:2 "Quit being fashioned after this system of things, but be transformed by making your mind over, that you may prove to yourselves the good and acceptable and perfect will of God."

Birthdays

Scriptures mention observance only by pagans

Gen. 40:20-22 "Now on the third day it turned out to be Pharaoh's birthday, and he proceeded to make a feast for all his servants . . . Accordingly he returned the chief of the cupbearers to his post of cupbearer . . . But the chief of the bakers he hung up."

Matt. 14:6-10 "But when Herod's birthday was being celebrated the daughter of Herodias danced at it and pleased Herod so much that he promised with an oath to give her whatever she asked. Then she, under her mother's coaching, said: 'Give me here upon a platter the head of John the Baptist.' Grieved though he was, the king out of regard for his oaths and for those reclining with him commanded it to be given; and he sent and had John beheaded in the prison." (See also Mark 6:21.)

History testifies that faithful servants of God shunned such celebrations

"The notion of a *birthday festival* was far from the ideas of the Christians of this period in general."—*The History of the Christian Religion and Church During the First Centuries* (New York; 1848), by Augustus Neander (translated by Henry John Rose), p. 190.

"In the Bible there is no instance of birthday celebrations among the Jews themselves. The example of Herod the tetrarch, the celebration of whose birthday cost John the Baptist his life,

can scarcely be regarded as such, the family to which he belonged being notorious for its adoption of heathen customs. In fact, the later Jews at least regarded birthday celebrations as parts of idolatrous worship, and this probably on account of the idolatrous rites with which they were observed in honor of those who were regarded as the patron gods of the day on which the party was born."—*Cyclopædia of Biblical, Theological and Ecclesiastical Literature* (New York; 1882), by John M'Clintock and James Strong, Vol. I, p. 817.

"Of all the holy people in the Scriptures, no one is recorded to have kept a feast or held a great banquet on his birthday. It is only sinners who make great rejoicings over the day on which they were born into this world below."—*The Catholic Encyclopedia* (New York; 1911), Vol. X, p. 709 (quoting Origen Adamantius of the third century).

One's birthday not the thing of greatest importance

Eccl. 7:1, 8 "A name is better than good oil, and the day of death than the day of one's being born. Better is the end afterward of a matter than its beginning."

Christmas

Jesus instructed followers to commemorate his death, not his birth

1 Cor. 11:24-26 "After giving thanks, he broke it and said: 'This means my body which is in your behalf. Keep doing this in remembrance of me.' He did likewise respecting the cup also, after he had the evening meal, saying: 'This cup means the new covenant by virtue of my blood. Keep doing this, as often as you drink it, in remembrance of me.' For as often as you eat this loaf and drink this cup, you keep proclaiming the death of the Lord, until he arrives."

Observance of Jesus' birth began in later centuries; many churches continued to view it as pagan

"Christmas was not among the earliest festivals of the Church. Irenæus and Tertullian omit it from their lists of feasts. . . . The first evidence of the feast is from Egypt."—*The Catholic Encyclopedia* (New York; 1908), Vol. III, p. 724.

"The observance of Christmas is not of divine appointment, nor is it of New Testament origin. The day of Christ's birth cannot be ascertained from the New Testament, or, indeed, from any other source. The fathers of the first three centuries do not speak of any special observance of the nativity. . . . But it is historically certain that the Christmas festival proper 'is of comparatively late institution.' "—*Cyclopædia of Biblical, Theological and Ecclesiastical Literature* (New York; 1882), by John M'Clintock and James Strong, Vol. II, p. 276.

"The first distinct reference to [Christmas] observance belongs to the pontificate of Liberius (352-366). It appears at this date to have been a well-known festival at Rome. In the East, its introduction was some years later. Chrysostom, in 386, spoke of it as having been known in Antioch for less than ten years." —*History of the Christian Church* (New York; 1894), by Henry C. Sheldon, Vol. I, pp. 489, 490.

"By the end of the middle ages, the celebration of Allhallows Eve was an established part of the annual calendar of the Roman Catholic Church. However, after the Reformation, Protestants rejected this feast along with other important ones such as Christmas and Easter."—*The Encyclopædia Britannica*, 1959 edition, Vol. 11, p. 107.

"There were, within the Church, criticisms of the observance on the grounds of its resembling pagan rites, of its being sun-worship . . . and, as late as 1644, during the Puritan ascendancy, the English Parliament forbade observance of the festival."—*Funk & Wagnalls Standard Dictionary of Folklore, Mythology and Legend* (New York; 1949), Vol. 1, p. 229.

See also the main heading "Celebrations," page 63.

Jesus' birth not in cold December; date based on pagan associations

"The flocks had to spend the greater part of the year in the open air: they were led out the week before the Passover, and they did not come back again until half way through November, at the first rains of *Hesvan*. They passed the winter under cover; and from this alone it may be seen that the traditional date for Christmas, in the winter, is unlikely to be right, since the Gospel says that the shepherds were in the fields."—*Daily Life in the Time of Jesus* (New York; 1962), by Henri Daniel-Rops, p. 264.

"The well-known solar feast, however, of Natalis Invicti, celebrated on 25 December, has a strong claim on the responsibility for our December date."—*The Catholic Encyclopedia* (New York; 1908), Vol. III, p. 727.

"It is generally admitted that the designation of the 25th of December for the festival [Christmas], was first made about the middle of the fourth century. . . . The motives which led the western churches to place the festival of the nativity on the 25th of December, are not clearly ascertained. Some among the Catholics, and many among the Protestants, think that day was chosen, because it was the day on which the Romans celebrated their festival of *natalis solis invicti*, or of the sun's passing the southern solstice and beginning to return northward . . . and because the establishment of a Christian festival of several days, at that season of the year, might supplant the Saturnalia and other corrupting festivals of the pagans. . . . For from the days of Augustine and Chrysostom down to our own times, we find many devout persons deprecating the heathenish manner in which the festival was kept, and labouring to give it a more Christian character. The Christmas holydays,—which by a law of *Theodosius* the Gr., (emperor A.D. 383-395), were to comprise 14 days, or the seven days before Christmas and the seven days after,—have borne so close a resemblance, wherever they have been observed, to the Roman Saturnalia, Sigillaria, etc., and to the Juel feast of the ancient Goths, as to afford strong presumption of an unhappy alliance between them from the first."—*Institutes of Ecclesiastical History, Ancient and Modern* (New York; 1845), by John Von Mosheim (Translation by James Murdock), Vol. I, pp. 279, 280, footnote (12).

"Star" appeared to pagan astrologers, not to the shepherds; led them to Herod, who tried to kill Jesus; not from God

Matt. 2:1, 2, 7, 12, 13 "After Jesus had been born in Bethlehem of Judea in the days of Herod the king, look! astrologers from eastern parts came to Jerusalem, saying: 'Where is the one born king of the Jews? For we saw his star when we were in the east, and we have come to do him obeisance.' Then Herod secretly summoned the astrologers and carefully ascertained from them the time of the star's appearing. However, because they were given divine warning in a dream not to return to Herod, they withdrew to their country by another way. After they had withdrawn, look! Jehovah's angel appeared in a dream to Joseph, saying: 'Get up, take the young child and its mother and flee into Egypt, and stay there until

I give you word; for Herod is about to search for the young child to destroy it.'"

Gift-giving as part of Christmas or Epiphany imitates astrologers and other pagans; the shepherds simply gave glory to God

Matt. 2:7, 9, 11 "Then Herod secretly summoned the astrologers and carefully ascertained from them the time of the star's appearing. When they had heard the king, they went their way; and, look! the star they had seen when they were in the east went ahead of them, until it came to a stop above where the young child was. And when they went into the house they saw the young child with Mary its mother, and, falling down, they did obeisance to it. They also opened their treasures and presented it with gifts, gold and frankincense and myrrh."

"Most of the Christmas customs now prevailing in Europe, or recorded from former times, are not genuine Christian customs, but heathen customs which have been absorbed or tolerated by the Church. . . . The Saturnalia in Rome provided the model for most of the *merry* customs of the Christmas time. . . . Christmas inherited the general merriment in a more restrained form (excessive only in eating and drinking): games, giving of gifts (especially to children), abundance of sweetmeats and, as more ceremonious elements, burning of candles and bathing before the festival."—*Encyclopædia of Religion and Ethics* (Edinburgh; 1911), edited by James Hastings, Vol. III, pp. 608, 609.

"From the first institution of this festival, the western nations seem to have transferred to it many of the follies and censurable practices which prevailed in the pagan festivals of the same season, such as adorning the churches fantastically, mingling puppet-shows and dramas with worship, universal feasting and merrimaking, Christmas visits and salutations, Christmas presents and jocularity, and Christmas revelry and drunkenness."—*Institutes of Ecclesiastical History, Ancient and Modern* (New York; 1845), by John Von Mosheim (Translation by James Murdock), Vol. I, p. 280, footnote (12).

Luke 2:15, 20 "So when the angels had departed from them into heaven, the shepherds began saying to one another: 'Let us by all means go clear to Bethlehem and see this thing that has taken place, which Jehovah has made known to us.' Then the shepherds went back, glorifying and praising God for all the things they heard and saw, just as these had been told them."

Lent of Pagan Origin; Not Commanded by Jesus

"We may then fairly conclude that Irenæus about the year 190 knew nothing of any Easter fast of forty days. The same inference must be drawn from the language of Tertullian only a few years later. . . . And there is the same silence observable in all the pre-Nicene Fathers, though many had occasion to mention such an Apostolic institution if it had existed."—*The Catholic Encyclopedia* (New York; 1910), Vol. IX, p. 152.

"'It ought to be known,' said Cassianus, the monk of Marseilles, writing in the fifth century, and contrasting the primitive Church with the Church in his day, 'that the observance of the forty days had no existence, so long as the perfection of that primitive church remained inviolate.' Whence, then, came this observance? The forty days' abstinence of Lent was directly borrowed from the worshippers of the Babylonian goddess. Such a Lent of forty days, 'in the spring of the year,' is still observed by the Yezidis or pagan Devil-worshippers of Koordistan, who have inherited it from their early masters, the Babylonians. Such a Lent of forty days was held in spring by the Pagan Mexicans, for thus we read in Humboldt, [Humboldt's *Mexican Researches*, vol. 1, p. 404] where he gives account of Mexican observances: 'Three days after the vernal equinox. . . . began a solemn fast of *forty days* in honour of the sun.' Such a Lent of forty days was observed in Egypt, as may be seen on consulting Wilkinson's *Egyptians* [vol. 1, p. 278]. This Egyptian Lent of forty days, we are informed by Landseer, in his *Sabean Researches* [p. 112], was held expressly in commemoration of Adonis or Osiris, the great mediatorial god. . . . Among the Pagans this Lent seems to have been an indispensable preliminary to the great annual festival in commemoration of the death and resurrection of Tammuz."—*The Two Babylons* (New York; 1957), by Alexander Hislop, pp. 104, 105.

Fasting in a formalistic way not approved by God's Word

Matt. 6:16-18 "When you are fasting, stop becoming sad-faced like the hypocrites, for they disfigure their faces that they may appear to men to be fasting. Truly I say to you, They are having their reward in full. But you, when fasting, grease your head and wash your face, that you may appear to be fasting, not to men, but to your Father who is in secrecy."

See also Isa. 58:4-8.

"Good Friday"

Nisan 14, day of Jesus' death, does not fall on same day of week each year on our calendar

Matt. 26:1, 2 "When Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said to his disciples: 'You know that two days from now the passover occurs, and the Son of man is to be delivered up to be impaled.'" (See also John 19:14-16.)

Lev. 23:4, 5 "These are the seasonal festivals of Jehovah, holy conventions, which you should proclaim at their appointed times: In the first month [Nisan], on the fourteenth day of the month, between the two evenings is the passover."

"The 14th of Nisan . . . might fall on Friday or on any of the other days of the week."—*The New Schaff-Herzog Encyclopedia of Religious Knowledge* (Grand Rapids, Mich.; 1958), edited by Samuel Jackson, Vol. IV, p. 44.

"The *fourteenth* day of the month [Nisan] did not always fall on one and the same day of the week."—*Historical Commentaries on the State of Christianity During the First Three Hundred and Twenty-five Years* (New York; 1853), John Laurence Von Mosheim, Vol. I, p. 531.

Commemoration of Jesus' death not a showy affair

Luke 22:19, 20 "He took a loaf, gave thanks, broke it, and gave it to them, saying: 'This means my body which is to be given in your behalf. Keep doing this in remembrance of me.' Also, the cup in the same way after they had the evening meal, he saying: 'This cup means the new covenant by virtue of my blood, which is to be poured out in your behalf.'"

Easter

Not an early Christian celebration

"There is no indication of the observance of the Easter festival in the New Testament, or in the writings of the apostolic Fathers. The sanctity of special times was an idea absent from the minds of the first Christians. . . . The ecclesiastical historian Socrates states, with perfect truth, that neither the Lord nor his apostles enjoined the keeping of this or any other festival. He says: 'The

apostles had no thought of appointing festival days, but of promoting a life of blamelessness and piety'; and he attributes the observance of Easter by the church to the perpetuation of an old usage, 'just as many other customs have been established.'" —*The Encyclopædia Britannica* (New York; 1910), Vol. VIII, p. 828.

Associated with pagan worship

"A great many pagan customs, celebrating the return of spring, gravitated to Easter. The egg is the emblem of the germinating life of early spring. . . . The rabbit is a pagan symbol and has always been an emblem of fertility."—*The Catholic Encyclopedia* (New York; 1909), Vol. V, p. 227.

"According to the Venerable Bede, English historian of the early 8th century, the word [Easter] is derived from the Norse *Ostara* or *Eostre*, meaning the festival of spring at the vernal equinox, March 21, when nature is in resurrection after winter. Hence, the rabbits, notable for their fecundity, and the eggs, colored like rays of the returning sun and the northern lights or aurora borealis."—*The Encyclopedia Americana* (New York; 1956), Vol. IX, p. 506.

"The Christian festival commemorating the resurrection of Christ, synchronized with the Jewish Pesach, and blended since the earliest days of Christianity with pagan European rites for the renewed season. . . . Many pagan customs survive, such as the lighting of new fires at dawn, among the Maya as well as in Europe, for cure, renewed life, and protection of the crops. . . . Children roll pasch eggs in England. Everywhere they hunt the many-colored Easter eggs, brought by the Easter rabbit. This is not mere child's play, but the vestige of a fertility rite, the eggs and the rabbit both symbolizing fertility. Furthermore, the rabbit was the escort of the Germanic goddess Ostara who gave the name to the festival by way of the German *Ostern*."—*Funk & Wagnalls Standard Dictionary of Folklore, Mythology and Legend* (New York; 1949), Vol. 1, pp. 334, 335.

See also the main heading "Celebrations," page 64.

Páska, at Acts 12:4, mistranslated "Easter" in King James Version

Acts 12:4 *AV* "When he had apprehended him, he put him in prison, and delivered him to four quaternions of soldiers to keep him; intending after Easter [Passover, *AT, Mo, NW*] to bring him forth to the people."

"Easter. Originally the spring festival in honor of the Teutonic goddess of light and spring known in Anglo-Saxon as Eastre. As early as the 8th century the name was transferred by the Anglo-Saxons to the Christian festival designed to celebrate the resurrection of Christ. In A.V. it occurs once (Acts 12:4), but is a mistranslation."—*The Westminster Dictionary of the Bible* (Philadelphia; 1944), by John D. Davis, p. 145.

Holidays in Memory of the "Spirits of the Dead" Perpetuate Pagan Belief in Inherent Immortality of Human Soul

Ezek. 18:4 "Look! All the souls —to me they belong. As the soul of the father so likewise the soul of the son—to me they belong. The soul that is sinning—it itself will die."

"Essentially, All Souls is the adaptation of an almost worldwide custom of setting aside a part of the year (usually the last part) for the dead. The Babylonians observed a monthly Feast of All Souls in which sacrifices were made by priests. The Greek commemorative feast of All Souls was held on the last day of the Anthesteria; the Romans celebrated theirs during the Parentalia which fell on Feb. 13-21, the end of the Roman year. The Buddhist Feast of the Dead is celebrated on April 15, the date of the death of Buddha and his attainment of Buddhahood. In China and Japan the ceremony in honor of the dead is known as the Feast of Lanterns. In many Catholic countries the belief that the dead return on this day is so strong that food is left on the tables (Tirol, Italy) and people (France, Italy, Germany) still decorate the graves of their dead."—*Funk & Wagnalls Standard Dictionary of Folklore, Mythology and Legend* (New York; 1949), Vol. 1, p. 38.

"All Souls' Day, the day set apart in the Roman Catholic Church for the commemoration of the faithful departed. The celebration is based on the doctrine that the souls of the faithful which at death have not been cleansed from venial sins, or have not atoned for past transgressions, cannot attain the Beatific Vision, and that they may be helped to do so by prayer and by the sacrifice of the mass. . . . Certain popular beliefs connected with All Souls' Day are of pagan origin and immemorial antiquity. Thus the dead are believed by the peasantry of many Catholic countries to return to their former homes on All Souls' night and partake of the food of the living."—*The Encyclopædia Britannica* (New York; 1910), 11th Edition, Vol. I, p. 709.

Denying Oneself Meat, or Other Food, on Certain Days Not Required of Christians

1 Cor. 8:8 "Food will not commend us to God; if we do not eat, we do not fall short, and, if we eat, we have no credit to ourselves."

1 Tim. 4:1-3 "However, the inspired utterance says definitely that in later periods of time some will fall away from the faith, paying attention to misleading inspired utterances and teachings of demons, . . . forbidding to marry, commanding to abstain from foods which God created to be partaken of with thanksgiving by those who have faith and accurately know the truth."

See also Col. 2:20-23.

Holidays That Become Occasions of Revelry Shunned by Christians

1 Pet. 4:3 "The time that has passed by is sufficient for you to have worked out the will of the nations when you proceeded in deeds of loose conduct, lusts, excesses with wine, revelries, drinking matches, and illegal idolatries."

Gal. 5:19-21 "Now the works of the flesh are manifest, and they are . . . drunken bouts, revelries, and things like these. As to these things I am forewarning you, the same way as I did forewarn you, that those who practice such things will not inherit God's kingdom."

Rom. 13:13 "As in the daytime let us walk decently, not in revelries and drunken bouts, not in illicit intercourse and loose conduct."

Holidays That Tend to Idolize Certain Humans (Fathers, Mothers, "Saints," and so Forth), Focusing All Attention on Them, Contrary to Bible Principles

Rom. 1:25 "Those who exchanged the truth of God for the lie and venerated and rendered sacred service to the creation rather than the One who created, who is blessed forever."

Rev. 19:10 "At that I fell down before his feet to worship him. But he tells me: 'Be careful! Do not do that! All I am is a fellow slave of you and of your brothers who have the work of witnessing to Jesus. Worship God.'"

Acts 14:11-15 "The crowds, seeing what Paul had done, raised their voices, saying in the Lycaonian tongue: 'The gods have become like humans and have come down to us!' . . . However, when the apostles Barnabas and Paul heard of it, they ripped their outer garments and leaped out into the crowd, crying out and saying: 'Men, why are you doing these things? We also are humans having the same infirmities as you do, and are declaring the good news to you, for you to turn from these vain things to the living God, who made the heaven and the earth and the sea and all the things in them.'"

Acts 12:21-23 "On a set day Herod clothed himself with royal raiment and sat down upon the judgment seat and began giving them a public address. In turn the assembled people began shouting: 'A god's voice, and not a man's!' Instantly the angel of Jehovah struck him, because he did not give the glory to God; and he became eaten up with worms and expired."

Special days not needed to show respect to parents

Eph. 6:1-3 "Children, be obedient to your parents in union with the Lord, for this is righteous: 'Honor your father and your mother'; which is the first command with a promise: 'That it may go well with you and you may endure a long time on the earth.'"

Ex. 20:12 "Honor your father and your mother in order that your days may prove long upon the ground that Jehovah your God is giving you."

"Saints" cannot intercede with God; Christ is only mediator

1 Tim. 2:5 "There is one God, and one mediator between God and men, a man Christ Jesus."

Rom. 8:34 "Christ Jesus is the one who died, yes, rather the one who was raised up from the dead, who is on the right hand of God, who also pleads for us."

1 John 2:1 "My little children, I am writing you these things that you may not commit a sin. And yet, if anyone does commit a sin, we have a helper with the Father, Jesus Christ, a righteous one."

Festivals That Honor Sun, Moon or Other Heavenly Bodies Deny *the True God*

Deut. 4:15, 19 "You must take good care of your souls . . . that you may not raise your eyes to the heavens and indeed see the sun and the moon and the stars, all the army of the heavens, and actually get seduced and bow down to them and serve them, which Jehovah your God has apportioned to all the peoples under the whole heavens."

***Job* 31:26-28** "If I used to see the light when it would flash forth, or the precious moon walking along, and my heart began to be enticed in secrecy and my hand proceeded to kiss my mouth, that too would be an error for attention by the justices, for I should have denied the true God above."

Ezek. 8:16, 17 "So he brought me to the inner courtyard of the house of Jehovah, and, look! at the entrance of the temple of Jehovah, between the porch and the altar, there were about twenty-five men with their backs to the temple of Jehovah and their faces to the east, and they were bowing down to the east, to the sun. And he went on to say to me: 'Have you seen this, O son of man? Is it such a light thing to the house of Judah to do the detestable things that they have done here?'"

Honorary Titles

Christians Show Due Honor to Others, but Do Not Glorify Fellowmen by Bestowing Titles, nor Do They Accept Flattering Titles

1 Pet. 2:17 "Honor men of all sorts, have love for the whole association of brothers, be in fear of God, have honor for the king."

Job 32:21, 22 "Let me not, please, show partiality to a man; and on an earthling man I shall not bestow a title; for I certainly do not know how I can bestow a title; easily my Maker would carry me away."

John 5:41 "I do not accept glory from men."

Luke 18:18, 19 "A certain ruler questioned him, saying: 'Good Teacher, by doing what shall I inherit everlasting life?' Jesus said to him: 'Why do you call me good? Nobody is good, except one, God.'"

Brothers and sisters, spiritually; no class distinctions

Matt. 23:8 "All you are brothers."

Matt. 12:50 "Whoever does the will of my Father who is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother."

1 Cor. 16:12 "Now concerning Apollos our brother, I entreated him very much to come to you with the brothers."

Acts 12:17 "Report these things to James and the brothers."

Acts 9:17 "Ananias . . . laid his hands upon him and said: 'Saul, brother.'"

Rom. 16:1 "I recommend to you Phoebe our sister."

***Followers of Christ Do Not Address* Men by Religious Titles "Rabbi," "Father" or "Leader"**

Matt. 23:8-12 "You, do not you be called Rabbi, for one is your teacher, whereas all you are brothers. Moreover, do not call anyone your father on earth, for one is your Father, the heavenly One. Neither be called 'leaders,' for your Leader is one, the Christ. But the greatest one among you must be your minister. Whoever exalts himself will be humbled, and whoever humbles himself will be exalted."

Proper to refer to male parent as "father"; not a religious title

Matt. 19:18, 19 "Jesus said: '. . . Honor your father and your mother.'"

Luke 15:20, 21 "So he rose and went to his father. While he was yet a long way off, his father caught sight of him and was moved with pity, and he ran and fell upon his neck and tenderly kissed him. Then the son said to him: 'Father, I have sinned against heaven and against you. I am no longer worthy of being called your son. Make me as one of your hired men.'"

Heb. 12:9 "We used to have fathers who were of our flesh to discipline us, and we used to give them respect. Shall we not much more subject ourselves to the Father of our spiritual life and live?"

Paul likened himself to a male parent, but was never called "Father Paul"

1 Thess. 2:11 "You well know how, as a father does his children, we kept exhorting each one of you." (Compare vs. 7.)

Philem. 10 "I am exhorting you concerning my child, to whom I became a father while in my prison bonds, Onesimus."

1 Cor. 4:14-17 "I am writing these things, not to shame you, but to admonish you as my beloved children. For though you may have ten thousand tutors in Christ, you certainly do not have many fathers; for in Christ

Jesus I have become your father through the good news. . . . I am sending Timothy to you, as he is my beloved and faithful child in the Lord."

Only God "Reverend," "Holy Father"

Ps. 111:1, 9 "I shall laud Jehovah . . . His name is holy and fear-inspiring ["reverend," *AV*]."

John 17:1, 11 "Raising his eyes to heaven, [Jesus] said: . . . 'Holy Father, watch over them on account of your own name which you have given me.'"

"Bishop," "Deacon" Describe Assignments of Work, Not Used as Titles Before a Person's Name Anywhere in the Bible

1 Tim. 3:1, 2, 8 "If any man is reaching out for an office of overseer ["bishop," *AV*], he is desirous of a fine work. The overseer should therefore be irreprehensible, . . . Ministerial servants ["deacons," *AV*] should likewise be serious."

Phil. 1:1 "To all the holy ones in union with Christ Jesus who are in Philippi, along with overseers ["bishops," *AV*] and ministerial servants ["deacons," *AV*]."

"BISHOP (Overseer) EPISKOPOS, lit., an overseer. . . . The corresponding verb is *episkopeō*, which, in reference to the work of an overseer, is found in 1 Pet. 5:2, R.V., 'exercising the oversight,' for A.V. 'taking the oversight.'"—*An Expository Dictionary of New Testament Words* (London; 1962), W. E. Vine, Vol. I, pp. 128, 129.

"DEACON. AV renders 'deacon' only at Phil. 1.1 and four times in 1 Tim. iii; but the Gk. word thus represented, *diakonos* (generally in AV 'minister' or 'servant'), occurs some thirty times in the New Testament, and the cognates *diakoneō* (to 'minister') and *diakonia* ('ministry') occur between them a further seventy times. . . . Basically, *diakonos* is a servant, and often a table-servant, or waiter."—*The New Bible Dictionary* (Grand Rapids, Michigan; 1962), J. D. Douglas, Organizing Editor, p. 297.

See also the main heading "Minister of God," pages 346-351.

Proper to Use Official Titles of Political Rulers, Judges in Addressing Them

Acts 26:1, 2 "Paul stretched his hand out and proceeded to say in his defense: 'Concerning all the things of which I am accused by Jews, King Agrippa, I count myself happy that it is before you I am to make my defense this day.'"

Acts 26:25 "Paul said: 'I am not going mad, Your Excellency Festus, but I am uttering sayings of truth and of soundness of mind.'"

Rom. 13:1, 7 "Let every soul be in subjection to the superior authorities . . . Render to all their dues, to him who calls for the tax, the tax; to him who calls for the tribute, the tribute; to him who calls for fear, such fear; to him who calls for honor, such honor."

Humility

Jehovah Opposes Self-exalted Ones, but Favors Humble Ones

1 Pet. 5:5, 6 "Gird yourselves with lowliness of mind toward one another, because God opposes the haughty ones, but he gives undeserved kindness to the humble ones. Humble yourselves, therefore, under the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time."

Ps. 138:6 "Jehovah is high, and yet the humble one he sees; but the lofty one he knows only from a distance."

Prov. 15:25 "The house of the self-exalted ones Jehovah will tear down."

Isa. 2:11, 12 "The haughty eyes of earthling man must become low, and the loftiness of men must bow down; and Jehovah alone must be put on high in that day. For it is the day belonging to Jehovah of armies. It is upon everyone self-exalted and lofty."

Matt. 23:12 "Whoever exalts himself will be humbled, and whoever humbles himself will be exalted."

Prov. 22:4 "The result of humility and the fear of Jehovah is riches and glory and life."

One's humble repentance moves God to show mercy

2 Chron. 7:13, 14 "When I command the grasshoppers to eat up the land and if I send a pestilence among my people, and my people upon whom my name has been called humble themselves and pray and seek my face and turn back from their bad ways, then I myself shall hear from the heavens and forgive their sin, and I shall heal their land."

2 Chron. 12:6, 7 "The princes of Israel and the king [Rehoboam] humbled themselves and said: 'Jehovah is righteous.' And when Jehovah saw that they had humbled themselves, the word of Jehovah came to Shemaiah, saying: 'They have humbled themselves. I shall not bring them to ruin, and in a little while I shall certainly give them an escape, and my rage will not pour forth upon Jerusalem.'"

1 Ki. 21:29 "Have you seen how Ahab has humbled himself on my account? For the reason that he has humbled himself because of me, I shall not bring the calamity in his own days."

2 Chron. 32:26 "Hezekiah humbled himself for the haughtiness of his heart, he and the inhabitants of Jerusalem, and Jehovah's indignation did not come upon them in the days of Hezekiah."

See also 2 Ki. 22:19, 20.

Acting with Lowliness of Mind Yields Peaceable Fruit in Relations with One's Fellowman

Eph. 4:1, 2 "Walk . . . with complete lowliness of mind and mildness, with long-suffering, putting up with one another in love."

Phil. 2:3 "Doing nothing out of contentiousness or out of egotism, but with lowliness of mind considering that the others are superior to you."

Col. 3:12, 13 "As God's chosen ones, holy and loved, clothe yourselves with the tender affections of compassion, kindness, lowliness of mind . . . Continue putting up with one another and forgiving one another freely if anyone has a cause for complaint against another."

Jesus Christ Demonstrated Humility; Set Example for His Followers

John 13:2-17 "While the evening meal was going on . . . [Jesus] got up from the evening meal and laid aside his outer garments. And, taking a towel, he girded himself. After that he put water into a basin and started to wash the feet of the disciples and to dry them off with the towel with which he was girded. . . . When, now, he had washed their feet and had put his outer garments on and laid himself down at the table again, he said to them: 'Do you know what I have done to you? You address me, "Teacher," and, "Lord," and you speak rightly, for I am such. Therefore, if I, although Lord and Teacher,

washed your feet, you also ought to wash the feet of one another. For I set the pattern for you, that, just as I did to you, you should do also. Most truly I say to you, A slave is not greater than his master, nor is one that is sent forth greater than the one that sent him. If you know these things, happy you are if you do them.'"

Phil. 2:7, 8 "He emptied himself and took a slave's form and came to be in the likeness of men. More than that, when he found himself in fashion as a man, he humbled himself and became obedient as far as death, yes, death on a torture stake."

See also Zech. 9:9; Matt. 21:1-9.

By illustrations, Jesus showed importance of humility

Luke 18:9-14 "He spoke this illustration also to some who trusted in themselves that they were righteous and who considered the rest as nothing: 'Two men went up into the temple to pray, the one a Pharisee and the other a tax collector. The Pharisee stood and began to pray these things to himself, "O God, I thank you I am not as the rest of men, extortioners, unrighteous, adulterers, or even as this tax collector. I fast twice a week, I give the tenth of all things I acquire." But the tax collector standing at a distance was not willing even to raise his eyes heavenward, but kept beating his breast, saying, "O God, be gracious to me a sinner." I tell you, This man went down to his home proved more righteous than that man; because everyone that exalts himself will be humiliated, but he that humbles himself will be exalted.'"

Luke 14:7-11 "He then went on to tell the invited men an illustration, as he marked how they were choosing the most prominent places for themselves, saying to them: 'When you are invited by someone to a marriage feast, do not lie down in the most prominent place. Perhaps someone more distinguished than you may at the time have been invited by him, and he that invited you and him will come and say to you, "Let this man have the place." And then you will start off with shame to occupy the lowest place. But when you are invited, go and recline in the lowest place, that when the man that has invited you comes he will say to you, "Friend, go on up higher." Then you will have honor in front of all your fellow guests. For everyone that exalts himself will be humbled and he that humbles himself will be exalted.'"

Proper View of Self Helps One to Be Humble

Rom. 12:3 "I tell everyone there among you not to think more of himself than it is necessary to think."

1 Cor. 4:7 "Who makes you to differ from another? Indeed, what do you have that you did not receive? If, now, you did indeed receive it, why do you boast as though you did not receive it?"

Rom. 12:16 "Do not be minding lofty things, but be led along with the lowly things. Do not become discreet in your own eyes."

Humility Contrasted with Pride, Haughtiness

Prov. 29:23 "The very haughtiness of earthling man will humble him, but he that is humble in spirit will take hold of glory."

Prov. 16:18, 19 "Pride is before a crash, and a haughty spirit before stumbling. Better is it to be lowly in spirit with the meek ones than to divide spoil with the self-exalted ones."

Prov. 18:12 "Before a crash the heart of a man is lofty, and before glory there is humility."

Mock Humility of No Value

Col. 2:18, 23 "Let no man deprive you of the prize who takes delight in a mock humility . . . Those very things are, indeed, possessed of an appearance of wisdom in a self-imposed form of worship and mock humility, a severe treatment of the body; but they are of no value in combating the satisfying of the flesh."

Idolatry

God Forbids Making Any Image Before Which People Bow in Worship

Ex. 20:4, 5 "You must not make for yourself a carved image or a form like anything that is in the heavens above or that is on the earth underneath or that is in the waters under the earth. You must not bow down to them nor be induced to serve them, because I Jehovah your God am a God exacting exclusive devotion."

Unreasonableness of Image Worship

Isa. 44:15-20 "He builds a fire and actually bakes bread. He also works on a god to which he may bow down. He has made it into a carved image, and he prostrates himself to it. Half of it he actually burns up in a fire. Upon half of it he roasts well the flesh that he eats, and he becomes satisfied. He also warms himself and says: 'Aha! I have warmed myself. I have seen the firelight.' But the remainder of it he actually makes into a god itself, into his carved image. He prostrates himself to it and bows down and prays to it and says: 'Deliver me, for you are my God.' They have not come to know, nor do they understand, because their eyes have been besmeared so as not to see, their heart so as to have no insight. And no one recalls to his heart or has knowledge or understanding, saying: 'The half of it I have burned up in a fire, and upon its coals I have also baked bread; I roast flesh and eat. But the rest of it shall I make into a mere detestable thing? To the dried-out wood of a tree shall I prostrate myself?' He is feeding on ashes. His own heart that has been trifled with has led him astray."

Jer. 10:14, 15 "Every man has behaved so unreasoningly as not to know. Every metalworker will certainly feel shame because of the carved image; for his molten image is a falsehood, and there is no spirit in them. They are vanity, a work of mockery. In the time of their being given attention they will perish."

Isa. 2:8 "Their land is filled with valueless gods. To the work of one's hands they bow down, to that which one's fingers have made."

No image of God possible

Deut. 4:15-19 "You must take good care of your souls, because you did not see any form on the day of Jehovah's speaking to you in Horeb out of the middle of the fire, that you may not act ruinously and may not really make for yourselves a carved image, the form of any symbol, the representation of male or female, the representation of any beast that is in the earth, the representation of any winged bird that flies in the heavens, the representation of anything moving on the ground, the repre-

sentation of any fish that is in the waters under the earth; and that you may not raise your eyes to the heavens and indeed see the sun and the moon and the stars, all the army of the heavens, and actually get seduced and bow down to them and serve them, which Jehovah your God has apportioned to all the peoples under the whole heavens."

Acts 17:29 "Seeing, therefore, that we are the progeny of God, we ought not to imagine that the Divine Being is like gold or silver or stone, like something sculptured by the art and contrivance of man."

1 John 4:12 "At no time has anyone beheld God."

Images cannot hear petitions of worshipers or do anything to help them

Ps. 115:4-8 "Their idols are silver and gold, the work of the hands of earthling man. A mouth they have, but they cannot speak; eyes they have, but they cannot see; ears they have, but they cannot hear. A nose they have, but they cannot smell. Hands are theirs, but they cannot feel. Feet are theirs, but they cannot walk; they utter no sound with their throat. Those making them will become just like them, all those who are trusting in them." (See also Ps. 135:15-18.)

Jer. 10:3-5 "The customs of the peoples are just an exhalation, because it is a mere tree out of the forest that one has cut down, the work of the hands of the craftsman with the billhook. With silver and with gold one makes it pretty. With nails and with hammers they fasten them down, that none may reel. They are like a scarecrow of a cucumber field, and cannot speak. Without fail they are carried, for they cannot take any steps. Do not be afraid because of them, for they can do nothing calamitous and, what is more, the doing of any good is not with them."

Hab. 2:18, 19 "Of what benefit has a carved image been, when the former of it has carved it, a molten statue, and an instructor in falsehood? when the former of its form has trusted in it, to the extent of making valueless gods that are speechless? Woe to the one saying to the piece of wood: 'O do awake!' to a dumb stone: 'O wake up! It itself will give instruction'! Look! It is sheathed in gold and silver, and there is no breath at all in the midst of it."

Isa. 46:6, 7 "There are those who are lavishing out the gold from the purse, and with the scale beam they weigh out the silver. They hire a metalworker, and he makes it into a god. They prostrate themselves, yes, they bow down. They carry it upon the shoulder, they bear it and deposit it in its place that it may stand still. From its standing place it does not move away. One even cries out to it, but it does not answer; out of one's distress it does not save one."

Not Only Pagan Idols, but Figures Made by God's People, Become a Snare to One Who Venerates Them

2 Ki. 18:3, 4 "He continued to do what was right in Jehovah's eyes, according to all that David his forefather had done. He it was that removed the high places and broke the sacred pillars to pieces and cut down the sacred pole and crushed to pieces the copper serpent that Moses had made; for down to those days the sons of Israel had continually been making sacrificial smoke to it, and it used to be called the copper serpent-idol."

Judg. 8:27 "Gideon proceeded to make it into an ephod and to exhibit it in his city Ophrah; and all Israel began to have immoral intercourse with it there, so that it served as a snare to Gideon and to his household."

"Relative" Worship, Using Physical 'Aids to Devotion,' Contrary to Christian Principle of Worship

John 4:24 "God is a Spirit, and those worshiping him must worship with spirit and truth."

2 Cor. 5:7 "We are walking by faith, not by sight."

2 Cor. 4:18 "We keep our eyes, not on the things seen, but on the things unseen."

Jehovah refuses to share his glory with graven images

Isa. 42:8 "I am Jehovah, That is my name; and to no one else shall I give my own glory, neither my praise to graven images." (See also Isa. 48:11.)

Prayer to be offered to Jehovah in Jesus' name; no images needed

John 14:13 "Whatever it is that you ask in my name, I will do this, in order that the Father may be glorified in connection with the Son."

John 15:16 "I chose you, and I appointed you to go on and keep bearing fruit and that your fruit should remain; in order that no matter what you ask the Father in my name he might give it to you."

Only one mediator; images of "saints" of no value

1 Tim. 2:5 "There is one God, and one mediator between God and men, a man Christ Jesus."

John 14:6, 14 "Jesus said to him: 'I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me. If you ask anything in my name, I will do it.' "

Bowing in worship before men or even angels as representatives of God forbidden

Acts 10:25, 26 "As Peter entered, Cornelius met him, fell down at his feet and did obeisance to him. But Peter lifted him up, saying: 'Rise; I myself am also a man.' "

Rev. 22:8, 9 "Well, I John was the one hearing and seeing these things. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel that had been showing me these things. But he tells me: 'Be careful! Do not do that! All I am is a fellow slave of you and of your brothers who are prophets and of those who are observing the words of this scroll. Worship God.' " (See also Rev. 19:10.)

Idolatrous Practices Cannot Properly Be Mixed with True Worship

2 Cor. 6:16, 17 "What agreement does God's temple have with idols? For we are a temple of a living God; just as God said: 'I shall reside among them and walk among them, and I shall be their God, and they will be my people.' '"Therefore get out from among them, and separate yourselves," says Jehovah, "and quit touching the unclean thing" '; '"and I will take you in." ' "

Ex. 32:4-10 "He took the gold from their hands, and he formed it with a graving tool and proceeded to make it into a molten statue of a calf. And they began to say: 'This is your God, O Israel, who led you up out of the land of Egypt.' When Aaron got to see this, he went to building an altar before it. Finally Aaron called out and said: 'There is a festival to Jehovah tomorrow.' . . . Jehovah now said to Moses: 'Go, descend, because your people whom you led up out of the land of Egypt have acted ruinously. They have turned aside in a hurry from the way I have commanded them to go. They have made a molten statue of a calf for themselves and keep bowing down to it and sacrificing to it and saying, "This is your God, O Israel, who led you up out of the land of Egypt." ' And Jehovah went on to say to Moses:

'I have looked at this people and here it is a stiff-necked people. So now let me be, that my anger may blaze against them and I may exterminate them, and let me make you into a great nation.' "

Jehovah Rejected His People Israel When They Engaged in Idolatrous Practices

Deut. 4:25, 26 "In case you . . . do act ruinously and do make a carved image, a form of anything, and do commit evil in the eyes of Jehovah your God so as to offend him, I do take as witnesses against you today the heavens and the earth, that you will positively perish in a hurry."

Jer. 7:29, 30 "Jehovah has rejected and will desert the generation with which he is furious. 'For the sons of Judah have done what is bad in my eyes,' is the utterance of Jehovah. 'They have set their disgusting things in the house upon which my name has been called, in order to defile it.' "

Jer. 22:8, 9 "Many nations will actually pass along by this city and say one to the other: 'On what account did Jehovah do like this to this great city?' And they will have to say: 'On account of the fact that they left the covenant of Jehovah their God and proceeded to bow down to other gods and to serve them.' "

Worshipers of the Symbolic "Wild Beast" of World Politics and Its "Image" to Be Punished by God

Rev. 13:1-8 "I saw a wild beast ascending out of the sea, with ten horns and seven heads, and upon its horns ten diadems, but upon its heads blasphemous names. . . . And the dragon gave the beast its power and its throne and great authority . . . and all the earth followed the wild beast with admiration. And they worshiped the dragon because it gave the authority to the wild beast . . . And all those who dwell on the earth will worship it; the name of not one of them stands written in the scroll of life of the Lamb." (Compare with Rev. 12:9; Matt. 4:8, 9.)

Rev. 14:9, 10 "If anyone worships the wild beast and its image, and receives a mark on his forehead or upon his hand, he will also drink of the wine of the anger of God that is poured out undiluted into the cup of his wrath."

Faithful Servants of God Refused to Give Homage to Emblem of State

Dan. 3:1, 4-6, 8, 9, 12, 13, 16-18 "Nebuchadnezzar the king made an image of gold . . . And the herald was crying out loudly: 'To you it is being said, O peoples, national groups and languages, that at the time that you hear the sound of . . . all sorts of musical instruments, you fall down and worship the image of gold that Nebuchadnezzar the king has set up. And whoever does not fall down and worship will at the same moment be thrown into the burning fiery furnace.' Because of this, at that same time certain Chaldeans approached and accused the Jews. . . . they were saying to Nebuchadnezzar the king: 'O king, live on even for times indefinite. There exist certain Jews whom you appointed over the administration of the jurisdictional district of Babylon, Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego; these able-bodied men have paid no regard to you, O king, they are not serving your own gods, and the image of gold that you have set up they are not worshiping.' At that time Nebuchadnezzar, in a rage and fury, said to bring in Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego. . . . Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego answered, and they were saying to the king: 'O Nebuchadnezzar, we are under no necessity in this regard to say back a word to you. If it is to be, our God whom we are serving is able to rescue us. Out of the burning fiery furnace and out of your hand, O king, he will rescue us. But if not, let it become known to you, O king, that your gods are not the ones we are serving, and the image of gold that you have set up we will not worship.' "

God approved of their action

Dan. 3:19-28 "Then it was that Nebuchadnezzar himself got filled with fury . . . And to certain able-bodied men of vital energy who were in his military force he said to bind Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego, in order to throw them into the burning fiery furnace. Then it was that these able-bodied men were bound . . . and were thrown into the burning fiery furnace. . . . At that time Nebuchadnezzar the king himself became frightened and he rose up in a hurry. He was answering and saying to his high royal officials: '. . . Look! I am beholding four able-bodied men walking about free in the midst of the fire, and there is no hurt to them, and the appearance of the fourth one is resembling a son of the gods.' Then it was that Nebuchadnezzar approached the door of the burning fiery furnace. He was answering and saying: 'Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego, you servants of the Most High God, step out and come here!' At that time Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego were stepping out from the midst of the fire. . . . the fire had had no power over their bodies, and not a hair of their head had been singed, and even their mantles had not been changed and the smell of fire itself had not come onto them. Nebuchadnezzar was answering and saying: 'Blessed be the God of Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego, who sent his angel and rescued his servants that trusted in him and that changed the very word of the king and gave over their bodies, because they would not serve and would not worship any god at all except their own God.' "

Attitude of early Christians toward patriotic ceremonies

(See the main heading "Neutrality," page 356, for quotations from books of secular history.)

Idolizing of Humans Disapproved by God

Acts 12:21-23 "On a set day Herod clothed himself with royal raiment and sat down upon the judgment seat and began giving them a public address. In turn the assembled people began shouting: 'A god's voice, and not a man's!' Instantly the angel of Jehovah struck him, because he did not give the glory to God; and he became eaten up with worms and expired."

Presumptuously Ignoring God's Word Classed with Idolatrous Use of Teraphim—an Idolizing of Self

1 Sam. 15:22, 23 "Samuel said: 'Does Jehovah have as much delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices as in obeying the voice of Jehovah? Look! To obey is better than a sacrifice, to pay attention than the fat of rams; for rebelliousness is the same as the sin of divination, and pushing ahead presumptuously the same as using uncanny power and teraphim. Since you have rejected the word of Jehovah, he accordingly rejects you from being king.' "

Wrongfully Craving What Belongs to Someone Else Is a Form of Idolatry

Col. 3:5 "Deaden, therefore, your body members that are upon the earth as respects fornication, uncleanness, sexual appetite,

hurtful desire, and covetousness, which is idolatry."

Persons Taking Up True Worship Must Abandon Idolatrous Practices

2 Cor. 6:16, 17 "What agreement does God's temple have with idols? . . . '"Therefore get out from among them, and separate yourselves," says Jehovah, "and quit touching the unclean thing"'; '"and I will take you in."'"

1 Cor. 10:14 "Therefore, my beloved ones, flee from idolatry."

1 Cor. 10:19-21 "What, then, am I to say? That what is sacrificed to an idol is anything, or that an idol is anything? No; but I say that the things which the nations sacrifice they sacrifice to demons, and not to God; and I do not want you to become sharers with the demons. You cannot be drinking the cup of Jehovah and the cup of demons; you cannot be partaking of 'the table of Jehovah' and the table of demons."

1 Thess. 1:9 "They themselves keep reporting about the way we first entered in among you and how you turned to God from your idols to slave for a living and true God."

Immortality

Jehovah God the Source of Life, Not Subject to Death

Ps. 36:7, 9 "How precious your loving-kindness is, O God! . . . For with you is the source of life."

Hab. 1:12 "Are you not from long ago, O Jehovah? O my God, my Holy One, you do not die."

1 Tim. 1:17 "Now to the King of eternity, incorruptible, invisible, the only God, be honor and glory forever and ever."

Jesus Christ Rewarded with Immortality at His Resurrection; No Longer Subject to Death

Rom. 6:9 "Christ, now that he has been raised up from the dead, dies no more; death is master over him no more."

1 Tim. 6:15, 16 "The King of those who rule as kings and Lord of those who rule as lords, the one alone having immortality, who dwells in unapproachable light, whom not one of men has seen or can see. To him be honor and might everlasting."

Rev. 1:17, 18 "I am the First and the Last, and the living one; and I became dead, but, look! I am living forever and ever, and I have the keys of death and of Hades."

See also Acts 13:34, 35.

Opened the way for others to gain incorruptibility

1 Pet. 1:3, 4 "Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, for according to his great mercy he gave us a new birth to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, to an incorruptible and undefiled and unfading inheritance. It is reserved in the heavens for you."

2 Tim. 1:10 "Now it has been made clearly evident through the manifestation of our Savior, Christ Jesus, who has abolished death but has shed light upon life and incorruption through the good news."

Heirs of the Heavenly Kingdom Receive Immortality When Raised from Death

1 Cor. 15:50-54 "This I say, brothers, that flesh and blood

cannot inherit God's kingdom, neither does corruption inherit incorruption. Look! I tell you a sacred secret: We shall not all fall asleep in death, but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, during the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound, and the dead will be raised up incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this which is corruptible must put on incorruption, and this which is mortal must put on immortality. But when this which is corruptible puts on incorruption and this which is mortal puts on immortality, then the saying will take place that is written: 'Death is swallowed up forever.'"

Raised in incorruptible spirit bodies

1 Cor. 15:42, 44, 53 "So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption, it is raised up in incorruption. It is sown a physical body, it is raised up a spiritual body. If there is a physical body, there is also a spiritual one. For this which is corruptible must put on incorruption."

Angels Not Immortal; Those That Became Demons to Be Destroyed

Jude 6 "The angels that did not keep their original position but forsook their own proper dwelling place he has reserved with eternal bonds under dense darkness for the judgment of the great day."

Luke 4:33, 34 "Now in the synagogue there was a man with a spirit, an unclean demon, and he shouted with a loud voice: 'Ah! What have we to do with you, Jesus you Nazarene? Did you come to destroy us?'"

Rev. 20:10, 14 "The Devil who was misleading them was hurled into the lake of fire and sulphur, . . . This means the second death, the lake of fire."

See also Matt. 25:41.

Human Soul Subject to Death, Not Immortal

Ezek. 18:4 "The soul that is sinning—it itself will die."

Luke 6:9 "Then Jesus said to them: 'I ask you men, Is it lawful on the sabbath to do good or to do injury, to save or to destroy a soul?'"

Ps. 78:50 "He proceeded to prepare a pathway for his anger. He did not hold back their soul from death itself."

Isa. 53:12 "I shall deal him a portion among the many, and it will be with the mighty ones that he will apportion the spoil, due to the fact that he poured out his soul to the very death."

Matt. 10:28 "Be in fear of him that can destroy both soul and body in Gehenna."

See also the main heading "Soul," pages 463-465.

Incarnation

Holy Angels Appeared Visibly as Men at God's Command

Gen. 19:1, 3, 12, 13 "Now the two angels arrived at Sodom by evening, and Lot was sitting in the gate of Sodom. When Lot caught sight of them, then he got up to meet them and bowed down with his face to the earth. . . . he was very insistent with them, so that they turned aside to him and came into his house. . . . Then the men said to Lot: '. . . Jehovah sent us to bring the city to ruin.'"

Judg. 13:8, 9 "Manoah began to entreat Jehovah and say: 'Ex-

cuse me, Jehovah. The man of the true God that you just sent, let him, please, come again to us and instruct us as to what we ought to do to the child that will be born.' Accordingly the true God listened to the voice of Manoah, and the angel of the true God came again."

Luke 1:26-28 "In her sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent forth from God to a city of Galilee named Nazareth, to a virgin promised in marriage to a man named Joseph of David's house; and the name of the virgin was Mary. And when he went in before her he said: 'Good day, highly favored one, Jehovah is with you.'"

In Noah's Day Angelic Sons of God Disobediently Entered into Marriage Alliances on Earth as Men

Gen. 6:1, 2, 4 "Now it came about that when men started to grow in numbers on the surface of the ground and daughters were born to them, then the sons of the true God began to notice the daughters of men, that they were good-looking; and they went taking wives for themselves, namely, all whom they chose. The Nephilim proved to be in the earth in those days, and also after that, when the sons of the true God continued to have relations with the daughters of men and they bore sons to them, they were the mighty ones who were of old, the men of fame."

2 Pet. 2:4, 5 "God did not hold back from punishing the angels that sinned . . . and he did not hold back from punishing an ancient world, but kept Noah, a preacher of righteousness, safe with seven others when he brought a deluge upon a world of ungodly people."

Jude 6 "The angels that did not keep their original position but forsook their own proper dwelling place he has reserved with eternal bonds under dense darkness for the judgment of the great day."

1 Pet. 3:19, 20 "In this state also [Jesus] went his way and preached to the spirits in prison, who had once been disobedient when the patience of God was waiting in Noah's days, while the ark was being constructed."

See also the main heading "Devil and Demons," page 158.

Jesus Was Born of a Woman, Was Not a Materialized Spirit

Gal. 4:4 "God sent forth his Son, who came to be out of a woman and who came to be under law."

Luke 1:30, 31, 34, 35 "So the angel said to her: 'Have no fear, Mary, for you have found favor with God; and, look! you will conceive in your womb and give birth to a son, and you are to call his name Jesus.' But Mary said to the angel: 'How is this to be, since I am having no intercourse with a man?' In answer the angel said to her: 'Holy spirit will come upon you, and power of the Most High will overshadow you. For that reason also what is born will be called holy, God's Son.'"

Rom. 1:1-4 "Paul, a slave of Jesus Christ and called to be an apostle, separated to God's good news, which he promised aforetime through his prophets in the holy Scriptures, concerning his Son, who sprang from the seed of David according to the flesh, but who with power was declared God's Son according to the spirit of holiness by means of resurrection from the dead—yes, Jesus Christ our Lord."

Jesus left behind things of spirit when he became a man

Phil. 2:5-8 "Keep this mental attitude in you that was also in Christ Jesus, who, although he was existing in God's form, gave no consideration to a seizure, namely, that he should be equal to God. No, but he emptied himself and took a slave's form and came to be in the likeness of men. More than that, when he found himself in fashion as a man, he humbled himself and became obedient as far as death, yes, death on a torture stake."

John 17:5 "So now you, Father, glorify me alongside yourself with the glory that I had alongside you before the world was."

See also the main heading "Jesus Christ," pages 282-288.

Became "like his 'brothers' in all respects," not part spirit

Heb. 2:14, 17 "Therefore, since the 'young children' are sharers of blood and flesh, he also similarly partook of the same things . . . Consequently he was obliged to become like his 'brothers' in all respects, that he might become a merciful and faithful high priest in things pertaining to God, in order to offer propitiatory sacrifice for the sins of the people." (Compare Luke 8:21.)

Life laid down as "corresponding ransom," not more than human

1 Tim. 2:5, 6 "There is one God, and one mediator between God and men, a man Christ Jesus, who gave himself a corresponding ransom for all."

Matt. 20:28 "The Son of man came, not to be ministered to, but to minister and to give his soul a ransom in exchange for many."

See also the main heading "Ransom," pages 408-412.

Jesus was not God-man, God in the flesh, but was God's Son, a lesser one than God

John 20:13 "These have been written down that you may believe that Jesus is the Christ the Son of God."

John 14:28 "If you loved me, you would rejoice that I am going my way to the Father, because the Father is greater than I am."

John 6:38 "I have come down from heaven to do, not my will, but the will of him that sent me." (Compare John 13:16.)

John 20:17 "Jesus said to her: 'Stop clinging to me, for I have not yet ascended to the Father. But be on your way to my brothers and say to them, "I am ascending to my Father and your Father and to my God and your God."'"

See also the main heading "Trinity," pages 484-489.

Jesus Was Resurrected as a Spirit Creature

1 Pet. 3:18 "Christ died once for all time concerning sins, a righteous person for unrighteous ones, that he might lead you to God, he being put to death in the flesh, but being made alive in the spirit."

1 Cor. 15:42-45 "So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption, it is raised up in incorruption. It is sown in dishonor, it is raised up in glory. It is sown in weakness, it is raised up in power. It is sown a physical body, it is raised up a spiritual body. . . . It is even so written: 'The first man Adam became a living soul.' The last Adam became a life-giving spirit."

Appearances after resurrection were materializations—not always with identical bodies

John 20:11-16 "Mary, however, kept standing outside near the memorial tomb, weeping. Then, while she was weeping, she stooped forward to look into the memorial tomb and she viewed two angels in white sitting one at the head and one at the feet where the body of Jesus had been lying. And they said to her: 'Woman, why are you weeping?' She said to them: 'They have taken my Lord away, and I do not know where they have laid him.' After saying these things, she turned back and viewed Jesus standing, but she did not

discern it was Jesus. Jesus said to her: 'Woman, why are you weeping? Whom are you looking for?' She, imagining it was the gardener, said to him: 'Sir, if you have carried him off, tell me where you have laid him, and I will take him away.' Jesus said to her: 'Mary!' Upon turning around, she said to him, in Hebrew: *Rabboni!* (which means Teacher!)."

John 20:19, 20 "Therefore, when it was late on that day, the first of the week, and, although the doors were locked where the disciples were for fear of the Jews, Jesus came and stood in their midst and said to them: 'May you have peace.' And after he said this he showed them both his hands and his side. Then the disciples rejoiced at seeing the Lord."

Luke 24:15-19, 30, 31 "Now as they were conversing and discussing, Jesus himself approached and began walking with them; but their eyes were kept from recognizing him. He said to them: 'What are these matters that you are debating between yourselves as you walk along?' And they stood still with sad faces. In answer the one named Cleopas said to him: 'Are you dwelling as an alien by yourself in Jerusalem and so do not know the things that have occurred in her in these days?' And he said to them: 'What things?' They said to him: 'The things concerning Jesus the Nazarene . . .' And as he was reclining with them at the meal he took the loaf, blessed it, broke it and began to hand it to them. At that their eyes were fully opened and they recognized him; and he disappeared from them."

See also John 21:4-12.

Humans at Death Are Not Reincarnated; Unconscious in Death Until Resurrection

Eccl. 9:5, 10 "The living are conscious that they will die; but as for the dead, they are conscious of nothing at all, . . . All that your hand finds to do, do with your very power, for there is no work nor devising nor knowledge nor wisdom in Sheol, the place to which you are going."

Ps. 146:3, 4 "Do not put your trust in nobles, nor in the son of earthling man, to whom no salvation belongs. His spirit goes out, he goes back to his ground; in that day his thoughts do perish."

Acts 2:29 "Brothers, it is allowable to speak with freeness of speech to you concerning the family head David, that he both deceased and was buried and his tomb is among us to this day."

Isa. 38:18, 19 "It is not Sheol that can laud you; death itself cannot praise you. Those going down into the pit cannot look hopefully to your trueness. The living, the living, he is the one that can laud you, just as I can this day."

Acts 24:15 "I have hope toward God, which hope these men themselves also entertain, that there is going to be a resurrection of both the righteous and the unrighteous."

John the Baptist no reincarnation of Elijah; merely performed work like Elijah's, under influence of holy spirit

Luke 1:13-17 "The angel said to him: 'Have no fear, Zechariah, because your supplication has been favorably heard, and your wife Elizabeth will become mother to a son to you, and you are to call his name John. . . . and he will be filled with holy spirit . . . Many of the sons of Israel will he turn back to Jehovah their God. Also, he will go before him with Elijah's spirit and power, to turn back the hearts of fathers to children and the disobedient ones to the practical wisdom of righteous ones.'"

Matt. 11:13, 14 "For all the Prophets and the Law, prophesied until John; and if you want to accept it, This is 'Elijah who is destined to come.'"

Appearance of prophets at transfiguration of Jesus was a vision not a reincarnation

Matt. 17:3, 7-9 "Look! there appeared to them Moses and Elijah, conversing with him. Then Jesus came near and, touching them, said: 'Get up and have no fear.' When they raised their eyes, they saw no one but Jesus himself only. And as they were descending from the mountain, Jesus commanded them, saying: 'Tell the vision to no one until the Son of man is raised up from the dead.'"

Interfaith

Not All People Worship the Same God, Not Even Different Concepts of the Same God

1 Cor. 10:20 "The things which the nations sacrifice they sacrifice to demons, and not to God."

1 Cor. 8:5, 6 "Even though there are those who are called 'gods,' whether in heaven or on earth, just as there are many 'gods' and many 'lords,' there is actually to us one God the Father, out of whom all things are, and we for him; and there is one Lord, Jesus Christ, through whom all things are, and we through him."

Deut. 32:16, 17 "They began inciting him to jealousy with strange gods; with detestable things they kept offending him. They went sacrificing to demons, not to God, gods whom they had not known, new ones who recently came in, with whom your forefathers were not acquainted."

1 Ki. 11:33 "They have left me and begun to bow down to Ashtoreth the goddess of the Sidonians, to Chemosh the god of Moab and to Milcom the god of the sons of Ammon."

Only One True Faith, a "Narrow Way"

Eph. 4:5 "One Lord, one faith, one baptism."

Matt. 7:13, 14 "Go in through the narrow gate; because broad and spacious is the road leading off into destruction, and many are the ones going in through it; whereas narrow is the gate and cramped the road leading off into life, and few are the ones finding it."

John 17:3 "This means everlasting life, their taking in knowledge of you, the only true God, and of the one whom you sent forth, Jesus Christ."

See also the main heading "Religion," pages 413-416.

Jehovah Opposes Gods of the Nations and Their Forms of Worship

Ex. 12:12 "I must pass through the land of Egypt . . . and on all the gods of Egypt I shall execute judgments."

Num. 25:2-5 "The women came calling the people to the sacrifices of their gods, and the people began to eat and to bow down to their gods. So Israel attached itself to the Baal of Peor; and the anger of Jehovah began to blaze against Israel. Hence Jehovah said to Moses: 'Take all the head ones of the people and expose them to Jehovah toward the sun, that the burning anger of Jehovah may turn back from Israel.' Then Moses said to the judges of Israel: 'Each one of you kill his men who have an attachment with the Baal of Peor.'"

1 Sam. 5:2, 4, 6 "The Philistines proceeded to take the ark of the true God and bring it into the house of Dagon and station it beside Dagon. When they got up early in the morning the very day after, there Dagon was fallen upon his face to the earth before the ark of Jehovah, with the head of Dagon and the palms of both his hands cut off, to the threshold. Only the fish part had been *left* upon him. And the hand of Jehovah came to be heavy upon the Ashdodites, and he began causing panic and striking them with piles, namely, Ashdod and its territories."

Deut. 12:29-31 "When Jehovah your God will cut off from before you the nations to whom you are going to dispossess them, you must also dispossess them and dwell in their land. Watch out for yourself for fear you may be entrapped after them, . . . and for fear you may inquire respecting their gods, saying, 'How was it these nations used to serve their gods? And I, yes, I, will do the same way.' You must not do that way to Jehovah your God, *for everything detestable to Jehovah that he does hate they have done to their gods.*"

Zeph. 2:11 "Jehovah will be fear-inspiring against them; for he will certainly emaciate all the gods of the earth."

Jehovah Rejects Worship Mixed with Idolatrous Rites, Even *Though Supposedly Offered* to Him

Ex. 32:1, 4, 5, 7, 8, 10 "The people congregated themselves about Aaron and said to him: 'Get up, make for us a god who will go ahead of us, because as regards this Moses, the man who led us up out of the land of Egypt, we certainly do not know what has happened to him.' Then he took the gold from their hands, and he formed it with a graving tool and proceeded to make it into a molten statue of a calf. And they began to say: 'This is your God, O Israel, who led you up out of the land of Egypt.' When Aaron got to see this, he went to building an altar before it. Finally Aaron called out and said: 'There is a festival to Jehovah tomorrow.' Jehovah now said to Moses: 'Go, descend, because your people whom you led up out of the land of Egypt have acted ruinously. They have turned aside in a hurry from the way I have commanded them to go. They have made a molten statue of a calf for themselves and keep bowing down to it and sacrificing to it . . . So now let me be, that my anger may blaze against them and I may exterminate them.'"

1 Ki. 12:26-28, 30 "Jeroboam began to say in his heart: 'Now *the kingdom will return* to the house of David. If this people continues going up to render sacrifices in the house of Jehovah in Jerusalem, the heart of this people will also be bound to return to their lord, Rehoboam the king of Judah . . .' Consequently the king took counsel and made two golden calves and said *to the people: 'It is too much* for you to go up to Jerusalem. Here is your God, O Israel, that brought you up out of the land of Egypt.' And this thing came to be a cause for sin."

Religious Brotherhood with False Worshipers in Promised Land Was Forbidden God's People *Israel*

Ex. 23:31-33 "I will fix your boundary from the Red Sea to the sea of the Philistines and from the wilderness to the River; because I shall give into your hand the inhabitants of the land, and you will certainly drive them out from before yourself. You *are not to conclude a covenant* with them or their gods. They should not dwell in your land, that they may not cause you to sin against me. In case you should serve their gods, it would become a snare to you."

Deut. 7:1, 3, 4 "When Jehovah your God at last brings you into the land to which you are going so as to take possession of it, he must also clear away populous nations from before you . . . And you must form no marriage alliance with them. Your daughter you must not give to his son, and his daughter you must not take for your son. For he will turn your son from following me, and they will certainly serve other gods; and Jehovah's anger will indeed blaze against you, and he will certainly annihilate you in a hurry."

Failure to keep clean from false religious rites led to divine disapproval

Judg. 10:6, 7 "The sons of Israel again proceeded to do what was bad in the eyes of Jehovah, and they began to serve the Baals and the Ashtoreth images and the gods of Syria and the gods of Sidon and the gods of Moab and the gods of the sons of Ammon and the gods of the Philistines. *So they left Jehovah and* did not serve him. At this Jehovah's anger blazed against Israel."

Ps. 106:35-40 "They went mingling with the nations and took up learning their works. And they kept serving their idols, and these came to be a snare to them. . . . And they got to be unclean by *their works and kept having* immoral intercourse by their dealings. And the anger of Jehovah began to blaze against his people, and he came to detest his inheritance."

Jer. 44:2, 3 "This is what Jehovah of armies, the God of Israel, has said, 'You yourselves *have seen* all the calamity that I have brought in upon Jerusalem and upon all the cities of Judah, and here they are a devastated place this day, and in them there is no inhabitant. It is because of their badness that they did in order to offend me by going and making sacrificial smoke and rendering service to other gods whom they themselves had not known, neither you nor your forefathers.'"

Solomon's practice of interfaith was "bad in the eyes of Jehovah"

1 Ki. 11:5, 6, 9 "Solomon began going after Ashtoreth the goddess of the Sidonians and after Milcom the disgusting thing of the Ammonites. And Solomon began to do what was bad in the eyes of Jehovah, and he did not follow Jehovah fully like David his father. And Jehovah came to be incensed at Solomon, because his heart had inclined away from Jehovah the God of Israel, the one appearing to him twice."

Jesus Christ Condemned Religious Beliefs and Practices Not in Strict Accord with God's Word

Matt. 16:6, 12 "Jesus said to them: 'Keep your eyes open and watch out for the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees.' Then they grasped that he said to watch out, not for the leaven of the loaves, but for the teaching of the Pharisees and Sadducees."

Mark 7:6-9 "He said to them: 'Isaiah aptly prophesied about you hypocrites, as it is written, "This people honor me with their lips, but their hearts are far removed from me. It is in vain that they keep worshiping me, because they teach as doctrines commands of men." Letting go the commandment of God, you hold fast the tradition of men.' Further, he went on to say to them: 'Adroitly you set aside the commandment of God in order to retain your tradition.'"

Matt. 23:5-7, 23, 27, 28 "All the works they do they do to be viewed by men; for they broaden the scripture-containing

cases that they wear as safeguards, and enlarge the fringes of their garments. They like the most prominent place at evening meals and the front seats in the synagogues, and the greetings in the market places and to be called Rabbi by men. Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because you give the tenth of the mint and the dill and the cummin, but you have disregarded the weightier matters of the Law, namely, justice and mercy and faithfulness. These things it was binding to do, yet not to disregard the other things. Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because you resemble whitewashed graves, which outwardly indeed appear beautiful but inside are full of dead men's bones and of every sort of uncleanness. In that way you also, outwardly indeed, appear righteous to men, but inside you are full of hypocrisy and lawlessness."

Jesus refused to acknowledge spiritual brotherhood with religious leaders of his day

John 8:42-44 "Jesus said to them: 'If God were your Father, you would love me, for from God I came forth and am here. Neither have I come of my own initiative at all, but that One sent me forth. Why is it you do not know what I am speaking? Because you cannot listen to my word. You are from your father the Devil, and you wish to do the desires of your father.' "

Matt. 23:29-33 "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because you build the graves of the prophets and decorate the memorial tombs of the righteous ones, and you say, 'If we had been in the days of our forefathers, we would not have been sharers with them in the blood of the prophets.' Therefore you are bearing witness against yourselves that you are sons of those who murdered the prophets. Well, then, fill up the measure of your forefathers. Serpents, offspring of vipers, how are you to flee from the judgment of Gehenna?"

Not All Who Believed in Jesus Traveled with Him, but Not Encouraged to Form Separate Organizations

Mark 9:38-40 "John said to him: 'Teacher, we saw a certain man expelling demons by the use of your name and we tried to prevent him, because he was not accompanying us.' But Jesus said: 'Do not try to prevent him, for there is no one that will do a powerful work on the basis of my name that will quickly be able to revile me; for he that is not against us is for us.' "

John 19:38 "Joseph from Arimathea . . . was a disciple of Jesus but a secret one out of his fear of the Jews."

John 15:4, 5 "Remain in union with me, and I in union with you. Just as the branch cannot bear fruit of itself unless it remains in the vine, in the same way neither can you, unless you remain in union with me. I am the vine, you are the branches. He that remains in union with me, and I in union with him, this one bears much fruit; because apart from me you can do nothing at all."

After Jewish system of things ceased to be used by God, unified Christian congregation was formed, with local groups in many places

Acts 11:20-23, 25, 26 "There were some men of Cyprus and Cyrene that came to Antioch and began talking to the Greek-speaking people, declaring the good news of the Lord Jesus. Furthermore, the hand of Jehovah was with them, and a great number that became believers turned to the Lord. The account about them got to the ears of the congregation that was in Jerusalem, and they sent out Barnabas as far as Antioch. When he arrived and saw the undeserved kindness of God, he rejoiced and began to encourage them all to continue in the Lord with hearty purpose. So he went off to Tarsus to make a thorough search for Saul and, after he found him, he brought him to Antioch. It thus came about that for a whole year they gathered together with them in the congregation and taught quite a crowd, and it was first in Antioch that the disciples were by divine providence called Christians."

Gal. 1:22 "But [Paul] was unknown by face to the congregations of Judea that were in union with Christ."

Acts 16:4, 5 "Now as they traveled on through the cities they would deliver to those there for observance the decrees that had been decided upon by the apostles and older men who were in Jerusalem. Therefore, indeed, the congregations continued to be made firm in the faith and to increase in number from day to day."

Acts 19:8, 9 "Entering into the synagogue, he spoke with boldness for three months, giving talks and using persuasion concerning the kingdom of God. But when some went on hardening themselves and not believing, speaking injuriously about The Way before the multitude, he withdrew from them and separated the disciples from them, daily giving talks in the school auditorium of Tyrannus."

Rom. 12:4, 5 "Just as we have in one body many members, but the members do not all have the same function, so we, although many, are one body in union with Christ, but members belonging individually to one another."

Not All Who Profess Faith in Christ Practice Religion Acceptable to God

Matt. 7:21-23 "Not everyone saying to me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter into the kingdom of the heavens, but the one doing the will of my Father who is in the heavens will. Many will say to me in that day, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your name, and expel demons in your name, and perform many powerful works in your name?' And yet then I will confess to them: I never knew you! Get away from me, you workers of lawlessness."

2 Cor. 11:13-15 "Such men are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into apostles of Christ. And no wonder, for Satan himself keeps transforming himself into an angel of light. It is therefore nothing great if his ministers also keep transforming themselves into ministers of righteousness."

Many professed Christians embrace teachings of apostates

Acts 20:29, 30 "I know that after my going away oppressive wolves will enter in among you and will not treat the flock with tenderness, and from among you yourselves men will rise and speak twisted things to draw away the disciples after themselves."

1 Tim. 4:1-3 "However, the inspired utterance says definitely that in later periods of time some will fall away from the faith, paying attention to misleading inspired utterances and teachings of demons, by the hypocrisy of men who speak lies, marked in their conscience as with a branding iron; forbidding to marry, commanding to abstain from foods which God created to be partaken of with thanksgiving by those who have faith and accurately know the truth."

Wrong doctrine and conduct can corrupt even professedly Christian worship

2 Pet. 2:1-3 "There also came to be false prophets among the people, as there will also be false teachers among you. These very ones will quietly bring in destructive sects and will disown even the owner that bought them, bringing speedy destruction upon themselves. Furthermore, many will follow their acts of loose conduct, and on account of these the way of the truth will be spoken of abusively. Also, with covetousness they will exploit you with counterfeit words. But as for them, the judgment of ancient times is not moving slowly, and the destruction of them is not slumbering."

2 Cor. 11:3 "But I am afraid that somehow, as the serpent seduced Eve by its cunning, your minds might be corrupted away from the sincerity and the chastity that are due the Christ."

Jude 3, 4 "Beloved ones, though I was making every effort to write you about the salvation we hold in common, I found it necessary to write you to exhort you to put up a hard fight for the faith that was once for all time delivered to the holy ones. My reason is that certain men have slipped in who have long ago been appointed by the Scriptures to this judgment, ungodly men, turning the undeserved kindness of our God into an excuse for loose conduct and proving false to our only Owner and Lord, Jesus Christ."

See also the main heading "Holidays," pages 235-242.

Organizational unity insufficient; true worshipers united in belief

Rom. 15:5, 6 "Now may the God who supplies endurance and comfort grant you to have among yourselves the same mental attitude that Christ Jesus had, that with one accord you may with one mouth glorify the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ."

John 17:20, 21 "I make request, not concerning these only, but also concerning those putting faith in me through their word; in order that they may all be one, just as you, Father, are in union with me and I am in union with you, that they also may be in union with us, in order that the world may believe that you sent me forth."

1 Cor. 1:10 "Now I exhort you, brothers, through the name of our Lord Jesus Christ that you should all speak in agreement, and that there should not be divisions among you, but that you may be fitly united in the same mind and in the same line of thought."

True Christians to Keep Separate from All False Worship

2 Cor. 6:14-17 "Do not become unevenly yoked with unbelievers. For what sharing do righteousness and lawlessness have? Or what fellowship does light have with darkness? Further, what harmony is there between Christ and Belial? Or what portion does a faithful person have with an unbeliever? And what agreement does God's temple have with idols? For we are a temple of a living God; just as God said: 'I shall reside among them and walk among them, and I shall be their God, and they will be my people.' 'Therefore get out from among them, and separate yourselves,' says Jehovah, 'and quit touching the unclean thing'; 'and I will take you in.'"

2 Tim. 3:2, 5 "Men will be . . . having a form of godly devotion but proving false to its power; and from these turn away."

Rev. 18:4 "I heard another voice out of heaven say: 'Get out of her, my people, if you do not want to share with her in her sins, and if you do not want to receive part of her plagues.'"

See also the main heading "Babylon the Great," pages 33-39.

Proper to Expose Religious Falsehood; Protection to Life of Those Who Take Heed

Matt. 15:12-14 "Then the disciples came up and said to him: 'Do you know that the Pharisees stumbled at hearing what you said?' In reply he said: 'Every plant that my heavenly Father did not plant will be uprooted. Let them be. Blind guides is what they are. If, then, a blind man guides a blind man, both will fall into a pit.'"

Matt. 23:15, 27, 28 "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because you traverse sea and dry land to make one proselyte, and when he becomes one you make him a subject for Gehenna twice as much so as yourselves. Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because you resemble whitewashed graves, which outwardly indeed appear beautiful but inside are full of dead men's bones and of every sort of uncleanness. In that way you also, outwardly indeed, appear righteous to men, but inside you are full of hypocrisy and lawlessness."

Jer. 14:14 "Jehovah went on to say to me: 'Falsehood is what the prophets are prophesying in my name. I have not sent them, nor have I commanded them or spoken to them. A false vision and divination and a valueless thing and the trickiness of their heart they are speaking prophetically to you people.'"

Jer. 23:13, 14, 16 "'In the prophets of Samaria I have seen impropriety. They have acted as prophets incited by Baal, and they keep making my people, even Israel, wander about. And in the prophets of Jerusalem I have seen horrible things, committing adultery and walking in falsehood; and they have strengthened the hands of evildoers in order that they should not return, each one from his own badness. To me all of them have become like Sodom, and the inhabitants of her like Gomorrah.' This is what Jehovah of armies has said: 'Do not listen to the words of the prophets who are prophesying to you people. They are making you become vain. The vision of their own heart is what they speak —not from the mouth of Jehovah.'"

Opposers of the Truth Often Seek to Suppress It by Violence

John 8:39, 40 "Jesus said to them: 'If you are Abraham's children, do the works of Abraham. But now you are seeking to kill me, a man that has told you the truth that I heard from God. Abraham did not do this.'"

John 11:47, 48, 53 "Consequently the chief priests and the Pharisees gathered the Sanhedrin together and began to say: 'What are we to do, because this man performs many signs? If we let him alone this way, they will all put faith in him, and the Romans will come and take away both our place and our nation.' Therefore from that day on they took counsel to kill him."

Acts 17:1, 4, 5 "They now journeyed through Amphipolis and Apollonia and came to Thessalonica, where there was a synagogue of the Jews. As a result some of them became believers and associated themselves with Paul and Silas, and a great multitude of the Greeks who worshiped God and not a few of the principal women did so. But the Jews, getting jealous, took into their company certain wicked men of the market-place idlers and formed a mob and proceeded to throw the city into an uproar. And they assaulted the house of Jason and went seeking to have them brought forth to the rabble."

Jehovah

Name of the True God

Isa. 42:8 "I am Jehovah. That is my name."

Ps. 83:18 "That people may know that you, whose name is Jehovah, you alone are the Most High over all the earth."

Ex. 20:7 "You must not take up the name of Jehovah your God in a worthless way, for Jehovah will not leave the one unpunished who takes up his name in a worthless way."

Ex. 6:2, 3 "God went on to speak to Moses and to say to him: 'I am Jehovah. And I used to appear to Abraham, Isaac and Jacob as God Almighty, but as respects my name Jehovah I did not make myself known to them.'"

Not sufficient to call him "God"; name to be known and used

John 17:6, 26 "I [Jesus] have made your name manifest to the men you gave me out of the world. . . . I have made your name known to them and will make it known."

Rom. 10:13 "Everyone who calls on the name of Jehovah will be saved."

Isa. 12:4, 5 "In that day you will certainly say: 'Give thanks to Jehovah, you people! Call upon his name. Make known among the peoples his dealings. Make mention that his name is to be put on high. Make melody to Jehovah, for he has done surpassingly. This is to be made known in all the earth.'"

Name to be sanctified, to be declared throughout the earth

Ezek. 36:23 "I shall certainly sanctify my great name, which was being profaned among the nations, which you profaned in the midst of them; and the nations will have to know that I am Jehovah."

Ezek. 38:23 "I shall certainly magnify myself and sanctify myself and make myself known before the eyes of many nations; and they will have to know that I am Jehovah."

Luke 11:2 "Then he said to them: 'Whenever you pray, say, "Father, let your name be sanctified."'"

Rom. 9:17 "The Scripture says to Pharaoh: 'For this very cause I have let you remain, that in connection with you I may show my power, and that my name may be declared in all the earth.'"

See also the main heading "Sanctification," pages 441, 442.

Creator of All Things

Rev. 4:11 "Jehovah, . . . you created all things, and because of your will they existed and were created."

Jer. 32:17 "O Lord Jehovah! Here you yourself have made the heavens and the earth by your great power and by your outstretched arm. The whole matter is not too wonderful for you yourself."

Gen. 1:27; 2:4 "God proceeded to create the man in his image, in God's image he created him; male and female he created them." "This is a history of the heavens and the earth in the time of their being created, in the day that Jehovah God made earth and heaven."

Ps. 148:1-5 "Praise Jehovah from the heavens. . . . Praise him, all you his angels. . . . sun and moon. . . . stars of light. . . . heavens of the heavens, . . . waters that are above the heavens. Let them praise the name of Jehovah; for he himself commanded, and they were created."

Heb. 3:4 "He that constructed all things is God."

See also the main heading "Creation," pages 131-134.

Almighty God, Universal Sovereign

Rev. 1:8 "'I am the Alpha and the Omega,' says Jehovah God, 'the One who is and who was and who is coming, the Almighty.'"

Ps. 73:28 "In the Sovereign Lord Jehovah I have placed my refuge."

Acts 4:24 "Sovereign Lord, you are the One who made the heaven and the earth and the sea and all the things in them."

Isa. 33:22 "Jehovah is our Judge, Jehovah is our Statute-giver, Jehovah is our King; he himself will save us."

Cannot be thwarted in his purposes

Isa. 14:24, 27 "Jehovah of armies has sworn, saying: 'Surely just as I have figured, so it must occur; and just as I have counseled, that is what will come true.' For Jehovah of armies himself has counseled, and who can break it up? And his hand is the one stretched out, and who can turn it back?"

2 Chron. 20:6 "O Jehovah the God of our forefathers, are you not God in the heavens, and are you not dominating over all the kingdoms of the nations, and are there not in your hand power and mightiness, with no one to hold his ground against you?"

Matt. 19:26 "Jesus said to them: '. . . with God all things are possible.'"

Job 42:2 "I have come to know that you are able to do all things, and there is no idea that is unattainable for you."

Without Beginning or End of Existence

Ps. 90:2 "Even from time indefinite to time indefinite you are God."

Ps. 93:2 "Your throne is firmly established from long ago; you are from time indefinite."

Job 36:26 "Behold! God is more exalted than we can know; in number his years are beyond searching."

1 Tim. 1:17 "Now to the King of eternity, incorruptible, invisible, the only God, be honor and glory forever and ever."

Jer. 10:10 "Jehovah is in truth God. He is the living God and the King to time indefinite."

Impossible to Be Seen with Human Eyes

John 1:18 "No man has seen God at any time."

Ex. 33:20 "You are not able to see my face, because no man may see me and yet live."

1 Tim. 1:17 "The King of eternity, incorruptible, invisible, the only God."

Has made manifestations of his existence by means of visions and angels

Ex. 24:10, 11 "They got to see the God of Israel. And under his feet there was what seemed like a work of sapphire flagstones and like the very heavens for purity. . . . the distinguished men of the sons of Israel . . . got a vision of the true God."

Dan. 7:7, 9, 13 "I kept on beholding in the visions of the night . . . until there were thrones placed and the Ancient of Days sat down. His clothing was white just like snow, and the hair of his head was like clean wool. His throne was flames of fire; its wheels were a burning fire. I kept on beholding in the visions of the night, and, see there! with the clouds of the heavens someone like a son of man happened

to be coming; and to the Ancient of Days he gained access."

Luke 1:19 "In reply the angel said to him: 'I am Gabriel, who stands near before God, and I was sent forth to speak with you.'"

Ex. 19:16, 20; 20:1 "On the third day when it became morning it came about that thunders and lightnings began occurring, and a heavy cloud upon the mountain and a very loud sound of a horn, so that all the people who were in the camp began to tremble. So Jehovah came down upon Mount Sinai to the top of the mountain. . . . And God proceeded to speak all these words." (Compare Acts 7:53; Heb. 2:2.)

Not possible to make a likeness of him

Deut. 4:15, 16 "You must take good care of your souls, because you did not see any form on the day of Jehovah's speaking to you in Horeb out of the middle of the fire, that you may not act ruinously and may not really make for yourselves a carved image, the form of any symbol."

Acts 17:29 "We ought not to imagine that the Divine Being is like gold or silver or stone, like something sculptured by the art and contrivance of man."

John 5:37 "You have neither heard his voice at any time nor seen his figure."

See also the main heading "Idolatry," pages 247-252.

Some of His Outstanding Qualities

1 John 4:8 "God is love."

Deut. 32:4 "The Rock, perfect is his activity, for all his ways are justice. A God of faithfulness . . . righteous and upright is he."

Job 12:13 "With him there are wisdom and mightiness; he has counsel and understanding."

Isa. 40:26 "He also being vigorous in power."

Ex. 20:5 "I Jehovah . . . am a God exacting exclusive devotion, bringing punishment for the error."

Ex. 34:6 "Jehovah, a God merciful and gracious, slow to anger and abundant in loving-kindness and truth."

Ps. 86:5 "You, O Jehovah, are good and ready to forgive."

Rom. 9:15 "I will show compassion."

Rom. 9:22 "God . . . tolerated with much long-suffering."

Jas. 1:5 "God . . . gives generously."

Jas. 5:11 "Jehovah is very tender in affection."

2 Pet. 3:9 "Jehovah is not slow respecting his promise . . . but he is patient."

Isa. 49:13 "Jehovah has comforted his people, and he shows pity."

Job 37:16 "The One perfect in knowledge."

Isa. 40:28 "Jehovah, the Creator. . . . He does not tire out or grow weary."

Jer. 3:12 "I am loyal."

Mal. 3:6 "I have not changed."

1 Cor. 14:33 "God is a God, not of disorder, but of peace."

1 Tim. 1:11 "The happy God."

Heb. 6:18 "It is impossible for God to lie."

Heb. 12:29 "God is also a consuming fire."

Rev. 4:8 "Holy is Jehovah God, the Almighty."

Incorruptible Spirit Person, with Senses of Sight, Hearing, and so Forth

2 Cor. 3:17 "Jehovah is the Spirit."

1 Tim. 1:17 "Now to the King of eternity, incorruptible . . . the only God, be honor and glory forever and ever."

Rom. 1:23 "The glory of the incorruptible God."

2 Chron. 16:9 "As regards Jehovah, his eyes are roving about through all the earth to show his strength in behalf of those whose heart is complete toward him."

1 Pet. 3:12 "The eyes of Jehovah are upon the righteous ones, and his ears are toward their supplication."

Ps. 94:9 "The One planting the ear, can he not hear? Or the One forming the eye, can he not look?"

Isa. 45:9 "Should the clay say to its former: 'What do you make?' And your achievement say: 'He has no hands'?"

All Things Are Exposed to His Eyes

Prov. 15:3 "The eyes of Jehovah are in every place, keeping watch upon the bad ones and the good ones."

Heb. 4:13 "There is not a creation that is not manifest to his sight, but all things are naked and openly exposed to the eyes of him with whom we have an accounting."

Jer. 16:17 "My eyes are upon all their ways. They have not been concealed from before me, neither has their error been hid from in front of my eyes."

Not Omnipresent, but Can Project Spirit Anywhere to Accomplish His Purpose

1 Ki. 8:30 "May you yourself hear at the place of your dwelling, in the heavens."

Heb. 9:24 "Christ entered . . . into heaven itself, now to appear before the person of God for us."

Matt. 23:9, 22 "One is your Father, the heavenly One. And he that swears by heaven is swearing by the throne of God and by him that is sitting on it."

Ps. 11:4 "Jehovah is in his holy temple. Jehovah—in the heavens is his throne."

Amos 9:2 "If they dig down into Sheol, from there my own hand will take them; and if they go up to the heavens, from there I shall bring them down."

Not the God of the Jews Only

Rom. 3:29 "Is he the God of the Jews only? Is he not also of people of the nations? Yes, of people of the nations also."

Acts 10:34, 35; 11:18 "At this Peter opened his mouth and said: 'For a certainty I perceive that God is not partial, but in every nation the man that fears him and works righteousness is acceptable to him.'" "Now when they heard these things, they acquiesced, and they glorified God, saying: 'Well, then, God has granted repentance for the purpose of life to people of the nations also.'"

Isa. 54:5 "Jehovah of armies being his name; and the Holy One of Israel . . . The God of the whole earth he will be called."

Not the "Old Testament" Name for Jesus Christ

Ps. 110:1 "The utterance of Jehovah to my Lord is: 'Sit at my right hand until I place your enemies as a stool for your feet.'" (Compare with Luke 20:41-43; Acts 2:34, 35.)

1 Cor. 8:6 "There is actually to us one God the Father, out of whom all things are, and we for him; and there is one Lord, Jesus Christ, through whom all things are, and we through him."

John 20:17 "I am ascending to my Father and your Father and to my God and your God."

John 12:49 "I have not spoken out of my own impulse, but the Father himself who sent me has given me a commandment as to what to tell and what to speak."

Phil. 2:11 "And every tongue should openly acknowledge that Jesus Christ is Lord to the glory of God the Father."

Not Part of Triune Godhead, with Other Coequal Members

Deut. 6:4 "Listen, O Israel: Jehovah our God is one Jehovah."

Jehovah's Witnesses

NAME AND ORIGIN

Name "Jehovah's Witnesses" Is Indicated by God

Isa. 43:10-12 "'You are my witnesses,' is the utterance of Jehovah, 'even my servant whom I have chosen, in order that you may know and have faith in me, and that you may understand that I am the same One. Before me there was no God formed, and after me there continued to be none. I—I am Jehovah, and besides me there is no savior. . . . So you are my witnesses,' is the utterance of Jehovah, 'and I am God.'"

Jesus Christ the Chief Witness of Jehovah

John 18:37 "Jesus answered: '. . . For this I have been born, and for this I have come into the world, that I should bear witness to the truth. Everyone that is on the side of the truth listens to my voice.'"

Rev. 1:5 "Jesus Christ, 'the Faithful Witness.'"

Rev. 3:14 "These are the things that the Amen says, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation by God."

Abel the First of a Long Line of Faithful Witnesses of Jehovah on Earth

Heb. 11:4-32; 12:1 "By faith Abel offered God a sacrifice of greater worth than Cain, through which faith he had witness borne to him that he was righteous, God bearing witness respecting his gifts; and through it he, although he died, yet speaks. . . . Enoch . . . Noah . . . Abraham . . . Sarah . . . Isaac . . . Jacob . . . Joseph . . . Moses . . . Rahab . . . the time will fail me if I go on to relate about Gideon, Barak, Samson, Jephthah, David as well as Samuel and the other prophets, . . . we have so great a cloud of witnesses surrounding us."

Christian Congregation Also a People for Jehovah's Name, to Make It Known

John 17:6; Rom. 15:9 "I have made your name manifest to the men you gave me out of the world." "I will openly acknowledge you among the nations and to your name I will make melody."

Acts 15:14 "Symeon has related thoroughly how God for the first time turned his attention to the nations to take out of them a people for his name."

1 Pet. 2:9 "You are 'a chosen race, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a people for special possession, that you should declare abroad the excellencies' of the one that called you out of darkness into his wonderful light."

Jehovah's Witnesses Today Are Christians; Also Witnesses of Jesus Christ

Acts 11:26 "It was first in Antioch that the disciples were by divine providence called Christians."

Acts 1:8 "You will be witnesses of me [Jesus Christ] both in Jerusalem and in all Judea and Samaria and to the most distant part of the earth."

Luke 24:46-48 "He said to them: 'In this way it is written that the Christ would suffer and rise from among the dead on the third day, and on the basis of his name repentance for forgiveness of sins would be preached in all the nations—starting out from Jerusalem, you are to be witnesses of these things.'"

CONDUCT

Bible Is Their Guide in All Matters of Life

2 Tim. 3:16, 17 "All Scripture is inspired of God and beneficial for teaching, for reproving, for setting things straight, for disciplining in righteousness, that the man of God may be fully competent, completely equipped for every good work."

Ps. 119:105 "Your word is a lamp to my foot, and a light to my roadway."

Matt. 4:1-7 "Jesus was led by the spirit up into the wilderness to be tempted by the Devil. . . . But in reply he said: 'It is written, "Man must live, not on bread alone, but on every utterance coming forth through Jehovah's mouth."' . . . Jesus said to him: 'Again it is written.'"

Their Religion Not a Set of Rituals but a Way of Life

Acts 9:1, 2 "Saul . . . asked him for letters to the synagogues in Damascus, in order that he might bring bound to Jerusalem any whom he found who belonged to The Way, both men and women." (See also Acts 19:9, 23; 2 Pet. 2:2.)

1 Cor. 10:31 "Whether you are eating or drinking or doing anything else, do all things for God's glory."

Rom. 12:1, 2 "Present your bodies a sacrifice living, holy, acceptable to God, a sacred service with your power of reason. And quit being fashioned after this system of things, but be transformed by making your mind over, that you may prove to yourselves the good and acceptable and perfect will of God."

Christ's True Followers Readily Identified by Outstanding Love for One Another

John 13:34, 35 "I am giving you a new commandment, that you love one another; just as I have loved you, that you also love one another. By this all will know that you are my disciples, if you have love among yourselves."

1 John 4:11, 20, 21 "If this is how God loved us, then we are ourselves under obligation to love one another. If anyone makes the statement: 'I love God,' and yet is hating his brother, he is a liar. For he who does not love his brother, whom he has seen, cannot be loving God, whom he has not seen. And this commandment we have from him, that the one who loves God should be loving his brother also."

National, Racial, Social, Lingual Status No Divisive Barriers

Rev. 7:9 "I saw, and, look! a great crowd, which no man was able to number, out of all nations and tribes and peoples and tongues, standing before the throne and before the Lamb."

Gal. 3:28 "There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither slave nor freeman, there is neither male nor female; for you are all one person in union with Christ Jesus." (See also Col. 3:10, 11.)

Jas. 2:1-4 "My brothers, you are not holding the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ . . . with acts of favoritism, are you? For, if a man with gold rings on his fingers and in splendid clothing enters into your public assembly, but a poor man in filthy clothing also enters, yet you look with favor upon the one wearing the splendid clothing and say: 'You take this seat here in a fine place,' and you say to the poor one: 'You keep standing,' or: 'Take that seat there under my footstool,' you have class distinc-

tions among yourselves and you have become judges rendering wicked decisions, is that not so?"

Known for Law-abiding Conduct

1 Pet. 2:13-17 "For the Lord's sake subject yourselves to every human creation: whether to a king as being superior or to governors as being sent by him to inflict punishment on evildoers but to praise doers of good. For so the will of God is, that by doing good you may muzzle the ignorant talk of the unreasonable men. Be as free people, and yet holding your freedom, not as a blind for moral badness, but as slaves of God. Honor men of all sorts, have love for the whole association of brothers, be in fear of God, have honor for the king."

Rom. 13:7 "Render to all their dues, to him who calls for the tax, the tax; to him who calls for the tribute, the tribute; to him who calls for fear, such fear; to him who calls for honor, such honor."

Dan. 6:4, 5 "The high officials . . . themselves were constantly seeking to find some pretext against Daniel . . .; but there was no pretext or corrupt thing at all that they were able to find, forasmuch as he was trustworthy and no negligence or corrupt thing at all was found in him. Consequently these able-bodied men were saying: 'We shall find in this Daniel no pretext at all, except we have to find it against him in the law of his God.'"

When human laws conflict with divine law, Jehovah's witnesses obey God

Acts 4:18-20 "They called them and charged them, nowhere to make any utterance or to teach upon the basis of the name of Jesus. But in reply Peter and John said to them: 'Whether it is righteous in the sight of God to listen to you rather than to God, judge for yourselves. But as for us, we cannot stop speaking about the things we have seen and heard.'"

Acts 5:29 "Peter and the other apostles said: 'We must obey God as ruler rather than men.'"

Moral Conduct in Keeping with the Standards Set Out in the Bible

Gal. 5:19-23 "The works of the flesh are manifest, and they are fornication, uncleanness, loose conduct, idolatry, practice of spiritism, hatreds, strife, jealousy, fits of anger, contentions, divisions, sects, envies, drunken bouts, revelries, and things like these. As to these things I am forewarning you . . . that those who practice such things will not inherit God's kingdom. On the other hand, the fruitage of the spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, kindness, goodness, faith, mildness, self-control."

Eph. 4:25-28 "Now that you have put away falsehood, speak truth each one of you with his neighbor, because we are members belonging to one another. Be wrathful, and yet do not sin; let the sun not set with you in a provoked state, neither allow place for the Devil. Let the stealer steal no more, but rather let him do hard work, doing with his hands what is good work, that he may have something to distribute to someone in need."

Heb. 13:4 "Let marriage be honorable among all, and the marriage bed be without defilement, for God will judge fornicators and adulterers."

MEETINGS

Each Congregation Meets Regularly

Heb. 10:23-25 "Let us hold fast the public declaration of our hope without wavering, for he is faithful that promised. And let us consider one another to incite to love and fine works, not forsaking the gathering of ourselves together, as some have the custom, but encouraging one another, and all the more so as you behold the day drawing near."

Acts 2:42, 46 "They continued devoting themselves to the teaching of the apostles . . . And day after day they were in constant attendance at the temple with one accord."

Congregation Meetings Held in Homes or Meeting Halls

Rom. 16:3, 5 "Give my greetings to Prisca and Aquila . . . and greet the congregation that is in their house." (See also Philem. 2.)

Acts 20:8 "There were quite a few lamps in the upper chamber where we were gathered together."

Acts 19:8, 9 "Entering into the synagogue, he spoke with boldness for three months, giving talks and using persuasion concerning the kingdom of God. But when some went on hardening themselves and not believing, speaking injuriously about The Way before the multitude, he withdrew from them and separated the disciples from them, daily giving talks in the school auditorium of Tyrannus."

Children Attend with Parents

Deut. 31:12 "Congregate the people, the men and the women and the little ones and your alien resident who is within your gates, in order that they may listen and in order that they may learn, as they must fear Jehovah your God and take care to carry out all the words of this law."

2 Chron. 20:4, 13 "Even from all the cities of Judah they came to consult Jehovah. All the while all those of Judah were standing before Jehovah, even their little ones, their wives and their sons."

2 Tim. 3:15 "From infancy you have known the holy writings, which are able to make you wise for salvation."

Discourses Given for the Benefit of Believers and Newly Interested Persons

Matt. 5:1, 2; 7:28 "When he saw the crowds he went up into the mountain; and after he sat down his disciples came to him; and he opened his mouth and began teaching them." "Now when Jesus finished these sayings, the effect was that the crowds were astounded at his way of teaching."

Acts 15:32 "Judas and Silas . . . encouraged the brothers with many a discourse and strengthened them."

Meetings to Read and Discuss Portions of the Bible and Bible Doctrines

Luke 4:16, 17 "He came to Nazareth . . . and, according to his custom on the sabbath day, he entered into the synagogue, and he stood up to read. So the scroll of the prophet Isaiah was handed him, and he opened the scroll."

Neh. 8:8 "And they continued reading aloud from the book, from the law of the true God, it being expounded, and there being a putting of meaning into it; and they continued giving understanding in the reading."

Meetings to Consider Preaching Methods

Luke 10:2-11 "Then he began to say to them: '. . . Do not embrace anybody in greeting along the road. Wherever you enter into a house say first, "May this house have peace." And if a friend of peace is there, your peace will rest upon him. But if there is not, it will turn back to you. So stay in that house, eating and drinking the things they provide, for the worker is worthy of his wages. Do not be transferring from house to house. Also, wherever you enter into a city and they receive you, eat the things set before you, and

cure the sick ones in it, and go on telling them, "The kingdom of God has come near *to you.*" But wherever you enter into a city and they do not receive you, go out into its broad ways and say, "Even the dust that got stuck to our feet from your city we wipe off against you." '"

See also Acts 4:23-31.

Training for Improvement in Public Reading, Exhortation, Teaching

1 Tim. 4:13-15 "While I am coming, continue applying yourself to public reading, to exhortation, to teaching. Do not be neglecting the gift in you that was given you through a prediction and when the body of older men *laid their hands* upon you. Ponder over these things; be absorbed in them, that your advancement may be manifest to all persons."

2 Tim. 2:15, 24 "Do your utmost to present yourself approved to God, a workman with nothing to be ashamed of, handling the word of the truth aright. But a slave of the Lord does not need to fight, but needs to be gentle toward all, qualified to teach."

Larger Assemblies Held Periodically

Acts 1:15; 2:1-4 "Now during these days Peter rose up in the midst of the brothers . . . (the crowd of persons was all together about one hundred and twenty)." "Now while the day of the festival of Pentecost was in progress they were all together at the same place, . . . and they all became filled with holy spirit and started to speak with different tongues, just as the spirit was granting them to make utterance."

Neh. 8:1-3 "All the people proceeded to gather themselves as one man at the public square . . . Accordingly Ezra the priest brought the law before the congregation of men as well as of women and of all intelligent *enough to listen,* . . . And he continued to read aloud from it before the public square . . . from daybreak till midday, in front of the men and the women and the other intelligent ones; and the ears of all the people were attentive to the book of the law."

Expenses Involved in Maintaining Meeting Places, and so Forth, Met by Voluntary Contributions

1 Chron. 29:1, 2, 5, 9 "David the king now said to all the congregation: '. . . according to all my power I have prepared for the house of my God . . . And who is there volunteering to fill his hand today with a gift for *Jehovah?' And the people gave* way to rejoicing over their making voluntary offerings, for it was with a complete heart that they made voluntary offerings to Jehovah."

Matt. 6:3, 4 "When making gifts of mercy, do not let your left hand know what your right is doing, that your gifts of mercy may be in secret; then your Father who is looking on in secret will repay you."

See also 2 Cor. 8:12; 9:7.

Family Bible Discussion Also Important

Eph. 6:4 "You, fathers, do not be irritating your children, but go on *bringing them up in the* discipline and authoritative advice of Jehovah."

Deut. 6:1, 6, 7 "Now these are the commandment, the regulations and the judicial decisions that Jehovah your God has commanded to teach you . . . And these words that I am commanding you today must prove to be on your heart; and you must inculcate them in your son and speak of them when you sit in your house and when you walk on the road and when you lie down and when you get up."

Ps. 78:3, 4 "Which we have heard and know, and which our own fathers have related to us; which we do not hide from their sons, relating them even to the generation to come, the praises of Jehovah and his strength and his wonderful things that he has done."

ORGANIZATION STRUCTURE

Jehovah God the Supreme Ruler of His People

Isa. 33:22 "Jehovah is our Judge, Jehovah is our Statute-giver, Jehovah is our King; he himself will save us."

Jude 25 "To the only God our Savior through Jesus Christ our *Lord, be glory, majesty, might* and authority for all past eternity and now and into all eternity."

Rom. 9:5 "God, who is over all, be blessed forever."

Christ, Not Any Man, Designated by Jehovah as the Leader of His Witnesses

Matt. 23:10 "Neither be called 'leaders,' for your Leader is one, the Christ."

Heb. 12:2 "Look intently at the Chief Agent and Perfecter of our faith, Jesus."

Phil. 2:9-11 "God exalted him to a superior position and kindly gave him the name that is above *every other name, so that in the* name of Jesus every knee should bend of those in heaven and those on earth and those under the ground, and every tongue should openly acknowledge that Jesus Christ is Lord to the glory of God the Father."

Anointed Christians on Earth Called to Heavenly Life Compose "Faithful and Discreet Slave"

Matt. 24:45-47 "Who really is the faithful and discreet slave whom his master appointed over his domestics, to give them their food at the proper time? Happy is that slave if his master on arriving finds him doing so. Truly I say to you, He will appoint him over all his belongings." (See also Luke 12:32-44.)

1 Pet. 2:4, 5, 9 "Coming to him as to a living stone, rejected, it is true, by men, but chosen, precious, with God, you yourselves also as living stones are being built up a spiritual house for the purpose of a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through Jesus Christ. But you are 'a chosen race, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a people for special possession, that you should declare abroad the excellencies' of the one that called you out of darkness into his wonderful light."

1 Pet. 1:3, 4 "Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, for according to his great mercy he gave us a new birth to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, to an incorruptible and undefiled and unfading inheritance. It is reserved in the heavens for you."

Isa. 43:10 "My witnesses . . . my servant."

See also "Organization (Jehovah's)," pages 362-366.

Receive Counsel Through Representative Members of "Slave" Class, a Visible Governing Body

Acts 16:4 "Now as they traveled on through the cities they would deliver to those there for observance the decrees that had been decided upon by the apostles and older men who were in Jerusalem."

Acts 8:14 "When the apostles in Jerusalem heard that Samaria had accepted the word of God, they dispatched Peter and John to them."

2 Thess. 3:6-15 "Now we are giving you orders, brothers, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, to withdraw from every

brother walking disorderly and *not according to the tradition* you received from us. . . . But if anyone is not obedient to our word through this letter, keep this one marked, stop associating with him, that he may become ashamed. And yet do not be considering him as an enemy, but continue admonishing him as a brother."

Each Congregation Has Spiritually Mature Men as Overseers and Ministerial Servants; Not a Clergy Class

1 Tim. 3:2-10 "The overseer should therefore be irreprehensible, a husband of one wife, moderate in habits, sound in mind, orderly, hospitable, qualified to teach . . . Ministerial servants should likewise be serious, . . . holding the sacred secret of the faith with a clean conscience. Also, let these be *tested as to* fitness first, then let them serve *as ministers, as they are free* from accusation."

Mark 10:42-45 "Jesus, after calling them to him, said to them: 'You know that those who appear to be ruling the nations lord it over them and their great ones wield authority over them. This is not the way among you; but whoever wants to become great among you must be your minister, and whoever wants to be first among you must be the *slave of all. For even the* Son of man came, not to be ministered to, but to minister."

Matt. 23:8 "One is your teacher, whereas all you are brothers."

Provide material necessities by working with own hands

2 Thess. 3:8-10 "Nor did we eat food from anyone free. To the contrary, by labor and toil night and day we were working so as not to impose an expensive burden upon any one of you. . . . In fact, also, when we were with you, we used to give you this order: 'If anyone does not want to work, neither let him eat.'"

Acts 20:33-35 "I have coveted no man's silver or gold or apparel. You yourselves know that these hands have attended to the needs of me and of those with me. I have exhibited to you in all things that by thus laboring you must assist those who are weak, and must bear in mind the words of the Lord Jesus, when he himself said, 'There is more happiness in giving than there is in receiving.'"

Appointment of Overseers by God's Holy Spirit and Through Visible Governing Body

Acts 20:28 "Pay attention to yourselves and to all the flock, among which the holy spirit has appointed you overseers, to shepherd the congregation of God."

Acts 6:3-6 "Search out for yourselves seven certified men from among you, full of spirit and wisdom, that we may appoint them over this necessary business . . . And the thing spoken was pleasing to the whole multitude, and they selected Stephen, a man full of faith and holy spirit, and Philip . . . and they placed them before the apostles, and, after having prayed, these laid their hands upon them."

Acts 14:23 "They appointed older men to office for them in the congregation and, offering prayer with fastings, they committed them to Jehovah in whom they had become believers."

Traveling Ministers Aid Congregations

Acts 15:36 "Now after some days Paul said to Barnabas: 'Above all things, let us return and visit the brothers in every one of the cities in which we published the word of Jehovah to see how they are.'"

1 Sam. 7:15, 16 "Samuel kept on judging Israel all the days of his life. And he traveled from year to year and made the circuit of Bethel and Gilgal and Mizpah and judged Israel at all these places."

FIELD MINISTRY

Active Ministry, Not Ritual, Comprises Their Worship

Matt. 28:19, 20 "Go therefore and make disciples of people of all the nations, . . . teaching them to observe all the things I have commanded you."

Matt. 24:14 "This good news of the kingdom will be preached in all the inhabited earth for a witness to all the nations; and then the end will come."

Jas. 1:22; 2:24, 26 "Become doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving yourselves *with false reasoning.*" "You see that a man is to be declared *righteous by works, and not by* faith alone. Indeed, as the body without breath is dead, so also faith without works is dead."

Each Baptized Witness a Minister

Acts 8:12 "But when they believed Philip, who was declaring the good news of the kingdom of God and of the name of Jesus Christ, they proceeded to be baptized, both men and women."

Rom. 10:13, 14 "For 'everyone who calls on the name of Jehovah will be saved.' However, how will they call on him in *whom they have not put faith?* How, in turn, will they put faith in him of whom they have not heard? How, in turn, will they hear without someone to preach?"

1 Cor. 9:16 "If, now, I am declaring the good news, it is no reason for me to boast, for necessity is laid upon me. Really, woe is me if I did not declare the good news!"

1 Cor. 3:5 "What, then, is Apollos? Yes, what is Paul? Ministers through whom you became believers, even as the Lord granted each one."

See also the main heading "Minister of God," pages 346-351.

Qualifications for the ministry

2 Cor. 3:5, 6 "Not that we of ourselves are adequately qualified to reckon anything as issuing from ourselves, but our being adequately qualified issues from God, who has indeed adequately *qualified us to be ministers* of a new covenant."

Acts 4:13 "Now when they beheld the outspokenness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were men unlettered and ordinary, they got to wondering. And they began to recognize about them that they used to be *with Jesus.*"

Commissioned by God to Preach

Isa. 61:1, 2 "The spirit of the Lord Jehovah is upon me, for the reason that Jehovah has *anointed me to tell good news* to the meek ones. He has sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to those taken captive and the wide opening of the eyes even to the prisoners; to proclaim the year of good will on the part of Jehovah and the day of vengeance on the part of *our God; to comfort all* the mourning ones." (See also Luke 4:16-21.)

John 20:21 "Jesus, therefore, said to them again: 'May you have peace. Just as the Father has sent me forth, I also am sending you.'"

Mark 13:10 "In all the nations the good news has to be preached."

Preaching Done from House to House, in Marketplaces and in Other Places Where the Public Can Be Reached

Acts 5:42 "Every day in the temple and from house to house they continued without letup teaching and declaring the good news about the Christ, Jesus."

Acts 20:20 "I did not hold back from telling you any of the things that were profitable nor from teaching you publicly and from house to house."

Acts 17:17 "He began to reason in the synagogue with the Jews and the other people who worshiped God and every day in the market place with those who happened to be on hand."

Acts 16:13 "On the sabbath day we went forth outside the gate beside a river, . . . and we sat down and began speaking to the women that had assembled."

Share God's Word with Others Whenever Opportunity Affords

John 4:6-15, 40, 41 "Now Jesus, tired out from the journey, was sitting at the fountain just as he was. . . . A woman of Samaria came to draw water. Jesus said to her: '. . . If you had known the free gift of God and who it is that says to you, 'Give me a drink,' you would have asked him, and he would have given you living water. . . . Whoever drinks from the water that I will give him will never get thirsty at all, but the water that I will give him will become in him a fountain of water bubbling up to impart everlasting life.' The woman said to him: 'Sir, give me this water.' Therefore when the Samaritans came to him, they began asking him to stay with them; and he stayed there two days. Consequently many more believed on account of what he said."

Acts 28:16, 30, 31 "Paul was permitted to stay by himself with the soldier guarding him. So he remained for an entire two years in his own hired house, and he would kindly receive all those who came in to him, preaching the kingdom of God to them and teaching the things concerning the Lord Jesus Christ with the greatest freeness of speech."

Responses to the Kingdom Message Vary

Matt. 13:18-23 "You, then, listen to the illustration of the man that sowed. Where anyone hears the word of the kingdom but does not get the sense of it, the wicked one comes and snatches away what has been sown in his heart; this is the one sown alongside the road. As for the one sown upon the rocky places, this is the one hearing the word and at once accepting it with joy. Yet he has no root in himself but continues for a time, and after tribulation or persecution has arisen on account of the word he is at once stumbled. As for the one sown among the thorns, this is the one hearing the word, but the anxiety of this system of things and the deceptive power of riches choke the word, and he becomes unfruitful. As for the one sown upon the fine soil, this is the one hearing the word and getting the sense of it, who really does bear fruit and produces, this one a hundredfold, that one sixty, the other thirty."

Luke 10:1, 2, 8-11 "The Lord designated seventy others and sent them forth by twos . . . Then he began to say to them: '. . . Also, wherever you enter into a city and they receive you, eat the things set before you, and cure the sick ones in it, and go on telling them, "The kingdom of God has come near to you." But wherever you enter into a city and they do not receive you, go out into its broad ways and say, "Even the dust that got stuck to our feet from your city we wipe off against you. Nevertheless, keep this in mind, that the kingdom of God has come near."' "

Objective of Jehovah's Witnesses in Their Preaching Work

Matt. 24:14 "This good news of the kingdom will be preached in all the inhabited earth for a witness to all the nations; and then the end will come."

Isa. 12:4, 5 "And in that day you will certainly say: 'Give thanks to Jehovah, you people! Call upon his name. Make known among the peoples his dealings. Make mention that his name is to be put on high. Make melody to Jehovah, for he has done surpassingly. This is to be made known in all the earth.' "

1 Tim. 4:16 "Pay constant attention to yourself and to your teaching. Stay by these things, for by doing this you will save both yourself and those who listen to you."

Reason for Frequency of Visits by Jehovah's Witnesses

2 Tim. 4:2 "Preach the word, be at it urgently."

Isa. 6:8, 9, 11 "I began to hear the voice of Jehovah saying: 'Whom shall I send, and who will go for us?' And I proceeded to say: 'Here I am! Send me.' And he went on to say: 'Go, and you must say to this people, "Hear again and again, O men" ' . . . At this I said: 'How long, O Jehovah?' Then he said: 'Until the cities actually crash in ruins, to be without an inhabitant, and the houses be without earthling man.' "

Record of Preaching Work Kept for Encouragement of All, so Aid Can Be Given Those Needing It, and to Make Possible Orderly Oversight of the Work

Acts 2:41; 4:4 "Those who embraced his word heartily were baptized, and on that day about three thousand souls were added." "Many of those who had listened to the speech believed, and the number of the men became about five thousand."

Acts 15:3 "These men continued on their way through both Phoenicia and Samaria, relating in detail the conversion of people of the nations, and they were causing great joy to all the brothers."

Acts 8:14 "When the apostles in Jerusalem heard that Samaria had accepted the word of God, they dispatched Peter and John to them."

2 Cor. 10:13 "For our part we will boast, not outside our assigned boundaries, but according to the boundary of the territory that God apportioned to us by measure, making it reach even as far as you."

Not Paid for Preaching; Do Not Charge for Services Performed

1 Cor. 9:18 "What, then, is my reward? That while declaring the good news I may furnish the good news without cost, to the end that I may not abuse my authority in the good news."

Matt. 10:8 "You received free, give free."

Rev. 22:17 "Let anyone hearing say: 'Come!' And let anyone thirsting come; let anyone that wishes take life's water free."

See also Isa. 55:1.

Men, Women and Children All Have Part in Serving God

Ps. 148:12, 13 "You young men and also you virgins, you old men together with boys. Let them praise the name of Jehovah."

Rom. 16:1 "I recommend to you Phoebe our sister, who is a minister of the congregation that is in Cenchreae."

Acts 2:17, 18 "I shall pour out some of my spirit upon every sort of flesh, and your sons and your daughters will prophesy and your young men will see visions and your old men will dream dreams; and even upon my men slaves and upon my women slaves I will pour out some of my spirit in those days, and they will prophesy."

Matt. 21:15, 16 "When the chief priests and the scribes saw . . . the boys that were crying out in the temple and saying: 'Save, we pray, the Son of David!' they became indignant and said to

him: 'Do you hear what these are saying?' Jesus said to them: 'Yes. Did you never read this, "Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings you have furnished praise"?' "

Training for the Ministry Provided for All Associated with the Congregation

Luke 8:1 "Shortly afterwards he went journeying from city to city and from village to village, preaching and declaring the good news of the kingdom of God. And the twelve were with him."

Eph. 4:11, 12 "He gave some as apostles, some as prophets, some as evangelizers, some as shepherds and teachers, with a view to the training of the holy ones, for ministerial work."

Persons Representing God's Kingdom Must Be Morally Clean

1 Pet. 1:14-16 "Quit being fashioned according to the desires you formerly had in your ignorance, but, in accord with the holy one who called you, do you also become holy yourselves in all your conduct, because it is written: 'You must be holy, because I am holy.' "

1 Cor. 6:9-11 "Do you not know that unrighteous persons will not inherit God's kingdom? Do not be misled. Neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor men kept for unnatural purposes, nor men who lie with men, nor thieves, nor greedy persons, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners will inherit God's kingdom. And yet that is what some of you were. But you have been washed clean."

Col. 3:5-10 "Deaden, therefore, your body members that are upon the earth as respects fornication, uncleanness, sexual appetite, hurtful desire, and covetousness, which is idolatry. On account of those things the wrath of God is coming. In those very things you, too, once walked when you used to live in them. But now really put them all away from you, wrath, anger, injuriousness, abusive speech, and obscene talk out of your mouth. Do not be lying to one another. Strip off the old personality with its practices, and clothe yourselves with the new personality, which through accurate knowledge is being made new according to the image of the One who created it."

SEPARATE FROM WORLD

Reason Why Jehovah's Witnesses Are Persecuted

1 Pet. 4:3, 4 "The time that has passed by is sufficient for you to have worked out the will of the nations when you proceeded in deeds of loose conduct, lusts, excesses with wine, revelries, drinking matches, and illegal idolatries. Because you do not continue running with them in this course to the same low sink of debauchery, they are puzzled and go on speaking abusively of you."

John 15:18-20 "If the world hates you, you know that it has hated me before it hated you. If you were part of the world, the world would be fond of what is its own. Now because you are no part of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, on this account the world hates you. Bear in mind the word I said to you, A slave is not greater than his master. If they have persecuted me, they will persecute you also."

2 Tim. 3:12 "In fact, all those desiring to live with godly devotion in association with Christ Jesus will also be persecuted."

Like Jesus, Expose Religious Hypocrisy and Falsehood; No Interfaith

Matt. 23:13-28 "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because you shut up the kingdom of the heavens before men; for you yourselves do not go in, neither do you permit those on their way in to go in. . . . Woe to you, blind guides . . . Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because you resemble whitewashed graves, which outwardly indeed appear beautiful but inside are full of dead men's bones and of every sort of uncleanness. In that way you also, outwardly indeed, appear righteous to men, but inside you are full of hypocrisy and lawlessness."

Matt. 15:14 "Let them be. Blind guides is what they are."

2 Cor. 6:14-18 "Do not become unevenly yoked with unbelievers. For what sharing do righteousness and lawlessness have? Or what fellowship does light have with darkness? Further, what harmony is there between Christ and Belial? Or what portion does a faithful person have with an unbeliever? And what agreement does God's temple have with idols? . . . '"Therefore get out from among them, and separate yourselves," says Jehovah, "and quit touching the unclean thing"'; '"and I will take you in."' '"And I shall be a father to you, and you will be sons and daughters to me," says Jehovah the Almighty.' "

See also the main heading "Interfaith," pages 257-263.

Avoid Involvement in the Affairs of This World

John 17:16, 17 "They are no part of the world, just as I am no part of the world. Sanctify them by means of the truth; your word is truth."

Jas. 1:27 "The form of worship that is clean and undefiled from the standpoint of our God and Father is this: to look after orphans and widows in their tribulation, and to keep oneself without spot from the world."

John 6:15 "Therefore Jesus, knowing they were about to come and seize him to make him king, withdrew again into the mountain all alone."

Isa. 2:4 "They will have to beat their swords into plowshares and their spears into pruning shears. Nation will not lift up sword against nation, neither will they learn war any more."

See also the main heading "Neutrality," pages 351-359.

Supporters of the Heavenly Kingdom of God, Not Subversive of the Interests of Human Governments

Luke 23:2-15 "They started to accuse him, saying: 'This man we found subverting our nation and forbidding the paying of taxes to Caesar and saying he himself is Christ a king.' . . . Then Pilate said to the chief priests and the crowds: 'I find no crime in this man.' But they began to be insistent, saying: 'He stirs up the people by teaching throughout all Judea, even starting out from Galilee to here.' . . . Pilate then called the chief priests and the rulers and the people together and said to them: 'You brought this man to me as one inciting the people to revolt, and, look! I examined him in front of you but found in this man no ground for the charges you are bringing against him. In fact, neither did Herod, for he sent him back to us; and, look! nothing deserving of death has been committed by him.' "

Titus 3:1, 2 "Continue reminding them to be in subjection and be obedient to governments and authorities as rulers, to be ready for every good work, to speak injuriously of no one, not to be belligerent, to be reasonable, exhibiting all mildness toward all men."

Rom. 13:1, 2, 5 "Let every soul be in subjection to the superior authorities, . . . Therefore he who opposes the authority has taken a stand against the arrangement of God; those who have taken a stand against it will receive judgment to themselves. There is therefore compelling reason for you people to be in subjection."

Jesus Christ

First Creation by God; Prehuman Existence

Rev. 1:1; 3:14 "A revelation by Jesus Christ." ". . . These are the things that the Amen says, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation by God."

Col. 1:15 "He is the image of the invisible God, the first-born of all creation."

John 17:5 "Father, glorify me alongside yourself with the glory that I had alongside you before the world was."

John 6:62 "What, therefore, if you should behold the Son of man ascending to where he was before?"

John 8:58 "Jesus said to them: 'Most truly I say to you, Before Abraham came into existence, I have been.'" (Also *AT, Mo*)

Through him all other things were created

Col. 1:16, 17 "By means of him all other things were created in the heavens and upon the earth, the things visible and the things invisible, no matter whether they are thrones or lordships or governments or authorities. All other things have been created through him and for him. Also, he is before all other things and by means of him all other things were made to exist."

John 1:1-3, 10 "In the beginning the Word was, and the Word was with God, and the Word was a god. This one was in the beginning with God. All things came into existence through him, and apart from him not even one thing came into existence. . . . the world came into existence through him."

Lesser than Jehovah

John 14:28 "The Father is greater than I am."

Phil. 2:5-8 "Christ Jesus, who, although he was existing in God's form, gave no consideration to a seizure, namely, that he should be equal to God. No, but he emptied himself and took a slave's form and came to be in the likeness of men. More than that, when he found himself in fashion as a man, he humbled himself and became obedient as far as death, yes, death on a torture stake."

1 Cor. 11:3 "I want you to know that the head of every man is the Christ; in turn the head of a woman is the man; in turn the head of the Christ is God."

1 Cor. 15:28 "But when all things will have been subjected to him, then the Son himself will also subject himself to the One who subjected all things to him, that God may be all things to everyone."

John 5:19 "Most truly I say to you, The Son cannot do a single thing of his own initiative, but only what he beholds the Father doing."

See also the main heading "Trinity," pages 484-489.

Referred to as a Mighty God, but not the Almighty God, Jehovah

Isa. 9:6 "There has been a child born to us, there has been a son given to us; and the princely rule will come to be upon his shoulder. And his name will be called Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God."

Ex. 6:3 "I used to appear to Abraham, Isaac and Jacob as God Almighty, but as respects my name Jehovah I did not make myself known to them."

He taught men, not to worship him, but to worship Jehovah, his Father

Matt. 4:10 "Jesus said to him: 'Go away, Satan! For it is written, "It is Jehovah your God you must worship, and it is to him alone you must render sacred service."'" (See also Luke 4:8.)

John 20:17 "I am ascending to my Father and your Father and to my God and your God."

John 4:23, 24 "The hour is coming, and it is now, when the true worshipers will worship the Father with spirit and truth, for, indeed, the Father is looking for suchlike ones to worship him. God is a Spirit, and those worshiping him must worship with spirit and truth."

Born as a Human Son of God; Not a God-Man

Heb. 2:9, 14, 17 "We behold Jesus, who has been made a little lower than angels, crowned with glory and honor for having suffered death . . . Therefore, since the 'young children' are sharers of blood and flesh, he also similarly partook of the same things . . . Consequently he was obliged to become like his 'brothers' in all respects."

Gal. 4:4 "When the full limit of the time arrived, God sent forth his Son, who came to be out of a woman."

Luke 1:30-35 "So the angel said to her: 'Have no fear, Mary, for you have found favor with God; and, look! you will conceive in your womb and give birth to a son, and you are to call his name Jesus. . . . Holy spirit will come upon you, and power of the Most High will overshadow you. For that reason also what is born will be called holy, God's Son.'"

See also the main heading "Chronology," page 89, and "Incarnation," pages 254, 255.

Became Messiah, or the Anointed One, When Holy Spirit Came upon Him After His Baptism in Water

Luke 3:21-23 "Now when all the people were baptized, Jesus also was baptized and, as he was praying, the heaven was opened up and the holy spirit in bodily shape like a dove came down upon him, and a voice came out of heaven: 'You are my Son, the beloved; I have approved you.' Furthermore, Jesus himself, when he commenced his work, was about thirty years old."

John 1:40, 41 "Andrew the brother of Simon Peter was one of the two that heard what John said and followed Jesus. First this one found his own brother, Simon, and said to him: 'We have found the Messiah' (which means, when translated, Christ)."

John 4:25, 26 "The woman said to him: 'I know that Messiah is coming, who is called Christ. Whenever that one arrives, he will declare all things to us openly.' Jesus said to her: 'I who am speaking to you am he.'"

Acts 10:38 "Jesus who was from Nazareth, how God anointed him with holy spirit and power, and he went through the land doing good and healing all those oppressed by the Devil."

Prophecies fulfilled in Jesus testify that he was Messiah

Mic. 5:2 "And you, O Bethlehem Ephrathah, the one too little to get to be among the thousands of Judah, from you there will come out to me the one who is to become ruler in Israel, whose origin is from early times." (Compare with Matt. 2:1-6; Luke 2:4-11.)

Gen. 49:10 "The scepter will not turn aside from Judah, neither the commander's staff from between his feet, until Shiloh comes; and to him the obedience of the people will belong." (Com-

pare with Matt. 1:2-16; Luke 3:23-33; Heb. 7:14.)

Jer. 23:5, 6 " 'Look! There are days coming,' is the utterance of Jehovah, 'and I will raise up to David a righteous sprout. And a king will certainly reign and act with discretion and execute justice and righteousness in the land. In his days Judah will be saved, and Israel itself will reside in security. And this is his name with which he will be called, Jehovah Is Our Righteousness.' " (Compare with Matt. 1:1, 6-16; Luke 1:32; 2:4; 3:23-31; Rom. 3:25, 26.)

Isa. 7:14 "Jehovah himself will give you men a sign: Look! The maiden [*LXX; par·then'os* ("virgin")] herself will actually become pregnant, and she is giving birth to a son, and she will certainly call his name Immanuel." (Compare with Matt. 1:18-25.)

Isa. 53:4 "Truly our sicknesses were what he himself carried; and as for our pains, he bore them." (Compare with Matt. 8:16, 17.)

Zech. 9:9 "Be very joyful, O daughter of Zion. Shout in triumph, O daughter of Jerusalem. Look! Your king himself comes to you. He is righteous, yes, saved; humble, and riding upon an ass." (Compare with Matt. 21:1-9; Mark 11:7-11; Luke 19:28-38.)

Ps. 118:22 "The stone that the builders rejected has become the head of the corner." (Compare with Acts 3:14; 4:11; 1 Pet. 2:7.)

Isa. 53:12 "It was with the transgressors that he was counted in." (Compare with Matt. 26:55, 56; 27:38; Mark 14:48, 49; 15:27.)

Ps. 34:20 "He is guarding all the bones of that one; not one of them has been broken." (Compare with John 19:33, 36.)

Isa. 53:9 "He will make his burial place even with the wicked ones, and with the rich class in his death, despite the fact that he had done no violence and there was no deception in his mouth." (Compare with Matt. 27:38, 57-60.)

Ps. 16:10 "For you will not leave my soul in Sheol." (Compare with Acts 2:25-31; 13:34-37.)

Deut. 18:18, 19 "A prophet I shall raise up for them from the midst of their brothers, like you; and I shall indeed put my words in his mouth, and he will certainly speak to them all that I shall command him. And it must occur that the man who will not listen to my words that he will speak in my name, I shall myself require an account from him." (Compare with Matt. 21:11; Luke 7:16; Acts 3:19-24.)

See also "Chronology," page 89, as to the foretold time of Messiah's appearance.

Uncompromisingly Proclaimed God's Truth

John 8:40, 44, 45 "Now you are seeking to kill me, a man that has told you the truth that I heard from God. . . . You are from your father the Devil, and you wish to do the desires of your father. That one was a manslayer when he began, and he did not stand fast in the truth, because truth is not in him. When he speaks the lie, he speaks according to his own disposition, because he is a liar and the father of the lie. Because I, on the other hand, tell the truth, you do not believe me."

Matt. 23:13, 16, 23 "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because you shut up the kingdom of the heavens before men; for you yourselves do not go in, neither do you permit those on their way in to go in. Woe to you, blind guides . . . Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because you give the tenth of the mint and the dill and the cummin, but you have disregarded the weightier matters of the Law, namely, justice and mercy and faithfulness. These things it was binding to do, yet not to disregard the other things."

Matt. 15:1-9 "There came to Jesus from Jerusalem Pharisees and scribes, . . . In reply he said to them: 'Why is it you also overstep the commandment of God because of your tradition? . . . And so you have made the word of God invalid because of your tradition. You hypocrites, Isaiah aptly prophesied about you, when he said, "This people honors me with their lips, yet their heart is far removed from me. It is in vain that they keep worshiping me, because they teach commands of men as doctrines." ' "

1 Tim. 6:13 "Christ Jesus, who as a witness made the fine public declaration before Pontius Pilate."

John 18:37 "For this I have been born, and for this I have come into the world, that I should bear witness to the truth. Everyone that is on the side of the truth listens to my voice."

Miracles Attest to Divine Backing

Luke 5:17-25 "Jehovah's power was there for him to do healing. And, look! men carrying on a bed a man who was paralyzed . . . he said to the paralyzed man: 'I say to you, Get up and pick up your little bed and be on your way home.' And instantly he rose up before them, picked up what he used to lie on and went off to his home, glorifying God." (See also Matt. 8:5-13.)

Luke 6:6-10 "There was a man present whose right hand was withered. . . . he said to the man: 'Stretch out your hand.' He did so, and his hand was restored."

Luke 8:43, 44 "A woman, subject to a flow of blood for twelve years, who had not been able to get a cure from anyone, approached from behind and touched the fringe of his outer garment, and instantly her flow of blood stopped."

Luke 13:11-13 "Look! a woman with a spirit of weakness for eighteen years, and she was bent double and was unable to raise herself up at all. When he saw her, Jesus addressed her and said to her: 'Woman, you are released from your weakness.' And he laid his hands on her; and instantly she straightened up, and began to glorify God."

John 5:5-9 "A certain man was there who had been in his sickness for thirty-eight years. Seeing this man lying down, . . . Jesus said to him: 'Get up, pick up your cot and walk.' With that the man immediately became sound in health, and he picked up his cot and began to walk."

Matt. 12:22 "They brought him a demon-possessed man, blind and dumb; and he cured him, so that the dumb man spoke and saw." (See also Luke 18:35-43; Mark 5:1-20; John 9:1-33.)

Luke 9:38-43 "A man cried out from the crowd, saying: 'Teacher, I beg you to take a look at my son, because he is my only-begotten, and, look! a spirit takes him, and suddenly he cries out, and it throws him into convulsions with foam, and it scarcely withdraws from him after bruising him.' . . . Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit and healed the boy and delivered him to his father. Well, they all began to be astounded at the majestic power of God." (See also Matt. 4:24.)

Luke 17:12-14 "As he was entering into a certain village ten leprous men met him. . . . And when he got sight of them he said to them: 'Go and show yourselves to the priests.' Then as they were going off their cleansing occurred." (See also Luke 5:12-15.)

John 11:39-44 "Jesus said: 'Take the stone away.' Martha, the sister of the deceased, said to him: 'Lord, by now he must smell, for he has been dead four days.' . . . he cried out with a

loud voice: 'Lazarus, come on out!' The man that had been dead came out with his feet and hands bound with wrappings, and his countenance was bound about with a cloth. Jesus said to them: 'Loose him and let him go.'" (See also Luke 7:11-16.)

Mark 6:38-44 "He said to them: 'How many loaves have you? Go see!' . . . they said: 'Five, besides two fishes.' . . . Taking now the five loaves and the two fishes he looked up to heaven and said a blessing, and broke the loaves up and began giving them to the disciples, that these might place them before the people; and he divided up the two fishes for all. So they all ate and were satisfied; and they took up fragments, twelve baskets full, aside from the fishes. Furthermore, those who ate of the loaves were five thousand men." (See also Mark 8:1-9.)

Luke 8:22-25 "They set sail. But as they were sailing he fell asleep. Now a violent windstorm descended upon the lake, and they began to fill up with water and to be in danger. Finally they went to him and roused him, saying: 'Instructor, Instructor, we are about to perish!' Rousing himself, he rebuked the wind and the raging of the water, and they subsided, and a calm set in. . . . they marveled, saying to one another: 'Who really is this, for he orders even the winds and the water, and they obey him?'"

John 6:16-21 "His disciples went down to the sea, and, boarding a boat, they set out across the sea for Capernaum. . . . However, when they had gone about three or four miles, they beheld Jesus walking upon the sea and getting near the boat; and they became fearful. But he said to them: 'It is I; have no fear!' Therefore they were willing to take him into the boat, and directly the boat was at the land to which they were trying to go."

Luke 5:4-6 "He said to Simon: 'Pull out to where it is deep, and you men let down your nets for a catch.' But Simon in reply said: 'Instructor, for a whole night we toiled and took nothing, but at your bidding I will lower the nets.' Well, when they did this, they enclosed a great multitude of fish. In fact, their nets began ripping apart."

Died as Ransom, Opening Way to Everlasting Life for All Who Would Believe

1 Tim. 2:5, 6 "There is one God, and one mediator between God and men, a man Christ Jesus, who gave himself a corresponding ransom for all."

Eph. 1:7 "By means of him we have the release by ransom through the blood of that one, yes, the forgiveness of our trespasses."

John 3:16 "God loved the world so much that he gave his only-begotten Son, in order that everyone exercising faith in him might not be destroyed but have everlasting life."

1 John 4:9, 10 "By this the love of God was made manifest in our case, because God sent forth his only-begotten Son into the world that we might gain life through him. The love is in this respect, not that we have loved God, but that he loved us and sent forth his Son as a propitiatory sacrifice for our sins."

John 3:36 "He that exercises faith in the Son has everlasting life; he that disobeys the Son will not see life, but the wrath of God remains upon him."

See also the main heading "Ransom," pages 403-412.

Forgiveness of sins and salvation to eternal life possible only through Christ

Acts 4:12 "There is no salvation in anyone else, for there is not another name under heaven that has been given among men by which we must get saved."

John 1:29 "He beheld Jesus coming toward him, and he said: 'See, the Lamb of God that takes away the sin of the world!'"

Acts 10:43 "To him all the prophets bear witness, that everyone putting faith in him gets forgiveness of sins through his name."

Rev. 7:9, 10, 14-17 "I saw, and, look! a great crowd, which no man was able to number, out of all nations and tribes and peoples and tongues, standing before the throne and before the Lamb, dressed in white robes; and there were palm branches in their hands. And they keep on crying with a loud voice, saying: 'Salvation we owe to our God, who is seated on the throne, and to the Lamb.' . . . he said to me: 'These are the ones that come out of the great tribulation, and they have washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb. . . . the Lamb, who is in the midst of the throne, will shepherd them, and will guide them to fountains of waters of life.'"

Resurrected from the Dead on Third Day; Now Immortal

Acts 10:38, 40, 41 "Jesus who was from Nazareth . . . God raised this One up on the third day and granted him to become manifest, not to all the people, but to witnesses appointed beforehand by God, to us, who ate and drank with him after his rising from the dead."

Luke 24:1-8 "On the first day of the week, however, they went very early to the tomb, . . . But they found the stone rolled away from the memorial tomb, and when they entered they did not find the body of the Lord Jesus. While they were in perplexity over this, look! two men in flashing clothing stood by them . . . the men said to them: 'Why are you looking for the living One among the dead? He is not here, but has been raised up. Recall how he spoke to you while he was yet in Galilee, saying that the Son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinful men and be impaled and yet on the third day rise.' So they recalled his sayings to mind."

1 Cor. 15:3-6 "I handed on to you, among the first things, that which I also received, that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures; and that he was buried, yes, that he has been raised up the third day according to the Scriptures; and that he appeared to Cephas, then to the twelve. After that he appeared to upward of five hundred brothers at one time."

1 Pet. 3:18 "Christ died once for all time concerning sins . . . he being put to death in the flesh, but being made alive in the spirit."

Rom. 6:4, 9 "Christ was raised up from the dead through the glory of the Father . . . For we know that Christ, now that he has been raised up from the dead, dies no more; death is master over him no more." (See also 1 Tim. 6:15, 16.)

See also the main heading "Incarnation," page 255.

Exalted to Heaven, Given Position over All Creation

1 Pet. 3:22 "He is at God's right hand, for he went his way to heaven; and angels and authorities and powers were made subject to him."

Eph. 1:20-22 "He has operated in the case of the Christ when he raised him up from the dead and seated him at his right hand in the heavenly places, far above every government and authority and power and lordship and every name named, not only in this system of things, but also in that to come. He also subjected all things under his feet."

Phil. 2:9 "God exalted him to a superior position and kindly gave him the name that is above every other name."

John 5:22, 23 "The Father judges no one at all, but he has committed all the judging to the Son, in order that all may honor the Son just as they honor the Father."

There known as Michael, as shown by comparison of scriptures

Jude 9 "When Michael the archangel had a difference with the Devil and was disputing about Moses' body, he did not dare to bring a judgment against him in abusive terms." (Compare with 1 Thess. 4:16.)

Dan. 10:13 "Look! Michael, one of the foremost princes, came to help me." (Compare with Isa. 9:6.)

Dan. 12:1 "During that time Michael will stand up, the great prince who is standing in behalf of the sons of your people. And there will certainly occur a time of distress such as has not been made to occur since there came to be a nation until that time. And during that time your people will escape, every one who is found written down in the book." (Compare with Matt. 24: 3, 21, 30.)

Rev. 12:7, 8 "War broke out in heaven: Michael and his angels battled with the dragon, and the dragon and its angels battled but it did not prevail." (Compare with 1 John 3:8.)

To Execute the Wicked, Rule as King Everlastingly

Rev. 19:11-21 "I saw the heaven opened, and, look! a white horse. And the one seated upon it is called Faithful and True, and he judges and carries on war in righteousness. . . . the name he is called is The Word of God. Also, the armies that were in heaven were following him on white horses, and they were clothed in white, clean, fine linen. And out of his mouth there protrudes a sharp long sword, that he may strike the nations with it, and he will shepherd them with a rod of iron. . . . But the rest were killed off with the long sword of the one seated on the horse."

2 Thess. 1:7-9; 2:8 "The revelation of the Lord Jesus from heaven with his powerful angels in a flaming fire, as he brings vengeance upon those who do not know God and those who do not obey the good news about our Lord Jesus. These very ones will undergo the judicial punishment of everlasting destruction." "The lawless one will be revealed, whom the Lord Jesus will do away with by the spirit of his mouth and bring to nothing by the manifestation of his presence."

Dan. 7:13, 14 "I kept on beholding in the visions of the night, and, see there! with the clouds of the heavens someone like a son of man happened to be coming; and to the Ancient of Days he gained access, and they brought him up close even before that One. And to him there were given rulership and dignity and kingdom, that the peoples, national groups and languages should all serve even him. His rulership is an indefinitely lasting rulership that will not pass away, and his kingdom one that will not be brought to ruin."

Luke 1:30, 32, 33 "The angel said to her: '. . . This one will be great and will be called Son of the Most High; and Jehovah God will give him the throne of David his father, and he will rule as king over the house of Jacob forever, and there will be no end of his kingdom.' "

Rev. 11:15 "The kingdom of the world has become the kingdom of our Lord and of his Christ, and he will rule as king forever and ever."

See also the main heading "Kingdom," pages 300-306.

Joy

Fruit of God's Spirit; Jehovah Himself a "Happy God"

Gal. 5:22 "The fruitage of the spirit is love, joy."

1 Tim. 1:11 "The glorious good news of the happy God."

Joy an Outstanding Characteristic of Jehovah's Servants

Isa. 65:14 "Look! My own servants will cry out joyfully because of the good condition of the heart, but you yourselves will make outcries because of the pain of heart and you will howl because of sheer breakdown of spirit."

See also Ps. 45:14, 15; 1 Ki. 10:4-9.

Find True Joy in Jehovah and His Works

Ps. 97:12 "Rejoice in Jehovah, O you righteous ones."

Joel 2:23 "You sons of Zion, be joyful and rejoice in Jehovah your God."

Ps. 118:24 "This is the day that Jehovah has made; we will be joyful and rejoice in it."

Ps. 35:9 "Let my own soul be joyful in Jehovah; let it exult in his salvation."

Luke 2:10, 11, 13, 14 "The angel said to them: 'Have no fear, for, look! I am declaring to you good news of a great joy that all the people will have, because there was born to you today a Savior, who is Christ the Lord, in David's city.' And suddenly there came to be with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host, praising God and saying: 'Glory in the heights above to God, and upon earth peace among men of good will.' "

Isa. 65:17, 18 "Here I am creating new heavens and a new earth . . . But exult, you people, and be joyful forever in what I am creating."

Rev. 18:20 "Be glad over her, O heaven, also you holy ones and you apostles and you prophets, because God has judicially exacted punishment for you from her!"

Factors Enabling One to Have Joy

Ps. 144:15 "Happy is the people whose God is Jehovah!"

Prov. 16:20 "Happy is he that is trusting in Jehovah."

Isa. 25:9 "Let us be joyful and rejoice in the salvation by him."

Rom. 14:17 "The kingdom of God . . . means righteousness and peace and joy."

Matt. 5:3, 6, 7 "Happy are those conscious of their spiritual need . . . Happy are those hungering and thirsting for righteousness . . . Happy are the merciful."

John 15:11 "These things I have spoken to you, that my joy may be in you and your joy may be made full."

Prov. 3:13 "Happy is the man that has found wisdom."

Rom. 15:13 "All joy and peace by your believing."

Phil. 1:25 "The joy that belongs to your faith."

John 13:17 "If you know these things, happy you are if you do them."

Acts 20:35 "There is more happiness in giving than there is in receiving."

Prov. 21:15 "It is a rejoicing for the righteous one to do justice."

Ps. 97:11 "Light itself has flashed up for the righteous one, and rejoicing even for the ones upright in heart."

1 Chron. 29:9 "The people gave way to rejoicing over their making voluntary offerings, for it

was with a complete heart that they made voluntary offerings to Jehovah."

Matt. 25:23 "Well done, good and faithful slave! You were faithful over a few things. I will appoint you over many things. Enter into the joy of your master."

1 Thess. 2:19, 20 "What is our hope or joy or crown of exultation—why, is it not in fact you? . . . You certainly are our glory and joy." (See also Phil. 4:1.)

Jas. 1:12 "Happy is the man that keeps on enduring trial."

Joy Strengthens One to Endure

Neh. 8:10 "The joy of Jehovah is your stronghold."

Heb. 12:2 "We look intently at the Chief Agent and Perfecter of our faith, Jesus. For the joy that was set before him he endured a torture stake, despising shame, and has sat down at the right hand of the throne of God."

See also the main heading "Endurance," pages 175, 176.

Persecution Does Not Rob Christians of Their Joy

Jas. 1:2 "Consider it all joy, my brothers, when you meet with various trials."

1 Pet. 3:14; 4:14 "Even if you should suffer for the sake of righteousness, you are happy." "If you are being reproached for the name of Christ, you are happy, because the spirit of glory, even the spirit of God, is resting upon you."

Matt. 5:11, 12 "Happy are you when people reproach you and persecute you and lyingly say every sort of wicked thing against you for my sake. Rejoice and leap for joy, since your reward is great in the heavens; for in that way they persecuted the prophets prior to you."

Acts 13:50-52 "The Jews stirred up the reputable women who worshiped God and the principal men of the city, and they raised up a persecution against Paul and Barnabas and threw them outside their boundaries. These shook the dust off their feet against them and went to Iconium. And the disciples continued to be filled with joy and holy spirit."

Acts 5:40, 41 "They summoned the apostles, flogged them, and ordered them to stop speaking upon the basis of Jesus' name, and let them go. These, therefore, went their way from before the Sanhedrin, rejoicing because they had been counted worthy to be dishonored in behalf of his name."

Heb. 10:34 "You . . . joyfully took the plundering of your belongings."

See also the main heading "Persecution," pages 374-378.

Judgment

Jehovah's Judgments Are Righteous

Jer. 11:20 "Jehovah of armies is judging with righteousness."

Rev. 19:1, 2 "Praise Jah, you people! . . . his judgments are true and righteous."

Ps. 96:13 "Jehovah . . . will judge the productive land with righteousness and the peoples with his faithfulness."

1 Pet. 1:17 "The Father . . . judges impartially according to each one's work."

Christians Should Not Be Critical of One Another, Always Judging One Another

Matt. 7:1, 2 "Stop judging that you may not be judged; for with what judgment you are judging, you will be judged."

Rom. 14:4, 10-13 "Who are you to judge the house servant of another? To his own master he stands or falls. Indeed, he will be made to stand, for Jehovah can make him stand. But why do you judge your brother? Or why do you also look down on your brother? For we shall all stand before the judgment seat of God . . . Therefore let us not be judging one another any longer."

Jas. 4:11, 12 "Quit speaking against one another, brothers. He who speaks against a brother or judges his brother speaks against law and judges law. . . . One there is that is lawgiver and judge, he who is able to save and to destroy. But you, who are you to be judging your neighbor?"

Christians in Positions of Oversight to Judge Righteously

1 Cor. 5:12, 13; 6:2, 3 "Do you not judge those inside, while God judges those outside? 'Remove the wicked man from among yourselves.'" "Or do you not know that the holy ones will judge the world? And if the world is to be judged by you, are you unfit to try very trivial matters? Do you not know that we shall judge angels? Why, then, not matters of this life?"

Deut. 16:18, 19 "You should set judges and officers for yourself inside all your gates that Jehovah your God is giving you by your tribes, and they must judge the people with righteous judgment. You must not pervert judgment. You must not be partial or accept a bribe, for the bribe blinds the eyes of wise ones and distorts the words of righteous ones."

See also the main heading "Disfellowshiping," pages 162-165.

Judgment for Those Who Make Up the "Temple" Class

Mal. 3:1, 5 "'Look! I am sending my messenger, and he must clear up a way before me. And suddenly there will come to His temple the true Lord, whom you people are seeking, and the messenger of the covenant in whom you are delighting. Look! He will certainly come,' Jehovah of armies has said. 'And I will come near to you people for the judgment, and I will become a speedy witness against the sorcerers, and against the adulterers, and against those swearing falsely, and against those acting fraudulently with the wages of a wage worker, with the widow and with the fatherless boy, and those turning away the alien resident, while they have not feared me,' Jehovah of armies has said."

1 Pet. 2:5; 4:17 "You yourselves also as living stones are being built up a spiritual house for the purpose of a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through Jesus Christ." "For it is the appointed time for the judgment to start with the house of God. Now if it starts first with us, what will the end be of those who are not obedient to the good news of God?"

2 Cor. 5:6-10 "We are therefore always of good courage and know that, while we have our home in the body, we are absent from the Lord, for we are walking by faith, not by sight. But we are of good courage and well pleased rather to become absent from the body and to make our home with the Lord. Therefore we are also making it our aim that, whether having our home with him or being absent from him, we may be acceptable to him. For we must all be made manifest before the judgment seat of the Christ, that each one may get his award for the things done through the body, according to the things he has practiced, whether it is good or vile."

People of All Nations Put on Judgment When Christ Takes Kingdom Power

Matt. 25:31, 32 "When the Son of man arrives in his glory, and all the angels with him, then he will sit down on his glorious throne. And all the nations will be gathered before him, and he will separate people one from another, just as a shepherd separates the sheep from the goats."

Basis for judgment

Matt. 25:40, 45 "In reply the king will say to them, 'Truly I say to you, To the extent that you did it to one of the least of these my brothers, you did it to me.' Then he will answer them with the words, 'Truly I say to you, To the extent that you did not do it to one of these least ones, you did not do it to me.' "

John 13:20 "Most truly I say to you, He that receives anyone I send receives me also. In turn he that receives me, receives also him that sent me."

John 12:48 "He that disregards me and does not receive my sayings has one to judge him. The word that I have spoken is what will judge him in the last day."

John 3:19 "Now this is the basis for judgment, that the light has come into the world but men have loved the darkness rather than the light, for their works were wicked."

Adverse judgment means everlasting destruction

Matt. 25:41, 46 "Then he will say, in turn, to those on his left, 'Be on your way from me, you who have been cursed, into the everlasting fire prepared for the Devil and his angels.' And these will depart into everlasting cutting-off."

2 Thess. 1:9 "These very ones will undergo the judicial punishment of everlasting destruction."

2 Pet. 3:7 "The heavens and the earth that are now are stored up for fire and are being reserved to the day of judgment and of destruction of the ungodly men."

Favorable judgment means preservation to prospect of everlasting life under Kingdom rule

Matt. 25:34, 46 "Then the king will say to those on his right, 'Come, you who have my Father's blessing, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the founding of the world.' And these will depart . . . into everlasting life."

Execution of Divine Judgment in the Day of Jehovah's Vengeance

Isa. 61:2 "Proclaim . . . the day of vengeance on the part of our God."

Rev. 18:21; 19:1, 2 "A strong angel lifted up a stone like a great millstone and hurled it into the sea, saying: 'Thus with a swift pitch will Babylon the great city be hurled down, and she will never be found again.' " "Praise Jah, you people! . . . For he has executed judgment upon the great harlot who corrupted the earth with her fornication, and he has avenged the blood of his slaves at her hand."

Jer. 25:31 " 'A noise will certainly come clear to the farthest part of the earth, for there is a controversy that Jehovah has with the nations. He must personally put himself in judgment with all flesh. As regards the wicked ones, he must give them to the sword,' is the utterance of Jehovah."

Joel 3:2, 11-14 "I will also collect together all the nations and bring them down to the low plain of Jehoshaphat; . . . To that place, O Jehovah, bring your powerful ones down. Let the nations be aroused and come up to the low plain of Jehoshaphat; for there I shall sit in order to judge all the nations round about. Thrust in a sickle, for harvest has grown ripe. Come, descend, for the wine press has become full. The press vats actually overflow; for their badness has become abundant. Crowds, crowds are in the low plain of the decision, for the day of Jehovah is near in the low plain of the decision."

Rev. 19:11, 13, 15 "I saw the heaven opened, and, look! a white horse. And the one seated upon it is called Faithful and True, and he judges and carries on war in righteousness. And he is arrayed with an outer garment sprinkled with blood, and the name he is called is The Word of God. . . . He treads too the press of the wine of the anger of the wrath of God the Almighty."

Jude 6, 14, 15 "The angels that did not keep their original position but forsook their own proper dwelling place he has reserved with eternal bonds under dense darkness for the judgment of the great day. . . . Enoch, prophesied . . . when he said: 'Look! Jehovah came with his holy myriads, to execute judgment against all, and to convict all the ungodly concerning all their ungodly deeds that they did in an ungodly way, and concerning all the shocking things that ungodly sinners spoke against him.' "

Rev. 20:2 "He seized the dragon, the original serpent, who is the Devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years."

Pictured by past executions of divine judgment

Luke 17:26-30 "Just as it occurred in the days of Noah, so it will be also in the days of the Son of man: they were eating, they were drinking, men were marrying, women were being given in marriage, until that day when Noah entered into the ark, and the flood arrived and destroyed them all. Likewise, just as it occurred in the days of Lot: they were eating, they were drinking, they were buying, they were selling, they were planting, they were building. But on the day that Lot came out of Sodom it rained fire and sulphur from heaven and destroyed them all. The same way it will be on that day when the Son of man is to be revealed."

2 Pet. 2:5, 6 "He did not hold back from punishing an ancient world, but kept Noah, a preacher of righteousness, safe with seven others when he brought a deluge upon a world of ungodly people; and by reducing the cities Sodom and Gomorrah to ashes he condemned them, setting a pattern for ungodly persons of things to come."

Jude 7 "So too Sodom and Gomorrah and the cities about them, after they . . . had committed fornication excessively and gone out after flesh for unnatural use, are placed before us as a warning example by undergoing the judicial punishment of everlasting fire."

Judgment Day

Matt. 12:36 "I tell you that every unprofitable saying that men speak, they will render an account concerning it on Judgment Day."

Jesus Christ appointed by Jehovah as judge

John 5:22 "The Father judges no one at all, but he has committed all the judging to the Son." (See also John 5:26, 27.)

Acts 17:31 "He has set a day in which he purposes to judge the inhabited earth in righteousness by a man whom he has appointed, and he has furnished a guarantee to all men in that he has resurrected him from the dead."

Acts 10:40, 42 "God raised this One up on the third day and granted him to become manifest.

Also, he ordered us to preach to the people and to give a thorough witness that this is the One decreed by God to be judge of the living and the dead."

Christians who receive heavenly life with Christ share in judging

1 Cor. 6:2 "Do you not know that the holy ones will judge the world?"

Matt. 19:28 "Jesus said to them: 'Truly I say to you, In the re-creation, when the Son of man sits down upon his glorious throne, you who have followed me will also yourselves sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.'"

Rev. 20:4 "I saw thrones, and there were those who sat down on them, and power of judging was given them."

Dead to be included among those judged; both righteous and unrighteous to be resurrected

2 Tim. 4:1 "I solemnly charge you before God and Christ Jesus, who is destined to judge the living and the dead."

Rev. 20:12, 13 "I saw the dead, the great and the small, standing before the throne, and scrolls were opened. But another scroll was opened; it is the scroll of life. And the dead were judged out of those things written in the scrolls according to their deeds. And the sea gave up those dead in it, and death and Hades gave up those dead in them, and they were judged individually according to their deeds."

Acts 24:15 "I have hope toward God, which hope these men themselves also entertain, that there is going to be a resurrection of both the righteous and the unrighteous."

Some who Jesus said will be present on Judgment Day

Matt. 10:14, 15 "Wherever anyone does not take you in or listen to your words, on going out of that house or that city shake the dust off your feet. Truly I say to you, It will be more endurable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrah on Judgment Day than for that city."

Matt. 11:20-24 "He started to reproach the cities in which most of his powerful works had taken place, because they did not repent: 'Woe to you, Chorazin! Woe to you, Bethsaida! because if the powerful works had taken place in Tyre and Sidon that took place in you, they would long ago have repented in sackcloth and ashes. Consequently I say to you, It will be more endurable for Tyre and Sidon on Judgment Day than for you. And you, Capernaum, will you perhaps be exalted to heaven? Down to Hades you will come; because if the powerful works that took place in you had taken place in Sodom, it would have remained until this very day. Consequently I say to you people, It will be more endurable for the land of Sodom on Judgment Day than for you.'" (See also Luke 10:10-15.)

Matt. 12:41, 42 "Men of Nineveh will rise up in the judgment with this generation and will condemn it; because they repented at what Jonah preached, but, look! something more than Jonah is here. The queen of the south will be raised up in the judgment with this generation and will condemn it; because she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon, but, look! something more than Solomon is here."

Judgment Day to be 1,000 years in length

Rev. 20:4, 6 "I saw thrones, and there were those who sat down on them, and power of judging was given them. . . . they will be priests of God and of the Christ, and will rule as kings with him for the thousand years."

Some prove worthy of everlasting life; others receive condemnatory judgment of everlasting destruction

John 5:28, 29 "The hour is coming in which all those in the memorial tombs will hear his voice and come out, those who did good things to a resurrection of life, those who practiced vile things to a resurrection of judgment."

Rev. 20:14, 15 "And death and Hades were hurled into the lake of fire. This means the second death, the lake of fire. Furthermore, whoever was not found written in the book of life was hurled into the lake of fire."

Heb. 6:2 "The resurrection of the dead and everlasting judgment."

Justification,

OR BEING DECLARED RIGHTEOUS

All Men Are Sinners and Fall Short of God's Standard of Righteousness

Rom. 3:9, 10, 23 "Jews as well as Greeks are all under sin; just as it is written: 'There is not a righteous man, not even one.' For all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God."

Result of sin passed on from Adam has been condemnation to death

Rom. 5:12, 18 "Through one man sin entered into the world and death through sin, and thus death spread to all men because they had all sinned. So, then, . . . through one trespass the result to men of all sorts was condemnation."

Those Called to Heavenly Glory with Christ Are Declared Righteous by God, or Justified from Condemned Condition of Mankind That Is Dead in Sin

Rom. 1:7; 5:1, 2 "To all those who are in Rome as God's beloved ones, called to be holy ones." "Now that we have been declared righteous as a result of faith, let us enjoy peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom also we have gained our approach by faith into this undeserved kindness in which we now stand; and let us exult, based on hope of the glory of God."

Rom. 8:1, 2, 29-33 "Those in union with Christ Jesus have no condemnation. For the law of that spirit which gives life in union with Christ Jesus has set you free from the law of sin and of death. . . . those whom he gave his first recognition he also foreordained to be patterned after the image of his Son, that he might be the first-born among many brothers. Moreover, those whom he foreordained are the ones he also called; and those whom he called are the ones he also declared to be righteous. Finally those whom he declared righteous are the ones he also glorified. . . . God is the One who declares them righteous."

Col. 2:13 "Though you were dead in your trespasses and in the uncircumcised state of your flesh, God made you alive together with him. He kindly forgave us all our trespasses."

See also the main headings "Born Again" and "Bride of Christ."

Ransom sacrifice of Christ provides basis for God's declaring sinful humans righteous

Rom. 3:23, 24 "All have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, and it is as a free gift that they are being declared righteous by his undeserved kindness through the release by the ransom paid by Christ Jesus."

Rom. 4:25 "He was delivered up for the sake of our trespasses and was raised up for the sake of declaring us righteous."

Rom. 5:8, 9 "While we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. Much more, therefore, since we have been declared righteous now by his blood, shall we be saved through him from wrath."

See also Isa. 53:11.

For one to be declared righteous, he must exercise faith in the shed blood of Christ and conduct himself in harmony with that faith

Rom. 3:21-26 "Now apart from law God's righteousness has been made manifest, . . . yes, God's righteousness through the faith in Jesus Christ, for all those having faith. . . . God set him forth as an offering for propitiation through faith in his blood. This was in order to exhibit his own righteousness, because he was forgiving the sins that occurred in the past while God was exercising forbearance; so as to exhibit his own righteousness in this present season, that he might be righteous even when declaring righteous the man that has faith in Jesus."

Gal. 2:16 "A man is declared righteous, not due to works of law, but only through faith toward Christ Jesus."

Jas. 2:24, 26 "A man is to be declared righteous by works, and not by faith alone. Indeed, as the body without breath is dead, so also faith without works is dead."

Such justified ones, being relieved of the condemnation due to sin, are 'declared righteous for life,' or granted the right to human life, which Adam lost

Rom. 5:12, 18, 21 "Through one man sin entered into the world and death through sin, and thus death spread to all men . . . So, then, as through one trespass the result to men of all sorts was condemnation, likewise also through one act of justification the result to men of all sorts is a declaring of them righteous for life. . . . That, just as sin ruled as king with death, likewise also undeserved kindness might rule as king through righteousness with everlasting life in view through Jesus Christ our Lord."

Justification is imputed or credited to them; they are not made actually perfect in the flesh

Rom. 4:20–5:1 "Because of the promise of God [Abraham] did not waver in a lack of faith, but became powerful by his faith, giving God glory and being fully convinced that what he had promised he was also able to do. Hence 'it was counted to him as righteousness.' That 'it was counted to him' was written, however, not for his sake only, but also for the sake of us to whom it is destined to be counted, because we believe on him who raised Jesus our Lord up from the dead. He was delivered up for the sake of our trespasses and was raised up for the sake of declaring us righteous. Therefore, now that we have been declared righteous as a result of faith, let us enjoy peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ."

Due to fleshly imperfection, they may still sin, but they do not deliberately choose that course or find pleasure in it

1 John 1:8; 2:1 "If we make the statement: 'We have no sin,' we are misleading ourselves and the truth is not in us. . . . And yet, if anyone does commit a sin, we have a helper with the Father, Jesus Christ, a righteous one."

Rom. 7:21-23 "I find, then, this law in my case: that when I wish to do what is right, what is bad is present with me. I really delight in the law of God according to the man I am within, but I behold in my members another law warring against the law of my mind and leading me captive to sin's law that is in my members."

See also the main heading "Sin," pages 456-460.

Such justification required so they can share in Jesus' kind of death, a sacrificial one (not dying because of condemnation due to sin), and so share with him in heavenly glory

Rom. 6:5-11 "If we have become united with him in the likeness of his death, we shall certainly also be united with him in the likeness of his resurrection; because we know that our old personality was impaled with him, that our sinful body might be made inactive, that we should no longer go on being slaves to sin. . . . Moreover, if we have died with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him. . . . For the death that he died, he died with reference to sin once for all time; but the life that he lives, he lives with reference to God. Likewise also you: reckon yourselves to be dead indeed with reference to sin but living with reference to God by Christ Jesus."

Phil. 3:8-11 "I do indeed also consider all things to be loss on account of the excelling value of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord. On account of him I have taken the loss of all things and I consider them as a lot of refuse, that I may gain Christ and be found in union with him, having, not my own righteousness, which results from law, but that which is through faith in Christ, the righteousness that issues from God on the basis of faith, so as to know him and the power of his resurrection and a sharing in his sufferings, submitting myself to a death like his, to see if I may by any means attain to the earlier resurrection from the dead."

Rom. 8:14, 17 "All who are led by God's spirit, these are God's sons. If, then, we are children, we are also heirs: heirs indeed of God, but joint heirs with Christ, provided we suffer together that we may also be glorified together."

Some Persons Are Said to Be Righteous Because They Do Right Works and So Come to Enjoy God's Approval; This Is Not Justification That Gives One the Right to Life

Jas. 2:21-23, 25 "Was not Abraham our father declared righteous by works after he had offered up Isaac his son upon the altar? You behold that his faith worked along with his works and by his works his faith was perfected, and the scripture was fulfilled which says: 'Abraham put faith in Jehovah, and it was counted to him as righteousness,' and he came to be called 'Jehovah's friend.' In the same manner was not also Rahab the harlot declared righteous by works, after she had received the messengers hospitably and sent them out by another way?"

2 Sam. 23:3, 4 "When one ruling over mankind is righteous, ruling in the fear of God, then it is as the light of morning, when the sun shines forth."

Following the Test at the End of Christ's Thousand-Year Reign, Obedient Ones Will Have Their Names Written in the Book of Life as Justified; They Will Be Granted the Right to Everlasting Life as Perfect Humans

Rev. 20:7-15 "As soon as the thousand years have been ended,

Satan will be let loose out of his prison, and he will go out to mislead those nations in the four corners of the earth . . . And the Devil who was misleading them was hurled into the lake of fire and sulphur . . . And I saw the dead, the great and the small, standing before the throne, and scrolls were opened. But another scroll was opened; it is the scroll of life. And the dead were judged out of those things written in the scrolls according to their deeds. And the sea gave up those dead in it, and death and Hades gave up those dead in them, and they were judged individually according to their deeds. And death and Hades were hurled into the lake of fire. This means the second death, the lake of fire. Furthermore, whoever was not found written in the book of life was hurled into the lake of fire."

Kindness

Fruitage of God's Spirit

Gal. 5:22 "The fruitage of the spirit is . . . kindness."

Godlike Kindness Is Motivated by Love

1 Cor. 13:4 "Love is long-suffering and kind."

Prov. 19:22 "The desirable thing in earthling man is his loving-kindness."

Ps. 141:5 "Should the righteous one strike me, it would be a loving-kindness."

1 Sam. 20:14, 15 "Will you [David] not, if I [Jonathan] shall be still alive, yes, will you not exercise the loving-kindness of Jehovah toward me, that I may not die? And you will not cut off your own loving-kindness from being with my household to time indefinite."

Pleasing to God

Hos. 6:6 "For in loving-kindness I have taken delight."

Mic. 6:8 "He has told you, O earthling man, what is good. And what is Jehovah asking back from you but to exercise justice and to love kindness and to be modest in walking with your God?"

2 Cor. 6:4, 6 "In every way we recommend ourselves as God's ministers, by the endurance of much, . . . by kindness."

Should characterize our dealings with one another

Prov. 3:3 "May loving-kindness and trueness themselves not leave you. Tie them about your throat. Write them upon the tablet of your heart."

Eph. 4:32 "Become kind to one another, tenderly compassionate, freely forgiving one another just as God also by Christ freely forgave you."

Col. 3:12 "According, as God's chosen ones, holy and loved, clothe yourselves with the tender affections of compassion, kindness, . . . and long-suffering."

Prov. 31:10, 26 "A capable wife who can find? Her value is far more than that of corals. Her mouth she has opened in wisdom, and the law of loving-kindness is upon her tongue."

Heb. 13:2 "Do not forget hospitality [kindness to strangers, 1950 Edition], for through it some, unknown to themselves, entertained angels."

Results in blessings to the one showing it

Prov. 11:17 "A man of loving-kindness is dealing rewardingly with his own soul."

Prov. 22:9 "He that is kindly in eye will be blessed, for he has given of his food to the lowly one."

1 Sam. 15:6 "Meanwhile Saul said to the Kenites: 'Go, depart, go down from the midst of the Amalekites, that I may not sweep you away with them. As for you, you exercised loving-kindness with all the sons of Israel at the time of their coming up out of Egypt.'"

1 Ki. 2:7 "Toward the sons of Barzillai the Gileadite you should exercise loving-kindness, and they most prove to be among those eating at your table; for that was the way they drew near to me when I ran away from before Absalom your brother."

Josh. 2:1, 4, 12, 14 "Joshua the son of Nun sent two men out secretly from Shittim as spies, saying: 'Go, take a look at the land and Jericho.' So they went and came to the house of a prostitute woman whose name was Rahab, and they took up lodging there. Meantime the woman took the two men and concealed them. And she proceeded to say: ' . . . now, please, swear to me by Jehovah that, because I have exercised loving-kindness toward you, you also will certainly exercise loving-kindness toward the household of my father, and you must give me a trustworthy sign.' At that the men said to her: 'Our souls are to die instead of you people! If you will not tell about this matter of ours, it must also occur that when Jehovah gives us the land, we also shall certainly exercise loving-kindness and trustworthiness toward you.'"

Jehovah's Kindness Toward Man Is Undeserved

Eph. 2:4, 5, 8 "God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love with which he loved us, made us alive together with the Christ, even when we were dead in trespasses—by undeserved kindness you have been saved. By this undeserved kindness, indeed, you have been saved through faith; and this not owing to you, it is God's gift."

Rom. 11:6 "Now if it is by undeserved kindness, it is no longer due to works; otherwise, the undeserved kindness no longer proves to be undeserved kindness."

Titus 3:4, 5 "When the kindness and the love for man on the part of our Savior, God, was manifested, owing to no works in righteousness that we had performed, but according to his mercy he saved us through the bath that brought us to life and through the making of us new by holy spirit."

Rom. 5:21 "To what end? That, just as sin ruled as king with death, likewise also undeserved kindness might rule as king through righteousness with everlasting life in view through Jesus Christ our Lord."

John 1:17 "Because the Law was given through Moses, the undeserved kindness and the truth came to be through Jesus Christ."

Jas. 4:6 "God opposes the haughty ones but he gives undeserved kindness to the humble ones."

Abundantly demonstrated because of God's love

Eph. 2:4-7 "God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love with which he loved us, made us alive together . . . and seated us together in the heavenly places in union with Christ Jesus, that in the coming systems of things there might be demonstrated the surpassing riches of his undeserved kindness in his graciousness toward us in union with Christ Jesus."

Ex. 34:6 "Jehovah, Jehovah, a God merciful and gracious, slow to anger and abundant in loving-kindness and truth."

Neh. 9:17 "So they refused to listen, and they did not remember your wonderful acts that you performed with them, but they hardened their neck and appointed a head to return to their servitude in Egypt. But you are

a God of acts of forgiveness, gracious and merciful, slow to anger and abundant in loving-kindness."

Undeserved kindness manifest in connection with Christ makes it possible to serve God acceptably, and to gain eternal life

Heb. 12:28 "Wherefore, seeing that we are to receive a kingdom that cannot be shaken, let us continue to have undeserved kindness, through which we may acceptably render God sacred service with godly fear and awe."

Rom. 5:15, 17 "It is not with the gift as it was with the trespass. For if by one man's trespass many died, the undeserved kindness of God and his free gift with the undeserved kindness by the one man Jesus Christ abounded much more to many. For if by the trespass of the one man death ruled as king through that one, much more will those who receive the abundance of the undeserved kindness and of the free gift of righteousness rule as kings in life through the one person, Jesus Christ."

Eph. 1:5-7 "For he foreordained us to the adoption through Jesus Christ as sons to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, in praise of his glorious undeserved kindness which he kindly conferred upon us by means of his loved one. By means of him we have the release by ransom through the blood of that one, yes, the forgiveness of our trespasses, according to the riches of his undeserved kindness."

Titus 3:6, 7 "This spirit he poured out richly upon us through Jesus Christ our Savior, that, after being declared righteous by virtue of the undeserved kindness of that one, we might become heirs according to a hope of everlasting life."

Not to be taken for granted or abused

2 Cor. 6:1 "Working together with him, we also entreat you not to accept the undeserved kindness of God and miss its purpose."

Rom. 2:4 "Do you despise the riches of his kindness and forbearance and long-suffering, because you do not know that the kindly quality of God is trying to lead you to repentance?"

Jude 4 "Certain men have slipped in who have long ago been appointed by the Scriptures to this judgment, ungodly men, turning the undeserved kindness of our God into an excuse for loose conduct and proving false to our only Owner and Lord, Jesus Christ."

Heb. 10:29 "Of how much more severe a punishment, do you think, will the man be counted worthy who has trampled upon the Son of God and who has esteemed as of ordinary value the blood of the covenant by which he was sanctified, and who has outraged the spirit of undeserved kindness with contempt?"

Kingdom

Jehovah Is the King of Eternity

1 Tim. 1:17 "Now to the King of eternity, incorruptible, invisible, the only God, be honor and glory forever and ever."

Rev. 15:3 "They are singing the song of Moses the slave of God and the song of the Lamb, saying: 'Great and wonderful are your works, Jehovah God, the Almighty. Righteous and true are your ways, King of eternity.'"

Ps. 10:16 "Jehovah is King to time indefinite, even forever."

God Purposed a Kingdom Administration in the Hands of Christ

Eph. 1:9, 10 "He made known to us the sacred secret of his will. It is according to his good pleasure which he purposed in himself for an administration at the full limit of the appointed times, namely, to gather all things together again in the Christ, the things in the heavens and the things on the earth."

Luke 22:29 "I make a covenant with you, just as my Father has made a covenant with me, for a kingdom."

Christ Taught His Followers to Pray for That Kingdom

Matt. 6:9, 10 "You must pray, then, this way: 'Our Father in the heavens, let your name be sanctified. Let your kingdom come.'" (See also Luke 11:1, 2.)

The Kingdom Is a Government with Rulers, Authority, Subjects

Ps. 2:6-8 "'I, even I, have installed my king upon Zion, my holy mountain.' Let me refer to the decree of Jehovah; he has said to me: 'You are my son; I, today, I have become your father. Ask of me, that I may give nations as your inheritance and the ends of the earth as your own possession.'"

Dan. 7:14, 18 "To him there were given rulership and dignity and kingdom, that the peoples, national groups and languages should all serve even him. His rulership is an indefinitely lasting rulership that will not pass away, and his kingdom one that will not be brought to ruin. But the holy ones of the Supreme One will receive the kingdom, and they will take possession of the kingdom for time indefinite, even for time indefinite upon times indefinite."

Rev. 5:10 "You made them to be a kingdom and priests to our God, and they will rule as kings over the earth."

Rev. 12:10 "I heard a loud voice in heaven say: 'Now have come to pass the salvation and the power and the kingdom of our God and the authority of his Christ, because the accuser of our brothers has been hurled down, who accuses them day and night before our God!'"

Not developed through efforts of men and human governments

John 18:36 "Jesus answered: 'My kingdom is no part of this world. If my kingdom were part of this world, my attendants would have fought that I should not be delivered up to the Jews. But, as it is, my kingdom is not from this source.'"

Dan. 2:44 "In the days of those kings the God of heaven will set up a kingdom that will never be brought to ruin. And the kingdom itself will not be passed on to any other people. It will crush and put an end to all these kingdoms, and it itself will stand to times indefinite."

Isa. 9:7 "To the abundance of the princely rule and to peace there will be no end, upon the throne of David and upon his kingdom in order to establish it firmly and to sustain it by means of justice and by means of righteousness, from now on and to time indefinite. The very zeal of Jehovah of armies will do this."

Not simply a state of goodness in one's heart; statements are concerning unbelievers

Luke 17:20, 21 "But on being asked by the Pharisees when the kingdom of God was coming, he answered them and said: 'The kingdom of God is not coming with striking observableness, neither will people be saying, "See here!" or, "There!" For,

look! the kingdom of God is in your midst ["the kingdom of God is within you," *AV*].'"

Luke 10:10, 11 "Wherever you enter into a city and they do not receive you, go out into its broad ways and say, 'Even the dust that got stuck to our feet from your city we wipe off against you. Nevertheless, keep this in mind, that the kingdom of God has come near.'"

Kingdom Is Heavenly, Not Earthly

2 Tim. 4:18 "The Lord will deliver me from every wicked work and will save me for his heavenly kingdom."

Matt. 13:44 "The kingdom of the heavens is like a treasure."

1 Cor. 15:50 "This I say, brothers, that flesh and blood cannot inherit God's kingdom."

To rule both heaven and earth

Eph. 1:19-21 "It is according to the operation of the mightiness of his strength, with which he has operated in the case of the Christ when he raised him up from the dead and seated him at his right hand in the heavenly places, far above . . . every name named, not only in this system of things, but also in that to come."

Rev. 21:2-4 "I saw also the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God and prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. With that I heard a loud voice from the throne say: 'Look! The tent of God is with mankind, and he will reside with them, and they will be his peoples. And God himself will be with them. And he will wipe out every tear from their eyes, and death will be no more, neither will mourning nor outcry nor pain be any more. The former things have passed away.'"

1 Cor. 6:2, 3 "Do you not know that the holy ones will judge the world? . . . Do you not know that we shall judge angels?"

Blessings to come to earth and its inhabitants by means of God's kingdom

(See pages 167-170, under the main heading "Earth and Its Destiny.")

Christ Empowered by Jehovah God as King

Ps. 2:4-6 "The very One sitting in the heavens will laugh; Jehovah himself will hold them in derision. At that time he will speak to them in his anger and in his hot displeasure he will disturb them, saying: 'I, even I, have installed my king upon Zion, my holy mountain.'"

Dan. 7:13, 14 "I kept on beholding in the visions of the night, and, see there! with the clouds of the heavens someone like a son of man happened to be coming; and to the Ancient of Days he gained access, and they brought him up close even before that One. And to him there were given rulership and dignity and kingdom, that the peoples, national groups and languages should all serve even him."

Jesus the permanent heir of the covenant for the kingdom made with King David

Luke 1:32, 33 "This one will be great and will be called Son of the Most High; and Jehovah God will give him the throne of David his father, and he will rule as king over the house of Jacob forever, and there will be no end of his kingdom."

2 Sam. 7:12, 13 "When your days come to the full, and you must lie down with your forefathers, then I shall certainly raise up your seed after you, which will come out of your inward parts; and I shall indeed firmly establish his kingdom. He is the one that will build a house for my name, and I shall certainly establish the throne of his kingdom firmly to time indefinite."

Acts 2:29-31 "Brothers, it is allowable to speak with freeness of speech to you concerning the family head David, that he both deceased and was buried and his tomb is among us to this day. Therefore, because he was a prophet and knew that God had sworn to him with an oath that he would seat one from the fruitage of his loins upon his throne, he saw beforehand and spoke concerning the resurrection of the Christ."

Heavenly office of King-Priest also promised to Christ

Ps. 110:1, 4 "The utterance of Jehovah to my Lord is: 'Sit at my right hand until I place your enemies as a stool for your feet.' Jehovah has sworn (and he will feel no regret): 'You are a priest to time indefinite according to the manner of Melchizedek!'"

Heb. 6:20; 7:1, 2 "A forerunner has entered in our behalf, Jesus, who has become a high priest according to the manner of Melchizedek forever." "For this Melchizedek, king of Salem, priest of the Most High God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings and blessed him . . . is first of all, by translation, 'King of Righteousness,' and is then also king of Salem, that is, 'King of Peace.'"

Heb. 7:15-17 "It is still more abundantly clear that with a similarity to Melchizedek there arises another priest, who has become such, not according to the law of a commandment depending upon the flesh, but according to the power of an indestructible life, for in witness it is said: 'You are a priest forever according to the manner of Melchizedek.'"

See also the main heading "Covenants," page 129.

144,000 Redeemed from Earth to Be Kings and Priests with Christ in Heaven

Rev. 14:1, 4 "I saw, and, look! the Lamb standing upon the Mount Zion, and with him a hundred and forty-four thousand having his name and the name of his Father written on their foreheads. . . . These are the ones that keep following the Lamb no matter where he goes. These were bought from among mankind as a first fruits to God and to the Lamb." (See also **Heb. 12:22; 2 Tim. 2:12; John 1:29.**)

Rev. 5:9, 10 "They sing a new song, saying: 'You are worthy to take the scroll and open its seals, because you were slaughtered and with your blood you bought persons for God out of every tribe and tongue and people and nation, and you made them to be a kingdom and priests to our God, and they will rule as kings over the earth.'"

Rev. 20:6 "Happy and holy is anyone having part in the first resurrection; over these the second death has no authority, but they will be priests of God and of the Christ, and will rule as kings with him for the thousand years."

Integrity of Christ and Associate Kings Proved to the Limit

Phil. 2:8, 9 "When he found himself in fashion as a man, he humbled himself and became obedient as far as death, yes, death on a torture stake. For this very reason also God exalted him to a superior position and kindly gave him the name that is above every other name."

Heb. 5:8 "Although he was a Son, he learned obedience from the things he suffered."

Rev. 2:10, 26 "Do not be afraid of the things you are about to suffer. Look! The Devil will keep on throwing some of you into prison that you may be fully put to the test, and that you

may have tribulation ten days. Prove yourself faithful even to death, and I will give you the crown of life. And to him that conquers and observes my deeds down to the end I will give authority over the nations."

Rev. 20:4 "I saw the souls of those executed with the ax for the witness they bore to Jesus and for speaking about God, and those who had worshiped neither the wild beast nor its image and who had not received the mark upon their forehead and upon their hand. And they came to life and ruled as kings with the Christ for a thousand years."

Kingdom to Magnify Jehovah God, Destroying Those in Opposition to Him

Rev. 11:17 "We thank you, Jehovah God, the Almighty, the one who is and who was, because you have taken your great power and begun ruling as king."

1 Cor. 15:24, 26 "Next, the end, when he hands over the kingdom to his God and Father, when he has brought to nothing all government and all authority and power. As the last enemy, death is to be brought to nothing."

Dan. 2:44 "In the days of those kings the God of heaven will set up a kingdom . . . And the kingdom itself will not be passed on to any other people. It will crush and put an end to all these kingdoms, and it itself will stand to times indefinite."

Rev. 19:11, 16, 19-21 "I saw the heaven opened, and, look! a white horse. And the one seated upon it is called Faithful and True, and he judges and carries on war in righteousness. And upon his outer garment, even upon his thigh, he has a name written, King of kings and Lord of lords. And I saw the wild beast and the kings of the earth and their armies gathered together to wage the war with the one seated on the horse and with his army. And the wild beast was caught, and along with it the false prophet that performed in front of it the signs with which he misled those who received the mark of the wild beast and those who render worship to its image. While still alive, they both were hurled into the fiery lake that burns with sulphur. But the rest were killed off with the long sword of the one seated on the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth."

See also the main heading "Sanctification," pages 441, 442.

'Kingdom of the Heavens Has Drawn Near' Preached While Jesus Christ the King-Designate Was on Earth

Matt. 4:17 "From that time on Jesus commenced preaching and saying: 'Repent, for the kingdom of the heavens has drawn near.'"

Matt. 10:7 "As you go, preach, saying, 'The kingdom of the heavens has drawn near.'"

Christ Has Ruled as King over Christian Congregation Since Pentecost, 33 C.E.

Col. 1:13 "He delivered us from the authority of the darkness and transplanted us into the kingdom of the Son of his love."

Eph. 5:23 "A husband is head of his wife as the Christ also is head of the congregation, he being a savior of this body."

Not immediately invested with Kingdom power over the nations at his return to heaven

Acts 2:34, 35 "Jehovah said to my Lord: 'Sit at my right hand, until I place your enemies as a stool for your feet.'"

Matt. 25:31 "When the Son of man arrives in his glory, and all the angels with him, then he will sit down on his glorious throne."

Matt. 19:28 "Jesus said to them: 'Truly I say to you, In the re-creation, when the Son of man sits down upon his glorious throne, you who have followed me will also yourselves sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.'"

Did not have full Kingdom power in Paul's day

Heb. 2:8 "'All things you subjected under his feet.' For in that he subjected all things to him God left nothing that is not subject to him. Now, though, we do not yet see all things in subjection to him."

Heb. 10:12, 13 "This man offered one sacrifice for sins perpetually and sat down at the right hand of God, from then on awaiting until his enemies should be placed as a stool for his feet."

Time of Kingdom's Establishment in Heaven Pinpointed in Bible

(See pages 89-91, under the main heading "Chronology.")

World Woes Confirm Kingdom's Establishment in Heaven—Christ to Begin Rule Amidst Enemies; Woe to Earth for a Short Time

Ps. 110:1, 2 "The utterance of Jehovah to my Lord is: 'Sit at my right hand until I place your enemies as a stool for your feet.' The rod of your strength Jehovah will send out of Zion, saying: 'Go subduing in the midst of your enemies.'"

Rev. 11:17, 18 "We thank you, Jehovah God, the Almighty, the one who is and who was, because you have taken your great power and begun ruling as king. But the nations became wrathful."

Rev. 12:10, 12 "I heard a loud voice in heaven say: 'Now have come to pass the salvation and the power and the kingdom of our God and the authority of his Christ, because the accuser of our brothers has been hurled down, who accuses them day and night before our God! On this account be glad, you heavens and you who reside in them! Woe for the earth and for the sea, because the Devil has come down to you, having great anger, knowing he has a short period of time.'"

Matt. 24:3, 4, 7, 8 "While he was sitting upon the Mount of Olives, the disciples approached him privately, saying: 'Tell us, When will these things be, and what will be the sign of your presence and of the conclusion of the system of things?' And in answer Jesus said to them: '. . . For nation will rise against nation and kingdom against kingdom, and there will be food shortages and earthquakes in one place after another. All these things are a beginning of pangs of distress.'"

See also the main heading "Sign of Christ's Presence," pages 451-456.

Kingdom to Endure Forever

2 Pet. 1:11 "There will be richly supplied to you the entrance into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ."

Rev. 11:15 "The seventh angel blew his trumpet. And loud voices occurred in heaven, saying: 'The kingdom of the world has become the kingdom of our Lord and of his Christ, and he will rule as king forever and ever.'"

Dan. 7:14 "His rulership is an indefinitely lasting rulership that will not pass away, and his kingdom one that will not be brought to ruin."

Luke 1:32, 33 "This one will be great and will be called Son of the Most High; and Jehovah God will give him the throne of David his father, and he will rule as king over the house of

Jacob forever, and there will be no end of his kingdom."

See also Rev. 22:5.

Thousand years that Christ rules while Satan is in abyss a notable period, after which Satan is destroyed forever

Rev. 20:2, 3, 6-8, 10, 14 "He seized the dragon, the original serpent, who is the Devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years. And he hurled him into the abyss and shut it and *sealed it over him . . . Happy* and holy is anyone having part in the first resurrection; over these the second death has no authority, but they will be priests of God and of the Christ, and will rule as kings with him for the thousand years. Now as soon as the thousand years have been ended, Satan will be let loose *out of his prison, and he will* go out to mislead those nations in the four corners of the earth. . . . And the Devil who was misleading them was hurled into the lake of fire and sulphur, where both the wild beast and the false prophet already were; . . . And death and Hades were hurled into the lake of fire. This means the second death, the lake of fire."

Kingdom of God of Prime Importance in Lives of Christians

Matt. 6:33 "Keep on, then, *seeking first* the kingdom and his righteousness, and all these other things will be added to you."

Matt. 13:44 "The kingdom of the heavens is like a treasure hidden in the field, which a man found and hid; and for the joy he has he goes and sells what things he has and buys that field."

Luke 12:31 "Seek continually his kingdom."

Knowledge

Jehovah God, the Creator of All Things, Is the Source of All True Knowledge

Rom. 11:33, 36 "O the depth of God's riches and wisdom and knowledge! How unsearchable his judgments are and past tracing out his ways are! Because from him and by him and for him are all things."

Prov. 2:6 "Jehovah himself gives wisdom; out of his mouth there are knowledge and discernment."

Job 37:14, 16 "Stand still and show yourself attentive to the wonderful works of God. Do you know about the poisings of the cloud, the wonderful works of the One perfect in knowledge?"

See also Dan. 1:17.

Reverent Fear of Jehovah a Fundamental Requirement in Acquiring True Knowledge

Prov. 1:7 "The fear of Jehovah is the beginning of knowledge."

Prov. 9:10 "The fear of Jehovah is the start of wisdom, and the knowledge of the Most Holy *One is what understanding is.*"

Belief in Christ Necessary to Understand the Works of God and His Purposes

1 John 5:20 "We know that the Son of God has come, and he has given us intellectual capacity that we may gain the knowledge of *the true one. And we are in* union with the true one, by means of his Son Jesus Christ."

Col. 2:2, 3 "That their hearts may be comforted, that they may be harmoniously joined together in love and with a view to all the riches of the full assurance of their understanding, with a view to an accurate knowledge of the sacred secret of God, namely, Christ. Carefully concealed in him are all the treasures of wisdom and of knowledge."

1 Cor. 1:30 "It is due to him that you are in union with Christ Jesus, who has become to us wisdom from God."

John 1:1-3 "In the beginning the Word was, and the Word was with God, and the Word was a god. This one was in the beginning with God. All things came into existence through him, and apart from him not even one thing came into existence."

See also Prov. 8:12-36, and the *main heading "Jesus Christ,"* pages 282-288.

Eternal Life Dependent on Continued Feeding of Mind with Knowledge of Jehovah God and Jesus Christ

John 17:3 "This means everlasting life, their taking in knowledge of you, the only true God, and of the One whom you sent forth, Jesus Christ."

Matt. 4:4 "In reply he said: 'It is written, "Man must live, not on bread alone, but on every utterance coming forth through Jehovah's mouth."'"

Accurate Knowledge Important to Servants of God

1 Tim. 2:3, 4 "This is fine and acceptable in the sight of our Savior, God, whose will is that all sorts of men should be saved and come to an accurate knowledge of truth."

Col. 3:10 "Clothe yourselves with the new personality, which through accurate knowledge is being made new according to the image of the One who created it."

Col. 1:9, 10 "That is also why we, from the day we heard of it, have not ceased praying for you and asking that you may be filled with the accurate knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual discernment, in order to walk worthily of Jehovah to the end of fully pleasing him as you go on bearing fruit in every good work and increasing in the accurate knowledge of God."

Phil. 1:9-11 "This is what I continue praying, that your love may abound yet more and more with accurate knowledge and full discernment; that you may make sure of the more important things, so that you may be flawless and not be stumbling others up to the day of Christ, and may be filled with righteous fruit, which is through Jesus Christ, to God's glory and praise."

More than Knowledge of Facts Needed; Must Understand Those Facts and How to Use Them

Prov. 4:7 "Wisdom is the prime thing. Acquire wisdom; and with all that you acquire, acquire understanding."

Col. 4:6 "Know how you ought to give an answer to each one."

1 Pet. 3:15 "Always ready to make a defense before everyone that demands of you a reason for the hope in you."

Prov. 15:28 "The heart of the righteous one meditates so as to answer."

Conscientious Effort Required to Acquire Knowledge of God

Prov. 2:3-5 "If, moreover, you call out for understanding itself and you give forth your voice for discernment itself, if you keep seeking for it as for silver, and as for hid treasures you keep searching for it, in that case you will understand the fear of Jehovah, and you will find the very knowledge of God."

Acts 17:11 "Now the latter were more noble-minded than those in

Thessalonica, for they received the word with the greatest eagerness of mind, carefully examining the Scriptures daily as to whether these things were so."

Matt. 12:42 "The queen of the south will be raised up in the judgment with this generation and will condemn it; because she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon, but, look! something more than Solomon is here."

See also the main heading "Study," pages 470-473.

Proper to Pray to Jehovah God for Knowledge and Wisdom

Jas. 1:5 "If any one of you is lacking in wisdom, let him keep on asking God, for he gives generously to all and without reproaching; and it will be given him."

Ps. 119:33, 34 "Instruct me, O Jehovah, in the way of your regulations, that I may observe it down to the last. Make me understand, that I may observe your law and that I may keep it with the whole heart."

Ps. 119:64, 66 "Your loving-kindness, O Jehovah, has filled the earth. Teach me your own regulations. Teach me goodness, sensibleness and knowledge themselves, for in your commandments I have exercised faith."

2 Chron. 1:7, 10 "During that night God appeared to Solomon and then said to him: 'Ask! What shall I give you?' 'Give me now wisdom and knowledge that I may go out before this people and that I may come in, for who could judge this great people of yours?' "

The Bible Is Inspired of God; from It We Gain Knowledge of Him

2 Tim. 3:16 "All Scripture is inspired of God and beneficial for teaching, for reproving, for setting things straight, for disciplining in righteousness."

2 Pet. 1:21 "Prophecy was at no time brought by man's will, but men spoke from God as they were borne along by holy spirit."

Deut. 17:18, 19 "When he takes his seat on the throne of his kingdom, he must write in a book for himself a copy of this law from that which is in the charge of the priests, the Levites. And it must continue with him, and he must read in it all the days of his life, in order that he may learn to fear Jehovah his God."

One can benefit greatly from a knowledge of God's dealings with men in times past

Rom. 15:4 "For all the things that were written aforetime were written for our instruction, that through our endurance and through the comfort from the Scriptures we might have hope."

1 Cor. 10:6, 11 "Now these things became our examples, for us not to be persons desiring injurious things, even as they desired them. Now these things went on befalling them as examples, and they were written for a warning to us upon whom the ends of the systems of things have arrived."

Only reliable source of information about the future

Isa. 46:9, 10 "Remember the first things of a long time ago, that I am the Divine One and there is no other God, nor anyone like me; the One telling from the beginning the finale, and from long ago the things that have not been done; the One saying, My own counsel will stand, and everything that is my delight I shall do.' "

Dan. 2:28 "There exists a God in the heavens who is a Revealer of secrets, and he has made known to King Nebuchadnezzar what is to occur in the final part of the days."

Isa. 42:9 "The first things—here they have come, but new things I am telling out. Before they begin to spring up, I cause you people to hear them."

See also the main heading "Prophecy," pages 394-402.

Assistance of God's Servants, the Visible Organization on Which He Has Put His Spirit, Needed to Understand His Word

Acts 8:26-28, 30, 31, 35 "Jehovah's angel spoke to Philip, saying: 'Rise and go to the south to the road that runs down from Jerusalem to Gaza.' (This is a desert road.) With that he rose and went, and, look! an Ethiopian eunuch, a man in power under Candace queen of the Ethiopians, and who was over all her treasure. He had gone to Jerusalem to worship, but he was returning and was sitting in his chariot and reading aloud the prophet Isaiah. Philip ran alongside and heard him reading aloud Isaiah the prophet, and he said: 'Do you actually know what you are reading?' He said: 'Really, how could I ever do so, unless someone guided me?' And he entreated Philip to get on and sit down with him. Philip opened his mouth and, starting with this Scripture, he declared to him the good news about Jesus."

Acts 15:28, 29 "The holy spirit and we ourselves have favored adding no further burden to you, except these necessary things, to keep yourselves free from things sacrificed to idols and from blood and from things strangled and from fornication. If you carefully keep yourselves from these things, you will prosper. Good health to you!"

Acts 16:4, 5 "Now as they traveled on through the cities they would deliver to those there for observance the decrees that had been decided upon by the apostles and older men who were in Jerusalem. Therefore, indeed, the congregations continued to be made firm in the faith and to increase in number from day to day."

See also Matt. 24:45-47, and the main heading "Organization (Jehovah's)," pages 362-366.

Knowledge Brings with It Responsibility

1 Cor. 9:16 "If, now, I am declaring the good news, it is no reason for me to boast, for necessity is laid upon me. Really, woe is me if I did not declare the good news!"

Ezek. 3:17, 18 "Son of man, a watchman is what I have made you to the house of Israel, and you must hear from my mouth speech and you must warn them from me. When I say to someone wicked, 'You will positively die,' and you do not actually warn him and speak in order to warn the wicked one from his wicked way to preserve him alive, he being wicked, in his error he will die, but his blood I shall ask back from your own hand."

Acts 20:26, 27 "I call you to witness this very day that I am clean from the blood of all men, for I have not held back from telling you all the counsel of God."

Heb. 10:26 "For if we practice sin willfully after having received the accurate knowledge of the truth, there is no longer any sacrifice for sins left."

To be used to benefit others

Prov. 15:7 "The lips of the wise ones keep scattering knowledge about."

Jer. 3:15 "I will give you shepherds in agreement with my heart, and they will certainly feed you with knowledge and insight."

Isa. 50:4 "The Lord Jehovah himself has given me the tongue of the taught ones, that I may know how to answer the tired one with a word."

2 Tim. 2:1, 2 "You, therefore, my child, keep on acquiring power in the undeserved kindness that is in connection with Christ Jesus, and the things you heard from me with the support of many witnesses, these things commit to faithful men, who, in turn, will be adequately qualified to teach others."

Knowledge required to be effective ministers of God

2 Cor. 6:4, 6 "In every way we recommend ourselves as God's ministers, by the endurance of much, . . . by knowledge."

2 Pet. 1:5-8 "By your contributing in response all earnest effort, supply to your faith virtue, to your virtue knowledge . . . For if these things exist in you and overflow, they will prevent you from being either inactive or unfruitful regarding the accurate knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ."

2 Cor. 10:4, 5 "For the weapons of our warfare are not fleshly, but powerful by God for overturning strongly entrenched things. For we are overturning reasonings and every lofty thing raised up against the knowledge of God."

Refusing to Take In Knowledge Does Not Free One of Responsibility

Acts 3:22, 23 "Moses said, 'Jehovah God will raise up for you from among your brothers a prophet like me. You must listen to him according to all the things he speaks to you. Indeed, any soul that does not listen to that Prophet will be completely destroyed from among the people.'"

Matt. 10:14, 15 "Wherever anyone does not take you in or listen to your words, on going out of that house or that city shake the dust off your feet. Truly I say to you, It will be more endurable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrah on Judgment Day than for that city."

Prov. 1:28, 29 "At that time they will keep calling me, but I shall not answer; they will keep looking for me, but they will not find me, for the reason that they hated knowledge, and the fear of Jehovah they did not choose."

Hos. 4:6 "Because the knowledge is what you yourself have rejected, I shall also reject you from serving as a priest to me."

Course of wisdom to seek knowledge

Prov. 10:14 "The wise are the ones that treasure up knowledge, but the mouth of the foolish one is near to ruin itself."

Eccl. 7:12 "Wisdom is for a protection the same as money is for a protecton; but the advantage of knowledge is that wisdom itself preserves alive its owners."

Prov. 2:10-12, 20, 21 "When wisdom enters into your heart and knowledge itself becomes pleasant to your very soul, thinking ability itself will keep guard over you, discernment itself will safeguard you, to deliver you from the bad way . . . The purpose is that you may walk in the way of good people and that the paths of the righteous ones you may keep. For the upright are the ones that will reside in the earth, and the blameless are the ones that will be left over in it."

Prov. 8:10, 11 "Take my discipline and not silver, and knowledge rather than choice gold. For wisdom is better than corals, and all other delights themselves cannot be made equal to it."

Prov. 9:9 "Give to a wise person and he will become still wiser. Impart knowledge to someone righteous and he will increase in learning."

Worldly Wisdom Does Not Win Divine Approval

1 Cor. 3:19 "The wisdom of this world is foolishness with God."

1 Cor. 1:20 "Where is the wise man? Where the scribe? Where the debater of this system of things? Did not God make the wisdom of the world foolish?"

Isa. 44:25 "I am frustrating the signs of the empty talkers, and I am the One that makes diviners themselves act crazily; the One turning wise men backwards, and the One that turns even their knowledge into foolishness."

Jer. 4:22 "They are unwise sons; and they are not those having understanding. Wise they are for doing bad, but for doing good they actually have no knowledge."

See also the main heading "Evolution," pages 177-184.

Relying on false knowledge leads to ruin

1 Tim. 6:20, 21 "O Timothy, guard what is laid up in trust with you, turning away from the empty speeches that violate what is holy and from the contradictions of the falsely called 'knowledge.' For making a show of such knowledge some have deviated from the faith."

2 Pet. 2:1 "There also came to be false prophets among the people, as there will also be false teachers among you. These very ones will quietly bring in destructive sects and will disown even the owner that bought them, bringing speedy destruction upon themselves."

Jer. 14:14, 15 "Jehovah went on to say to me: 'Falsehood is what the prophets are prophesying in my name. I have not sent them, nor have I commanded them or spoken to them. . . . Therefore this is what Jehovah has said concerning the prophets who are prophesying in my name and whom I myself did not send . . . 'By sword and by famine those prophets will come to their finish.'"

Matt. 15:14 "Let them be. Blind guides is what they are. If, then, a blind man guides a blind man, both will fall into a pit."

Isa. 47:1, 10, 11 "Come down and sit down in the dust, O virgin daughter of Babylon. . . . You kept trusting in your badness. You have said: 'There is no one seeing me.' Your wisdom and your knowledge—this is what has led you away; . . . upon you calamity must come."

Earth to Be Filled with Knowledge of Jehovah

Isa. 11:9 "The earth will certainly be filled with the knowledge of Jehovah as the waters are covering the very sea."

Hab. 2:14 "The earth will be filled with the knowing of the glory of Jehovah as the waters themselves cover over the sea."

"Last Days"

Critical Times Foretold for "Last Days"

2 Tim. 3:1-5 "Know this, that in the last days critical times hard to deal with will be here. For men will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, self-assuming, haughty, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, disloyal, having no natural affection, not open to any agreement, slanderers, without self-control, fierce, without love of goodness, betrayers, headstrong, puffed up with pride, lovers of pleasures rather than lovers of God, having a form of godly devotion but proving false to its power; and from these turn away."

"Last Days" Associated with Christ's Second Presence

2 Pet. 3:3, 4 "You know this first, that in the last days there will come ridiculers with their ridicule, proceeding according to their own desires and saying: 'Where is this promised presence of his?' "

Matt. 24:3 "While he was sitting upon the Mount of Olives, the disciples approached him privately, saying: 'Tell us, When will these things be, and what will be the sign of your presence and of the conclusion of the system of things?' "

See also the main heading "Sign of Christ's Presence," pages 451-456.

Not the Earth, but the Present Wicked System of Things to Come to Its End

Ps. 104:5 "He has founded the earth upon its established places; it will not be made to totter to time indefinite, or forever."

Eccl. 1:4 "A generation is going, and a generation is coming; but the earth is standing even to time indefinite."

Gal. 1:4 "He gave himself for our sins that he might deliver us from the present wicked system of things according to the will of our God and Father."

Matt. 28:20 "Look! I am with you all the days until the conclusion of the system of things."

See also the main heading "Earth and Its Destiny," pages 165-170.

World of unbelieving mankind, ungodly ones, to pass away

1 John 2:17 "Furthermore, the world is passing away and so is its desire, but he that does the will of God remains forever."

2 Pet. 3:7 "By the same word the heavens and the earth that are now are stored up for fire and are being reserved to the day of judgment and of destruction of the ungodly men."

Prov. 2:22 "As regards the wicked, they will be cut off from the very earth; and as for the treacherous, they will be torn away from it."

2 Pet. 2:9 "Jehovah knows how to deliver people of godly devotion out of trial, but to reserve unrighteous people for the day of judgment to be cut off."

Separating Work Done Among Men Before Destruction Comes

Matt. 13:49, 50 "That is how it will be in the conclusion of the system of things: the angels will go out and separate the wicked from among the righteous and will cast them into the fiery furnace."

Matt. 25:31, 32, 46 "When the Son of man arrives in his glory, and all the angels with him, then he will sit down on his glorious throne. And all the nations will be gathered before him, and he will separate people one from another, just as a shepherd separates the sheep from the goats. And these will depart into everlasting cutting-off, but the righteous ones into everlasting life."

Matt. 24:14 "This good news of the kingdom will be preached in all the inhabited earth for a witness to all the nations; and then the end will come."

Promise of Deliverance, Everlasting Life in Righteous New System of Things for Faithful Ones

Matt. 24:13 "He that has endured to the end is the one that will be saved."

2 Pet. 3:13 "There are new heavens and a new earth that we are awaiting according to his promise, and in these righteousness is to dwell."

Ps. 37:29 "The righteous themselves will possess the earth, and they will reside forever upon it."

Rom. 6:23 "The gift God gives is everlasting life by Christ Jesus our Lord."

Gal. 6:8 "He who is sowing with a view to the spirit will reap everlasting life from the spirit."

Mark 10:29, 30 "Jesus said: 'Truly I say to you men, No one has left house or brothers or sisters or mother or father or children or fields for my sake and for the sake of the good news who will not get a hundredfold now in this period of time, houses and brothers and sisters and mothers and children and fields, with persecutions, and in the coming system of things everlasting life.' "

1 Pet. 1:3-5 "Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, for according to his great mercy he gave us a new birth to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, to an incorruptible and undefiled and unfading inheritance. It is reserved in the heavens for you, who are being safeguarded by God's power through faith for a salvation ready to be revealed in the last period of time."

Need to Keep Spiritually Awake Now

Luke 21:34-36 "Pay attention to yourselves that your hearts never become weighed down with overeating and heavy drinking and anxieties of life, and suddenly that day be instantly upon you as a snare. For it will come in upon all those dwelling upon the face of all the earth. Keep awake, then, all the time making supplication that you may succeed in escaping all these things that are destined to occur, and in standing before the Son of man."

Mark 13:32, 33 "Concerning that day or the hour nobody knows, neither the angels in heaven nor the Son, but the Father. Keep looking, keep awake, for you do not know when the appointed time is."

1 Thess. 5:6 "So, then, let us not sleep on as the rest do, but let us stay awake and keep our senses."

2 Pet. 3:14, 17, 18 "Hence, beloved ones, since you are awaiting these things, do your utmost to be found finally by him spotless and unblemished and in peace. You, therefore, beloved ones, having this advance knowledge, be on your guard that you may not be led away with them by the error of the law-defying people and fall from your own steadfastness. No, but go on growing in the undeserved kindness and knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ."

1 Pet. 4:7 "The end of all things has drawn close. Be sound in mind, therefore, and be vigilant with a view to prayers."

Law

Christians Obey Legally Constituted Political Governments Under Which They Live

Rom. 13:1 "Let every soul be in subjection to the superior authorities, for there is no authority except by God; the existing authorities stand placed in their relative positions by God."

Titus 3:1 "Continue reminding them to be in subjection and be obedient to governments and authorities as rulers."

See also the heading "Superior Authorities," pages 473-477.

When human laws conflict with divine law, Christians obey God

Matt. 22:21 "Pay back, therefore, Caesar's things to Caesar, but God's things to God."

Acts 5:29 "Peter and the other apostles said: 'We must obey God as ruler rather than men.'"

Acts 4:18-20 "With that they called them and charged them, nowhere to make any utterance or to teach upon the basis of the name of Jesus. But in reply Peter and John said to them: 'Whether it is righteous in the sight of God to listen to you rather than to God, judge for yourselves. But as for us, we cannot stop speaking about the things we have seen and heard.'"

Law Courts Respected as Proper Places to Which to Appeal for Defense

Acts 25:11, 12 "'If, on the one hand, I [Paul] am really a wrongdoer and have committed anything deserving of death, I do not beg off from dying; if, on the other hand, none of those things exists of which these men accuse me, no man can hand me over to them as a favor. I appeal to Caesar!' Then Festus, after speaking with the assembly of counselors, replied: 'To Caesar you have appealed; to Caesar you shall go.'"

Christians Do Not Take Complaints Against Fellow Believers Before Worldly Law Courts

1 Cor. 6:1, 5-7 "Does anyone of you that has a case against the other dare to go to court before unrighteous men, and not before the holy ones? I am speaking to move you to shame. Is it true that there is not one wise man among you that will be able to judge between his brothers, but brother goes to court with brother, and that before unbelievers? Really, then, it means altogether a defeat for you that you are having lawsuits with one another. Why do you not rather let yourselves be wronged? Why do you not rather let yourselves be defrauded?"

See also the main heading "Settling Personal Differences," pages 446-448.

LAW COVENANT

God's Law Given Through Moses Served to Restrain Lawless Persons

1 Tim. 1:8-11 "Now we know that the Law is fine provided one handles it lawfully in the knowledge of this fact, that law is promulgated, not for a righteous man, but for persons lawless and unruly, ungodly and sinners, lacking loving-kindness, and profane, murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, manslayers, fornicators, men who lie with males, kidnapers, liars, false swearers, and whatever other thing is in opposition to the healthful teaching according to the glorious good news of the happy God, with which I was entrusted."

Law Embodied a Pattern of the Good Things to Come

Heb. 10:1 "The Law has a shadow of the good things to come, but not the very substance of the things."

Heb. 9:22-24 "Nearly all things are cleansed with blood according to the Law, and unless blood is poured out no forgiveness takes place. Therefore it was necessary that the typical representations of the things in the heavens should be cleansed by these means, but the heavenly things themselves with sacrifices that are better than such sacrifices. For Christ entered, not into a holy place made with hands, which is a copy of the reality, but into heaven itself, now to appear before the person of God for us."

Law Made Manifest Man's Need of a Redeemer, so Leading Faithful Ones to Christ

Gal. 3:19, 24 "Why, then, the Law? It was added to make transgressions manifest, until the seed should arrive to whom the promise had been made . . . Consequently the Law has become our tutor leading to Christ, that we might be declared righteous due to faith."

Law Covenant Was Made with Israelites, Not All Nations

Ps. 147:19, 20 "He is telling his word to Jacob, his regulations and his judicial decisions to Israel. He has not done that way to any other nation."

Ex. 31:16, 17 "And the sons of Israel must keep the sabbath, so as to carry out the sabbath during their generations. It is a covenant to time indefinite. Between me and the sons of Israel it is a sign to time indefinite."

Jesus Christ Obeyed the Law, Encouraged Obedience to It While It Was Yet Binding

Gal. 4:4 "But when the full limit of the time arrived, God sent forth his son, who came to be out of a woman and who came to be under law."

Matt. 5:17, 18 "Do not think I came to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I came, not to destroy, but to fulfill; for truly I say to you that sooner would heaven and earth pass away than for the smallest letter or one particle of a letter to pass away from the Law by any means and not all things take place."

Matt. 23:23 "You give the tenth of the mint and the dill and the cummin, but you have disregarded the weightier matters of the Law, namely, justice and mercy and faithfulness. These things it was binding to do, yet not to disregard the other things."

Sinful Humans Could Not Gain Righteous Standing with God by Means of the Law

Rom. 3:20 "Therefore by works of law no flesh will be declared righteous before him, for by law is the accurate knowledge of sin."

Gal. 3:21, 22 "Is the Law, therefore, against the promises of God? May that never happen! For if a law had been given that was able to give life, righteousness would actually have been by means of law. But the Scripture delivered up all things together to the custody of sin, that the promise resulting from faith toward Jesus Christ might be given to those exercising faith."

See also Gal. 3:10, 11, and the main headings "Faith" and "Justification, or Being Declared Righteous."

Law Covenant Replaced by New Covenant Mediated by Jesus Christ

Heb. 8:6, 13 "But now Jesus has obtained a more excellent public service, so that he is also the mediator of a correspondingly better covenant, which has been legally established upon better promises. In his saying 'a new covenant' he has made the former one obsolete. Now that which is made obsolete and growing old is near to vanishing away."

Heb. 12:24 "Jesus the mediator of a new covenant."

2 Cor. 3:6, 12-14 "[God] has indeed adequately qualified us to be ministers of a new covenant, not of a written code, but of spirit; for the written code condemns to death, but the spirit makes alive. Therefore, as we have such a hope, we are using great freeness of speech, and not doing as when Moses would put a veil upon his face, that the sons of Israel might not gaze intently at the end of that which was to be done away with. But their mental perceptions were dulled. For to this present

day the same veil remains unlifted at the reading of the old covenant, because it is done away with by means of Christ."

Law Covenant Came to an End with Jesus Christ

Rom. 10:4 "For Christ is the end of the Law, so that everyone exercising faith may have righteousness."

Jehovah, the maker of the Law, figuratively nailed it to the stake on which Jesus died, so terminating the Law

Col. 2:13, 14 "God made you alive together with him. He kindly forgave us all our trespasses and blotted out the handwritten document against us, which consisted of decrees and which was in opposition to us; and He has taken it out of the way by nailing it to the torture stake."

Law was fulfilled in Christ and so set aside

Matt. 5:17 "Do not think I came to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I came, not to destroy, but to fulfill."

Col. 2:17 "Those things are a shadow of the things to come, but the reality belongs to the Christ."

Eph. 2:11-16 "Formerly you were people of the nations as to flesh; 'uncircumcision' you were called by that which is called 'circumcision' made in the flesh with hands—that you were at that particular time without Christ, alienated from the state of Israel and strangers to the covenants of the promise, and you had no hope and were without God in the world. But now in union with Christ Jesus you who were once far off have come to be near by the blood of the Christ. For he is our peace, he who made the two parties one and destroyed the wall in between that fenced them off. By means of his flesh he abolished the hatred, the Law of commandments consisting in decrees, that he might create the two peoples in union with himself into one new man and make peace; and that he might fully reconcile both peoples in one body to God through the torture stake, because he had killed off the hatred by means of himself."

Christ served to release those under the Law from obligation to it

Gal. 4:4, 5 "But when the full limit of the time arrived, God sent forth his Son, who came to be out of a woman and who came to be under law, that he might release by purchase those under law, that we, in turn, might receive the adoption as sons."

Rom. 7:4, 6 "So, my brothers, you also were made dead to the Law through the body of the Christ, that you might become another's, the one's who was raised up from the dead, that we should bear fruit to God. But now we have been discharged from the Law, because we have died to that by which we were being held fast, that we might be slaves in a new sense by the spirit, and not in the old sense by the written code."

Law Not Divided into Two Parts, One of Which Remains While the Other Is Abolished

Col. 2:13, 14, 16 "He kindly forgave us all our trespasses and blotted out the handwritten document against us, which consisted of decrees . . . Therefore let no man judge you in eating and drinking or in respect of a festival or of an observance of the new moon or of a sabbath."

When Jesus said he came to fulfill the Law, he referred both to Ten Commandments and to other parts of the Law

Matt. 5:17, 21, 23, 27, 31, 38 "Do not think I came to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I came, not to destroy, but to fulfill. You heard that it was said to those of ancient times, 'You must not murder [Ex. 20:13]' . . . If, then, you are bringing your gift to the altar [Deut. 16:16, 17] . . . You heard that it was said, 'You must not commit adultery.' [Ex. 20:14] Moreover it was said, 'Whoever divorces his wife, let him give her a certificate of divorce.' [Deut. 24:1] You heard that it was said, 'Eye for eye and tooth for tooth' [Ex. 21:23-25]."

Law that was brought to an end included the Tenth Commandment

Rom. 7:6, 7 "But now we have been discharged from the Law, because we have died to that by which we were being held fast, that we might be slaves in a new sense by the spirit, and not in the old sense by the written code. What, then, shall we say? Is the Law sin? Never may that become so! Really I would not have come to know sin if it had not been for the Law; and, for example, I would not have known covetousness if the Law had not said: 'You must not covet' [Ex. 20:17]."

Paul Shows Law Was Set Aside Along with Levitical Priesthood, Which Had Endured "to Time Indefinite" [Hebrew: *olam*] but Not Eternally

Ex. 40:15 "Their anointing must serve continually for them as a priesthood to time indefinite during their generations."

Heb. 7:11, 12, 18, 19 "If, then, perfection were really through the Levitical priesthood, (for with it as a feature the people were given the Law,) what further need would there be for another priest to arise according to the manner of Melchizedek and not said to be according to the manner of Aaron? For since the priesthood is being changed, there comes to be of necessity a change also of the law. Certainly, then, there occurs a setting aside of the preceding commandment on account of its weakness and ineffectiveness. For the Law made nothing perfect, but the bringing in besides of a better hope did, through which we are drawing near to God."

Righteous Principles Embodied in the Law Not Abolished

Gal. 5:14 "For the entire Law stands fulfilled in one saying, namely: 'You must love your neighbor as yourself.'"

Matt. 5:21, 22, 27, 28 "You heard that it was said to those of ancient times, 'You must not murder; but whoever commits a murder will be accountable to the court of justice.' However, I say to you that everyone who continues wrathful with his brother will be accountable to the court of justice; but whoever addresses his brother with an unspeakable word of contempt will be accountable to the Supreme Court; whereas whoever says, 'You despicable fool!' will be liable to the fiery Gehenna. You heard that it was said, 'You must not commit adultery.' But I say to you that everyone that keeps on looking at a woman so as to have a passion for her has already committed adultery with her in his heart."

God's spirit moves Christians to godly conduct

Gal. 5:18, 22, 23 "Furthermore, if you are being led by spirit, you are not under law. . . . the fruitage of the spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, kindness, goodness, faith, mildness, self-control. Against such things there is no law."

Rom. 6:15-18 "What follows? Shall we commit a sin because we are not under law but under undeserved kindness? Never may that happen! Do you not know that if you keep presenting your-

selves to anyone as slaves to obey him, you are slaves of him because you obey him, either of sin with death in view or of obedience with righteousness in view? But thanks to God that you were the slaves of sin but you became obedient from the heart to that form of teaching to which you were handed over. Yes, since you were set free from sin, you became slaves to righteousness."

Prophetic Patterns of Law Covenant Found Fulfillment in Jesus Christ and His Ministry

Heb. 9:1-3, 9, 10, 24 "For its part, then, the former covenant used to have ordinances of sacred service and its holy place upon this earth. For there was constructed a first tent compartment in which were the lampstand and also the table and the display of the loaves; and it is called 'the Holy Place.' But behind the second curtain was the tent compartment called 'the Most Holy.' This very tent is an illustration for the appointed time that is now here, and in keeping with it both gifts and sacrifices are offered. However, these are not able to make the man doing sacred service perfect as respects his conscience, but have to do only with foods and drinks and various baptisms. They were legal requirements pertaining to the flesh and were imposed until the appointed time to set things straight. For Christ entered, not into a holy place made with hands, which is a copy of the reality, but into heaven itself, now to appear before the person of God for us."

1 Cor. 5:7 "Clear away the old leaven, that you may be a new lump, according as you are free from ferment. For, indeed, Christ our passover has been sacrificed."

Heb. 10:8-10 "After first saying: 'You did not want nor did you approve of sacrifices and offerings and whole burnt offerings and sin offering'—sacrifices that are offered according to the Law—then he actually says: 'Look! I am come to do your will.' He does away with what is first that he may establish what is second. By the said 'will' we have been sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all time."

Persons Insisting on Adherence to the Law Reject Christ

Gal. 5:1-6 "For such freedom Christ set us free. Therefore stand fast, and do not let yourselves be confined again in a yoke of slavery. See! I, Paul, am telling you that if you become circumcised, Christ will be of no benefit to you. Moreover, I bear witness again to every man getting circumcised that he is under obligation to perform the whole Law. You are parted from Christ, whoever you are that try to be declared righteous by means of law; you have fallen away from his undeserved kindness. For our part we by spirit are eagerly waiting for the hoped-for righteousness as a result of faith. For as regards Christ Jesus neither circumcision is of any value nor is uncircumcision, but faith operating through love is."

Christians Not Under the Law, but Saved by Faith Through God's Undeserved Kindness

Rom. 6:14 "For sin must not be master over you, seeing that you are not under law but under undeserved kindness."

Eph. 2:8, 9 "By this undeserved kindness, indeed, you have been saved through faith; and this not owing to you, it is God's gift. No, it is not owing to works, in order that no man should have ground for boasting."

Life

Jehovah God the Source and Giver of Life

Ps. 36:7, 9 "How precious your loving-kindness is, O God! . . . with you is the source of life."

Acts 17:24, 25, 28 "The God that made the world and all the things in it . . . gives to all persons life and breath and all things. For by him we have life and move and exist."

Gen. 2:7 "And Jehovah God proceeded to form the man out of dust from the ground and to blow into his nostrils the breath of life, and the man came to be a living soul."

Job 12:9, 10 "The hand of Jehovah itself has done this, in whose hand is the soul of everyone alive and the spirit of all flesh of man."

As a Result of Adam's Sin, All Born Under Condemnation to Death

Rom. 5:12, 17 "Through one man sin entered into the world and death through sin, and thus death spread to all men . . . by the trespass of the one man death ruled as king through that one."

Gen. 2:17 "As for the tree of the knowledge of good and bad you must not eat from it, for in the day you eat from it you will positively die."

Gen. 3:6 "Consequently the woman saw that the tree's fruit was good for food and that it was something to be longed for to the eyes, yes, the tree was desirable to look upon. So she began taking of its fruit and eating it. Afterward she gave some also to her husband when with her and he began eating it."

Gen. 3:17, 19 "To Adam he said: '. . . In the sweat of your face you will eat bread until you return to the ground, for out of it you were taken. For dust you are and to dust you will return.'"

Life now uncertain, of short duration

Job 14:1, 2 "Man, born of woman, is short-lived and glutted with agitation. Like a blossom he has come forth and is cut off, and he runs away like the shadow and does not keep existing."

Ps. 103:15, 16 "As for mortal man, his days are like those of green grass; like a blossom of the field is the way he blossoms forth. For a mere wind has to pass over it, and it is no more; and its place will acknowledge it no further."

Jas. 4:14 "You do not know what your life will be tomorrow. For you are a mist appearing for a little while and then disappearing."

Deliverance from Sin, Prospect of Everlasting Life Made Available to All Mankind Through Jesus Christ

1 John 2:2 "He is a propitiatory sacrifice for our sins, yet not for ours only but also for the whole world's."

1 Tim. 2:5, 6 "There is one God, and one mediator between God and men, a man Christ Jesus, who gave himself a corresponding ransom for all."

John 10:27, 28 "My sheep listen to my voice, and I know them, and they follow me. And I give them everlasting life, and they will by no means ever be destroyed, and no one will snatch them out of my hand."

John 3:16 "God loved the world so much that he gave his only-begotten Son, in order that

everyone exercising faith in him might not be destroyed but have everlasting life."

"Little Flock" Anticipate Reward of Everlasting Life in Heavenly Kingdom with Christ

Luke 12:32 "Have no fear, little flock, because your Father has approved of giving you the kingdom."

1 Pet. 1:3, 4 "He gave us a new birth to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, to an incorruptible and undefiled and unfading inheritance. It is reserved in the heavens for you."

1 John 2:20, 25 "You have an anointing from the holy one . . . Furthermore, this is the promised thing that he himself promised us, the life everlasting."

Rev. 14:1, 3 "I saw and, look! the Lamb standing upon the Mount Zion, and with him a hundred and forty-four thousand having his name and the name of his Father written on their foreheads. And they are singing as if a new song before the throne and before the four living creatures and the older persons; and no one was able to master that song but the hundred and forty-four thousand, who have been bought from the earth."

See also the main heading "Immortality," pages 252, 253.

Provision Made by God for Unnumbered Other Obedient Ones to Have Everlasting Life in Happiness on Earth

Heb. 5:9 "After he had been made perfect he became responsible for everlasting salvation to all those obeying him."

Ps. 37:29, 11 "The righteous themselves will possess the earth, and they will reside forever upon it." "But the meek ones themselves will possess the earth, and they will indeed find their exquisite delight in the abundance of peace."

Rev. 7:9, 10 "After these things I saw, and, look! a great crowd, which no man was able to number, out of all nations and tribes and peoples and tongues, standing before the throne and before the Lamb, dressed in white robes; and there were palm branches in their hands. And they keep on crying with a loud voice, saying: 'Salvation we owe to our God, who is seated on the throne, and to the Lamb.'"

Rev. 21:3, 4 "Look! The tent of God is with mankind, and he will reside with them, and they will be his peoples. And God himself will be with them. And he will wipe out every tear from their eyes, and death will be no more."

Isa. 25:8 "He will actually swallow up death forever, and the Lord Jehovah will certainly wipe the tears from all faces."

See also "Earth and Its Destiny," pages 165-170.

Some will be resurrected from the dead; others will survive into God's new system of things without dying

John 5:28, 29 "Do not marvel at this, because the hour is coming in which all those in the memorial tombs will hear his voice and come out, those who did good things to a resurrection of life, those who practiced vile things to a resurrection of judgment."

Zeph. 2:3 "Seek Jehovah, all you meek ones of the earth, who have practiced His own judicial decision. Seek righteousness, seek meekness. Probably you may be concealed in the day of Jehovah's anger."

Matt. 25:34, 46 "Then the king will say . . . . 'Come, you who have my Father's blessing, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the founding of the world.' . . . the righteous ones [will go] into everlasting life."

Jehovah, who is eternal, can sustain their life forever

1 Tim. 1:17 "Now to the King of eternity, incorruptible, invisible, the only God, be honor and glory forever and ever."

Hab. 1:12 "Are you not from long ago, O Jehovah? O my God, my Holy One, you do not die."

Isa. 26:4 "Trust in Jehovah, you people, for all times, for in Jah Jehovah is the Rock of times indefinite."

1 Sam. 2:6 "Jehovah is . . . a Preserver of life."

Ps. 133:3 "Jehovah commanded the blessing to be, even life to time indefinite."

Rom. 6:23 "The gift God gives is everlasting life by Christ Jesus our Lord."

Persons Putting Faith in God's Provision Through Christ Are Said to Be Alive in a Spiritual Sense Now, Having Hope of Everlasting Life in God's New Order

John 5:24 "Most truly I say to you, He that hears my word and believes him that sent me has everlasting life, and he does not come into judgment but has passed over from death to life."

Eph. 2:1 "Furthermore, it is you God made alive though you were dead in your trespasses and sins."

1 John 3:14, 16 "We know we have passed over from death to life, because we love the brothers. He who does not love remains in death. By this we have come to know love, because that one surrendered his soul for us."

See also Luke 20:38.

Those on the road leading to life are comparatively few

Matt. 7:13, 14 "Go in through the narrow gate; because broad and spacious is the road leading off into destruction, and many are the ones going in through it; whereas narrow is the gate and cramped the road leading off into life, and few are the ones finding it."

Must continue to take in knowledge and exercise faith

John 17:3 "This means everlasting life, their taking in knowledge of you, the only true God, and of the one whom you sent forth, Jesus Christ."

John 3:16 "God loved the world so much that he gave his only-begotten Son, in order that everyone exercising faith in him might not be destroyed but have everlasting life."

Matt. 7:21 "Not everyone saying to me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter into the kingdom of the heavens, but the one doing the will of my Father who is in the heavens will."

Heb. 10:38, 39 "'My righteous one will live by reason of faith,' and, 'if he shrinks back, my soul has no pleasure in him.' Now we are not the sort that shrink back to destruction, but the sort that have faith to the preserving alive of the soul."

Future Life Prospects by a Resurrection as Reward for Faithfulness Far More Precious than Present Life and Its Benefits

Heb. 11:35 "Men were tortured because they would not accept release by some ransom, in order that they might attain a better resurrection."

Phil. 3:8, 11 "I have taken the loss of all things and I consider them as a lot of refuse, . . . to see if I may by any means attain to the earlier resurrection from the dead."

Matt. 16:26 "What benefit will it be to a man if he gains the whole world but forfeits his soul?"

Matt. 10:28, 39 "Do not become fearful of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul; but rather be in fear of him that can destroy both soul and body in Gehenna. He that finds his soul will lose it, and he that loses his soul for my sake will find it."

Luke 14:14 "You will be repaid in the resurrection of the righteous ones."

Long-suffering

A Fruitage of God's Spirit

Gal. 5:22 "The fruitage of the spirit is . . . long-suffering."

Jehovah Demonstrates Great Restraint of His Anger in the Face of Provocation by Sinners

Ex. 34:6 "Jehovah, Jehovah, a God merciful and gracious, slow to anger and abundant in loving-kindness and truth."

Rom. 9:22 "God . . . tolerated with much long-suffering vessels of wrath made fit for destruction."

Jehovah's long-suffering is not approval of unrighteousness but affords opportunity for repentance, with salvation in view

2 Pet. 3:9, 15 "Jehovah is not slow respecting his promise, as some people consider slowness, but he is patient with you because he does not desire any to be destroyed but desires all to attain to repentance. Furthermore, consider the patience of our Lord as salvation."

Rom. 2:4 "Do you despise the riches of his kindness and forbearance and long-suffering, because you do not know that the kindly quality of God is trying to lead you to repentance?"

1 Pet. 3:20 "The patience of God was waiting in Noah's days, while the ark was being constructed, in which a few people, that is, eight souls, were carried safely through the water."

See also the main heading "Wickedness," pages 494, 495.

Servants of God Show Appreciation for Jehovah's Long-suffering by Their Own Patient Endurance of Offense

1 Thess. 5:14 "Be long-suffering toward all."

Col. 3:13 "Continue putting up with one another and forgiving one another freely if anyone has a cause for complaint against another. Even as Jehovah freely forgave you, so do you also."

Matt. 18:21, 22 "Then Peter came up and said to him: 'Lord, how many times is my brother to sin against me and am I to forgive him? Up to seven times?' Jesus said to him: 'I say to you, not, Up to seven times, but, Up to seventy-seven times.'"

Results in unity within the Christian congregation

Col. 3:12, 14 "Clothe yourselves with the tender affections of compassion, kindness, lowliness of mind, mildness, and long-suffering. But, besides all these things, clothe yourselves with love, for it is a perfect bond of union."

Eph. 4:1-3 "Walk worthily of the calling with which you were called, with complete lowliness of mind and mildness, with long-suffering, putting up with one another in love, earnestly endeavoring to observe the oneness of the spirit in the uniting bond of peace."

Necessary as one carries on the ministry, preaching to others

2 Cor. 6:3, 4, 6 "In no way are we giving any cause for stumbling, that our ministry might not be found fault with; but in every way we recommend ourselves as God's ministers . . . by long-suffering."

2 Tim. 4:2 "Preach the word, be at it urgently in favorable season, in troublesome season, reprove, reprimand, exhort, with all long-suffering and art of teaching."

Jehovah will not fail to reward those who patiently endure affliction for righteousness' sake

Rom. 12:12, 14, 17-19 "Endure under tribulation. . . . Keep on blessing those who persecute; be blessing and do not be cursing. Return evil for evil to no one. Provide fine things in the sight of all men. If possible, as far as it depends upon you, be peaceable with all men. Do not avenge yourselves, beloved, but yield place to the wrath; for it is written: 'Vengeance is mine; I will repay, says Jehovah.'"

Luke 18:7, 8 "Certainly, then, shall not God cause justice to be done for his chosen ones who cry out to him day and night, even though he is long-suffering toward them? I tell you, He will cause justice to be done to them speedily."

Lord's Evening Meal

Instituted by Jesus on Passover Night, Nisan 14, Just Before His Death on the Stake

1 Cor. 11:20, 23-26 "The Lord's evening meal. . . . For I received from the Lord that which I also handed on to you, that the Lord Jesus in the night in which he was going to be handed over took a loaf and, after giving thanks, he broke it and said: 'This means my body which is in your behalf. Keep doing this in remembrance of me.' He did likewise respecting the cup also, after he had the evening meal, saying: 'This cup means the new covenant by virtue of my blood. Keep doing this, as often as you drink it, in remembrance of me.' For as often as you eat this loaf and drink this cup, you keep proclaiming the death of the Lord, until he arrives."

See also Luke 22:8-20 and "Holidays," page 239.

Jesus Instructed His Followers to Keep Doing It in Remembrance of Him

Luke 22:19 "He took a loaf, gave thanks, broke it, and gave it to them, saying: 'This means my body which is to be given in your behalf. Keep doing this in remembrance of me.'"

See also the main heading "Jesus Christ," page 282-288.

Reasonably, an annual celebration, as was the Passover, which was kept in remembrance of Jehovah's deliverance of Israel

Ex. 12:14, 18 "This day must serve as a memorial for you, and you must celebrate it as a festival to Jehovah throughout your generations. As a statute to time indefinite you should celebrate it. In the first month, on the fourteenth day of the month, in the evening you are to eat unfermented cakes."

Lev. 23:4, 5 "These are the seasonal festivals of Jehovah, holy conventions, which you should proclaim at their appointed times: In the first month, on the fourteenth day of the month, between the two evenings is the passover to Jehovah."

Bread Represents Jesus' Body of Flesh

Matt. 26:26 "As they continued eating, Jesus took a loaf and, after saying a blessing, he broke it and, giving it to the disciples, he said: 'Take, eat. This means my body.'"

Partakers symbolize their benefiting from Jesus' human body laid down in sacrifice

Luke 22:19 "He took a loaf, gave thanks, broke it, and gave it to them, saying: 'This means

my body which is to be given in your behalf.'"

1 Pet. 2:24 "He himself bore our sins in his own body upon the stake, in order that we might be done with sins and live to righteousness."

1 Cor. 10:16 "The loaf which we break, is it not a sharing in the body of the Christ?"

Common loaf used; broken in order to serve it

Mark 14:22 "As they continued eating, he took a loaf, said a blessing, broke it and gave it to them."

Unleavened bread

Mark 14:12 "Now on the first day of unfermented cakes, when they customarily sacrificed the passover victim, his disciples said to him: 'Where do you want us to go and prepare for you to eat the passover?'"

Cup Represents Jesus' Shed Blood

Mark 14:23, 24 "Taking a cup, he offered thanks and gave it to them, and they all drank out of it. And he said to them: 'This means my "blood of the covenant," which is to be poured out in behalf of many.'"

Partakers symbolize that they are in the new covenant validated by that blood and that they enjoy forgiveness of their sins by means of it

Matt. 26:27, 28 "He took a cup and, having given thanks, he gave it to them, saying: 'Drink out of it, all of you; for this means my "blood of the covenant," which is to be poured out in behalf of many for forgiveness of sins.'"

1 Cor. 11:25 "He did likewise respecting the cup also, after he had the evening meal, saying: 'This cup means the new covenant by virtue of my blood.'"

Col. 1:14 "By means of [Christ] we have our release by ransom, the forgiveness of our sins."

See also the main headings "Justification, or Being Declared Righteous," and "Ransom."

Common cup

Luke 22:17 "Accepting a cup, he gave thanks and said: 'Take this and pass it from one to the other among yourselves.'"

Those Partaking of the Memorial Meal Share in a Sacrificial Communion Meal, Partaking in a Symbolic Way of the Benefits of Jesus' Sacrifice

1 Cor. 10:16, 17 "The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not a sharing in the blood of the Christ? The loaf which we break, is it not a sharing in the body of the Christ? Because there is one loaf, we, although many, are one body, for we are all partaking of that one loaf."

See also "Mass," pages 335-337.

Likened to communion sacrifices of Israel, of which worshipers ate a portion

1 Cor. 10:18 "Look at that which is Israel in a fleshly way: Are not those who eat the sacrifices sharers with the altar?"

Lev. 7:11, 15, 31-33 "Now this is the law of the communion sacrifice that anyone will present to Jehovah. And the flesh of the thanksgiving sacrifice of his communion sacrifices is to be eaten on the day of his offering. . . . And the priest must make the fat smoke upon the altar, but the breast must become Aaron's and his sons'. And you will give the right leg as a sacred portion to the priest from your communion sacrifices. That one of Aaron's sons who presents the blood of the communion sacrifices and the fat, the right leg will become his as a portion."

Those in the New Covenant, Those Called to Heavenly Life to Be Priests and Kings with Christ, the Ones to Partake of Emblems

Luke 22:20, 28-30 "This cup means the new covenant by virtue of my blood, which is to be poured out in your behalf. . . . you are the ones that have stuck with me in my trials; and I make a covenant with you, just as my Father has made a covenant with me, for a kingdom, that you may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones to judge the twelve tribes of Israel."

Rev. 5:9, 10 "They sing a new song, saying: 'You are worthy to take the scroll and open its seals, because you were slaughtered and with your blood you bought persons for God out of every tribe and tongue and people and nation, and you made them to be a kingdom and priests to our God, and they will rule as kings over the earth.'"

See also the main heading "Covenants," pages 127-129.

Such ones have witness of God's spirit with their own mental disposition testifying that they have been called to heavenly life

Rom. 8:16, 17 "The spirit itself bears witness with our spirit that we are God's children. If, then, we are children, we are also heirs: heirs indeed of God, but joint heirs with Christ, provided we suffer together that we may also be glorified together."

2 Cor. 1:21, 22 "He who guarantees that you and we belong to Christ and he who has anointed us is God. He has also put his seal upon us and has given us the token of what is to come, that is, the spirit, in our hearts."

Others, Too, Benefit from God's Provision for Salvation Through Christ; so Are Present as Observers at Commemoration of Jesus' Death

Rev. 7:9, 10 "After these things I saw, and, look! a great crowd, which no man was able to number, out of all nations and tribes and peoples and tongues, standing before the throne and before the Lamb, dressed in white robes; and there were palm branches in their hands. And they keep on crying with a loud voice, saying: 'Salvation we owe to our God, who is seated on the throne, and to the Lamb.'"

1 John 2:2 "He is a propitiatory sacrifice for our sins, yet not for ours only but also for the whole world's."

All who look to Christ as their Shepherd wisely stay close together in one flock, commemorating this event together

John 10:16 "I have other sheep, which are not of this fold; those also I must bring, and they will listen to my voice, and they will become one flock, one shepherd."

Heb. 13:20 "The God of peace . . . brought up from the dead the great shepherd of the sheep with the blood of an everlasting covenant, our Lord Jesus."

Love

Jehovah God the Personification of Love

1 John 4:8 "God is love."

1 John 4:16, 19 "God is love, and he that remains in love remains in union with God and God remains in union with him. As for us, we love, because he first loved us."

Outstanding manifestation of love in giving his Son, that men might live

John 3:16 "God loved the world so much that he gave his only-begotten Son, in order that everyone exercising faith in him might not be destroyed but have everlasting life."

1 John 4:9, 10 "By this the *love of God was made manifest* in our case, because God sent forth his only-begotten Son into the world that we might gain life through him. The love is in this respect, not that we have loved God, but that he loved us and sent forth his Son as a propitiatory sacrifice for our sins."

Rom. 5:8 "God recommends his own love to us in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us."

To Demonstrate Genuine Love One Must Come to Know God, Have His Spirit

1 John 4:7, 8 "Beloved ones, let us continue loving one another, because love is from God, and everyone who loves has been born from God and gains the knowledge of God. He that does not love has not come to know God, because God is love."

Gal. 5:22 "The fruitage of the *spirit is love*."

Love for God and Christ Shown by Obedience

1 John 2:5; 5:3 "Whoever does observe his word, truthfully in *this person the love of God* has been made perfect." "For this is what the love of God means, that we observe his commandments."

2 John 6 "This is what love means, that we go on walking according *to his commandments*."

John 14:15, 21 "If you love me, you will observe my commandments. He that has my commandments and observes them, that one is he who loves me. In turn he that loves me will be loved by my Father, and I will love him and will plainly show myself to him."

Outstanding Love for One Another Marks True Christians

John 13:34, 35 "I am giving you a new commandment, that you love one another; just as I have loved you, that you also love one another. By this all will know that you are my disciples, if you have love among yourselves."

John 15:12, 13 "This is my commandment, that you love one another just as I have loved you. No one *has love* greater than this, that someone should surrender his soul in behalf of his friends."

1 John 3:16 "By this we have come to know love, because that one surrendered his soul for us; and we are under obligation to surrender our souls for our brothers."

1 John 4:20, 21 "If anyone makes the statement: 'I love God,' and yet is hating his brother, *he is a liar*. For he who does not love his brother, whom he has seen, cannot be loving God, whom he has not seen. And this commandment we have from him, that the one who loves God should be loving his brother also."

1 John 3:10 "The children of God and the children of the Devil are evident by this fact: Everyone who does not carry on righteousness does not originate with God, neither does he who does not love his brother."

Strong Bond of Love Should Unite Christian Families

Eph. 5:25 "Husbands, continue loving your wives, just as the Christ also loved the congregation and delivered up himself for it."

Titus 2:4 "Recall the young women to their senses to love their husbands, to love their children."

Godlike Love Motivated by Principle, Seeking Lasting Welfare of the One Loved

Prov. 13:24 "The one holding back his rod is hating his son, but the one loving him is he that does look for him with discipline."

Rev. 3:19 "All those for whom I have affection I reprove and discipline."

Heb. 12:6 "Whom Jehovah loves he disciplines; in fact, he scourges every one whom he receives as a son."

Love Not to Be Limited to Those Who Love Us

Matt. 5:43-47 "You heard that it was said, 'You must love your neighbor and hate your enemy.' However, I say to you: Continue to love your enemies and to pray for those persecuting you, that you may prove yourselves sons of your Father who is in the heavens, . . . For if you love those loving you, what reward do you have? Are not also the *tax collectors doing the same* thing? And if you greet your brothers only, what extraordinary thing are you doing? Are not also the people of the nations doing the same thing?"

Luke 6:27, 28, 32, 33 "Continue to love your enemies, to do good to those hating you, to bless those cursing you, to pray for those who do you injury. And if you love those loving you, of what credit is it to you? For *even the sinners love those loving them*. And if you do good to those doing good to you, really of what credit is it to you? Even the sinners do the same."

Not to Love Everyone and Everything

Ps. 97:10 "O you lovers of Jehovah, hate what is bad."

Amos 5:15 "Hate what is bad, and love what is good."

Rom. 12:9 "Let your love be without hypocrisy. Abhor what is wicked, cling to what is good."

2 Chron. 19:2 "Is it to the wicked that help is to be given, and is it for those hating Jehovah that you should have love? And for this there *is indignation* against you from the person of Jehovah."

Ps. 119:113 "The halfhearted ones I have hated, but your law I have loved."

2 Tim. 3:1-5 "But know this, that in the last days critical times hard to deal with will be here. For men will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, . . . without love of goodness, . . . lovers of pleasures rather than lovers of God, . . . from these turn away."

Heb. 13:5 "Let your manner of life be free of the love of money."

1 John 2:15-17 "*Do not be* loving either the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him; because everything in the world—the desire of the flesh and the desire of the eyes and the showy display of one's means of life—does not originate with the Father, but originates with the world. Furthermore, the world is passing away and so is its desire, but he that does the will of God remains forever."

See also the main heading "Armageddon," pages 25-30.

Love Should Be Guided by Accurate Knowledge of *God's Word*

Phil. 1:9-11 "This is what I continue praying, that your love may abound yet more and more with accurate knowledge and full discernment; that you may make *sure of the more important things*, so that you may be flawless and not be stumbling others up to the day of Christ, and may be filled with righteous fruit, which is through Jesus Christ, to God's glory and praise."

Love for One's Fellowman Expresses Itself in Action

2 Cor. 8:24 "Therefore demonstrate to them the proof of your love."

1 Cor. 13:4, 5 "*Love is long*-suffering and kind. Love is not jealous, it does not brag, does

not get puffed up, does not behave indecently, does not look for its own interests, does not become provoked. It does not keep account of the injury."

Eph. 4:1, 2 "Walk worthily of the calling with which you were called, with complete lowliness of mind and mildness, with long-suffering, putting up with one another in love."

Prov. 10:12 "Hatred is what stirs up contentions, but love covers over even all transgressions."

Gal. 5:13 "You were, of course, called for freedom, brothers; only do not use this freedom as an inducement for the flesh, but through love slave for one another."

1 John 3:17, 18 "Whoever has this world's means for supporting life and beholds his brother having need and yet shuts the door of his tender compassions upon him, in what way does the love of God remain in him? Little children, let us love, neither in word nor with the tongue, but in deed and truth."

Love Must Be Cultivated

2 Pet. 1:5-7 "Yes, for this very reason, by your contributing in response all earnest effort, supply to your faith virtue, to your virtue knowledge, to your knowledge self-control, to your self-control endurance, to your endurance godly devotion, to your godly devotion brotherly affection, to your brotherly affection love"

2 Tim. 2:22 "So, flee from the desires incidental to youth, but pursue righteousness, faith, love, peace, along with those who call upon the Lord out of a clean heart."

Love Fulfills God's Law

Matt. 22:37-39 "'You must love Jehovah your God with your whole heart and with your whole soul and with your whole mind.' This is the greatest and first commandment. The second, like it, is this, 'You must love your neighbor as yourself.'"

Rom. 13:8-10 "Do not you people be owing anybody a single thing, except to love one another; for he that loves his fellow man has fulfilled the law. For the law code, 'You must not commit adultery, You must not murder, You must not steal, You must not covet,' and whatever other commandment there is, is summed up in this word, namely, 'You must love your neighbor as yourself.' Love does not work evil to one's neighbor; therefore love is the law's fulfillment."

Gal. 5:14 "For the entire Law stands fulfilled in one saying, namely: 'You must love your neighbor as yourself.'"

Blessings from God for Those Who Love Him

1 Cor. 2:9 "Eye has not seen and ear has not heard, neither have there been conceived in the heart of man the things that God has prepared for those who love him."

Jas. 1:12; 2:5 "Happy is the man that keeps on enduring trial, because on becoming approved he will receive the crown of life, which Jehovah promised to those who continue loving him." "Listen, my beloved brothers. God chose the ones who are poor respecting the world to be rich in faith and heirs of the kingdom, which he promised to those who love him, did he not?"

Ps. 145:20 "Jehovah is guarding all those loving him, but all the wicked ones he will annihilate."

Deut. 11:13-15 "It must occur that if you will without fail obey my commandments that I am commanding you today so as to love Jehovah your God and to serve him with all your heart and all your soul, I also shall certainly give rain for your land at its appointed time, autumn rain and spring rain, and you will indeed gather your grain and your sweet wine and your oil. And I shall certainly give vegetation in your field for your domestic animals, and you will indeed eat and be satisfied."

Deut. 7:9 "You well know that Jehovah your God is the true God, the faithful God, keeping covenant and loving-kindness in the case of those who love him and those who keep his commandments to a thousand generations."

Mariolatry

Jesus' Mother Mary Not "Immaculate" or Freed from Inherited Sin

Rom. 5:12, *Dy* "By one man sin entered into this world and by sin death; and so death passed upon all men, in whom all have sinned."

Rom. 3:9, 10, *Dy* "What then? Do we excel them? No, not so. For we have charged both Jews and Greeks, that they are all under sin. As it is written: There is not any man just."

See also Ps. 50:7, *Dy*.

Basis for completely removing sins of any human not yet provided when Mary was conceived by her mother

Rom. 5:19, *Dy* "For as by the disobedience of one man [Adam], many were made sinners: so also by the obedience of one [Jesus], many shall be made just."

Eph. 1:7, *Dy* "In whom we have redemption through his blood, the remission of sins, according to the riches of his grace."

1 Pet. 1:18, 19; 2:24, *Dy* "Knowing that you were not redeemed with corruptible things . . . But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb unspotted and undefiled, . . . Who his own self bore our sins in his body upon the tree."

Heb. 9:22-28, *Dy* "Without shedding of blood there is no remission. . . . For Jesus is not entered into the Holies made with hands, the patterns of the true: but into Heaven itself, that he may appear now in the presence of God for us. Nor yet that he should offer himself often, as the high priest entereth into the Holies every year with the blood of others: . . . But now once, at the end of ages, he hath appeared for the destruction of sin by the sacrifice of himself. . . . So also Christ was offered once to exhaust the sins of many."

Mary presented an offering for sin after she gave birth to Jesus

Luke 2:21-24, *Dy* "And after eight days were accomplished, that the child should be circumcised, his name was called Jesus . . . And after the days of her purification, according to the law of Moses, were accomplished, they carried him to Jerusalem, to present him to the Lord: As it is written in the law of the Lord: Every male opening the womb shall be called holy to the Lord: And to offer a sacrifice, according as it is written in the law of the Lord, a pair of turtledoves or two young pigeons."

Lev. 12:1-4, 8, *Dy* "And the Lord spoke to Moses, saying: Speak to the children of Israel, and thou shalt say to them: If a woman having received seed shall bear a man child, she shall be unclean seven days, according to the days of separation of her flowers. And on the eighth

day the infant shall be circumcised: But she shall remain three and thirty days in the blood of her purification. She shall touch no holy thing: neither shall she enter into the sanctuary, until the days of her purification be fulfilled. And if her hand find not sufficiency, and she is not able to offer a lamb, she shall take two turtles, or two young pigeons, one for a holocaust, and another for sin: and the priest shall pray for her, and so she shall be cleansed."

Mary Was Not "Mother of God," Since Jesus Was Not God, but the Son of God

Luke 1:35, *Dy* "And the angel answering, said to her: The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee and the power of the Most High shall overshadow thee. And therefore also the Holy which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God."

Matt. 3:16, 17, *Dy* "And Jesus being baptized, forthwith came out of the water: and lo, the heavens were opened to him: and he saw the Spirit of God descending as a dove and coming upon him. And behold a voice from heaven, saying: This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased."

1 Pet. 1:3, *Dy* "Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who according to his great mercy hath regenerated us unto a lively hope, by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead."

1 Cor. 15:28, *Dy* "And when all things shall be subdued unto him, then the Son also himself shall be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all."

See also the main heading "Trinity," pages 484-489.

Mary Not "Ever Virgin"; She Bore Other Children After Jesus

Matt. 1:24, 25, *Dy* "Joseph . . . knew her not till she brought forth her firstborn son: and he called his name Jesus."

Matt. 13:55, 56, *Dy* "Is not this the carpenter's son? Is not his mother called Mary, and his brethren [Greek: *adelphoi*, "brothers"; not, *syngeneis*, "cousins" or "relatives"] James and Joseph and Simon and Jude? And his sisters [Greek: *adelphai*, "sisters"], are they not all with us?"

Clear distinction shown between Jesus' natural and spiritual brothers

Matt. 12:46-50, *Dy* "As he was yet speaking to the multitudes, behold his mother and his brethren stood without, seeking to speak to him. And one said to him: Behold thy mother and thy brethren stand without, seeking thee. But he answering him that told him, said: Who is my mother and who are my brethren? And stretching forth his hand towards his disciples, he said: Behold my mother and my brethren. For whosoever shall do the will of my Father that is in heaven, he is my brother, and sister, and mother."

John 2:12, *Dy* "After this, he went down to Capharnaum, he and his mother and his brethren and his disciples: and they remained there not many days."

John 7:3, 5, 10, *Dy* "And his brethren said to him: Pass from hence and go into Judea, that thy disciples also may see thy works which thou dost. For neither did his brethren believe in him. But after his brethren were gone up, then he also went up to the feast, not openly, but, as it were, in secret."

Gal. 1:19, *Dy* "But other of the apostles I saw none, saving James the brother of the Lord."

Mary Had No Special Position in Early Christian Congregation

1 Tim. 2:11-13, *Dy* "Let the woman learn in silence with all subjection. But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to use authority over the man: but to be in silence. For Adam was first formed: then Eve."

Acts 1:14, 15, *Dy* "All these were persevering with one mind in prayer, with the women and Mary the mother of Jesus, and with his brethren. In those days, Peter, rising up in the midst of the brethren, said (now the number of persons together was about an hundred and twenty)."

Improper to Address Prayers to Mary as Intercessor; Jesus Christ Is the Only Mediator

John 14:6, 13, *Dy* "Jesus saith to him: I am the way, and the truth, and the life. No man cometh to the Father, but by me. Because I go to the Father: and whatsoever you shall ask the Father in my name, that will I do."

1 Tim. 2:1, 5, *Dy* "I desire therefore, first of all, that supplications, prayers, intercessions and thanksgivings be made for all men: For there is one God: and one mediator of God and men, the man Christ Jesus."

Acts 4:12, *Dy* "Neither is there salvation in any other [than Jesus]. For there is no other name under heaven given to men, whereby we must be saved."

"Assumption" of Mary, or Taking Her Body and Soul to Heaven, Unscriptural

1 Cor. 15:42, 44, 45, 48-50, *Dy* "So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption: it shall rise in incorruption. It is sown a natural body: it shall rise a spiritual body. If there be a natural body, there is also a spiritual body, as it is written: The first man Adam was made into a living soul: the last Adam into a quickening spirit. Such as is the earthly, such also are the earthly: and such as is the heavenly, such also are they that are heavenly. Therefore, as we have borne the image of the earthly, let us bear also the image of the heavenly. Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot possess the kingdom of God: neither shall corruption possess incorruption."

Scriptural References to Her as "Blessed" Do Not Indicate Worship

Luke 1:28, 30, *Dy* "The angel being come in, said unto her: Hail, full of grace, the Lord is with thee: blessed art thou among women. And the angel said to her: Fear not, Mary, for thou hast found grace with God."

Luke 1:41-48, *Dy* "Elizabeth was filled with the Holy Ghost. And she cried out with a loud voice and said: Blessed art thou among women and blessed is the fruit of thy womb. . . . And Mary said: My soul doth magnify the Lord. . . . for behold from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed."

Same expressions used toward others

Gen. 30:9, 10, 13, *Dy* "Lia, perceiving that she had left off bearing, gave Zelpha her handmaid to her husband. And when she had conceived and brought forth a son, . . . Lia said: This is for my happiness: for women will call me blessed. Therefore she called him Aser."

Judg. 5:24, *Dy* "Blessed among women be Jahel the wife of Haber the Cinite: and blessed be she in her tent."

Jesus showed that veneration of Mary was wrong

Luke 11:27, 28, *Dy* "And it came to pass, as he spoke these things, a certain woman from the crowd, lifting up her voice, said to him: Blessed is the womb that bore thee and the paps that gave thee suck. But he said: Yea rather, blessed are they who hear the word of God and keep it."

John 2:3, 4, *Dy* "And the wine failing, the mother of Jesus saith to him: They have no wine. And Jesus saith to her: Woman, what is that to me and to thee? My hour is not yet come."

Marriage

Marriage, an Arrangement Instituted by God

Gen. 2:22-24 "Jehovah God proceeded to build the rib that he had taken from the man into a woman and to bring her to the man. Then the man said: 'This is at last bone of my bones and flesh of my flesh. This one will be called Woman, because from man this one was taken.' That is why a man will leave his father and his mother and he must stick to his wife and they must become one flesh."

Gen. 1:27, 28 "God proceeded to create the man in his image, in God's image he created him; male and female he created them. Further, God blessed them and God said to them: 'Be fruitful and become many and fill the earth and subdue it.'"

Christians to Marry Only Christians

1 Cor. 7:39 "A wife is bound during all the time her husband is alive. But if her husband should fall asleep in death, she is free to be married to whom she wants, only in the Lord."

2 Cor. 6:14, 15 "Do not become unevenly yoked with unbelievers. For what sharing do righteousness and lawlessness have? Or what fellowship does light have with darkness? . . . Or what portion does a faithful person have with an unbeliever?"

Worshiper of Jehovah should not consent to marriage of son or daughter to unbeliever

Deut. 7:3 "You must form no marriage alliance with them [heathen in Canaan]. Your daughter you must not give to his son, and his daughter you must not take for your son."

Neh. 10:30 "We should not give our daughters to the peoples of the land, and their daughters we should not take for our sons."

Gen. 28:1 "Consequently Isaac called Jacob and blessed him and commanded him and said to him: 'You must not take a wife from the daughters of Canaan.'"

Marrying unbelievers can lead to God's disapproval

Deut. 7:3, 4 "You must form no marriage alliance with them. . . . For he will turn your son from following me, and they will certainly serve other gods; and Jehovah's anger will indeed blaze against you, and he will certainly annihilate you in a hurry."

1 Ki. 11:4, 9 "It came about in the time of Solomon's growing old that his [heathen] wives themselves had inclined his heart to follow other gods . . . And Jehovah came to be incensed at Solomon."

Ezra 10:2 "Then Shecaniah the son of Jehiel of the sons of Elam answered and said to Ezra: 'We —we have acted unfaithfully against our God, so that we gave a dwelling to foreign wives from the peoples of the land.'"

Neh. 13:25-27 "You should not give your daughters to their sons, and you should not accept any of their daughters for your sons or yourselves. Was it not because of these that Solomon the king of Israel sinned? . . . Even him the foreign wives caused to sin. And is it not something unheard of for you to commit all this great badness in acting unfaithfully against our God by giving a dwelling to foreign wives?"

Legal Requirements for Registration of Marriage to Be Complied With

Matt. 22:21 "Pay back, therefore, Caesar's things to Caesar, but God's things to God."

Titus 3:1 "Continue reminding them to be in subjection and be obedient to governments and authorities as rulers."

See also Luke 2:1-5.

Husband to Exercise Headship in a Loving Way

Eph. 5:23-33 "A husband is head of his wife as the Christ also is head of the congregation, . . . Husbands, continue loving your wives, just as the Christ also loved the congregation . . . In this way husbands ought to be loving their wives as their own bodies. He who loves his wife loves himself . . . let each one of you individually so love his wife as he does himself."

Col. 3:19 "You husbands, keep on loving your wives and do not be bitterly angry with them."

1 Pet. 3:7 "You husbands, continue dwelling in like manner with them according to knowledge, assigning them honor as to a weaker vessel, the feminine one."

Eph. 6:4 "Fathers, do not be irritating your children."

Wife to Manifest Loving Obedience, Deep Respect for Husband

Titus 2:4, 5 "Recall the young women to their senses to love their husbands, to love their children, to be sound in mind, chaste, workers at home, good, subjecting themselves to their own husbands, so that the word of God may not be spoken of abusively."

1 Pet. 3:1, 2, 6 "In like manner, you wives, be in subjection to your own husbands, in order that, if any are not obedient to the word, they may be won without a word through the conduct of their wives, because of having been eyewitnesses of your chaste conduct together with deep respect. . . . Sarah used to obey Abraham, calling him 'lord.'"

Eph. 5:33 "The wife should have deep respect for her husband."

Producing Children a Prime Purpose of Marriage

Gen. 1:27, 28 "Male and female [God] created them. Further, God blessed them and God said to them: 'Be fruitful and become many.'"

Ps. 127:3-5 "Look! Sons are an inheritance from Jehovah; the fruitage of the belly is a reward. Like arrows in the hand of a mighty man, so are the sons of youth. Happy is the able-bodied man that has filled his quiver with them."

See also the main heading "Children," pages 71-77.

Marriage to Be Kept Honorable; Sex Relations Limited to One's Marriage Mate

Heb. 13:4 "Let marriage be honorable among all, and the marriage bed be without defilement, for God will judge fornicators and adulterers."

Prov. 5:15, 18-20 "Drink water out of your own cistern, and tricklings out of the midst of your own well. Let your water source prove to be blessed, and rejoice with the wife of your youth, a lovable hind and a charming mountain goat. Let her own breasts intoxicate you at all times. With her love may you be in an ecstasy constantly. So why should you, my son, be in an ecstasy with a strange woman or embrace the bosom of a foreign woman?"

1 Cor. 7:3, 4 "Let the husband render to his wife her due; but let the wife also do likewise to her husband. The wife does not exercise authority over her own body, but her husband does; likewise, also, the husband does not

exercise authority over his own body, but his wife does."

Ex. 20:14, 17 "You must not commit adultery. . . . You must not desire your fellow man's wife."

Married Persons Should Remain Together

Mark 10:6-9 "From the beginning of creation 'He made them male and female. On this account a man will leave his father and mother, and the two will be one flesh'; so that they are no longer two, but one flesh. Therefore what God yoked together let no man put apart."

1 Cor. 7:10, 11 "To the married people I give instructions, yet not I but the Lord, that a wife should not depart from her husband; . . . and a husband should not leave his wife."

Rom. 7:2, 3 "A married woman is bound by law to her husband while he is alive . . . So, then, while her husband is living, she would be styled an adulteress if she became another man's."

See also the main heading "Decisions," pages 146-150.

Only One Christian Ground for Divorce

Matt. 5:32 "I say to you that everyone divorcing his wife, except on account of fornication, makes her a subject for adultery, seeing that whoever marries a divorced woman commits adultery."

Matt. 19:9 "I say to you that whoever divorces his wife, except on the ground of fornication, and marries another commits adultery."

Death Severs Marriage Tie

1 Cor. 7:39 "A wife is bound during all the time her husband is alive. But if her husband should fall asleep in death, she is free to be married to whom she wants, only in the Lord."

Rom. 7:2, 3 "A married woman is bound by law to her husband while he is alive; but if her husband dies, she is discharged from the law of her husband. So, then, while her husband is living, she would be styled an adulteress if she became another man's. But if her husband dies, she is free from his law, so that she is not an adulteress if she becomes another man's."

Christian Standard Allows for Only One Living Marriage Mate

1 Tim. 3:2, 12 "The overseer should therefore be irreprehensible, a husband of one wife . . . Let ministerial servants be husbands of one wife."

Polygamy practiced among Hebrews no longer permitted

Matt. 19:8, 9 "[Jesus] said to them: 'Moses, out of regard for your hardheartedness, made the concession to you of divorcing your wives, but such has not been the case from the beginning. I say to you that whoever divorces his wife, except on the ground of fornication, and marries another commits adultery.'"

1 Cor. 7:2 "Let each man have his own wife and each woman have her own husband."

1 Ki. 11:1, 3 "King Solomon himself . . . came to have seven hundred wives, princesses, and three hundred concubines."

Wrong to Forbid Marriage

1 Tim. 4:1-3 "The inspired utterance says definitely that in later periods of time some will fall away from the faith, paying attention to misleading inspired utterances and teachings of demons, by the hypocrisy of men who speak lies, marked in their conscience as with a branding iron; forbidding to marry."

Singleness Affords Greater Freedom for Serving the Lord

1 Cor. 7:32-34, 38 "The unmarried man is anxious for the things of the Lord, how he may gain the Lord's approval. But the married man is anxious for the things of the world, how he may gain the approval of his wife, and he is divided. Further, the unmarried woman, and the virgin, is anxious for the things of the Lord, that she may be holy both in her body and in her spirit. However, the married woman is anxious for the things of the world, how she may gain the approval of her husband. Consequently he also that gives his virginity in marriage does well, but he that does not give it in marriage will do better."

Matt. 19:11, 12 "[Jesus] said to them: 'Not all men make room for the saying, but only those who have the gift. . . . there are eunuchs that have made themselves eunuchs on account of the kingdom of the heavens. Let him that can make room for it make room for it.'"

Persons Resurrected from the Dead Will Not Marry

Mark 12:25 "When they rise from the dead, neither do men marry nor are women given in marriage, but are as angels in the heavens."

Luke 20:34-36 "Jesus said to them: 'The children of this system of things marry and are given in marriage, but those who have been counted worthy of gaining that system of things and the resurrection from the dead neither marry nor are given in marriage. In fact, neither can they die any more, for they are like the angels, and they are God's children by being children of the resurrection.'"

Mass

Catholic Statement of Belief

"The Church intends the Mass to be regarded as a 'true and proper sacrifice' . . . As for special reference to the propitiatory character, the record of institution states expressly that the Blood of Christ is shed in the chalice 'unto remission of sins.' The chief source of our doctrine, however, is tradition, which from the earliest times declares the impetratory value of the Sacrifice of the Mass."—*The Catholic Encyclopedia* (New York; 1911), Robert Appleton Co., Vol. X, pp. 6, 17.

"The Mass is the sacrifice of the New Law in which Christ, through the ministry of the priest, offers Himself to God in an unbloody manner under the appearances of bread and wine. . . . The Mass is the same sacrifice as the sacrifice of the cross because in the Mass the victim is the same, and the principal priest is the same, Jesus Christ. . . . The most important part of the Mass is the consecration, when Christ's body and blood become really present on the altar and are offered to God by the priest in commemoration of Our Lord's death on the cross. . . . Our Lord wished that the sacrifice of Calvary should not be limited to one place or one time. He willed that all men should have an opportunity of assisting at the sacrifice of His body and blood. And so, on the night before His death He established the Sacrifice of the Mass. This was to be a renewal of Calvary, in the sense that the same body and blood that were offered on the cross were to be offered again."—*The New Baltimore Catechism, No. 3* by Rev. Francis J. Connell, Associate Professor, Faculty of Sacred Theology, The Catholic University of

America, Washington, D.C. (New York; 1954), Benziger Brothers Inc., pp. 238, 240, 243, 244.

Jesus Offered Himself as Sacrifice Once, Never Needs "Renewal"

Heb. 9:24-28, *Knox* "The sanctuary into which Jesus has entered is not one made by human hands, is not some adumbration of the truth; he has entered heaven itself, where he now appears in God's sight on our behalf. Nor does he make a repeated offering of himself, as the high priest, when he enters the sanctuary, makes a yearly offering of the blood that is not his own. If that were so, he must have suffered again and again, ever since the world was created; as it is, he has been revealed once for all, at the moment when history reached its fulfilment, annulling our sin by his sacrifice. Man's destiny is to die once for all; nothing remains after that but judgement; and Christ was offered once for all, to drain the cup of a world's sins."

Heb. 7:25, 27 *Dy* "He is able also to save for ever them that come to God by him; always living to make intercession for us. Who needeth not daily (as the other priests) to offer sacrifices, first for his own sins, and then for the people's: for this he did once, in offering himself."

Heb. 10:11, 12, 14-18, *Dy* "Every priest indeed standeth daily ministering and often offering the same sacrifices which can never take away sins. But this man, offering one sacrifice for sins, for ever sitteth on the right hand of God. For by one oblation he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified. And the Holy Ghost also doth testify this to us. For after that he said: And this is the testament which I will make unto them after those days, saith the Lord. I will give my laws in their hearts and on their minds will I write them: and their sins and iniquities I will remember no more. Now, where there is a remission of these, there is no more an oblation for sin."

Constant 'renewing' of sacrifice treats it as having no more value than animal sacrifices under the Law

Heb. 10:1-4, *Dy* "For the law, having a shadow of the good things to come, not the very image of the things, by the selfsame sacrifices which they offer continually every year, can never make the comers thereunto perfect. For then they would have ceased to be offered: because the worshippers once cleansed should have no conscience of sin any longer. But in them there is made a commemoration of sins every year: For it is impossible that with the blood of oxen and goats sin should be taken away."

Christ is in heaven, not brought down daily in sacrifice of mass

Eph. 1:20, 21, *Dy* "Which he wrought in Christ, raising him up from the dead and setting him on his right hand in the heavenly places. Above all principality and power and virtue and dominion and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come."

Heb. 9:24, *Dy* "Jesus is not entered into the Holies made with hands, the patterns of the true: but into Heaven itself, that he may appear now in the presence of God for us."

Jesus Said, "Do This for a Commemoration," Not as a Sacrifice

Luke 22:19, *Dy* "Taking bread, he gave thanks, and brake and gave to them, saying: This is my body, which is given for you. Do this for a commemoration of me."

See also the main heading "Lord's Evening Meal," pages 323-325.

Unbloody Sacrifice Could Not Remit Sins

Heb. 9:11, 12, 22, *Dy* "Christ . . . neither by the blood of goats or of calves, but by his own blood, entered once into the Holies, having obtained eternal redemption. . . . almost all things, according to the law, are cleansed with blood: and without shedding of blood there is no remission."

Lev. 17:11, *Dy* "The life of the flesh is in the blood: and I have given it to you, that you may make atonement with it upon the altar for your souls, and the blood may be for an expiation of the soul."

Bread and Wine Did Not Miraculously Become Jesus' Literal Flesh and Blood; Still Had All His Blood and Unblemished Flesh When Impaled Next Day

Matt. 26:26-28, *Dy* "Whilst they were at supper, Jesus took bread and blessed and broke and gave to his disciples and said: Take ye and eat. This is [means, *Mo; NW*] my body. And taking the chalice, he gave thanks and gave to them, saying: Drink ye all of this. For this is [means, *Mo; NW*] my blood of the new testament, which shall be shed for many unto remission of sins."

See also John 19:34-36.

To drink blood would have violated God's law

Acts 15:20, *Dy* "But that we write unto them, that they refrain themselves from the polluttions of idols and from fornication and from things strangled and from blood."

Lev. 17:10, *Dy* "If any man whosoever of the house of Israel, and of the strangers that sojourn among them, eat blood, I will set my face against his soul, and will cut him off from among his people."

Jesus said his blood "shall be shed," not that it had been shed

Matt. 26:27, 28, *Dy* "Taking the chalice, he gave thanks and gave to them, saying: Drink ye all of this. For this is my blood of the new testament, which shall be shed for many unto remission of sins."

Luke 22:20, *Dy* "In like manner, the chalice also, after he had supped, saying: This is the chalice, the new testament in my blood, which shall be shed for you."

Jesus said that what was in the cup was the "fruit of the vine"

Matt. 26:29, *Dy* "I say to you, I will not drink from henceforth of this fruit of the vine until that day when I shall drink it with you new in the kingdom of my Father."

Similar descriptive language frequently used in the Bible without implying miraculous transformation

John 10:7, *Dy* "Jesus therefore said to them again: Amen, amen, I say to you, I am the door of the sheep."

John 8:12, *Dy* "Jesus spoke to them, saying: I am the light of the world. He that followeth me walketh not in darkness, but shall have the light of life."

John 15:1, *Dy* "I am the true vine: and my Father is the husbandman."

1 Cor. 10:4, *Dy* "All drank the same spiritual drink: (And they drank of the spiritual rock that followed them: and the rock was Christ.)"

Mass Brings No Relief to Souls Supposedly Suffering in Purgatory; They Are Dead

Eccl. 9:5, 10, *Dy* "The living know that they shall die, but the dead know nothing more. . . . Whatsoever thy hand is able to do, do it earnestly: for neither work, nor reason, nor wisdom, nor knowledge, shall be in hell, ["the grave," *Knox*], whither thou art hastening."

Ezech. 18:4, *Dy* "The soul that sinneth, the same shall die."

See also the main headings "Death" and "Purgatory."

Materialism

Possession of Material Wealth Not Wrong; Danger Lies in Love of Money and Determination to Be Rich

Eccl. 7:12 "Money is for a protection."

Job 42:12 "As for Jehovah, he blessed the end of Job afterward more than his beginning, so that he came to have fourteen thousand sheep and six thousand camels and a thousand spans of cattle and a thousand she-asses."

Ps. 62:10 "In case the means of maintenance should thrive, do not set your heart on them."

Heb. 13:5 "Let your manner of life be free of the love of money, while you are content with the present things. For he has said: 'I will by no means leave you nor by any means forsake you.'"

1 Tim. 3:2, 3 "The overseer should therefore be irreprehensible, . . . not a lover of money."

1 Tim. 6:9, 10 "However, those who are determined to be rich fall into temptation and a snare and many senseless and hurtful desires, which plunge men into destruction and ruin. For the love of money is a root of all sorts of injurious things."

Craving for riches not satisfied even when one gets them

Eccl. 5:10 "A mere lover of silver will not be satisfied with silver, neither any lover of wealth with income. This too is vanity."

Power of Wealth Deceptive; It Cannot Give Life

Ps. 49:6, 7, 9, 10 "Those who are trusting in their means of maintenance, and who keep boasting about the abundance of their riches, not one of them can by any means redeem even a brother, nor give to God a ransom for him; that he should still live forever and not see the pit. For he sees that even the wise ones die, together the stupid one and the unreasoning one perish, and they must leave to others their means of maintenance."

Matt. 16:26 "What benefit will it be to a man if he gains the whole world but forfeits his soul? or what will a man give in exchange for his soul?"

Luke 12:15-21 "'Keep your eyes open and guard against every sort of covetousness, because even when a person has an abundance his life does not result from the things he possesses.' With that he spoke an illustration to them, saying: 'The land of a certain rich man produced well. Consequently he began reasoning within himself, saying, "What shall I do, now that I have nowhere to gather my crops?" So he said, "I will do this: I will tear down my storehouses and build bigger ones, and there I will gather all my grain and all my good things; and I will say to my soul: 'Soul, you have many good things laid up for many years; take your ease, eat, drink, enjoy yourself.'" But God said to him, "Unreasonable one, this night they are demanding your soul from you. Who, then, is to have the things you stored up?" So it goes with the man that lays up treasure for himself but is not rich toward God.'"

Matt. 13:22 "As for the one sown among the thorns, this is the one hearing the word, but the anxiety of this system of things and the deceptive power of riches choke the word, and he becomes unfruitful."

Riches will not deliver those disapproved by God

Prov. 11:4 "Valuable things will be of no benefit on the day of fury, but righteousness itself will deliver from death."

Ezek. 7:19 "Into the streets they will throw their very silver, and an abhorrent thing their own gold will become. Neither their silver nor their gold will be able to deliver them in the day of Jehovah's fury. Their souls they will not satisfy, and their intestines they will not fill, for it has become a stumbling block causing their error."

Prov. 11:28 "The one trusting in his riches—he himself will fall."

Jas. 5:1-3 "Come, now, you rich men, weep, howling over your miseries that are coming upon you. Your riches have rotted, and your outer garments have become moth-eaten. Your gold and silver are corroded, and their rust will be as a witness against you and will eat your fleshy parts. Something like fire is what you have stored up in the last days."

Careful attention to spiritual needs leads to everlasting life

John 17:3 "This means everlasting life, their taking in knowledge of you, the only true God, and of the one whom you sent forth, Jesus Christ."

Matt. 4:4 "In reply he said: 'It is written, "Man must live, not on bread alone, but on every utterance coming forth through Jehovah's mouth."'"

John 4:34-36 "Jesus said to them: 'My food is for me to do the will of him that sent me and to finish his work. . . . Already the reaper is receiving wages and gathering fruit for everlasting life.'"

Riches no cause for bragging

Jer. 9:23 "This is what Jehovah has said: 'Let not the wise man brag about himself because of his wisdom, and let not the mighty man brag about himself because of his mightiness. Let not the rich man brag about himself because of his riches.'"

Materialistic Desires Can Lead One Away from the Faith

1 Tim. 6:10 "The love of money is a root of all sorts of injurious things, and by reaching out for this love some have been led astray from the faith."

Mark 4:18, 19 "There are still others who are sown among the thorns; these are the ones that have heard the word, but the anxieties of this system of things and the deceptive power of riches and the desires for the rest of the things make inroads and choke the word, and it becomes unfruitful."

Materially prosperous persons readily forget God, become self-confident

Job 31:24, 25, 28 "If I have put gold as my confidence, or to gold I have said, 'You are my trust!' If I used to rejoice because my property was much, and because my hand had found a lot of things; that too would be an error for attention by the justices, for I should have denied the true God above."

Deut. 8:10-14 "When you have eaten and satisfied yourself, you must also bless Jehovah your God for the good land that he has given you. Watch out for yourself that you may not forget Jehovah your God so as not to keep his commandments and his judicial decisions and his statutes that I am commanding you today; for fear that you may eat and indeed satisfy yourself, and you may build good houses and indeed dwell in them, and your herd and your flock may increase, and silver and gold may increase for you, and all that is yours may increase; and your heart may indeed be lifted up and you may indeed forget Jehovah your God, who brought

you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of slaves."

1 Tim. 6:17 "Give orders to those who are rich in the present system of things not to be high-minded, and to rest their hope, not on uncertain riches, but on God, who furnishes us all things richly for our enjoyment."

Ps. 52:7 "Here is the able-bodied man that does not put God as his fortress, but that trusts in the abundance of his riches."

Prov. 28:11 "A rich man is wise in his own eyes."

Love of money leads to wrong conduct, unhappiness

1 Tim. 6:9, 10 "Those who are determined to be rich fall into temptation and a snare and many senseless and hurtful desires, which plunge men into destruction and ruin. For the love of money is a root of all sorts of injurious things, and by reaching out for this love some have been led astray from the faith and have stabbed themselves all over with many pains."

Prov. 28:20 "He that is hastening to gain riches will not remain innocent."

2 Ki. 5:20, 23, 25-27 "Then Gehazi the attendant of Elisha the man of the true God said: 'Here my master has spared Naaman this Syrian by not accepting from his hand what he brought. As Jehovah is living, I will run after him and take something from him.' . . . Naaman said: 'Go on, take two talents.' And he kept urging him and finally bound up two talents of silver in two bags, with two changes of garments, . . . Elisha now said to him: . . . 'Is it a time to accept silver or to accept garments or olive groves or vineyards or sheep or cattle or menservants or maidservants? So the leprosy of Naaman will stick to you and your offspring to time indefinite.' Immediately he went out from before him, a leper white as snow."

Those who cling to world's materialistic ways show lack of love for God, lose his favor

1 John 2:15-17 "Do not be loving either the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him; because everything in the world—the desire of the flesh and the desire of the eyes and the showy display of one's means of life—does not originate with the Father, but originates with the world. Furthermore, the world is passing away and so is its desire, but he that does the will of God remains forever."

Mark 10:17-23 "A certain man . . . put the question to him: 'Good Teacher, what must I do to inherit everlasting life?' Jesus said to him: . . . 'One thing is missing about you: Go, sell what things you have and give to the poor, and you will have treasure in heaven, and come be my follower.' But he grew sad at the saying and went off grieved, for he was holding many possessions. After looking around Jesus said to his disciples: 'How difficult a thing it will be for those with money to enter into the kingdom of God!'"

Be Content with Covering and Sustenance for One Day at a Time

1 Tim. 6:8 "So, having sustenance and covering, we shall be content with these things."

Luke 11:3 "Give us our bread for the day according to the day's requirement."

See also Phil. 4:11, 12.

Persons Neglecting Spiritual Matters Because of Anxiety over Material Necessities of Life Lack Faith

Matt. 6:30 "If, now, God thus clothes the vegetation of the field, which is here today and tomorrow is thrown into the oven, will he not much rather clothe you, you with little faith?"

Luke 21:34 "Pay attention to yourselves that your hearts never become weighed down with overeating and heavy drinking and anxieties of life, and suddenly that day be instantly upon you."

See also the main heading "Faith," pages 184-189.

Put Service of God First in Your Life; Then God Will Add Needed Material Things

Matt. 6:25-33 "On this account I say to you: Stop being anxious about your souls as to what you will eat or what you will drink, or about your bodies as to what you will wear. Does not the soul mean more than food and the body than clothing? Observe intently the birds of heaven, because they do not sow seed or reap or gather into storehouses; still your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not worth more than they are? Who of you by being anxious can add one cubit to his life span? Also, on the matter of clothing, why are you anxious? Take a lesson from the lilies of the field, how they are growing; they do not toil, nor do they spin; but I say to you that not even Solomon in all his glory was arrayed as one of these. If, now, God thus clothes the vegetation of the field, which is here today and tomorrow is thrown into the oven, will he not much rather clothe you, you with little faith? So never be anxious and say, 'What are we to eat?' or, 'What are we to drink?' or, 'What are we to put on?' For all these are the things the nations are eagerly pursuing. For your heavenly Father knows you need all these things. Keep on, then, seeking first the kingdom and his righteousness, and all these other things will be added to you."

Deut. 11:13-15 "And it must occur that if you will without fail obey my commandments that I am commanding you today so as to love Jehovah your God and to serve him with all your heart and all your soul, I also shall certainly give rain for your land at its appointed time, autumn rain and spring rain, and you will indeed gather your grain and your sweet wine and your oil. And I shall certainly give vegetation in your field for your domestic animals, and you will indeed eat and be satisfied."

Prov. 3:9, 10 "Honor Jehovah with your valuable things and with the first fruits of all your produce. Then your stores of supply will be filled with plenty; and with new wine your own press vats will overflow."

Ps. 37:25 "A young man I used to be, I have also grown old, and yet I have not seen anyone righteous left entirely, nor his offspring looking for bread."

See also Heb. 13:5.

Spiritual Treasures Better, More Enduring than Material Wealth

Matt. 6:19-21 "Stop storing up for yourselves treasures upon the earth, where moth and rust consume, and where thieves break in and steal. Rather, store up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust consumes, and where thieves do not break in and steal. For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also."

Prov. 3:11, 13-18 "The discipline of Jehovah, O my son, do not reject . . . Happy is the man that has found wisdom, and the man that gets discernment, for having it as gain is better than having silver as gain and having it as produce than gold itself. It is more precious than corals, and all other delights of yours cannot be made equal to it. Length of days is in its right hand; in its left hand there are riches and glory. Its ways are ways of pleasantness, and all its roadways are peace. It is a tree of life to those taking hold of it, and those keeping fast hold of it are to be called happy."

Prov. 10:22 "The blessing of Jehovah—that is what makes

rich, and he adds no pain with it."

Unreasonable to Believe Only in Material Things Seen with Eyes and Not in God, Whose Works Are Everywhere

Rom. 1:20 "His invisible qualities are clearly seen from the world's creation onward, because they are perceived by the things made, even his eternal power and Godship, so that they are inexcusable."

Heb. 11:1 "Faith is the assured expectation of things hoped for, the evident demonstration of realities though not beheld."

Maturity

All Christians to Strive to Become Full-grown Spiritually

1 Cor. 14:20 "Brothers, . . . become full-grown in powers of understanding."

1 Tim. 4:15 "Ponder over these things; be absorbed in them, that your advancement may be manifest to all persons."

Maturity Requires Sound Knowledge of the Scriptures

Heb. 6:1 "Now that we have left the primary doctrine about the Christ, let us press on to maturity, not laying a foundation again, namely, repentance from dead works, and faith toward God."

Phil. 1:9-11 "This is what I continue praying, that your love may abound yet more and more with accurate knowledge and full discernment; that you may make sure of the more important things, so that you may be flawless and not be stumbling others up to the day of Christ, and may be filled with righteous fruit, which is through Jesus Christ, to God's glory and praise."

2 Tim. 2:15 "Do your utmost to present yourself approved to God, a workman with nothing to be ashamed of, handling the word of the truth aright."

2 Tim. 3:16, 17 "All Scripture is inspired of God and beneficial for teaching, for reproving, for setting things straight, for disciplining in righteousness, that the man of God may be fully competent, completely equipped for every good work."

See also the main heading "Knowledge," pages 306-311.

Working with Christian Congregation Necessary to Become a Full-grown or Mature Christian

Eph. 4:11-14 "He gave some as apostles, some as prophets, some as evangelizers, some as shepherds and teachers, with a view to the training of the holy ones, for ministerial work, for the building up of the body of the Christ, until we all attain to the oneness in the faith and in the accurate knowledge of the Son of God, to a full-grown man, to the measure of growth that belongs to the fullness of the Christ; in order that we should no longer be babes, tossed about as by waves and carried hither and thither by every wind of teaching by means of the trickery of men, by means of cunning in contriving error."

Heb. 10:24, 25 "Let us consider one another to incite to love and fine works, not forsaking the gathering of ourselves together, as some have the custom, but encouraging one another, and all the more so as you behold the day drawing near."

See also the main heading "Organization (Jehovah's)," pages 362-366.

God's Spirit Enables One to Act Maturely; Pray for It

Matt. 10:19, 20 "When they deliver you up, do not become anxious about how or what you are to speak; for what you are to speak will be given you in that hour; for the ones speaking are not just you, but it is the spirit of your Father that speaks by you."

Luke 21:14, 15 "Therefore settle it in your hearts not to rehearse beforehand how to make your defense, for I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your opposers together will not be able to resist or dispute."

1 Cor. 2:6, 10-13 "Now we speak wisdom among those who are mature . . . For it is to us God has revealed them through his spirit, for the spirit searches into all things, even the deep things of God. . . . Now we received, not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is from God, that we might know the things that have been kindly given us by God. These things we also speak, not with words taught by human wisdom, but with those taught by the spirit, as we combine spiritual matters with spiritual words."

Luke 11:13 "If you, although being wicked, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more so will the Father in heaven give holy spirit to those asking him!"

See also the main heading "Spirit," pages 466, 467.

Maturity Involves Experience in Making Right Decisions

Heb. 5:14 "Solid food belongs to mature people, to those who through use have their perceptive powers trained to distinguish both right and wrong."

See also the main heading "Decisions," pages 146-150.

Spiritual Outlook, Not Taking Simply a Human View of Matters Manifests Maturity

Phil. 3:14, 15 "I am pursuing down toward the goal for the prize of the upward call of God by means of Christ Jesus. Let us, then, as many of us as are mature, be of this mental attitude; and if you are mentally inclined otherwise in any respect, God will reveal the above attitude to you."

1 Cor. 2:14, 15; 3:1-3 "A physical man does not receive the things of the spirit of God, for they are foolishness to him; and he cannot get to know them, because they are examined spiritually. However, the spiritual man examines indeed all things." "And so, brothers, I was not able to speak to you as to spiritual men, but as to fleshly men, as to babes in Christ. I fed you milk, not something to eat, for you were not yet strong enough. In fact, neither are you strong enough now, for you are yet fleshly. For whereas there are jealousy and strife among you, are you not fleshly and are you not walking as men do?"

Mature Persons, Spiritually Older Men, Are Ready to Take On Responsibility

Acts 14:23 "They appointed older men to office for them in the congregation and, offering prayer with fastings, they committed them to Jehovah in whom they had become believers."

Titus 1:5-9 "I left you in Crete, that you might correct the things that were defective and might make appointments of older men in city after city, as I gave you orders . . . For an overseer must be free from accusation as God's steward, . . . holding firmly to the faithful word as respects his art of teaching, that he may be able both to exhort by the teaching that is healthful and to reprove those who contradict."

See also the main heading "Overseers," pages 366-371.

Mercy

All Humans Are Sinners, in Need of Mercy

1 Ki. 8:46 "There is no man that does not sin."

Eccl. 7:20 "There is no man righteous in the earth that keeps doing good and does not sin."

1 John 1:8 "If we make the statement: 'We have no sin,' we are misleading ourselves and the truth is not in us."

Ps. 130:3 "If errors were what you watch, O Jah, O Jehovah, who could stand?"

Jehovah God Is Merciful

Jas. 5:11 "Jehovah is very tender in affection and merciful."

2 Cor. 1:3 "Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of tender mercies."

Ex. 34:6 "Jehovah, Jehovah, a God merciful and gracious."

Neh. 9:17 "You are a God of acts of forgiveness, gracious and merciful, slow to anger and abundant in loving-kindness."

Jehovah Manifests Compassionate Mercy Because of His Own Love, Not Because of Man's Worthiness

Titus 3:4, 5 "When the kindness and the love for man on the part of our Savior, God, was manifested, owing to no works in righteousness that we had performed, but according to his mercy he saved us through the bath that brought us to life and through the making of us new by holy spirit."

1 John 4:9, 10 "By this the love of God was made manifest in our case, because God sent forth his only-begotten Son into the world that we might gain life through him. The love is in this respect, not that we have loved God, but that he loved us and sent forth his Son as a propitiatory sacrifice for our sins."

Rom. 5:8 "God recommends his own love to us in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us."

Joel 2:18, 19 "Jehovah will be zealous for his land and will show compassion upon his people. And Jehovah will answer and say to his people, 'Here I am sending to you the grain and the new wine and the oil, and you people will certainly be satisfied with it.'"

Divine Forgiveness of Sins for Those Who Avail Themselves of God's Provision Through Christ

1 John 1:7, 9 "If we are walking in the light as he himself is in the light, we do have a sharing with one another, and the blood of Jesus his Son cleanses us from all sin. If we confess our sins, he is faithful and righteous so as to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness."

Acts 10:43 "To him all the prophets bear witness, that everyone putting faith in him gets forgiveness of sins through his name."

Luke 24:47 "On the basis of his name repentance for forgiveness of sins would be preached in all the nations."

Mercy to be requested, not taken for granted

Heb. 4:16 "Let us, therefore, approach with freeness of speech to the throne of undeserved kindness, that we may obtain mercy and find undeserved kindness for help at the right time."

Luke 18:13 "But the tax collector standing at a distance was not willing even to raise his eyes heavenward, but kept beating his breast, saying, 'O God, be gracious to me a sinner.'"

Luke 11:2-4 "Whenever you pray, say, 'Father, . . . forgive us our sins.'"

Mercy Shown to Transgressors of God's Law Who Manifest Repentance

Isa. 55:7 "Let the wicked man leave his way, and the harmful man his thoughts; and let him return to Jehovah, who will have mercy upon him, and to our God, for he will forgive in a large way."

Deut. 4:30, 31 "When you are in sore straits and all these words have found you out at the close of the days, then you will have to return to Jehovah your God and to listen to his voice. For Jehovah your God is a merciful God. He will not desert you or bring you to ruin or forget the covenant of your forefathers that he swore to them."

Jonah 3:10 "The true God got to see their works, that they had turned back from their bad way; and so the true God felt regret over the calamity that he had spoken of causing to them; and he did not cause it."

1 Ki. 21:29 "Have you seen how Ahab has humbled himself on my account? For the reason that he has humbled himself because of me, I shall not bring the calamity in his own days."

See also the main heading "Repentance," pages 420-423.

Confession and change of course provide basis for mercy

Prov. 28:13 "He that is covering over his transgressions will not succeed, but he that is confessing and leaving them will be shown mercy."

Ps. 32:5 "My sin I finally confessed to you, and my error I did not cover. I said: 'I shall make confession over my transgressions to Jehovah.' And you yourself pardoned the error of my sins."

1 John 1:9 "If we confess our sins, he is faithful and righteous so as to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness."

Mercy does not mean complete exemption from punishment

Ex. 34:6, 7 "Jehovah, a God merciful and gracious, slow to anger and abundant in loving-kindness and truth, preserving loving-kindness for thousands, pardoning error and transgression and sin, but by no means will he give exemption from punishment."

2 Sam. 12:13, 14 "David now said to Nathan: 'I have sinned against Jehovah.' At this Nathan said to David: 'Jehovah, in turn, does let your sin pass by. You will not die. Notwithstanding this, because you have unquestionably treated Jehovah with disrespect by this thing, also the son himself, just born to you, will positively die.'"

Like God, Christians Ought to Be Merciful

Luke 6:36 "Continue becoming merciful, just as your Father is merciful."

Col. 3:13 "Continue putting up with one another and forgiving one another freely if anyone has a cause for complaint against another. Even as Jehovah freely forgave you, so do you also."

Matt. 6:14 "If you forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you."

See also the main heading "Settling Personal Differences," pages 446-448.

Lack of Compassionate Mercy for One's Fellowman Can Nullify Value of Sacrifices to God

Matt. 9:13 "Go, then, and learn what this means, 'I want mercy, and not sacrifice.' For I came to call, not righteous people, but sinners."

Matt. 23:23 "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because you give the tenth of the mint

and the dill and the cummin, but you have disregarded the weightier matters of the Law, namely, justice and mercy and faithfulness."

Luke 10:29-37 "Wanting to prove himself righteous, the man said to Jesus: 'Who really is my neighbor?' In reply Jesus said: 'A certain man was going down from Jerusalem to Jericho and fell among robbers, who both stripped him and inflicted blows, and went off, leaving him half-dead. Now, by coincidence, a certain priest was going down over that road, but, when he saw him, he went by on the opposite side. Likewise, a Levite also, when he got down to the place and saw him, went by on the opposite side. But a certain Samaritan traveling the road came upon him and, at seeing him, he was moved with pity. So he approached him and bound up his wounds, pouring oil and wine upon them. Then he mounted him upon his own beast and brought him to an inn and took care of him. And the next day he took out two denarii, gave them to the innkeeper, and said, "Take care of him, and whatever you spend besides this, I will repay you when I come back here." Who of these three seems to you to have made himself neighbor to the man that fell among the robbers?' He said: "The one that acted mercifully toward him.' Jesus then said to him: 'Go your way and be doing the same yourself.' "

Be Willing to Forgive, Doing So from the Heart

Eph. 4:32 "Become kind to one another, tenderly compassionate, freely forgiving one another just as God also by Christ freely forgave you."

Luke 17:3, 4 "Pay attention to yourselves. If your brother commits a sin give him a reproof, and if he repents forgive him. Even if he sins seven times a day against you and he comes back to you seven times, saying, 'I repent,' you must forgive him."

Matt. 18:35 "In like manner my heavenly Father will also deal with you if you do not forgive each one his brother from your hearts." (See also verses 21-34.)

Merciful Persons Will Be Shown Mercy by God

Matt. 5:7 "Happy are the merciful, since they will be shown mercy."

Mark 11:25 "When you stand praying, forgive whatever you have against anyone; in order that your Father who is in the heavens may also forgive you your trespasses."

Jas. 2:13 "The one that does not practice mercy will have his judgment without mercy."

Minister of God

No Titles to Exalt Certain Christians Above Others

Matt. 23:8-11 "Do not you be called Rabbi, for one is your teacher, whereas all you are brothers. Moreover, do not call anyone your father on earth, for one is your Father, the heavenly One. Neither be called 'leaders,' for your Leader is one, the Christ. But the greatest one among you must be your minister."

See also the main heading "Babylon the Great," page 37.

Basic Idea of "Ministry" Is Serving

Luke 22:26, 27 "Let him that is the greatest among you become as the youngest, and the one acting as chief as the one ministering. For which one is greater, the one reclining at the table or the one ministering? Is it not the one reclining at the table? But I am in your midst as the one ministering."

Luke 4:38, 39 "After getting up out of the synagogue he entered into Simon's home. Now Simon's mother-in-law was distressed with a high fever, and they made request of him for her. So he stood over her and rebuked the fever, and it left her. Instantly she rose and began ministering to them."

See also the main heading "Honorary Titles," pages 243, 244.

Jesus Christ Set the Example for All Other Ministers of God

Matt. 20:26-28 "Whoever wants to become great among you must be your minister, and whoever wants to be first among you must be your slave. Just as the Son of man came, not to be ministered to, but to minister and to give his soul a ransom in exchange for many."

John 13:12-15 "When, now, he had washed their feet and had put his outer garments on and laid himself down at the table again, he said to them: 'Do you know what I have done to you? You address me, "Teacher," and, "Lord," and you speak rightly, for I am such. Therefore, if I, although Lord and Teacher, washed your feet, you also ought to wash the feet of one another. For I set the pattern for you, that, just as I did to you, you should do also.' "

Baptized Christians Who Preach God's Word Are His Ministers

2 Tim. 4:2, 5 "Preach the word, be at it urgently in favorable season, in troublesome season, reprove, reprimand, exhort, with all long-suffering and art of teaching. . . . keep your senses in all things, suffer evil, do the work of an evangelizer, fully accomplish your ministry."

1 Thess. 3:2 "We sent Timothy, our brother and God's minister in the good news about the Christ, in order to make you firm and comfort you in behalf of your faith."

1 Cor. 3:5 "What, then, is Apollos? Yes, what is Paul? Ministers through whom you became believers, even as the Lord granted each one."

Acts 20:24 "Nevertheless, I do not make my soul of any account as dear to me, if only I may finish my course and the ministry that I received of the Lord Jesus, to bear thorough witness to the good news of the undeserved kindness of God."

Acts 6:4 "We shall devote ourselves to prayer and to the ministry of the word."

See also Matt. 28:19, 20; Acts 8:12; and the main heading "Preaching the Good News," pages 384-390.

Every Christian Must Share in Public Ministry

1 Cor. 9:16, 17 "If, now, I am declaring the good news, it is no reason for me to boast, for necessity is laid upon me. Really, woe is me if I did not declare the good news! If I perform this willingly, I have a reward; but if I do it against my will, all the same I have a stewardship entrusted to me."

Heb. 13:15 "Through him let us always offer to God a sacrifice of praise, that is, the fruit of lips which make public declaration to his name."

Rom. 10:9, 10, 13-15 "If you publicly declare that 'word in your own mouth,' that Jesus is Lord, and exercise faith in your heart that God raised him up from the dead, you will be saved. For with the heart one exercises faith for righteousness, but with the mouth one makes public declaration for salvation. For 'everyone who calls on the name of

Jehovah will be saved.' However, how will they call on him in whom they have not put faith? How, in turn, will they put faith in him of whom they have not heard? How, in turn, will they hear without someone to preach? How, in turn, will they preach unless they have been sent forth? Just as it is written: 'How comely are the feet of those who declare good news of good things!'"

Phil. 1:1; 2:15, 17 "Paul and Timothy, slaves of Christ Jesus, to all the holy ones in union with Christ Jesus who are in Philippi, along with overseers and ministerial servants." "You are shining as illuminators in the world. Even if I am being poured out like a drink offering upon the sacrifice and public service to which faith has led you, I am glad."

Luke 12:8 "I say, then, to you, Everyone that confesses union with me before men, the Son of man will also confess union with him before the angels of God."

Matt. 5:14, 16 "You are the light of the world. . . . Let your light shine before men, that they may see your fine works and give glory to your Father who is in the heavens."

History testifies that early Christians were active preachers

"The Christian was by no means content with the prospects of his own salvation. His acceptance of the will of God was not passive. He was from the first an ardent missionary, anxious to convert and save others."—*A History of Civilization* (Englewood Cliffs, N.J.; 1955), Vol. I, by Crane Brinton, John B. Christopher, Robert L. Wolff, p. 142.

"Celsus, the first writer against Christianity, makes it a matter of mockery, that labourers, shoemakers, farmers, the most uninformed and clownish of men, should be zealous preachers of the Gospel."—*The History of the Christian Religion and Church, During the Three First Centuries* (New York; 1848), by Dr. Augustus Neander, translated from German by Henry John Rose, p. 41.

"For the most of the disciples at that time, animated with a more ardent love of the divine word, . . . performed the office of evangelists to those who had not yet heard the faith, whilst with a noble ambition to proclaim Christ, they also delivered to them the books of the holy Gospels. After laying the foundation of the faith in foreign parts as the particular object of their mission, and after appointing others as shepherds of the flocks, and committing to these the care of those that had been recently introduced, they went again to other regions and nations, with the grace and co-operation of God."—*The Ecclesiastical History of Eusebius Pamphilus* (London; 1894), translated by C. F. Crusé, p. 112.

Preaching not to be limited to congregation of fellow believers

Acts 5:42 "Every day in the temple and from house to house they continued without letup teaching and declaring the good news about the Christ, Jesus."

Acts 8:4 "Those who had been scattered went through the land declaring the good news of the word."

Acts 11:20 "Out of them there were some men of Cyprus and Cyrene that came to Antioch and began talking to the Greek-speaking people, declaring the good news of the Lord Jesus."

Acts 20:20, 21 "I did not hold back from telling you any of the things that were profitable nor from teaching you publicly and from house to house. But I thoroughly bore witness both to Jews and to Greeks about repentance toward God and faith in our Lord Jesus."

Eph. 3:8 "To me, a man less than the least of all holy ones, this undeserved kindness was given, that I should declare to the nations the good news about the unfathomable riches of the Christ."

Jehovah Ordains His Ministers, Investing Them with Authority to Preach

Col. 1:25 "I became a minister of this congregation in accordance with the stewardship from God which was given me in your interest to preach the word of God fully."

Isa. 61:1, 2 "The spirit of the Lord Jehovah is upon me, for the reason that Jehovah has anointed me to tell good news to the meek ones. He has sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to those taken captive and the wide opening of the eyes even to the prisoners; to proclaim the year of good will on the part of Jehovah."

Isa. 43:10 "'You are my witnesses,' is the utterance of Jehovah, 'even my servant whom I have chosen.'"

2 Cor. 3:5, 6 "Not that we of ourselves are adequately qualified to reckon anything as issuing from ourselves, but our being adequately qualified issues from God, who has indeed adequately qualified us to be ministers of a new covenant."

See also John 20:21.

God's Spirit and Knowledge of His Word Required, Not Training at Theological Schools

Acts 4:8-13 "Peter, filled with holy spirit, said to them: 'Rulers of the people and older men . . .' Now when they beheld the outspokenness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were men unlettered and ordinary, they got to wondering. And they began to recognize about them that they used to be with Jesus."

1 Tim. 1:12 "I am grateful to Christ Jesus our Lord, who imparted power to me, because he considered me faithful by assigning me to a ministry."

Col. 1:9, 10 "That is also why we, from the day we heard of it, have not ceased praying for you and asking that you may be filled with the accurate knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual discernment, in order to walk worthily of Jehovah to the end of fully pleasing him as you go on bearing fruit in every good work and increasing in the accurate knowledge of God."

2 Cor. 6:4-6 "In every way we recommend ourselves as God's ministers, by the endurance of much, by tribulations, by cases of need, by difficulties, . . . by purity, by knowledge, by long-suffering, by kindness, by holy spirit."

John 7:14-16 "Jesus went up into the temple and began teaching. Therefore the Jews fell to wondering, saying: 'How does this man have a knowledge of letters, when he has not studied at the schools?' Jesus, in turn, answered them and said: 'What I teach is not mine, but belongs to him that sent me.'"

Fruits of One's Ministry Recommend One; No Certificate of Ordination Necessary

2 Cor. 3:1-3 "Are we starting again to recommend ourselves? Or do we, perhaps, like some men, need letters of recommendation to you or from you? You yourselves are our letter, inscribed on our hearts and known and being read by all mankind. For you are shown to be a letter of Christ written by us as ministers, inscribed not with ink but with spirit of a living God, not on stone tablets, but on fleshly tablets, on hearts."

1 Cor. 9:1, 2 "Am I not an apostle? Have I not seen Jesus our Lord? Are not you my work in the Lord? If I am not an apostle to others, I most certainly am to you, for you are the seal confirming my apostleship in relation to the Lord."

Women May Be Ministers, Making Known God's Prophetic Word

Rom. 16:1 "I recommend to you Phoebe our sister, who is a minister of the congregation that is in Cenchreae."

Acts 21:9 "This man had four daughters, virgins, that prophesied."

Acts 2:17, 18 "'In the last days,' God says, 'I shall pour out some of my spirit upon every sort of flesh, and your sons and your daughters will prophesy and your young men will see visions and your old men will dream dreams; and even upon my men slaves and upon my women slaves I will pour out some of my spirit in those days, and they will prophesy.'"

Ps. 68:11 "Jehovah himself gives the saying; the women telling the good news are a large army."

Ps. 148:12, 13 "You young men and also you virgins, you old men together with boys. Let them praise the name of Jehovah."

Titus 2:3 "Likewise let the aged women be reverent in behavior . . . teachers of what is good."

Phil. 4:3 "Yes, I request you too, genuine yokefellow, keep assisting these women who have fought side by side with me in the good news along with Clement as well as the rest of my fellow workers, whose names are in the book of life."

Women not to exercise authority over men in Christian congregation

1 Tim. 2:12 "I do not permit a woman to teach, or to exercise authority over a man, but to be in silence."

1 Cor. 14:33, 34 "As in all the congregations of the holy ones, let the women keep silent in the congregations, for it is not permitted for them to speak, but let them be in subjection, even as the Law says."

See also the main heading "Women," pages 500-502.

Children May Serve God, Praising His Name

1 Sam. 2:18 "Samuel was ministering before Jehovah, as a boy."

Ps. 148:12, 13 "You young men and also you virgins, you old men together with boys. Let them praise the name of Jehovah."

Matt. 21:15, 16 "When the chief priests and the scribes saw the marvelous things he did and the boys that were crying out in the temple and saying: 'Save, we pray, the Son of David!' they became indignant and said to him: 'Do you hear what these are saying?' Jesus said to them: 'Yes. Did you never read this, "Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings you have furnished praise"?'"

See also Luke 2:41-49.

Some Have Special Responsibilities as Ministers in the Christian Congregation

1 Tim. 3:1, 8, 10 "If any man is reaching out for an office of overseer, he is desirous of a fine work. Ministerial servants should likewise be serious . . . Also, let these be tested as to fitness first, then let them serve as ministers, as they are free from accusation."

1 Tim. 4:6, 12 "By giving these advices to the brothers you will be a fine minister of Christ Jesus, one nourished with the words of the faith and of the fine teaching which you have followed closely. . . . become an example to the faithful ones in speaking, in conduct, in love, in faith, in chasteness."

Acts 20:17, 18, 28 "From Miletus he sent to Ephesus and called for the older men of the congregation. When they got to him he said to them: '. . . Pay attention to yourselves and to all the flock, among which the holy spirit has appointed you overseers, to shepherd the congregation of God.'"

See also the main heading "Overseers," pages 366-371.

Congregation belongs to God, not the minister

1 Pet. 5:2 "Shepherd the flock of God in your care, not under compulsion, but willingly."

1 Tim. 3:5 "If indeed any man does not know how to preside over his own household, how will he take care of God's congregation?"

1 Tim. 3:14, 15 "I am writing you these things, though I am hoping to come to you shortly, but in case I am delayed, that you may know how you ought to conduct yourself in God's household, which is the congregation of the living God."

Ministry May Include Attending to Material Needs of Fellow Believers

2 Cor. 9:11, 12 "In everything you are being enriched for every sort of generosity, which produces through us an expression of thanks to God; because the ministry of this public service is not only to supply abundantly the wants of the holy ones but also to be rich with many expressions of thanks to God."

Rom. 15:26, 27 "Those in Macedonia and Achaia have been pleased to share up their things by a contribution to the poor of the holy ones in Jerusalem. True, they have been pleased to do so, and yet they were debtors to them; for if the nations have shared in their spiritual things, they also owe it to minister publicly to these with things for the physical body."

See also the main headings "Charitable Works," pages 67-70, and "Mercy," page 345.

Neutrality

Christians Advocate the Heavenly Kingdom of God

Matt. 6:9, 10 "You must pray, then, this way: 'Our Father in the heavens, let your name be sanctified. Let your kingdom come. Let your will take place, as in heaven, also upon earth.'"

Matt. 10:7 "As you go, preach, saying, 'The kingdom of the heavens has drawn near.'"

Matt. 24:14 "This good news of the kingdom will be preached in all the inhabited earth for a witness to all the nations."

Dan. 7:13, 14 "I kept on beholding in the visions of the night, and, see there! with the clouds of the heavens someone like a son of man happened to be coming; and to the Ancient of Days he gained access, and they brought him up close even before that One. And to him there were given rulership and dignity and kingdom, that the peoples, national groups and languages should all serve even him. His rulership is an indefinitely lasting rulership that will not pass away, and his kingdom one that will not be brought to ruin."

2 Tim. 4:18 "The Lord will deliver me from every wicked work and will save me for his heavenly kingdom."

Matt. 6:33 "Keep on, then, seeking first the kingdom and his righteousness."

Christ's anointed followers are ambassadors of heavenly kingdom

2 Cor. 5:20 "We are therefore ambassadors substituting for Christ, as though God were making entreaty through us. As substitutes for Christ we beg: 'Become reconciled to God.'"

Phil. 3:20 "As for us, our citizenship exists in the heavens."

Christians Respectful to Those in Political Authority on Earth

1 Pet. 2:17 "Honor men of all sorts, have love for the whole association of brothers, be in fear of God, have honor for the king."

Acts 26:2, 25 "'Concerning all the things of which I am accused by Jews, King Agrippa, I count myself happy that it is before you I am to make my defense this day.' But Paul said: 'I am not going mad, Your Excellency Festus, but I am uttering sayings of truth and of soundness of mind.'"

See also Dan. 6:21, 22; 1 Tim. 2:1, 2; and the heading "Superior Authorities," pages 473-477.

Law-abiding, pay taxes

1 Pet. 2:13, 14 "For the Lord's sake subject yourselves to every human creation: whether to a king as being superior or to governors as being sent by him to inflict punishment on evildoers but to praise doers of good."

Titus 3:1 "Continue reminding them to be in subjection and be obedient to governments and authorities as rulers."

Acts 25:8 "Neither against the Law of the Jews nor against the temple nor against Caesar have I committed any sin."

Matt. 22:21 "Pay back, therefore, Caesar's things to Caesar, but God's things to God."

Rom. 13:1-7 "Let every soul be in subjection to the superior authorities . . . For those ruling are an object of fear, not to the good deed, but to the bad. . . . Render to all their dues, to him who calls for the tax, the tax; to him who calls for the tribute, the tribute; to him who calls for fear, such fear; to him who calls for honor, such honor."

Even when objects of official persecution, Christians do not become lawless, seeking vengeance

John 18:36 "Jesus answered: 'My kingdom is no part of this world. If my kingdom were part of this world, my attendants would have fought that I should not be delivered up to the Jews. But, as it is, my kingdom is not from this source.'"

1 Pet. 2:21, 23 "To this course you were called, because even Christ suffered for you, leaving you a model for you to follow his steps closely. When he was being reviled, he did not go reviling in return. When he was suffering, he did not go threatening, but kept on committing himself to the one who judges righteously."

See also the main heading "Persecution," page 376.

Cannot stop serving God on demand of worldly authorities

Acts 4:18-20 "They called them and charged them, nowhere to make any utterance or to teach upon the basis of the name of Jesus. But in reply Peter and John said to them: 'Whether it is righteous in the sight of God to listen to you rather than to God, judge for yourselves. But as for us, we cannot stop speaking about the things we have seen and heard.'"

Acts 5:27-29 "They brought them and stood them in the Sanhedrin hall. And the high priest questioned them and said: 'We positively ordered you not to keep teaching upon the basis of this name, and yet, look! you have filled Jerusalem with your teaching.' . . . In answer Peter and the other apostles said: 'We must obey God as ruler rather than men.'"

Dan. 6:6-10 "High officials and satraps themselves entered as a throng to the king, and this is what they were saying to him: 'O Darius the king, . . . All the high officials of the kingdom . . . have taken counsel together to establish a royal statute and to enforce an interdict, that whoever makes a petition to any god or man for thirty days except to you, O king, should be thrown to the lions' pit.' . . . In accord with this, King Darius himself signed the writing and the interdict. But Daniel, as soon as he knew that the writing had been signed, entered into his house, and, the windows in his roof chamber being open for him toward Jerusalem, even three times in a day he was kneeling on his knees and praying and offering praise before his God, as he had been regularly doing prior to this."

Christians Are No Part of World, Do Not Take Sides in Its Political Affairs

John 17:16 "They are no part of the world, just as I am no part of the world."

Jas. 1:27 "The form of worship that is clean and undefiled from the standpoint of our God and Father is this: to look after orphans and widows in their tribulation, and to keep oneself without spot from the world."

Jas. 4:4 "Adulteresses, do you not know that the friendship with the world is enmity with God? Whoever, therefore, wants to be a friend of the world is constituting himself an enemy of God."

1 John 2:15 "Do not be loving either the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him."

Jesus Christ declined to accept political office on earth

Matt. 4:8-10 "The Devil took him along to an unusually high mountain, and showed him all the kingdoms of the world and their glory, and he said to him: 'All these things I will give you if you fall down and do an act of worship to me.' Then Jesus said to him: 'Go away, Satan!'"

John 6:15 "Therefore Jesus, knowing they were about to come and seize him to make him king, withdrew again into the mountain all alone."

Early Christians avoided all political involvement

"Early Christianity was little understood and was regarded with little favor by those who ruled the pagan world. . . . Christians refused to share certain duties of Roman citizens. . . . They would not hold political office."—*On the Road to Civilization, A World History* (Philadelphia, Chicago, etc.; 1937), Albert K. Heckel and James G. Sigman, pp. 237, 238.

"Zealous Christians did not serve in the armed forces or accept political offices."—*World History, The Story of Man's Achievements* (River Forest, Ill.; 1962), Habberton, Roth and Spears, p. 117.

"While among Romans it was considered the highest honor to possess the privileges of Roman citizenship, the Christians announced that they were citizens of heaven. They shrank from public office and military service."—"Persecution of the Christians in Gaul, A.D. 177" by F. P. G. Guizot, former prime minister of France, Vol. III of *The Great Events by Famous Historians* (New York; 1905), Rossiter Johnson, ed., p. 246.

"The Christians were strangers and pilgrims in the world around them; their citizenship was in heaven; the kingdom to which they looked was not of this world.

The consequent want of interest in public affairs came thus from the outset to be a noticeable feature in Christianity."—*Christianity and the Roman Government* (London; 1925), E. G. Hardy, Principal of Jesus College, Oxford, p. 39.

"The Christians stood aloof and distinct from the state, as a priestly and spiritual race, and Christianity seemed able to influence civil life only in that manner which, it must be confessed, is the purest, by practically endeavouring to instil more and more of holy feeling into the citizens of the state."—*The History of the Christian Religion and Church, During the Three First Centuries* (New York; 1848), Dr. Augustus Neander, translated from the German by H. J. Rose, p. 168.

God's Servants in All Lands Refrain from Any Form of Idolatry

Ex. 20:4, 5 "You must not make for yourself a carved image or a form like anything that is in the heavens above or that is on the earth underneath or that is in the waters under the earth. You must not bow down to them nor be induced to serve them, because I Jehovah your God am a God exacting exclusive devotion."

1 John 5:21 "Guard yourselves from idols."

1 Cor. 10:14 "Flee from idolatry."

See also the main heading "Caesar's Things to Caesar," pages 61, 62.

With God's approval, faithful Hebrews refused to render homage to a State emblem

Dan. 3:1, 4-6, 8, 9, 12, 13, 16-18 "Nebuchadnezzar the king made an image of gold . . . And the herald was crying out loudly: 'To you it is being said, O peoples, national groups and languages, that at the time that you hear the sound of . . . all sorts of musical instruments, you fall down and worship the image of gold that Nebuchadnezzar the king has set up. And whoever does not fall down and worship will at the same moment be thrown into the burning fiery furnace.' Because of this, at that same time certain Chaldeans approached and accused the Jews. . . . 'O king, live on even for times indefinite. There exist certain Jews whom you appointed over the administration of the jurisdictional district of Babylon, Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego; these able-bodied men have paid no regard to you, O king, they are not serving your own gods, and the image of gold that you have set up they are not worshiping.' At that time Nebuchadnezzar, in a rage and fury, said to bring in Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego. . . . Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego answered, and they were saying to the king: 'O Nebuchadnezzar, we are under no necessity in this regard to say back a word to you. If it is to be, our God whom we are serving is able to rescue us. Out of the burning fiery furnace and out of your hand, O king, he will rescue us. But if not, let it become known to you, O king, that your gods are not the ones we are serving, and the image of gold that you have set up we will not worship.'"

Dan. 3:19-28 "Then it was that Nebuchadnezzar himself got filled with fury . . . And to certain able-bodied men of vital energy who were in his military force he said to bind Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego, in order to throw them into the burning fiery furnace. . . . At that time Nebuchadnezzar the king himself became frightened and he rose up in a hurry. He was answering and saying to his high royal officials: '. . . Look! I am beholding four able-bodied men walking about free in the midst of the fire, and there is no hurt to them, and the appearance of the fourth one is resembling a son of the gods.' Then it was that Nebuchadnezzar approached the door of the burning fiery furnace. He was answering and saying: 'Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego, you servants of the Most High God, step out and come here!' At that time Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego were stepping out from the midst of the fire. . . . the fire had had no power over their bodies, and not a hair of their head had been singed, and even their mantles had not been changed and the smell of fire itself had not come onto them. Nebuchadnezzar was answering and saying: 'Blessed be the God of Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego, who sent his angel and rescued his servants that trusted in him and that changed the very word of the king and gave over their bodies, because they would not serve and would not worship any god at all except their own God.'"

What national flags and flag ceremonies are

"[Historian] Carlton Hayes pointed out long ago that the ritual of flag-worship and oath-taking in an American school is a religious observance. Little boys and girls, in a school from which religion in the old sense is barred, solemnly rising each morning and reciting together the 'American's Creed' are performing a religious exercise as truly as if they began the day with 'I believe in God the Father Almighty' or asserted that 'There is no God but God.' And that these daily rituals are religious has been at last affirmed by the Supreme Court in a series of cases."—*The American Character* (New York; 1956), Denis W. Brogan, pp. 163, 164.

"The flag, like the cross, is sacred. . . . The rules and regulations relative to human attitude toward national standards use strong, expressive words, as, 'Service to the Flag,' . . . 'Reverence for the Flag,' 'Devotion to the Flag.'"—*The Encyclopedia Americana* (New York; 1942), Vol. XI, p. 316.

"Early flags were almost purely of a religious character. . . . The national banner of England for centuries—the red cross of St. George—was a religious one; in fact the aid of religion seems ever to have been sought to give sanctity to national flags, and the origin of many can be traced to a sacred banner."—*The Encyclopædia Britannica* (Chicago; 1946), Vol. 9, p. 343.

"The story of the origin of our National flag parallels the story of the origin of our country. As our country received its birthright from the peoples of many lands who were gathered on these shores to found a new nation, so did the pattern of the Stars and Stripes rise from several origins back in the mists of antiquity to become emblazoned on the standards of our infant Republic.

"The star is a symbol of the heavens and the divine goal to which man has aspired from time immemorial; the stripe is symbolic of the rays of light emanating from the sun. Both themes have long been represented on the standards of nations, from the banners of the astral worshippers of ancient Egypt and Babylon to the 12-starred flag of the Spanish Conquistadors under Cortez. Continuing in favor, they spread to the striped standards of Holland and the West India Company in the 17th century and to the present patterns of stars and stripes on the flags of several nations of Europe, Asia, and the Americas."—*Our Flag* (Washington, D.C.; 1962), published by the Office of Armed Forces Information and Education, Department of Defense, p. 1.

"In a public ceremony presided over by the vice president of the [Military Supreme] Court, on the 19th of November, honors were shown to the Brazilian flag. . . . After the flag was hoisted, Minister General of the Army Tristao de Alencar Araripe expressed himself concerning the commemoration in this manner: '. . . flags have become a divinity of patriotic religion which imposes worship. . . . The flag is venerated and worshiped, every moment of one's life, with profound, pure and almost inborn sentiments of love. . . . The flag is worshiped, just as the Fatherland is worshiped. . . . The flag is venerated, just as the Fatherland is venerated, giving to it all of oneself and placing above one's own self even the sacrifice of one's life. . . . Worship, veneration, sacrifice, mark well the divine essence of this symbol. . . . It is fitting that on this day, consecrated to the unforgettable divinity—the national flag—emphasis be given to this worship." —*Diario de Justiça*, February 16, 1956, p. 1906. Federal Capital, Brazil.

"Patriotic songs or airs played or sung on ceremonial occasions, fêtes, and other public gatherings as a mark of respect to the country are generally known as national anthems or hymns. There is no very marked difference between a national hymn and an anthem. . . . It may be an air without words or a march played by bands or orchestras to symbolize patriotism and loyalty. Love of fatherland and pride in one's country are the keynotes of most national anthems, and in many, religious feeling is blended with patriotic sentiment."—*The Encyclopedia Americana* (New York; 1956), Vol. 19, p. 732.

Attitude of early Christians toward patriotic ceremonies

"To hold this motley collection of peoples in a common allegiance, to give them something like a national flag as a symbol of this unity, the emperor was deified. . . . Simple rites of sacrifice to him were added to local religions and local rites. . . . The Christians, however, were as rigorous monotheists as the Jews; they could not sacrifice to the emperor any more than the Jews of old could sacrifice to Baal. . . . 'Render therefore unto Caesar the things that are Caesar's; and unto God the things that are God's.' (Matthew 22:21) But sacrifice was a thing of God's. The true Christian, then, could not bring himself to make what to an outsider was merely a decent gesture, like raising one's hat today when the flag goes by in a parade."—*A History of Civilization* (Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey; 1955), Crane Brinton, John B. Christopher, and Robert L. Wolff, Vol. I, p. 137.

"Christians refused to . . . sacrifice to the emperor's genius —roughly equivalent today to refusing to salute the flag or repeat the oath of allegiance. . . . Very few of the Christians recanted, although an altar with a fire burning on it was generally kept in the arena for their convenience. All a prisoner had to do was scatter a pinch of incense on the flame and he was given a Certificate of Sacrifice and turned free. It was also carefully explained to him that he was not worshiping the emperor; merely acknowledging the divine character of the emperor as head of the Roman state. Still, almost no Christians availed themselves of the chance to escape."—*Those About to Die* (New York; 1958), Daniel P. Mannix, pp. 135, 137.

"Rome had become gradually full of people espousing foreign cults, who on demand would swear allegiance to the divine spirit of the emperor. The Christians, however, strong in their faith, would take no such oath of loyalty. And because they did not swear allegiance to what we would to-day consider as analogous to the *flag*, they were considered politically dangerous." —*The Book of Culture* (New York; 1934), Ethel Rose Peyser, p. 549.

Servants of Jehovah Under Divine Command to Walk in Ways of Peace

Rom. 12:18 "As far as it depends upon you, be peaceable with all men."

Isa. 2:4 "[Jehovah] will certainly render judgment among the nations and set matters straight respecting many peoples. And they will have to beat their swords into plowshares and their spears into pruning shears. Nation will not lift up sword against nation, neither will they learn war any more."

Attitude of early Christians toward military service

"They refused to take any active part in the civil administration or the military defence of the empire. . . . it was impossible that the Christians, without renouncing a more sacred duty, could assume the character of soldiers, of magistrates, or of princes."—*History of Christianity* (New York; 1891), Edward Gibbon, pp. 162, 163.

"The army suffered even more than the civil services. Even in the second century, Christianity had affirmed that 'it is not right to be a man of the sword, . . .' and that 'a son of peace, whom it becometh not even to engage in a litigation, should still less take part in a battle,' had affirmed the incompatibility of military service with Christianity."—*A Short History of Rome* (New York; 1919), Guglielmo Ferrero and Corrado Barbagallo, p. 382.

"A careful review of all the information available goes to show that, until the time of Marcus Aurelius, no Christian became a soldier; and no soldier, after becoming a Christian, remained in military service."—*The Rise of Christianity* (London; 1947), Ernest William Barnes, then Bishop of Birmingham, p. 333.

"We who were filled with war, and mutual slaughter, and every wickedness, have each through the whole earth changed our warlike weapons,—our swords into ploughshares, and our spears into implements of tillage,—and we cultivate piety, righteousness, philanthropy, faith, and hope, which we have from the Father Himself through Him who was crucified."—Justin Martyr in "Dialogue with Trypho, a Jew," (2d century C.E.), *The Ante-Nicene Fathers* (Grand Rapids, Michigan), Alexander Roberts and James Donaldson, editors, Vol. I, p. 254.

"The first Christians thought it was wrong to fight, and would not serve in the army even when the Empire needed soldiers." —*The New World's Foundations in the Old* (Boston; 1929), Ruth West, Head of the Department of History in the Lewis and Clark High School in Spokane, and Willis Mason West, Sometime Professor of History in the University of Minnesota, p. 131.

"Its members refused to enter the army or to take any part in war. . . . Origen . . . remarks that 'the Christian Church cannot engage in war against any nation. They have learned from their Leader that they are children of peace.' In that period many Christians were martyred for refusing military service. On March 12, 295, Maximilian, the son of a famous Roman veteran, was called upon to serve in the Roman army and he refused, saying simply: 'I am a Christian.' "—H. Ingli James, quoted in *Treasury of the Christian World* (New York; 1953), edited by A. Gordon Nasby, p. 369.

See also the main heading "War," pages 491, 492.

Jehovah's Witnesses Not Subversive Toward Any Human Government; Their Position Is Strictly Religious

"Perhaps the most notable thing about the Witnesses is their insistence upon their primary allegiance to God, before any other power in the world. It was this that brought them into conflict with the State at two major points, first in the refusal of their children to salute the flag, and second in their refusal to participate in the war. . . . most of those were imprisoned because they insisted on their right to the 4D classification, which means deferment as ministers of religion. This the government refused to allow. But there is a deeper reason which sets the Witnesses apart from war. That is the principle of neutrality."—*These Also Believe* (New York; 1950), Charles S. Braden, Professor of the History and Literature of Religions, Northwestern University, pp. 380, 381.

"In 1936 the Gobitis children, aged twelve and ten, had refused to join other pupils in the flag salute, as ordered by the Minersville, Pennsylvania, School Board, and they were expelled from the town's grammar school. Their refusal did not mean that they were unpatriotic or that they did not love their country. It simply meant that, as they read the Scriptures, the flag salute violated the Biblical injunction against bowing down to a graven image."—*Harlan Fiske Stone: Pillar of the Law* (New York; 1956), Alpheus Thomas Mason, p. 525.

"Jehovah's Witnesses, probably more than any other denomination, base *all* their actions on their religious beliefs. . . . Jehovah's Witnesses justify their refusal to salute the flag on two grounds, both stemming from Exodus 20:3-5. . . . The key assumption is that saluting a flag constitutes an act of religious devotion. . . . This view, while odd, is not entirely without biblical support. . . . [Daniel 3:1-30] . . . . If saluting is a religious act, then it is forbidden by God's law *however worthy the object of respect.* In other words, refusal to salute need imply no disrespect for flag or country; it is the particular mode of showing respect which is objectionable."—*Render Unto Caesar, The Flag Salute Controversy* (Chicago; 1962), David R. Manwaring, assistant professor of political science, Hobart and William Smith Colleges, pp. 17, 32, 33.

"They [the early Christians] lived quiet, moral, indeed model lives. . . . In every respect except that single matter of incense-burning they were exemplary citizens. . . . The trouble in which the Christians consequently found themselves was not wholly unlike the trouble in which, during the war years, that aggressive sect known as Jehovah's Witnesses found itself in the United States over the matter of saluting the national flag."—*20 Centuries of Christianity* (New York; 1959), Paul Hutchinson and Winifred E. Garrison, p. 31.

The Supreme Court of Canada, in *Boucher v. The King* (1950), 96 Can. Cr. Cases 48, rejected the contention that Jehovah's witnesses were violators of Canadian sedition laws.

The Supreme Court of South Africa, in *The Magistrate, Bulawayo v. Kabungo*, 1938 S. A. Law Reports 304-316, ruled that the literature of Jehovah's witnesses did not violate the Sedition Act of Southern Rhodesia.

The High Court of Australia, in *Adelaide Company of Jehovah's Witnesses, Inc., v. The Commonwealth* (1943), 67 C. L. R. 116, 124, ruled that Jehovah's witnesses were not engaged in any seditious enterprise and that their literature was not seditious.

Charge that Jehovah's Witnesses Are Subversive No More True than It Was of Jesus Christ and Apostles

John 19:12 "Pilate kept on seeking how to release him [Jesus]. But the Jews shouted, saying: 'If you release this man, you are not a friend of Caesar. Every man making himself a king speaks against Caesar.'"

Acts 16:19-21 "They laid hold of Paul and Silas and dragged them into the market place to the rulers, and, leading them up to the civil magistrates, they said: 'These men are disturbing our city very much, they being Jews, and they are publishing customs that it is not lawful for us to take up or practice, seeing we are Romans.'"

Such false charges usually instigated by religious opposers

Luke 23:13-15 "Pilate then called the chief priests and the rulers and the people together and said to them: 'You brought this man to me as one inciting the people to revolt, and, look! I examined him in front of you but found in this man no ground for the charges you are bringing against him. In fact, neither did Herod, for he sent him back to us; and, look! nothing deserving of death has been committed by him.'"

Acts 24:1-5 "The high priest Ananias came down with some older men and a public speaker, a certain Tertullus, and they gave information to the governor against Paul. When he was called, Tertullus started accusing him, saying: '. . . Your Excellency Felix . . . we have found this man a pestilent fellow and stirring up seditions among all the Jews throughout the inhabited earth.'"

Obedience

Obedience to God Required of All

Eccl. 12:13 "The conclusion of the matter, everything having been heard, is: Fear the true God and keep his commandments. For this is the whole obligation of man."

1 Sam. 15:22 "Does Jehovah have as much delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices as in obeying the voice of Jehovah? Look! To obey is better than a sacrifice, to pay attention than the fat of rams."

Deut. 10:12, 13 "Now, O Israel, what is Jehovah your God asking of you but to fear Jehovah your God, so as to walk in all his ways and to love him and to serve Jehovah your God with all your heart and all your soul; to keep the commandments of Jehovah and his statutes that I am commanding you today, for your good?"

Heb. 5:8 "Although he was a Son, [Jesus] learned obedience from the things he suffered."

Jas. 1:22 "Become doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving yourselves with false reasoning."

Takes priority over obligations to humans

Acts 5:29 "Peter and the other apostles said: 'We must obey God as ruler rather than men.'"

Acts 4:18-20 "They called them and charged them, nowhere to make any utterance or to teach upon the basis of the name

of Jesus. But in reply Peter and John said to them: 'Whether it is righteous in the sight of God to listen to you rather than to God, judge for yourselves. But as for us, we cannot stop speaking about the things we have seen and heard.' "

Obedience should spring from the heart; not an unpleasant burden

Ps. 112:1 "Happy is the man in fear of Jehovah, in whose commandments he has taken very much delight."

Ps. 119:11 "In my heart I have treasured up your saying, in order that I may not sin against you."

1 John 5:3 "His commandments are not burdensome."

Ps. 119:112 "I have inclined my heart to do your regulations to time indefinite, down to the last."

Ezra 7:10 "Ezra himself had prepared his heart to consult the law of Jehovah and to do it and to teach in Israel regulation and justice."

Rom. 6:17 "You became obedient from the heart to that form of teaching to which you were handed over."

Love demonstrated by obedience

1 John 5:2, 3 "By this we gain the knowledge that we are loving the children of God, when we are loving God and doing his commandments. For this is what the love of God means, that we observe his commandments."

2 John 6 "This is what love means, that we go on walking according to his commandments."

Obedience an expression of faith

Rom. 16:26 "The prophetic scriptures among all the nations in accord with the command of the everlasting God to promote obedience by faith."

Heb. 11:8 "By faith Abraham, when he was called, obeyed in going out into a place he was destined to receive as an inheritance; and he went out, although not knowing where he was going."

Heb. 11:17 "By faith Abraham, when he was tested, as good as offered up Isaac, and the man that had gladly received the promises attempted to offer up his only-begotten son."

Blessings come as a result of obedience

Matt. 7:21 "Not everyone saying to me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter into the kingdom of the heavens, but the one doing the will of my Father who is in the heavens will."

1 John 3:22 "Whatever we ask we receive from him, because we are observing his commandments and are doing the things that are pleasing in his eyes."

Jer. 7:23 "Obey my voice, and I will become your God, and you yourselves will become my people; and you must walk in all the way that I shall command you, in order that it may go well with you."

Lev. 26:3-6 "If you continue walking in my statutes and keeping my commandments and you do carry them out, I shall also certainly give your showers of rain at their proper time, and the land will indeed give its yield, and the tree of the field will give its fruit. And your threshing will certainly reach to your grape gathering, and the grape gathering will reach to the sowing of seed; and you will indeed eat your bread to satisfaction and dwell in security in your land. And I will put peace in the land, and you will indeed lie down, with no one making you tremble; and I will make the injurious wild beast cease out of the land, and a sword will not pass through your land."

Disobedience leads to death

Gen. 2:16, 17; 3:17-19 "Jehovah God also laid this command upon the man: 'From every tree of the garden you may eat to satisfaction. But as for the tree of the knowledge of good and bad you must not eat from it, for in the day you eat from it you will positively die.' " "And to Adam he said: 'Because you listened to your wife's voice and took to eating from the tree concerning which I gave you this command, "You must not eat from it," . . . In the sweat of your face you will eat bread until you return to the ground, for out of it you were taken. For dust you are and to dust you will return.' "

Rom. 5:19 "Just as through the disobedience of the one man many were constituted sinners, likewise also through the obedience of the one person many will be constituted righteous."

2 Thess. 1:8, 9 "He brings vengeance upon those who do not know God and those who do not obey the good news about our Lord Jesus. These very ones will undergo the judicial punishment of everlasting destruction from before the Lord."

Rom. 6:16 "Do you not know that if you keep presenting yourselves to anyone as slaves to obey him, you are slaves of him because you obey him, either of sin with death in view or of obedience with righteousness in view?"

Obedience to Be Shown to Jesus Christ

John 14:15, 21 "If you love me, you will observe my commandments. He that has my commandments and observes them, that one is he who loves me. In turn he that loves me will be loved by my Father."

Heb. 5:9 "He became responsible for everlasting salvation to all those obeying him."

1 John 2:3-6 "By this we have the knowledge that we have come to know him, namely, if we continue observing his commandments. He that says: 'I have come to know him,' and yet is not observing his commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in this person. But whoever does observe his word, truthfully in this person the love of God has been made perfect. . . . He that says he remains in union with him is under obligation himself also to go on walking just as that one walked."

Acts 3:12, 18, 22, 23 "Peter . . . said to the people: '. . . God has fulfilled the things he announced beforehand through the mouth of all the prophets, that his Christ would suffer. In fact, Moses said, "Jehovah God will raise up for you from among your brothers a prophet like me. You must listen to him according to all the things he speaks to you. Indeed, any soul that does not listen to that Prophet will be completely destroyed from among the people." ' "

Be Obedient to Overseers in Christian Congregation

Heb. 13:17 "Be obedient to those who are taking the lead among you and be submissive, for they are keeping watch over your souls as those who will render an account; that they may do this with joy and not with sighing, for this would be damaging to you."

Wives to Be Obedient to Husbands, Out of Love and Deep Respect

Titus 2:4, 5 "Recall the young women to their senses to love their husbands . . . subjecting themselves to their own husbands, so that the word of God may not be spoken of abusively."

Eph. 5:22, 24 "Let wives be in subjection to their husbands as to the Lord. In fact, as the congregation is in subjection to the Christ, so let wives also be to their husbands in everything."

Col. 3:18 "You wives, be in subjection to your husbands, as it is becoming in the Lord."

1 Pet. 3:1, 2 "You wives, be in subjection to your own husbands . . with deep respect."

Children to Obey Parents; It Is God's Righteous Arrangement

Eph. 6:1 "Children, be obedient to your parents in union with the Lord, for this is righteous."

Prov. 30:17 "The eye that holds a father in derision and that despises obedience to a mother —the ravens of the torrent valley will pick it out and the sons of the eagle will eat it up."

Col. 3:20 "You children, be obedient to your parents in everything, for this is well-pleasing in the Lord."

Prov. 23:22 "Listen to your father who caused your birth, and do not despise your mother just because she has grown old."

Obedience to One's Master or Secular Employer—Not Only When Being Watched

Eph. 6:5 "You slaves, be obedient to those who are your masters in a fleshly sense."

Col. 3:22 "You slaves, be obedient in everything to those who are your masters in a fleshly sense, not with acts of eyeservice, as men pleasers, but with sincerity of heart, with fear of Jehovah."

1 Pet. 2:18 "Let house servants be in subjection to their owners with all due fear, not only to the good and reasonable, but also to those hard to please."

Obedience to Political Governments a Christian Requirement

Titus 3:1 "Continue reminding them to be in subjection and be obedient to governments and authorities as rulers."

1 Pet. 2:13, 14 "For the Lord's sake subject yourselves to every human creation: whether to a king as being superior or to governors as being sent by him."

Rom. 13:1 "Let every soul be in subjection to the superior authorities."

Organization (Jehovah's)

Jehovah a God of Order, the Organizer of His Creatures

1 Cor. 14:33, 40 "God is a God, not of disorder, but of peace. . . . But let all things take place decently and by arrangement."

1 Cor. 12:18, 28 "Now God has set the members in the body, each one of them, just as he pleased. And God has set the respective ones in the congregation, first, apostles; second, prophets; third, teachers; then powerful works; then gifts of healings; helpful services, abilities to direct, different tongues."

Jehovah's Organization Designed to Accomplish Work in Harmony with His Purpose

John 4:34 "Jesus said to them: 'My food is for me to do the will of him that sent me and to finish his work.'"

2 Tim. 2:15 "Do your utmost to present yourself approved to God, a workman with nothing to be ashamed of, handling the word of the truth aright."

1 Cor. 3:9 "We are God's fellow workers. You people are God's field under cultivation, God's building."

Eph. 1:9-12 "He made known to us the sacred secret of his will. It is according to his good pleasure which he purposed in himself for an administration at the full limit of the appointed times, namely, to gather all things together again in the Christ, the things in the heavens and the things on the earth. Yes, in him, in union with whom we were also assigned as heirs, in

that we were foreordained according to the purpose of him who operates all things according to the way his will counsels, that we should serve for the praise of his glory."

Entire Organization Functions Theocratically, from God (*Theós*) Down

1 Cor. 11:3 "I want you to know that the head of every man is the Christ; in turn the head of a woman is the man; in turn the head of the Christ is God."

1 Cor. 15:27, 28 "For God 'subjected all things under his feet.' But when he says that 'all things have been subjected,' it is evident that it is with the exception of the one who subjected all things to him. But when all things will have been subjected to him, then the Son himself will also subject himself to the One who subjected all things to him, that God may be all things to everyone."

Jehovah's Vast Organization of Heavenly Creatures Likened to a City and a Mother

Heb. 12:22 "You have approached a Mount Zion and a city of the living God, heavenly Jerusalem, and myriads of angels."

Gal. 4:26 "The Jerusalem above is free, and she is our mother."

See also Isa. 54:1-13; and the heading "Angels," pages 9-13.

Christ's bride, made up of persons taken from earth, also likened to a city

Rev. 21:9-14 "One of the seven angels . . . spoke with me and said: 'Come here, I will show you the bride, the Lamb's wife.' So he carried me away in the power of the spirit to a great and lofty mountain, and he showed me the holy city Jerusalem coming down out of heaven from God and having the glory of God. Its radiance was like a most precious stone, as a jasper stone shining crystal-clear. It had a great and lofty wall and had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names were inscribed which are those of the twelve tribes of the sons of Israel. On the east were three gates, and on the north three gates, and on the south three gates, and on the west three gates. The wall of the city also had twelve foundation stones, and on them the twelve names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb."

See also Rev. 14:1-5; and the main heading "Bride of Christ," pages 57-59.

Heavenly Organization Works Closely with Earthly, Providing Strong Support

2 Ki. 6:15-17 "When the minister of the man of the true God rose early to get up, and went out, why, there a military force was surrounding the city with horses and war chariots. At once his attendant said to him: 'Alas, my master! What shall we do?' But he said: 'Do not be afraid, for there are more who are with us than those who are with them.' And Elisha began to pray and say: 'O Jehovah, open his eyes, please, that he may see.' Immediately Jehovah opened the attendant's eyes, so that he saw; and, look! the mountainous region was full of horses and war chariots of fire all around Elisha."

Heb. 1:14 "Are they not all spirits for public service, sent forth to minister for those who are going to inherit salvation?"

Ps. 34:7 "The angel of Jehovah is camping all around those fearing him, and he rescues them."

Acts 5:18-20 "They laid hands upon the apostles and put them in the public place of custody. But during the night Jehovah's angel opened the doors of the prison, brought them out and said: 'Be on your way, and, having taken a stand in the temple,

keep on speaking to the people all the sayings about this life.'"

Jesus Christ, the One Through Whom God's Heavenly Organization Was Formed, Personally Instructed and Trained His Apostles as Nucleus of Visible Christian Organization

Col. 1:15, 16 "He is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of all creation; because by means of him all other things were created in the heavens and upon the earth, the things visible and the things invisible, no matter whether they are thrones or lordships or governments or authorities. *All other things have* been created through him and for him."

John 13:13-15 "You address me, 'Teacher,' and, 'Lord,' and you speak rightly, for I am such. . . . I set the pattern for you, that, just as I did to you, you should do also."

Matt. 10:5-28 "These twelve Jesus sent forth, giving them these orders: '. . . As you go, preach, saying, "The kingdom of the heavens has drawn near." . . . You received free, give free. Do not procure gold or silver or copper for your girdle purses, or a food pouch for the trip, or two undergarments, or sandals or a staff; for the worker deserves his food. Into whatever city or village you enter, search out who in it is deserving, and stay there until you leave. When you are entering into the house, greet the household; and if the house is deserving, let the peace you wish it come upon it; but if it is not deserving, let the peace from you return upon you. Wherever anyone does not take you in or listen to your words, on going out of that house or that city shake the dust off your feet. . . . When they persecute you in one city, flee to another; . . . And do not become fearful of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul; but rather be in fear of him that can destroy both soul and body in Gehenna.'"

Acts 4:13 "When they beheld the outspokenness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were men unlettered and ordinary, they got to wondering. And they began to recognize about them that they used to be with Jesus."

Holy Spirit Continued to Provide Close Link with Heavenly Organization

John 14:25, 26 "While remaining with you I have spoken these things to you. But the helper, the holy spirit, which the Father will send in my name, that one will teach you all things and bring back to your minds all the things I told you."

Acts 1:8 "You will receive power when the holy spirit arrives upon you, and you will be witnesses of me both in Jerusalem and in all Judea and Samaria and to the most distant part of the earth."

Acts 2:1-4, 14, 16-18 "Now while the day of the festival of Pentecost was in progress they were all together at the same place, and suddenly there occurred from heaven a noise just like that of a rushing stiff breeze, and it filled the whole house in which they were sitting. And tongues as if of fire became visible to them and were distributed about, and one sat upon each one of them, and they all became filled with holy spirit and started to speak with different tongues, just as the spirit was granting them to make utterance. But Peter stood up . . . and made this utterance to them: '. . . this is what was said through the prophet Joel, "'And in the last days,' God says, 'I shall pour out some of my spirit upon every sort of flesh, and your sons and your daughters will prophesy and your young men will see visions and your old men will dream dreams; and even upon my men slaves and upon my women slaves I will pour out some of my spirit in those days, and they will prophesy.'"'"

Acts 15:28 "The holy spirit and we ourselves have favored adding no further burden to you, except these necessary things."

See also Acts 10:44-48.

Some Christians anointed with spirit, to rule with Christ in heaven over all creation

2 Cor. 1:21, 22 "But he who guarantees that you and we belong to Christ and he who has anointed us is God. He has also put his seal upon us and has *given us the token of what is* to come, that is, the spirit, in our hearts."

Luke 22:29, 30 "I make a covenant with you, just as my Father has made a covenant with me, for a kingdom, that you may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones to judge the twelve tribes of Israel."

Rev. 20:6 "They will be priests of God and of the Christ, and will rule as kings with him for the thousand years."

God's Inspired Word the Bible Guides His People and Sanctifies Them, or Sets Them Apart from the World

Ps. 119:105 "Your word is a lamp to my foot, and a light to my roadway."

2 Pet. 1:19 "We have the prophetic word made more sure; and you are doing well in paying attention to it as to a lamp shining in a dark place, until day dawns and a daystar rises, in your hearts."

John 17:17 "Sanctify them by means of the truth; your word is truth."

Eph. 5:25, 26 "The Christ also loved the congregation and delivered up himself for it, that he might sanctify it, cleansing it with the bath of water by means of the word."

Provision Made for Visible Spirit-appointed Overseers

Eph. 4:11, 12 "He gave some as apostles, some as prophets, some as evangelizers, some as shepherds and teachers, with a view to the training of the holy ones, for ministerial work, for *the building up of the body of* the Christ."

Acts 20:28 "Pay attention to yourselves and to all the flock, among which the holy spirit has appointed you overseers, to shepherd the congregation of God."

I Pet. 5:1-3 "To the older men among you I give this exhortation. . . . Shepherd the flock of *God in your care, not under compulsion*, but willingly; neither for love of dishonest gain, but eagerly; neither as lording it over those who are God's inheritance, but becoming examples to the flock."

See also the main heading "Overseers," pages 366-371.

Recognition of Visible Governing Body Has Strengthening Effect

Acts 16:4, 5 "Now as they traveled on through the cities they would deliver to those there for observance the decrees that had been decided upon by the apostles and older men who were in Jerusalem. Therefore, indeed, the congregations continued to be made firm in *the faith* and to increase in number from day to day."

See also Acts 15:1-31.

"Faithful and Discreet Slave," Those Called to Heavenly Kingdom, Entrusted with Great Responsibility

Matt. 24:45-47 "Who really is the faithful and discreet slave whom his master appointed over his domestics, to give them their food at the proper time? Happy is that slave if his master on arriving finds him doing so. Truly I say to you, He will appoint him over all his belongings."

Luke 12:32, 35, 36, 42, 44 "Have no fear, little flock, because your Father has approved of giving you the kingdom. Let your loins be girded and your lamps be burning, and you yourselves be like men waiting for their master when he returns from the marriage, so that at his arriving and knocking they may at once open to him. . . . Who really is the faithful steward, the discreet one, whom his master will appoint over his body of attendants to keep giving them their measure of food supplies at the proper time? I tell you truthfully, He will appoint him over all his belongings."

Work Assigned to God's Visible Organization Now

Matt. 24:14 "This good news of the kingdom will be preached in all the inhabited earth for a witness to all the nations; and then the end will come."

Matt. 28:19, 20 "Go therefore and make disciples of people of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the holy spirit, teaching them to observe all the things I have commanded you."

1 Pet. 2:9 "You are 'a chosen race, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a people for special possession, that you should declare abroad the excellencies' of the one that called you out of darkness into his wonderful light."

See also the main heading "Preaching the Good News," pages 384-390.

Important to Work Closely with Organization, Cooperate with Appointed Overseers

Heb. 13:7, 17 "Remember those who are taking the lead among you, who have spoken the word of God to you, and as you contemplate how their conduct turns out imitate their faith. Be obedient to those who are taking the lead among you and be submissive, for they are keeping watch over your souls as those who will render an account."

Heb. 10:24, 25 "Let us consider one another to incite to love and fine works, not forsaking the gathering of ourselves together, as some have the custom, but encouraging one another, and all the more so as you behold the day drawing near."

Prov. 18:1 "One isolating himself will seek his own selfish longing; against all practical wisdom he will break forth."

John 15:5, 8 "I am the vine, you are the branches. He that remains in union with me, and I in union with him, this one bears much fruit; because apart from me you can do nothing at all. My Father is glorified in this, that you keep bearing much fruit and prove yourselves my disciples."

Col. 2:19 "Holding fast to the head, to the one from whom all the body, being supplied and harmoniously joined together by means of its joints and ligaments, goes on growing with the growth that God gives."

Overseers

Qualifications to Be Met by Christian Overseers

1 Tim. 3:1-7 "If any man is reaching out for an office of overseer, he is desirous of a fine work. The overseer should therefore be irreprehensible, a husband of one wife, moderate in habits, sound in mind, orderly, hospitable, qualified to teach, not a drunken brawler, not a smiter, but reasonable, not belligerent, not a lover of money, a man presiding over his own household in a fine manner, having children in subjection with all seriousness; (if indeed any man does not know how to preside over his own household, how will he take care of God's congregation?) not a newly converted man, for fear that he might get puffed up with pride and fall into the judgment passed upon the Devil. Moreover, he should also have a fine testimony from people on the outside, in order that he might not fall into reproach and a snare of the Devil."

Titus 1:5-9 "For this reason I left you in Crete, that you might correct the things that were defective and might make appointments of older men in city after city, as I gave you orders; if there is any man free from accusation, a husband of one wife, having believing children that were not under a charge of debauchery nor unruly. For an overseer must be free from accusation as God's steward, not self-willed, not prone to wrath, not a drunken brawler, not a smiter, not greedy of dishonest gain, but hospitable, a lover of goodness, sound in mind, righteous, loyal, self-controlled, holding firmly to the faithful word as respects his art of teaching, that he may be able both to exhort by the teaching that is healthful and to reprove those who contradict."

See also the main heading "Maturity," pages 342, 343.

Qualifications of Assistants, the Ministerial Servants

1 Tim. 3:8-13 "Ministerial servants should likewise be serious, not double-tongued, not giving themselves to a lot of wine, not greedy of dishonest gain, holding the sacred secret of the faith with a clean conscience. Also, let these be tested as to fitness first, then let them serve as ministers, as they are free from accusation. . . . Let ministerial servants be husbands of one wife, presiding in a fine manner over children and their own households. For the men who minister in a fine manner are acquiring for themselves a fine standing and great freeness of speech in the faith in connection with Christ Jesus."

Appointed by Holy Spirit, Through Visible Organization

Acts 20:28 "Pay attention to yourselves and to all the flock, among which the holy spirit has appointed you overseers."

Acts 13:2-5; 14:23 "As they were publicly ministering to Jehovah and fasting, the holy spirit said: 'Of all persons set Barnabas and Saul apart for me for the work to which I have called them.' Then they fasted and prayed and laid their hands upon them and let them go. Accordingly these men, sent out by the holy spirit, went down to Seleucia, and from there they sailed away to Cyprus. And when they got to be in Salamis they began publishing the word of God in the synagogues of the Jews." "They appointed older men to office for them in the congregation and, offering prayer with fastings, they committed them to Jehovah in whom they had become believers."

See also Acts 6:4, 5.

Congregation Is God's

1 Pet. 5:2 "Shepherd the flock of God in your care."

Acts 20:28 "Pay attention to yourselves and to all the flock, . . . to shepherd the congregation of God, which he purchased with the blood of his own Son."

See also the main heading "Organization (Jehovah's)," pages 362-366.

Overseers Are Really Servants —of God and to the Congregation

Matt. 23:10, 11 "Neither be called 'leaders,' for your Leader is

one, the Christ. But the greatest one among you must be your minister."

Mark 10:42-44 "Jesus, after calling them to him, said to them: 'You know that those who appear to be ruling the nations lord it over them and their great ones wield authority over them. This is not the way among you; but whoever wants to become great among you must be your minister, and whoever wants to be first among you must be the slave of all."

Heb. 13:17 "They are keeping watch over your souls as those who will render an account."

Serve Jehovah humbly, not seeking glory for self

1 Pet. 5:1, 5, 6 "To the older men among you I give this exhortation . . . But all of you gird yourselves with lowliness of mind toward one another, because God opposes the haughty ones, but he gives undeserved kindness to the humble ones. Humble yourselves, therefore, under the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time."

1 Thess. 2:6 "Neither have we been seeking glory from men, no, either from you or from others."

Phil. 1:1; 2:5-8 "Paul and Timothy, slaves of Christ Jesus, to all the holy ones in union with Christ Jesus who are in Philippi, along with overseers and ministerial servants." "Keep this mental attitude in you that was also in Christ Jesus, who, although he was existing in God's form, gave no consideration to a seizure, namely, that he should be equal to God. No, but he emptied himself and took a slave's form and came to be in the likeness of men. More than that, when he found himself in fashion as a man, he humbled himself and became obedient as far as death, yes, death on a torture stake."

Adhere Closely to Direction of Governing Body

Acts 16:4, 5 "Now as they traveled on through the cities they would deliver to those there for observance the decrees that had been decided upon by the apostles and older men who were in Jerusalem. Therefore, indeed, the congregations continued to be made firm in the faith and to increase in number from day to day."

Acts 2:42 "And they continued devoting themselves to the teaching of the apostles."

Acts 8:14, 15 "When the apostles in Jerusalem heard that Samaria had accepted the word of God, they dispatched Peter and John to them; and these went down and prayed for them to get holy spirit."

Titus 1:1, 5 "Paul, a slave of God and an apostle of Jesus Christ . . . I left you in Crete, that you might correct the things that were defective and might make appointments of older men in city after city, as I gave you orders."

Set Example for Flock, Working Along with Them

1 Pet. 5:2, 3 "Shepherd the flock of God in your care . . . ; becoming examples to the flock."

1 Tim. 4:12 "Become an example to the faithful ones in speaking, in conduct, in love, in faith, in chasteness."

Neh. 5:14-16 "From the day that he commissioned me to become their governor in the land of Judah . . . I myself and my brothers did not eat the bread due the governor. As for the former governors that were prior to me, they had made it heavy upon the people, and they kept taking from them for bread and wine daily forty silver shekels. Also, their attendants themselves domineered over the people. As for me, I did not do that way on account of the fear of God. And, what is more, in the work of this wall I took a hand . . . and all my attendants were collected together there for the work."

See also Ezek. 34:11-17.

Show Loving Concern for Each One in the Congregation

Matt. 18:12-14 "What do you think? If a certain man comes to have a hundred sheep and one of them gets strayed, will he not leave the ninety-nine upon the mountains and set out on a search for the one that is straying? And if he happens to find it, I certainly tell you, he rejoices more over it than over the ninety-nine that have not strayed. Likewise it is not a desirable thing with my Father who is in heaven for one of these little ones to perish."

John 17:12 "When I was with them I used to watch over them on account of your own name which you have given me; and I have kept them, and not one of them is destroyed except the son of destruction, so that the scripture has been fulfilled."

Acts 20:17, 18, 35 "He sent to Ephesus and called for the older men of the congregation. When they got to him he said to them: '. . . I have exhibited to you in all things that by thus laboring you must assist those who are weak, and must bear in mind the words of the Lord Jesus, when he himself said, "There is more happiness in giving than there is in receiving."' "

1 Thess. 2:7, 8, 11, 12 "We became gentle in the midst of you, as when a nursing mother cherishes her own children. So, having a tender affection for you, we were well pleased to impart to you, not only the good news of God, but also our own souls, because you became beloved to us. In harmony with that you well know how, as a father does his children, we kept exhorting each one of you, and consoling and bearing witness to you, to the end that you should go on walking worthily of God who is calling you to his kingdom and glory."

Aid those spiritually sick

Jas. 5:14, 15 "Is there anyone sick among you? Let him call the older men of the congregation to him, and let them pray over him, greasing him with oil in the name of Jehovah. And the prayer of faith will make the indisposed one well, and Jehovah will raise him up. Also, if he has committed sins, it will be forgiven him."

Gal. 6:1 "Brothers, even though a man takes some false step before he is aware of it, you who have spiritual qualifications try to restore such a man in a spirit of mildness."

Safeguard Doctrinal Purity of Congregation

1 Tim. 1:3-7 "Command certain ones not to teach different doctrine, nor to pay attention to false stories and to genealogies, which end up in nothing, but which furnish questions for research rather than a dispensing of anything by God in connection with faith. . . . certain ones have been turned aside into idle talk, wanting to be teachers of law, but not perceiving either the things they are saying or the things about which they are making strong assertions."

Titus 1:9 "Holding firmly to the faithful word as respects his art of teaching, that he may be able both to exhort by the teaching that is healthful and to reprove those who contradict."

See also 2 Cor. 11:2-4.

Be Diligent to Keep Congregation Morally Pure

Jas. 3:17 "The wisdom from above is first of all chaste."

1 Tim. 5:22 "Never lay your hands hastily upon any man; neither be a sharer in the sins of others; preserve yourself chaste."

1 Tim. 5:1, 2 "Do not severely criticize an older man. To the contrary, entreat him as a father, . . . younger women as sisters with all chasteness."

Rev. 2:18, 20 "To the angel of the congregation in Thyatira write: . . . 'I do hold this against you, that you tolerate that woman Jezebel, who calls herself a prophetess, and she teaches and misleads my slaves to commit fornication.'"

1 Cor. 5:1-5, 12, 13 "Actually fornication is reported among you, and such fornication as is not even among the nations, that a wife a certain man has of his father. And are you puffed up, and did you not rather mourn, in order that the man that committed this deed should be taken away from your midst? I for one, although absent in body but present in spirit, have certainly judged already, as if I were present, the man who has worked in such a way as this, that in the name of our Lord Jesus, when you are gathered together, also my spirit with the power of our Lord Jesus, you hand such a man over to Satan for the destruction of the flesh, in order that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord. . . . Do you not judge those inside, while God judges those outside? 'Remove the wicked man from among yourselves.'"

Jude 3, 4 "I found it necessary to write you to exhort you to put up a hard fight for the faith that was once for all time delivered to the holy ones. My reason is that certain men have slipped in who have long ago been appointed by the Scriptures to this judgment, ungodly men, turning the undeserved kindness of our God into an excuse for loose conduct and proving false to our only Owner and Lord, Jesus Christ."

See also the main heading "Disfellowshiping," pages 162-165.

Train Other Faithful Ones for Responsible Work

2 Tim. 2:1, 2 "You, therefore, my child, keep on acquiring power in the undeserved kindness that is in connection with Christ Jesus, and the things you heard from me with the support of many witnesses, these things commit to faithful men, who, in turn, will be adequately qualified to teach others."

See also Matt. 10:5-42.

Look to Jehovah for Guidance in Caring for Responsibilities

1 Pet. 5:1, 7 "Therefore, to the older men among you I give this exhortation, . . . throw all your anxiety upon him, because he cares for you."

Prov. 3:5, 6 "Trust in Jehovah with all your heart and do not lean upon your own understanding. In all your ways take notice of him, and he himself will make your paths straight."

1 Ki. 3:9, 11, 12 "'You must give to your servant an obedient heart to judge your people, to discern between good and bad; for who is able to judge this difficult people of yours?' And God went on to say to him: 'For the reason that you have requested this thing and have not requested for yourself many days nor requested for yourself riches nor requested the soul of your enemies, and you have requested for yourself understanding to hear judicial cases, look! I shall certainly do according to your words.'"

Congregation to Show Loving Regard for Overseers, as Servants Provided by God

1 Thess. 5:12, 13 "Now we request you, brothers, to have regard for those who are working hard among you and presiding over you in the Lord and admonishing you; and to give them more than extraordinary consideration in love because of their work."

Heb. 13:17 "Be obedient to those who are taking the lead among you and be submissive, for they are keeping watch over your souls as those who will render an account; that they may do this with joy and not with sighing, for this would be damaging to you."

1 Tim. 5:17 "Let the older men who preside in a fine way be reckoned worthy of double honor, especially those who work hard in speaking and teaching."

Acts 28:15 "The brothers, when they heard the news about us, came to meet us as far as the Market Place of Appius and Three Taverns and, upon catching sight of them, Paul thanked God and took courage."

Peace

Jehovah Is God of Peace

1 Cor. 14:33 "For God is a God, not of disorder, but of peace."

Rom. 15:33 "May the God who gives peace be with all of you."

Accurate Knowledge of God and His Purposes Necessary to Peace

2 Pet. 1:2, 3 "May undeserved kindness and peace be increased to you by an accurate knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord, forasmuch as his divine power has given us freely all the things that concern life and godly devotion, through the accurate knowledge of the one who called us through glory and virtue."

Prov. 3:13-17 "Happy is the man that has found wisdom, and the man that gets discernment . . . Its ways are ways of pleasantness, and all its roadways are peace."

Peace with God Made Possible for Sinful Humans Through Jesus Christ

Acts 10:35, 36 "In every nation the man that fears him and works righteousness is acceptable to him. He sent out the word to the sons of Israel to declare to them the good news of peace through Jesus Christ: this One is Lord of all others."

Rom. 5:1 "Now that we have been declared righteous as a result of faith, let us enjoy peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ."

Eph. 2:14, 17, 18 "For he is our peace, . . . And he came and declared the good news of peace to you, the ones far off, and peace to those near, because through him we, both peoples, have the approach to the Father by one spirit."

Col. 1:19, 20 "God saw good for all fullness to dwell in him, and through him to reconcile again to himself all other things by making peace through the blood he shed on the torture stake."

See also the main heading "Ransom," pages 408-412.

Earnest Effort to Maintain Peace in Christian Congregation

Eph. 4:1-3 "Walk . . . with complete lowliness of mind and mildness, with long-suffering, putting up with one another in love, earnestly endeavoring to observe the oneness of the spirit in the uniting bond of peace."

Rom. 14:19 "So, then, let us pursue the things making for peace and the things that are upbuilding to one another."

1 Thess. 5:13-15 "Be peaceable with one another. On the other hand, we exhort you, brothers, admonish the disorderly, speak consolingly to the depressed souls, support the weak, be long-suffering toward all. See that no one renders injury for injury to anyone else, but always pursue what is good toward one another and to all others."

Divine wisdom puts moral chastity before peaceableness

Jas. 3:17, 18 "The wisdom from above is first of all chaste, then peaceable . . . Moreover, the fruit of righteousness has its seed sown under peaceful conditions for those who are making peace."

Ministry Carried On in a Peaceable Way

Eph. 6:14, 15 "Stand firm, therefore, with . . . your feet shod with the equipment of the good news of peace."

Matt. 10:12, 13 "When you are entering into the house, greet the household; and if the house is deserving, let the peace you wish it come upon it; but if it is not deserving, let the peace from you return upon you."

2 Tim. 2:24, 25 "A slave of the Lord does not need to fight, but needs to be gentle toward all, qualified to teach, keeping himself restrained under evil, instructing with mildness those not favorably disposed."

Christians Pursue Peace with All Men

Heb. 12:14 "Pursue peace with all people."

Rom. 12:17-19, 21 "Return evil for evil to no one. Provide fine things in the sight of all men. If possible, as far as it depends upon you, be peaceable with all men. Do not avenge yourselves, beloved, but yield place to the wrath; for it is written: 'Vengeance is mine; I will repay, says Jehovah.' Do not let yourself be conquered by the evil, but keep conquering the evil with the good."

Isa. 2:4 "And he will certainly render judgment among the nations and set matters straight respecting many peoples. And they will have to beat their swords into plowshares and their spears into pruning shears. Nation will not lift up sword against nation, neither will they learn war any more."

Peace with God and Christ not set aside for peace with unbelievers

Matt. 10:34, 37 "Do not think I came to put peace upon the earth; I came to put, not peace, but a sword. He that has greater affection for father or mother than for me is not worthy of me; and he that has greater affection for son or daughter than for me is not worthy of me."

Gaining and Retaining Peace of Mind

Matt. 5:9 "Happy are the peaceable."

Phil. 4:7, 8 "The peace of God that excels all thought will guard your hearts and your mental powers by means of Christ Jesus. Finally, brothers, whatever things are true, whatever things are of serious concern, whatever things are righteous, whatever things are chaste, whatever things are lovable, whatever things are well spoken of, whatever virtue there is and whatever praiseworthy thing there is, continue considering these things."

Ps. 119:165 "Abundant peace belongs to those loving your law, and for them there is no stumbling block."

Ps. 4:6-8 "Lift up the light of your face upon us, O Jehovah. You will certainly give a rejoicing in my heart greater than in the time when their grain and their new wine have abounded. In peace I will both lie down and sleep, for you yourself alone, O Jehovah, make me dwell in security."

Worldly Nations Unable to Maintain Lasting Peace

Rev. 6:4 "And another came forth, a fiery-colored horse; and to the one seated upon it there was granted to take peace away from the earth so that they should slaughter one another; and a great sword was given him."

Matt. 24:6, 7 "You are going to hear of wars and reports of wars; . . . but the end is not yet. For nation will rise against nation and kingdom against kingdom."

Isa. 57:21 " 'There is no peace,' my God has said, 'for the wicked ones.' "

See also the main heading "War," page 490.

Jehovah God Through His Prince of Peace to End War, Bring Lasting Peace to All the Earth

Ps. 46:8, 9 "Come, you people, behold the activities of Jehovah, how he has set astonishing events on the earth. He is making wars to cease to the extremity of the earth. The bow he breaks apart and does cut the spear in pieces; the wagons he burns in the fire."

Ps. 37:9, 11 "For evildoers themselves will be cut off, but those hoping in Jehovah are the ones that will possess the earth. But the meek ones themselves will possess the earth, and they will indeed find their exquisite delight in the abundance of peace."

Isa. 9:6, 7 "For there has been a child born to us, there has been a son given to us; and the princely rule will come to be upon his shoulder. And his name will be called Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God, Eternal Father, Prince of Peace. To the abundance of the princely rule and to peace there will be no end."

Ps. 72:7 "In his days the righteous one will sprout, and the abundance of peace until the moon is no more."

See also the heading "Earth and Its Destiny," pages 167-170.

Even men and animals to be at peace with one another

Hos. 2:18 "For them I shall certainly conclude a covenant in that day in connection with the wild beast of the field and with the flying creature of the heavens and the creeping thing of the ground, and the bow and the sword and war I shall break out of the land, and I will make them lie down in security."

Isa. 11:6-9 "And the wolf will actually reside for a while with the male lamb, and with the kid the leopard itself will lie down, and the calf and the maned young lion and the well-fed animal all together; and a mere little boy will be leader over them. And the cow and the bear themselves will feed; together their young ones will lie down. And even the lion will eat straw just like the bull. And the sucking child will certainly play upon the hole of the cobra; and upon the light aperture of a poisonous snake will a weaned child actually put his own hand. They will not do any harm or cause any ruin in all my holy mountain; because the earth will certainly be filled with the knowledge of Jehovah as the waters are covering the very sea."

Persecution

All Christians Must Expect Persecution

2 Tim. 3:12 "All those desiring to live with godly devotion in association with Christ Jesus will also be persecuted."

John 15:20 "Bear in mind the word I said to you, A slave is not greater than his master. If they have persecuted me, they will persecute you also."

Matt. 10:22 "And you will be objects of hatred by all people on account of my name."

Jehovah Strengthens His Servants to Bear Up, When They Rely on Him

Heb. 13:6 "Jehovah is my helper; I will not be afraid. What can man do to me?"

Ps. 55:22 "Throw your burden upon Jehovah himself, and he himself will sustain you. Never will he allow the righteous one to totter."

2 Tim. 4:16-18 "In my first defense no one came to my side, but they all proceeded to forsake me—may it not be put to their account—but the Lord stood near me and infused power into me, that through me the preaching might be fully accomplished and all the nations might hear it; and I was delivered from the lion's mouth. The Lord will deliver me from every wicked work and will save me for his heavenly kingdom."

2 Cor. 12:10 "Therefore I take pleasure in weaknesses, in insults, in cases of need, in persecutions and difficulties, for Christ. For when I am weak, then I am powerful."

Reasons Why Christians Are Persecuted

John 15:19-21, 25 "If you were part of the world, the world would be fond of what is its own. Now because you are no part of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, on this account the world hates you. Bear in mind the word I said to you, A slave is not greater than his master. If they have persecuted me, they will persecute you also; if they have observed my word, they will observe yours also. But they will do all these things against you on account of my name, because they do not know him that sent me. But it is that the word written in their Law may be fulfilled, 'They hated me without cause.'"

John 16:2, 3 "Men will expel you from the synagogue. In fact, the hour is coming when everyone that kills you will imagine he has rendered a sacred service to God. But they will do these things because they have not come to know either the Father or me."

Persecution Takes Many Forms

Verbal abuse

Acts 19:9 "Some went on hardening themselves and not believing, speaking injuriously about The Way before the multitude."

2 Chron. 36:16 "They were continually making jest at the messengers of the true God and despising his words and mocking at his prophets."

Matt. 5:11 "Happy are you when people reproach you and persecute you and lyingly say every sort of wicked thing against you for my sake."

1 Pet. 4:4 "Because you do not continue running with them in this course to the same low sink of debauchery, they are puzzled and go on speaking abusively of you."

Opposition from relatives

Matt. 10:21, 35, 36 "Brother will deliver up brother to death, and a father his child, and children will rise up against parents and will have them put to death. For I came to cause division, with a man against his father, and a daughter against her mother, and a young wife against her mother-in-law. Indeed, a man's enemies will be persons of his own household."

Economic pressure

Rev. 13:16, 17 "And it puts under compulsion all persons, the small and the great, and the rich and the poor, and the free and the slaves, that they should give these a mark in their right hand or upon their forehead, and that nobody might be able to buy or sell except a person having the mark, the name of the wild beast or the number of its name."

Haled before public officials

Matt. 10:18 "You will be haled before governors and kings for my sake, for a witness to them and the nations."

Luke 20:20 "And, after observing him closely, they sent out men secretly hired to pretend that they were righteous, in order that they might catch him in speech, so as to turn him over to the government and to the authority of the governor."

Imprisonment

Rev. 2:10 "Do not be afraid of the things you are about to suffer. Look! The Devil will keep on throwing some of you into prison that you may be fully put to the test."

Luke 21:12 "People will lay their hands upon you and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues and prisons."

Acts 5:18 "They laid hands upon the apostles and put them in the public place of custody."

Acts 8:3 "Saul, though, began to deal outrageously with the congregation. Invading one house after another and, dragging out both men and women, he would turn them over to prison."

Physical abuse while in detention

Matt. 27:29, 30 "They braided a crown out of thorns and put it on his head and a reed in his right hand. And, kneeling before him, they made fun of him . . . And they spit upon him and took the reed and began hitting him upon his head."

Acts 5:40 "They summoned the apostles, flogged them, and ordered them to stop speaking upon the basis of Jesus' name, and let them go."

Acts 16:22, 23 "The civil magistrates, after tearing the outer garments off them, gave the command to beat them with rods. After they had inflicted many stripes upon them, they threw them into prison."

2 Cor. 11:23-25 "In prisons more plentifully, in stripes to an excess, in near-deaths often. By Jews I five times received forty strokes less one, three times I was beaten with rods."

Mob violence

Luke 4:28, 29 "Now all those hearing these things in the synagogue became filled with anger; and they rose up and hurried him outside the city, and they led him to the brow of the mountain upon which their city had been built, in order to throw him down headlong."

Acts 14:19 "Jews arrived from Antioch and Iconium and persuaded the crowds, and they stoned Paul and dragged him outside the city, imagining he was dead."

Acts 17:5 "The Jews, getting jealous, took into their company certain wicked men of the mar-

ket-place idlers and formed a mob and proceeded to throw the city into an uproar. And they assaulted the house of Jason and went seeking to have them brought forth to the rabble."

Killing

Matt. 24:9 "Then people will deliver you up to tribulation and will kill you."

Acts 12:1, 2 "About that particular time Herod the king applied his hands to mistreating some of those of the congregation. He did away with James the brother of John by the sword."

Christian Attitude and Conduct When Undergoing Cruel Persecution

1 Pet. 2:23 "When he was being reviled, he did not go reviling in return. When he was suffering, he did not go threatening, but kept on committing himself to the one who judges righteously."

Acts 16:25 "But about the middle of the night Paul and Silas were praying and praising God with song; yes, the prisoners were hearing them."

1 Cor. 4:12, 13 "When being reviled, we bless; when being persecuted, we bear up; when being defamed, we entreat."

Right Attitude Toward Persecutors

Matt. 5:44 "However, I say to you: Continue to love your enemies and to pray for those persecuting you."

Acts 7:59, 60 "They went on casting stones at Stephen as he made appeal and said: 'Lord Jesus, receive my spirit.' Then, bending his knees, he cried out with a strong voice: 'Jehovah, do not charge this sin against them.' And after saying this he fell asleep in death."

Acts 16:27-32 "The jailer, being awakened out of sleep and seeing the prison doors were open, drew his sword and was about to do away with himself, imagining that the prisoners had escaped. But Paul called out with a loud voice, saying: 'Do not hurt yourself, for we are all here!' So he asked for lights and leaped in and, seized with trembling, he fell down before Paul and Silas. And he brought them outside and said: 'Sirs, what must I do to get saved?' They said: 'Believe on the Lord Jesus and you will get saved, you and your household.' And they spoke the word of Jehovah to him together with all those in his house."

Proper View of the Persecution Itself

Acts 5:41 "These, therefore, went their way from before the Sanhedrin, rejoicing because they had been counted worthy to be dishonored in behalf of his name."

Heb. 11:24-26 "By faith Moses, when grown up, refused to be called the son of the daughter of Pharaoh, choosing to be ill-treated with the people of God rather than to have the temporary enjoyment of sin, because he esteemed the reproach of the Christ as riches greater than the treasures of Egypt; for he looked intently toward the payment of the reward."

Phil. 1:27-29 "Only behave in a manner worthy of the good news about the Christ, . . . standing firm in one spirit, with one soul fighting side by side for the faith of the good news, and in no respect being frightened by your opponents. This very thing is a proof of destruction for them, but of salvation for you; and this indication is from God, because to you the privilege was given in behalf of Christ, not only to put your faith in him, but also to suffer in his behalf."

Resurrection Hope Strengthens One to Remain Steadfast in the Face of the Fiercest Opposition

Rev. 2:10 "Prove yourself faithful even to death, and I will give you the crown of life."

Phil. 3:8, 10, 11 "I do indeed also consider all things to be loss on account of the excelling value of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord. On account of him I have taken the loss of all things and I consider them as a lot of refuse, that I may gain Christ, . . . so as to know him and the power of his resurrection and a sharing in his sufferings, submitting myself to a death like his, to see if I may by any means attain to the earlier resurrection from the dead."

Matt. 10:28, 39 "Do not become fearful of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul ["future life," *ED*] . . . he that loses his soul for my sake will find it."

See also the main heading "Endurance," pages 174-177.

Further Witness Often Results from Persecution

Luke 21:12, 13 "People will lay their hands upon you and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues and prisons, you being haled before kings and governors for the sake of my name. It will turn out to you for a witness."

Acts 8:1, 4 "Saul, for his part, was approving of the murder of [Stephen]. On that day great persecution arose against the congregation that was in Jerusalem; all except the apostles were scattered throughout the regions of Judea and Samaria. However, those who had been scattered went through the land declaring the good news of the word." (See also Acts 11:19-21.)

Phil. 1:12, 13 "Now I desire you to know, brothers, that my affairs have turned out for the advancement of the good news rather than otherwise, so that my prison bonds have become public knowledge in association with Christ among all the praetorian guard and all the rest."

Persecution No Cause to Feel Shame, Become Fearful, Get Discouraged or Quit Serving God

1 Pet. 4:16 "If he suffers as a Christian, let him not feel shame, but let him keep on glorifying God in this name." (See also 2 Tim. 1:8, 12.)

Matt. 10:28 "Do not become fearful of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul; but rather be in fear of him that can destroy both soul and body in Gehenna."

Acts 14:21, 22 "After declaring the good news to that city and making quite a few disciples, they returned . . . strengthening the souls of the disciples, encouraging them to remain in the faith and saying: 'We must enter into the kingdom of God through many tribulations.' "

Acts 4:18-20 "With that they called them and charged them, nowhere to make any utterance or to teach upon the basis of the name of Jesus. But in reply Peter and John said to them: 'Whether it is righteous in the sight of God to listen to you rather than to God, judge for yourselves. But as for us, we cannot stop speaking about the things we have seen and heard.' "

Faithful Endurance Under Persecution Honors Jehovah

1 Pet. 2:19, 20 "For if someone, because of conscience toward God, bears up under grievous things and suffers unjustly, this is an agreeable thing. For what merit is there in it if, when you are sinning and being slapped, you endure it? But if, when you are doing good and you suffer, you endure it, this is a thing agreeable with God."

Job 2:7, 10 "So Satan went out away from the person of Jehovah and struck Job with a malignant boil from the sole of his foot to the crown of his head. . . . In all this Job did not sin with his lips."

Faithfulness Under Opposition Strengthens Fellow Believers

Phil. 1:13, 14 "My prison bonds have become public knowledge in association with Christ among all the praetorian guard and all the rest; and most of the brothers in the Lord, feeling confidence by reason of my prison bonds, are showing all the more courage to speak the word of God fearlessly."

2 Thess. 1:4 "We ourselves take pride in you among the congregations of God because of your endurance and faith in all your persecutions and the tribulations that you are bearing."

Satan the Devil Instigates Persecution of Jehovah's People

Rev. 12:17 "The dragon grew wrathful at the woman, and went off to wage war with the remaining ones of her seed, who observe the commandments of God and have the work of bearing witness to Jesus."

1 Pet. 5:8 "Keep your senses, be watchful. Your adversary, the Devil, walks about like a roaring lion, seeking to devour someone."

Eph. 6:11 "Put on the complete suit of armor from God that you may be able to stand firm against the machinations of the Devil."

Main Human Instigators of Persecution Are Promoters of False Religion

John 11:47, 48, 53 "Consequently the chief priests and the Pharisees gathered the Sanhedrin together and began to say: 'What are we to do, because this man performs many signs? If we let him alone this way, they will all put faith in him, and the Romans will come and take away both our place and our nation.' Therefore from that day on they took counsel to kill him."

Jer. 26:11 "The priests and the prophets began to say to the princes and to all the people: 'To this man [Jeremiah] the judgment of death belongs, because he has prophesied concerning this city just as you have heard with your own ears.'"

See also Acts 19:24-29; Gal. 1:13, 14.

Often seek cooperation of political rulers

Mark 3:6 "At that the Pharisees went out and immediately began holding council with the party followers of Herod against [Jesus], in order to destroy him."

Acts 25:1-3 "Therefore Festus, after entering upon the government of the province, went up three days later to Jerusalem from Caesarea; and the chief priests and the principal men of the Jews gave him information against Paul. So they began to entreat him, asking for themselves as a favor against the man that he would send for him to come to Jerusalem, as they were laying an ambush to do away with him along the road."

Cruel Persecution of Pre-Christian Servants of Jehovah

Acts 7:52 "Which one of the prophets did your forefathers not persecute? Yes, they killed those who made announcement in advance concerning the coming of the righteous One, whose betrayers and murderers you have now become."

Matt. 23:35 "There may come upon you all the righteous blood spilled on earth, from the blood of righteous Abel to the blood of Zechariah son of Barachiah, whom you murdered between the sanctuary and the altar."

See also Heb. 11:32-38; 2 Chron. 16:10.

Prayer

God Does Listen to Prayers and Answer Them

Ps. 66:19 "Truly God has heard; he has paid attention to the voice of my prayer."

Heb. 5:7 "In the days of his flesh Christ offered up supplications and also petitions to the one who was able to save him out of death, with strong outcries and tears, and he was favorably heard for his godly fear."

1 Ki. 18:36-38 "It came about at the time that the grain offering goes up that Elijah the prophet began to approach and say: 'O Jehovah, the God of Abraham, Isaac and Israel, today let it be known that you are God in Israel and I am your servant and it is by your word that I have done all these things. Answer me, O Jehovah, answer me, that this people may know that you, Jehovah, are the true God and you yourself have turned their heart back.' At that the fire of Jehovah came falling and went eating up the burnt offering and the pieces of wood and the stones and the dust, and the water that was in the trench it licked up."

Prayer to Be Directed to Jehovah God

Matt. 6:9 "You must pray, then, this way: 'Our Father in the heavens, let your name be sanctified.'"

Phil. 4:6 "In everything by prayer and supplication along with thanksgiving let your petitions be made known to God."

Ps. 5:1, 2 "To my sayings do give ear, O Jehovah; do understand my sighing. Do pay attention to the sound of my cry for help, O my King and my God, because to you I pray."

Ps. 69:13 "But as for me, my prayer was to you, O Jehovah, at an acceptable time, O God."

To Be Offered in Jesus' Name; He Is the Only Mediator

John 15:16 "I appointed you to go on and keep bearing fruit and that your fruit should remain; in order that no matter what you ask the Father in my name he might give it to you."

John 16:23, 24 "If you ask the Father for anything he will give it to you in my name. Until this present time you have not asked a single thing in my name. Ask and you will receive, that your joy may be made full."

1 Tim. 2:5 "There is one God, and one mediator between God and men, a man Christ Jesus."

Those Whose Prayers Jehovah Hears

Acts 10:34, 35 "God is not partial, but in every nation the man that fears him and works righteousness is acceptable to him."

1 John 3:22 "Whatever we ask we receive from him, because we are observing his commandments and are doing the things that are pleasing in his eyes."

1 Pet. 3:12 "The eyes of Jehovah are upon the righteous ones, and his ears are toward their supplication."

Jehovah does not listen to prayers of those practicing wickedness

Prov. 15:29 "Jehovah is far away from the wicked ones, but the prayer of the righteous ones he hears."

Mic. 3:4 "At that time they will call to Jehovah for aid, but he will not answer them. And he will conceal his face from them in that time, according as

they committed badness in their dealings."

Isa. 1:15 "When you spread out your palms, I hide my eyes from you. Even though you make many prayers, I am not listening; with bloodshed your very hands have become filled."

Prov. 28:9 "He that is turning his ear away from hearing the law—even his prayer is something detestable."

Model Prayer Used by Jesus to Teach Followers How to Pray

Matt. 6:9-13 "You must pray, then, this way: 'Our Father in the heavens, let your name be sanctified. Let your kingdom come. Let your will take place, as in heaven, also upon earth. Give us today our bread for this day; and forgive us our debts, as we also have forgiven our debtors. And do not bring us into temptation, but deliver us from the wicked one.'"

"Amen" Proper Conclusion to Prayer

1 Chron. 16:36 "'Blessed be Jehovah the God of Israel from time indefinite to time indefinite.' And all the people proceeded to say, 'Amen!'"

1 Cor. 14:16 "Otherwise, if you offer praise with a gift of the spirit, how will the man occupying the seat of the ordinary person say Amen to your giving of thanks, since he does not know what you are saying?"

No Particular Posture Required

Luke 22:39, 41 "On going out he went as customarily to the Mount of Olives; and the disciples also followed him. And he himself drew away from them about a stone's throw, and bent his knees and began to pray."

John 11:41 "Now Jesus raised his eyes heavenward and said: 'Father, I thank you that you have heard me.'"

1 Ki. 8:54 "As soon as Solomon finished praying to Jehovah with all this prayer and request for favor, he rose up from before the altar of Jehovah, from bending down upon his knees with his palms spread out to the heavens."

Mark 11:25 "When you stand praying, forgive whatever you have against anyone."

Sincere Congregational Prayers Proper

Acts 12:5 "Consequently Peter was being kept in the prison; but prayer to God for him was being carried on intensely by the congregation."

Acts 4:23, 24 "After being released they went to their own people and reported what things the chief priests and the older men had said to them. Upon hearing this they with one accord raised their voices to God."

1 Chron. 29:10 "Consequently David blessed Jehovah before the eyes of all the congregation and David said: 'Blessed may you be, O Jehovah the God of Israel our father, from time indefinite even to time indefinite." (See also verses 11-19.)

Self-exalting Prayers Condemned

Matt. 6:5 "Also, when you pray, you must not be as the hypocrites; because they like to pray standing in the synagogues and on the corners of the broad ways to be visible to men."

Luke 18:10-14 "Two men went up into the temple to pray, the one a Pharisee and the other a tax collector. The Pharisee stood and began to pray these things to himself, 'O God, I thank you I am not as the rest of men, extortioners, unrighteous, adulterers, or even as this tax collector. I fast twice a week, I give the tenth of all things I acquire.' But the tax collector standing at a distance was not willing even to raise his eyes heavenward, but kept beating his breast, saying, 'O God, be gracious to me a sinner.' I tell you, This man went down to his home proved more righteous than that man; because everyone that exalts himself will be humiliated, but he that humbles himself will be exalted."

Giving Thanks to God at Mealtime

Matt. 14:19 "Next he commanded the crowds to recline on the grass and took the five loaves and two fishes, and, looking up to heaven, he said a blessing and, after breaking the loaves, he distributed them to the disciples."

Acts 27:35 "After he said this, he also took a loaf, gave thanks to God before them all and broke it and started eating."

See also 1 Cor. 10:30, 31.

Should Not Become Negligent About Praying to God

Rom. 12:12 "Persevere in prayer."

Luke 18:1 "Then he went on to tell them an illustration with regard to the need for them always to pray and not to give up."

Eph. 6:18 "With every form of prayer and supplication . . . carry on prayer on every occasion."

1 Pet. 4:7 "Be sound in mind, therefore, and be vigilant with a view to prayers."

Dan. 6:10 "Even three times in a day he was kneeling on his knees and praying and offering praise before his God."

Prayers for Forgiveness Heard When Accompanied with Humility, True Repentance

2 Chron. 7:13, 14 "When . . . my people upon whom my name has been called humble themselves and pray and seek my face and turn back from their bad ways, then I myself shall hear from the heavens and forgive their sin."

2 Chron. 33:10-13 "Jehovah kept speaking to Manasseh and his people, but they paid no attention. Finally Jehovah brought against them the chiefs of the army that belonged to the king of Assyria, and so they captured Manasseh in the hollows and bound him with two fetters of copper and took him to Babylon. And as soon as it caused him distress, he softened the face of Jehovah his God and kept humbling himself greatly because of the God of his forefathers. And he kept praying to Him, so that He let himself be entreated by him and He heard his request for favor and restored him to Jerusalem to his kingship."

See also 2 Ki. 22:18, 19, and the main heading "Repentance," pages 420-423.

One praying for forgiveness must himself be forgiving toward others

Mark 11:25 "When you stand praying, forgive whatever you have against anyone; in order that your Father who is in the heavens may also forgive you your trespasses."

Luke 11:4 "Forgive us our sins, for we ourselves also forgive everyone that is in debt to us."

Matt. 6:14, 15 "If you forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you; whereas if you do not forgive men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses."

To Be Answered, Prayers Must Be in Harmony with Jehovah's Purpose

1 John 5:14 "This is the confidence that we have toward him, that, no matter what it is that we ask according to his will, he hears us."

Jas. 4:3 "You do ask, and yet you do not receive, because you are asking for a wrong purpose."

Josh. 24:10 "I did not want to listen to Balaam. Consequently he blessed you repeatedly. Thus I delivered you out of his hand."

Expression of submission to the divine will appropriate

Luke 22:41, 42 "He himself drew away from them about a stone's throw, and bent his knees and began to pray, saying: 'Father, if you wish, remove this cup from me. Nevertheless, let, not my will, but yours take place.'"

Job 1:21 "Naked I came out of my mother's belly, and naked shall I return there. Jehovah himself has given, and Jehovah himself has taken away. Let the name of Jehovah continue to be blessed."

Prayer Must Be Accompanied by Strong Faith in God's Ability to Hear and Answer

Jas. 1:5-7 "If any one of you is lacking in wisdom, let him keep on asking God, for he gives generously to all and without reproaching; and it will be given him. But let him keep on asking in faith, not doubting at all, for he who doubts is like a wave of the sea driven by the wind and blown about. In fact, let not that man suppose that he will receive anything from Jehovah."

Mark 11:24 "This is why I tell you, All the things you pray and ask for have faith that you have practically received, and you will have them."

Some Proper Matters About Which to Pray

Phil. 4:6 "Do not be anxious over anything, but in everything by prayer and supplication along with thanksgiving let your petitions be made known to God."

For God's name to be sanctified

Luke 11:2 "Then he said to them: 'Whenever you pray, say, "Father, let your name be sanctified."'"

For God's kingdom

Luke 11:2 "Then he said to them: 'Whenever you pray, say, . . . "Let your kingdom come."'"

For God's will to be done

Matt. 6:10 "Let your will take place, as in heaven, also upon earth."

Matt. 26:42 "Again, for the second time, he went off and prayed, saying: 'My Father, if it is not possible for this to pass away except I drink it, let your will take place.'"

For day's material necessities

Luke 11:3 "Give us our bread for the day according to the day's requirement."

For forgiveness

Luke 11:4 "Forgive us our sins."

Dan. 9:19 "O Jehovah, do hear. O Jehovah, do forgive."

For deliverance from temptations of the wicked one

Matt. 6:13 "Do not bring us into temptation, but deliver us from the wicked one."

For knowledge of God's will; wisdom, understanding

Phil. 1:9 "This is what I continue praying, that your love may abound yet more and more with accurate knowledge and full discernment."

Jas. 1:5 "So, if any one of you is lacking in wisdom, let him keep on asking God, for he gives generously to all and without reproaching; and it will be given him."

See also Ps. 119:34.

For God's spirit

Acts 8:14, 15 "When the apostles in Jerusalem heard that Samaria had accepted the word of God, they dispatched Peter and John to them; and these went down and prayed for them to get holy spirit."

Luke 11:13 "If you, although being wicked, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more so will the Father in heaven give holy spirit to those asking him!"

In connection with baptism

Luke 3:21 "Now when all the people were baptized, Jesus also was baptized and, as he was praying, the heaven was opened up."

On behalf of spiritually sick ones

Jas. 5:14, 15 "Is there anyone sick among you? Let him call the older men of the congregation to him, and let them pray over him, greasing him with oil in the name of Jehovah. And the prayer of faith will make the indisposed one well."

On behalf of persecuted brothers

Acts 12:5 "Peter was being kept in the prison; but prayer to God for him was being carried on intensely by the congregation."

Rom. 15:30, 31 "I exhort you, brothers, through our Lord Jesus Christ and through the love of the spirit, that you exert yourselves with me in prayers to God for me, that I may be delivered from the unbelievers in Judea."

On behalf of fellow worshipers

Jas. 5:16 "Pray for one another."

2 Tim. 1:3 "I never leave off remembering you in my supplications."

Col. 4:12 "Epaphras, who is from among you, a slave of Christ Jesus, sends you his greetings, always exerting himself in your behalf in his prayers, that you may finally stand complete and with firm conviction in all the will of God."

In praise

Dan. 2:23 "To you, O God of my forefathers, I am giving praise and commendation."

Ps. 86:12 "I laud you, O Jehovah my God, with all my heart, and I will glorify your name to time indefinite."

Isa. 25:1 "O Jehovah, you are my God. I exalt you, I laud your name, for you have done wonderful things."

In thanksgiving

1 Thess. 5:17, 18 "Pray incessantly. In connection with everything give thanks."

Eph. 5:20 "In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ giving thanks always for all things to our God and Father."

Prayers Concerning the Peace of God's People Involve Rulers and Other People Around Them

1 Tim. 2:1, 2 "I therefore exhort, first of all, that supplications, prayers, intercessions, offerings of thanks, be made concerning all sorts of men, concerning kings and all those who are in high station."

Jer. 29:7 "Seek the peace of the city to which I have caused you to go into exile, and pray in its behalf to Jehovah, for in its peace there will prove to be peace for you yourselves."

Matt. 5:44 "I say to you: Continue to love your enemies and to pray for those persecuting you."

Men Should Pray with Head Uncovered; Women, if Leading in Prayer, with Head Covered

1 Cor. 11:4, 5 "Every man that prays or prophesies having something on his head shames the one who is his head; but every woman that prays or prophesies with her head uncovered shames the one who is her head."

See also the main heading "Women," pages 500, 501.

Mechanically Repetitious Prayers Not Pleasing to God; Should Come from the Heart

Matt. 6:7 "But when praying, do not say the same things over and over again, just as the people of the nations do, for they imagine they will get a hearing for their use of many words."

Acts 19:34 "One cry arose from them all as they shouted for about two hours: 'Great is Artemis of the Ephesians!' "

Ps. 119:145 "I have called with my whole heart. Answer me, O Jehovah."

Lam. 3:41 "Let us raise our heart along with our palms to God in the heavens."

Prayers Offered Before Images or to Persons Now Dead Are Not Heard

Isa. 8:19 "Is it not to its God that any people should apply? Should there be application to dead persons in behalf of living persons?"

Ps. 115:4, 6 "Their idols are silver and gold, the work of the hands of earthling man. Ears they have, but they cannot hear."

Ps. 135:15, 17 "The idols of the nations are silver and gold, the work of the hands of earthling man. Ears they have, but they can give ear to nothing."

See also the main heading "Idolatry," pages 247-252.

Preaching the Good News

All Christians to Make Public Declaration of Their Faith

Luke 12:8 "I say, then, to you, Everyone that confesses union with me before men, the Son of man will also confess union with him before the angels of God."

Heb. 13:15 "Through him let us always offer to God a sacrifice of praise, that is, the fruit of lips which make public declaration to his name."

1 Cor. 9:16 "If, now, I am declaring the good news, it is no reason for me to boast, for necessity is laid upon me. Really, woe is me if I did not declare the good news!"

Rom. 10:9, 10 "If you publicly declare that 'word in your own mouth,' that Jesus is Lord, and exercise faith in your heart that God raised him up from the dead, you will be saved. For with the heart one exercises faith for righteousness, but with the mouth one makes public declaration for salvation."

See also the main heading "Minister of God," page 348.

Example set by Jesus Christ

Luke 8:1 "[Jesus] went journeying from city to city and from village to village, preaching and declaring the good news of the kingdom of God."

John 18:37 "For this I have been born, and for this I have come into the world, that I should bear witness to the truth."

Jesus instructed his followers to preach the good news

Matt. 28:19, 20 "Go therefore and make disciples of people of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the holy spirit, teaching them to observe all the things I have commanded you."

Acts 1:8 "You will receive power when the holy spirit arrives upon you, and you will be witnesses of me both in Jerusalem and in all Judea and Samaria and to the most distant part of the earth."

Men, women and children may all share

Acts 2:17, 18 " 'In the last days,' God says, 'I shall pour out some of my spirit upon every sort of flesh, and your sons and your daughters will prophesy and your young men will see visions and your old men will dream dreams; and even upon my men slaves and upon my women slaves I will pour out some of my spirit in those days, and they will prophesy.' "

Ps. 148:12, 13 "You young men and also you virgins, you old men together with boys. Let them praise the name of Jehovah."

Ps. 68:11 "The women telling the good news are a large army."

Overseers not the only ones to preach; example to others, help others to do the same

2 Tim. 2:2 "The things you heard from me with the support of many witnesses, these things commit to faithful men, who, in turn, will be adequately qualified to teach others."

1 Pet. 5:2, 3 "Shepherd the flock of God in your care, . . . becoming examples to the flock."

1 Thess. 1:5, 6 "The good news we preach did not turn up among you with speech alone but also with power and with holy spirit and strong conviction, just as you know what sort of men we became to you for your sakes; and you became imitators of us and of the Lord."

See also the main heading "Babylon the Great," page 37.

Not Done in Own Strength; Jehovah Qualifies His Servants and Gives Them Strength

2 Cor. 4:7 "However, we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the power beyond what is normal may be God's and not that out of ourselves."

2 Tim. 4:17 "The Lord stood near me and infused power into me, that through me the preaching might be fully accomplished and all the nations might hear it."

Phil. 4:13 "For all things I have the strength by virtue of him who imparts power to me."

See also the main heading "Angels," pages 11, 12.

Not extensive worldly education, but faith in God and his Word needed

John 7:15 "Therefore the Jews fell to wondering, saying: 'How does this man have a knowledge of letters, when he has not studied at the schools?' "

1 Cor. 1:26-28 "For you behold his calling of you, brothers, that not many wise in a fleshly way were called, not many powerful, not many of noble birth; but God chose the foolish things of the world, that he might put the wise men to shame; and God chose the weak things of the world, that he might put the strong things to shame; and God chose the ignoble things of the world and the things looked down upon, the things that are not, that he might bring to nothing the things that are."

2 Cor. 4:13 "Now because we have the same spirit of faith as that of which it is written: 'I exercised faith, therefore I spoke,' we too exercise faith and therefore we speak."

New ones receive training in the work

Mark 1:17 "Jesus said to them: 'Come after me, and I shall cause you to become fishers of men.' "

Luke 8:1 "He went . . . preaching and declaring the good news of the kingdom of God. And the twelve were with him."

Eph. 4:11, 12 "He gave some as apostles, some as prophets, some as evangelizers, some as

shepherds and teachers, with a view to the training of the holy ones, for ministerial work."

Having Preaching Work to Do as a Christian Not an Oppressive Burden, but an Evidence of Divine Favor

1 Tim. 1:12 "I am grateful to Christ Jesus our Lord, who imparted power to me, because he considered me faithful by assigning me to a ministry."

Matt. 11:29, 30 "Take my yoke upon you and become my disciples, for I am mild-tempered and lowly in heart, and you will find refreshment for your souls. For my yoke is kindly and my load is light."

See also the main heading "Freedom," pages 194-197.

Sharing in the service of God produces joy and satisfaction

Luke 10:1, 17 "After these things the Lord designated seventy others and sent them forth by twos in advance of him into every city and place to which he himself was going to come. Then the seventy returned with joy."

Acts 13:48, 52 "When those of the nations heard this, they began to rejoice and to glorify the word of Jehovah, and all those who were rightly disposed for everlasting life became believers. And the disciples continued to be filled with joy and holy spirit."

Acts 15:3 "Accordingly, after being conducted part way by the congregation, these men continued on their way through both Phoenicia and Samaria, relating in detail the conversion of people of the nations, and they were causing great joy to all the brothers."

Acts 20:35 "There is more happiness in giving than there is in receiving."

See also the main heading "Obedience," page 360.

Message That Is to Be Preached

Matt. 24:14 "This good news of the kingdom will be preached in all the inhabited earth for a witness to all the nations; and then the end will come."

Isa. 12:4, 5 "Give thanks to Jehovah, you people! Call upon his name. Make known among the peoples his dealings. Make mention that his name is to be put on high. Make melody to Jehovah, for he has done surpassingly. This is to be made known in all the earth."

Col. 1:28, 29 "He [Christ] is the one we are publicizing, admonishing every man and teaching every man in all wisdom, that we may present every man complete in union with Christ. To this end I am indeed working hard."

Isa. 61:1, 2 "The spirit of the Lord Jehovah is upon me, for the reason that Jehovah has anointed me to tell good news to the meek ones. He has sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to those taken captive and the wide opening of the eyes even to the prisoners; to proclaim the year of good will on the part of Jehovah and the day of vengeance on the part of our God; to comfort all the mourning ones."

Rev. 14:6, 7 "I saw another angel flying in midheaven, and he had everlasting good news to declare as glad tidings to those who dwell on the earth, and to every nation and tribe and tongue and people, saying in a loud voice: 'Fear God and give him glory, because the hour of the judgment by him has arrived, and so worship the One who made the heaven and the earth and sea and fountains of waters.'"

Acts 20:27 "I have not held back from telling you all the counsel of God."

Preaching God's Word includes exposing false teaching

2 Cor. 10:4, 5 "The weapons of our warfare are not fleshly, but powerful by God for overturning strongly entrenched things. For we are overturning reasonings and every lofty thing raised up against the knowledge of God; and we are bringing every thought into captivity to make it obedient to the Christ."

Acts 17:29, 30 "Seeing, therefore, that we are the progeny of God, we ought not to imagine that the Divine Being is like gold or silver or stone, like something sculptured by the art and contrivance of man. True, God has overlooked the times of such ignorance, yet now he is telling mankind that they should all everywhere repent."

See also Matt. 23:13-36.

Objective of the Preaching Work

Matt. 24:14 "This good news . . . will be preached in all the inhabited earth for a witness to all the nations."

Rom. 15:8, 9 "I say that Christ actually became a minister . . . that the nations might glorify God for his mercy."

Acts 26:20 "I went bringing the message that they should repent and turn to God by doing works that befit repentance."

Rom. 10:13, 14 "For 'everyone who calls on the name of Jehovah will be saved.' However, how will they call on him in whom they have not put faith? How, in turn, will they put faith in him of whom they have not heard? How, in turn, will they hear without someone to preach?"

Ezek. 3:17, 19 "You must hear from my mouth speech and you must warn them from me. But as for you, in case you have warned someone wicked and he does not actually turn back from his wickedness and from his wicked way, he himself for his error will die; but as for you, you will have delivered your own soul."

Not done for financial gain

2 Cor. 2:17 "We are not peddlers of the word of God as many men are, but as out of sincerity, yes, as sent from God, under God's view, in company with Christ, we are speaking."

2 Cor. 12:17, 18 "As for any one of those I have dispatched to you, I did not take advantage of you through him, did I? I urged Titus and I dispatched the brother with him. Titus did not take advantage of you at all, did he?"

How the Preaching Work Is Done

Acts 17:2 "According to Paul's custom . . . he reasoned with them from the Scriptures."

Preaching done by personal contact, from house to house

Acts 20:20 "I did not hold back from telling you any of the things that were profitable nor from teaching you publicly and from house to house."

Acts 5:42 "Every day in the temple and from house to house they continued without letup teaching and declaring the good news about the Christ, Jesus."

Repeated calls necessary; message is urgent

Isa. 6:9-11 "Go, and you must say to this people, 'Hear again and again, O men, . . .' At this I said: 'How long, O Jehovah?' Then he said: 'Until the cities actually crash in ruins, to be without an inhabitant.'"

2 Tim. 4:2 "Preach the word, be at it urgently."

Marketplaces and other places where public gather are proper places to preach

Acts 17:17 "He began to reason in the synagogue with the Jews

and the other people who worshiped God and every day in the market place with those who happened to be on hand."

Acts 18:4 "He would give a talk in the synagogue every sabbath and would persuade Jews and Greeks."

Prov. 1:20, 21 "True wisdom itself keeps crying aloud in the very street. In the public squares it keeps giving forth its voice. At the upper end of the noisy streets it calls out. At the entrances of the gates into the city it says its own sayings."

Return visits, regular instruction, for those who manifest interest

Acts 19:9, 10 "When some went on hardening themselves and not believing, speaking injuriously about The Way before the multitude, he withdrew from them and separated the disciples from them, daily giving talks in the school auditorium of Tyrannus. This took place for two years."

Acts 14:20-22 "On the next day he left with Barnabas for Derbe. And after declaring the good news to that city and making quite a few disciples, they returned to Lystra and to Iconium and to Antioch, strengthening the souls of the disciples, encouraging them to remain in the faith."

Speak about God's purposes whenever there is opportunity

John 4:6, 7, 13, 14 "Now Jesus, tired out from the journey, was sitting at the fountain just as he was. The hour was about the sixth. A woman of Samaria came to draw water. . . . Jesus said to her: 'Everyone drinking from this water will get thirsty again. Whoever drinks from the water that I will give him will never get thirsty at all, but the water that I will give him will become in him a fountain of water bubbling up to impart everlasting life.'"

Not All Will Heed the Message

John 10:25, 26 "Jesus answered them: 'I told you, and yet you do not believe. The works that I am doing in the name of my Father, these bear witness about me. But you do not believe, because you are none of my sheep.'"

Acts 28:24 "Some began to believe the things said; others would not believe."

Many are too busy with other affairs of life

Matt. 13:22 "As for the one sown among the thorns, this is the one hearing the word, but the anxiety of this system of things and the deceptive power of riches choke the word, and he becomes unfruitful."

Matt. 24:38, 39 "As they were in those days before the flood, eating and drinking, men marrying and women being given in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark; and they took no note until the flood came and swept them all away."

Some listen, perhaps joyfully at first, but do not continue

Mark 4:14-17 "The sower sows the word. These, then, are the ones alongside the road where the word is sown; but as soon as they have heard it Satan comes and takes away the word that was sown in them. And likewise these are the ones sown upon the rocky places: as soon as they have heard the word, they accept it with joy. Yet they have no root in themselves, but they continue for a time; then as soon as tribulation or persecution arises because of the word, they are stumbled."

John 6:65, 66 "So he went on to say: 'This is why I have said to you, No one can come to me unless it is granted him by the Father.' Owing to this many of his disciples went off to the things behind and would no longer walk with him."

Some actively oppose the preaching

Acts 13:50 "The Jews stirred up the reputable women who worshiped God and the principal men of the city, and they raised up a persecution against Paul and Barnabas and threw them outside their boundaries."

Acts 18:5, 6 "Paul began to be intensely occupied with the word, witnessing to the Jews to prove that Jesus is the Christ. But after they kept on opposing and speaking abusively, he shook out his garments and said to them: 'Let your blood be upon your own heads. I am clean.'"

Others appreciatively accept and act on the good news

John 4:40, 41 "When the Samaritans came to him, they began asking him to stay with them; and he stayed there two days. Consequently many more believed on account of what he said."

Acts 17:11 "Now the latter [Bereans] were more noble-minded than those in Thessalonica, for they received the word with the greatest eagerness of mind, carefully examining the Scriptures daily as to whether these things were so."

Acts 17:33, 34 "Thus Paul went out from their midst, but some men joined themselves to him and became believers, among whom also were Dionysius, a judge of the court of the Areopagus, and a woman named Damaris, and others besides them."

Acts 16:14, 15 "A certain woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the city of Thyatira and a worshiper of God, was listening, and Jehovah opened her heart wide to pay attention to the things being spoken by Paul. Now when she and her household got baptized, she said with entreaty: 'If you men have judged me to be faithful to Jehovah, enter into my house and stay.'"

Luke 8:15 "As for that on the fine soil, these are the ones that, after hearing the word with a fine and good heart, retain it and bear fruit with endurance."

Preachers of the Good News Bear Serious Responsibility Before God

1 Cor. 9:16, 17 "If, now, I am declaring the good news, it is no reason for me to boast, for necessity is laid upon me. Really, woe is me if I did not declare the good news! If I perform this willingly, I have a reward; but if I do it against my will, all the same I have a stewardship entrusted to me."

Ezek. 33:8 "When I say to someone wicked, 'O wicked one, you will positively die!' but you actually do not speak out to warn the wicked one from his way, he himself as a wicked one will die in his own error, but his blood I shall ask back at your own hand."

Acts 20:26, 27 "I call you to witness this very day that I am clean from the blood of all men, for I have not held back from telling you all the counsel of God."

1 Tim. 4:16 "Pay constant attention to yourself and to your teaching. Stay by these things, for by doing this you will save both yourself and those who listen to you."

Message Is for All People, Regardless of Nationality or Religion

Rev. 14:6 "I saw another angel flying in midheaven, and he had everlasting good news to declare as glad tidings to those who dwell on the earth, and to every nation and tribe and tongue and people."

Ps. 49:1, 2 "Hear this, all you peoples. Give ear, all you inhab-

itants of the system of things, you sons of humankind as well as you sons of man, you rich one and you poor one together."

Acts 10:34, 35 "At this Peter opened his mouth and said: 'For a certainty I perceive that God is not partial, but in every nation the man that fears him and works righteousness is acceptable to him.'"

Matt. 24:14 "This good news of the kingdom will be preached in all the inhabited earth for a witness to all the nations."

Preach to those who have God's Word as well as others

Acts 13:46 "Talking with boldness, Paul and Barnabas said: 'It was necessary for the word of God to be spoken first to you. Since you are thrusting it away from you and do not judge yourselves worthy of everlasting life, look! we turn to the nations.'"

Gal. 2:7, 8 "I had entrusted to me the good news for those who are uncircumcised, just as Peter had it for those who are circumcised—for He who gave Peter powers necessary for an apostleship to those who are circumcised gave powers also to me for those who are of the nations."

Every Day Proper for Preaching, Including the Sabbath

Acts 5:42 "Every day in the temple and from house to house they continued without letup teaching and declaring the good news about the Christ, Jesus."

Acts 13:42, 44 "Now when they were going out, the people began entreating for these matters to be spoken to them on the following sabbath. The next sabbath nearly all the city gathered together to hear the word of Jehovah."

Acts 16:13 "On the sabbath day we went forth outside the gate beside a river, where we were thinking there was a place of prayer; and we sat down and began speaking to the women that had assembled."

Christian Conduct When Faced with Opposition

Matt. 10:14, 23 "Wherever anyone does not take you in or listen to your words, on going out of that house or that city shake the dust off your feet. When they persecute you in one city, flee to another."

Phil. 1:7 "All of you being sharers with me . . . in the defending and legally establishing of the good news."

Predestination

(FOREORDINATION)

Jehovah Has Foreknown and Foretold His Purposes Long in Advance

Isa. 46:9, 10 "I am the Divine One and there is no other God, nor anyone like me; the One telling from the beginning the finale, and from long ago the things that have not been done; the One saying, 'My own counsel will stand, and everything that is my delight I shall do.'"

Isa. 42:9 "The first things—here they have come, but new things I am telling out. Before they begin to spring up, I cause you people to hear them."

Acts 15:17, 18 "In order that those who remain of the men may earnestly seek Jehovah, together with people of all the nations, people who are called by my name, says Jehovah, who is doing these things, known from of old."

See also the main heading "Prophecy," pages 394-402.

In certain cases he has named individuals who would perform particular works, and that before they were born

1 Ki. 13:2 "This is what Jehovah has said, 'Look! A son born to the house of David, whose name is Josiah! And he will certainly sacrifice upon you the priests of the high places that are making sacrificial smoke upon you, and men's bones he will burn upon you.'"

Jer. 1:4, 5 "The word of Jehovah began to occur to [Jeremiah], saying: 'Before I was forming you in the belly I knew you, and before you proceeded to come forth from the womb I sanctified you. Prophet to the nations I made you.'"

Isa. 44:28; 45:1 "The One saying of Cyrus, 'He is my shepherd, and all that I delight in he will completely carry out'; even in my saying of Jerusalem, 'She will be rebuilt,' and of the temple, 'You will have your foundation laid.' This is what Jehovah has said to his anointed one, to Cyrus, whose right hand I have taken hold of, to subdue before him nations."

Luke 1:13-17 "The angel said to him: 'Have no fear, Zechariah, because your supplication has been favorably heard, and your wife Elizabeth will become mother to a son to you, and you are to call his name John. . . . Also, he will go before him with Elijah's spirit and power, to turn back the hearts of fathers to children and the disobedient ones to the practical wisdom of righteous ones, to get ready for Jehovah a prepared people.'"

By bringing about circumstances that cause individuals to manifest their true heart condition, Jehovah can fulfill his will

Ex. 7:3, 4; 8:15 "As for me, I shall let Pharaoh's heart become obstinate, and I shall certainly multiply my signs and my miracles in the land of Egypt. And Pharaoh will not listen to you men; and I shall have to lay my hand upon Egypt and bring my armies, my people, the sons of Israel, out from the land of Egypt with great judgments." "When Pharaoh got to see that relief had taken place, he made his heart unresponsive; and he did not listen to them, just as Jehovah had spoken."

Josh. 11:20 "It proved to be Jehovah's course to let their hearts become stubborn so as to declare war against Israel, in order that he might devote them to destruction, that they might come to have no favorable consideration, but in order that he might annihilate them, just as Jehovah had commanded Moses."

Deut. 8:2 "You must remember all the way that Jehovah your God made you walk these forty years in the wilderness, in order to humble you, to put you to the test so as to know what was in your heart, as to whether you would keep his commandments or not."

Certain events, in fulfillment of prophecy, take place "at the instance of Jehovah"

1 Ki. 12:15 "The king did not listen to the people, because the turn of affairs took place at the instance of Jehovah, in order that he might indeed carry out his word that Jehovah had spoken."

Role of Christ as Ransomer Foreordained by God

1 Pet. 1:19, 20 "It was with precious blood, like that of an unblemished and spotless lamb, even Christ's. True, he was foreknown before the founding of the world, but he was made manifest at the end of the times for the sake of you."

Acts 4:27, 28 "Your holy servant Jesus, whom you anointed, in order to do what things your hand and counsel had foreordained to occur."

Acts 2:22, 23 "Men of Israel, hear these words: Jesus the Nazarene, a man publicly shown by God to you through powerful works and portents and signs that God did through him in your midst, just as you yourselves know, this man, as one delivered up by the determined counsel and foreknowledge of God, you fastened to a stake by the hand of lawless men and did away with."

Luke 22:21, 22 "Look! the hand of my betrayer is with me at the table. Because the Son of man is going his way according to what is marked out; all the same, woe to that man through whom he is betrayed!"

Acts 3:18 "God has fulfilled the things he announced beforehand through the mouth of all the prophets, that his Christ would suffer."

God Purposed for Chosen Christians to Share with Christ in Heavenly Glory

1 Pet. 1:1-4 "To the ones chosen according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, with sanctification by the spirit, . . . Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, for according to his great mercy he gave us a new birth to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, to an incorruptible and undefiled and unfading inheritance. It is reserved in the heavens for you."

Rom. 8:29, 30 "Those whom he gave his first recognition he also foreordained to be patterned after the image of his Son, that he might be the first-born among many brothers. Moreover, those whom he foreordained are the ones he also called; and those whom he called are the ones he also declared to be righteous. Finally those whom he declared righteous are the ones he also glorified."

Eph. 1:5, 6, 10-12 "He foreordained us to the adoption through Jesus Christ as sons to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, in praise of his glorious undeserved kindness which he kindly conferred upon us by means of his loved one. . . . Yes, in him, in union with whom we were also assigned as heirs, in that we were foreordained according to the purpose of him who operates all things according to the way his will counsels, that we should serve for the praise of his glory, we who have been first to hope in the Christ."

Individuals called may fail; so it is not individuals but the class that is predestinated

Matt. 22:14 "There are many invited, but few chosen."

2 Pet. 1:10 "Do your utmost to make the calling and choosing of you sure for yourselves; for if you keep on doing these things you will by no means ever fail."

1 Cor. 9:27 "I browbeat my body and lead it as a slave, that, after I have preached to others, I myself should not become disapproved somehow."

See also Heb. 6:4-6.

Not Every Occurrence in One's Life Is Predetermined by God

Eccl. 9:11 "Time and unforeseen occurrence befall them all."

Eccl. 7:29 "God made mankind upright, but they themselves have sought out many plans."

Gen. 42:4 "Jacob did not send Benjamin, Joseph's brother, with his other brothers, because he said: 'Otherwise a fatal accident may befall him.'"

Luke 10:31 "Now, by coincidence, a certain priest was going down over that road."

God Is Not Partial, Rewarding Some with Life, Condemning Others, Regardless of Their Course of Life

Rom. 2:6-11 "He will render to each one according to his works: everlasting life to those who are seeking glory and honor and incorruptibleness by endurance in work that is good; however, for those who are contentious and who disobey the truth but obey unrighteousness there will be wrath and anger, tribulation and distress, upon the soul of every man who works what is injurious, of the Jew first and also of the Greek; but glory and honor and peace for everyone who works what is good, for the Jew first and also for the Greek. For there is no partiality with God."

God Has Foreordained the Destiny of Certain *Types* of Persons

Rev. 2:10 "Do not be afraid of the things you are about to suffer. Look! The Devil will keep on throwing some of you into prison that you may be fully put to the test, and that you may have tribulation ten days. Prove yourself faithful even to death, and I will give you the crown of life."

Ps. 37:9 "Evildoers themselves will be cut off, but those hoping in Jehovah are the ones that will possess the earth."

Rev. 21:8 "As for the cowards and those without faith and those who are disgusting in their filth and murderers and fornicators and those practicing spiritism and idolaters and all the liars, their portion will be in the lake that burns with fire and sulphur. This means the second death."

Scriptural Encouragement to Faithfulness Meaningless if Each One's Final Destiny Fixed

Gal. 6:7-9 "Do not be misled: God is not one to be mocked. For whatever a man is sowing, this he will also reap; because he who is sowing with a view to his flesh will reap corruption from his flesh, but he who is sowing with a view to the spirit will reap everlasting life from the spirit. So let us not give up in doing what is fine, for in due season we shall reap if we do not tire out."

Rev. 3:11 "I am coming quickly. Keep on holding fast what you have, that no one may take your crown."

Heb. 3:14 "We actually become partakers of the Christ only if we make fast our hold on the confidence we had at the beginning firm to the end."

Matt. 24:13 "He that has endured to the end is the one that will be saved."

All Free to Choose to Serve God and Gain His Blessing or Refuse to Do So

Deut. 30:19, 20 "I have put life and death before you, the blessing and the malediction; and you must choose life in order that you may keep alive, you and your offspring, by loving Jehovah your God, by listening to his voice and by sticking to him."

Josh. 24:15 "Now if it is bad in your eyes to serve Jehovah, choose for yourselves today whom you will serve, whether the gods that your forefathers who were on the other side of the River served or the gods of the Amorites in whose land you are dwelling. But as for me and my household, we shall serve Jehovah."

Deut. 11:13-17 "It must occur that if you will without fail obey my commandments that I am commanding you today so as to love Jehovah your God and to serve him with all your heart and all your soul, I also shall certainly give rain for your land at its appointed time, autumn rain and spring rain, and you will indeed gather your grain and your sweet wine and your

oil. And I shall certainly give vegetation in your field for your domestic animals, and you will indeed eat and be satisfied. Watch out for yourselves for fear your heart may be enticed, and you do turn aside and worship other gods and bow down to them, and Jehovah's anger does blaze against you, and he does shut up the heavens so that no rain will occur and the ground will not give its produce and you have to perish speedily from off the good land that Jehovah is giving you."

Prophecy

Bible Contains Prophecy Inspired by God, Actually Directed by His Spirit

2 Pet. 1:20, 21 "No prophecy of Scripture springs from any private interpretation. For prophecy was at no time brought by man's will, but men spoke from God as they were borne along by holy spirit."

2 Tim. 3:16 "All Scripture is inspired of God and beneficial for teaching, for reproving, for setting things straight, for disciplining in righteousness."

Acts 28:25 "Paul made this one comment: 'The holy spirit aptly spoke through Isaiah the prophet to your forefathers.' "

Acts 3:21 "The times of restoration of all things of which God spoke through the mouth of his holy prophets of old time."

See also the main heading "Bible," pages 45-53.

Distinguishing Between True Prophecy and False

Deut. 18:21, 22 "In case you should say in your heart: 'How shall we know the word that Jehovah has not spoken?' when the prophet speaks in the name of Jehovah and the word does not occur or come true, that is the word that Jehovah did not speak. With presumptuousness the prophet spoke it. You must not get frightened at him."

Deut. 13:1-3 "In case a prophet or a dreamer of a dream arises in your midst and does give you a sign or a portent, and the sign or the portent does come true of which he spoke to you, saying, 'Let us walk after other gods, whom you have not known, and let us serve them,' you must not listen to the words of that prophet or to the dreamer of that dream, because Jehovah your God is testing you to know whether you are loving Jehovah your God with all your heart and all your soul."

Bible Prophecy Is Specific, Even Foretelling Names

Isa. 45:1, 2 "This is what Jehovah has said to his anointed one, to Cyrus, whose right hand I have taken hold of, to subdue before him nations, so that I may ungird even the hips of kings; to open before him the two-leaved doors, so that even the gates will not be shut: 'Before you I myself shall go, and the swells of land I shall straighten out. The copper doors I shall break in pieces, and the iron bars I shall cut down.' " (Writing of Isaiah's prophecies completed about 732 B.C.E.; above prophecy fulfilled in 539 B.C.E. when the river gates of Babylon were left open and Babylon fell to the Medes and Persians under Cyrus. See *The Encyclopedia Americana* [New York; 1956], Vol. III, p. 9, and *Light from the Ancient Past* [Princeton; 1959], by Jack Finegan, pp. 227-229.)

1 Ki. 13:1, 2 "There was a man of God that had come out of Judah by the word of Jehovah to Bethel, while Jeroboam was standing by the altar to make sacrificial smoke. Then he called out against the altar by the word of Jehovah and said: 'O altar, altar, this is what Jehovah has said, "Look! A son born to the house of David, whose name is Josiah! And he will certainly sacrifice upon you the priests of the high places that are making sacrificial smoke upon you, and men's bones he will burn upon you."' " (Spoken during twenty-two-year reign of King Jeroboam of Israel, who began to rule 997 B.C.E. Fulfilled over 300 years later during the reign of King Josiah of Judah, who began to reign 659 B.C.E. Josiah sacrificed the idolatrous priests living at that time on the altars on which they had been accustomed to sacrifice and took the bones of the idolatrous priests from their graves and burned them on the altar.—2 Ki. 23:16-20.)

2 Ki. 18:13; 19:5-7 "In the fourteenth year of King Hezekiah, Sennacherib the king of Assyria came up against all the fortified cities of Judah." "So the servants of King Hezekiah came in to Isaiah. Then Isaiah said to them: 'This is what you should say to your lord, "This is what Jehovah has said: 'Do not be afraid because of the words that you have heard with which the attendants of the king of Assyria spoke abusively of me. Here I am putting a spirit in him, and he must hear a report and return to his own land; and I shall certainly cause him to fall by the sword in his own land.' " ' " (Prophecy spoken during fourteenth year of King Hezekiah, who began to reign 745 B.C.E. Fulfilled when God's angel wiped out 185,000 men of Sennacherib's army, sending him back to Nineveh where, later, he was killed by his own sons, Adrammelech and Sharezer. "The death of Sennacherib at the hand of assassins, referred to in the Bible (II King 19:37), is known in Assyrian records."—*The Bible and Archaeology* [Grand Rapids, Michigan; 1962], by J. A. Thompson, p. 145.)

Jer. 25:8, 9 "This is what Jehovah of armies has said, ' "For the reason that you did not obey my words, here I am sending and I will take all the families of the north," is the utterance of Jehovah, "even sending to Nebuchadrezzar the king of Babylon, my servant, and I will bring them against this land and against its inhabitants and against all these nations round about; and I will devote them to destruction."' " (Spoken by Jeremiah in the fourth year of King Jehoiakim of Judah, who began to reign 628 B.C.E. Fulfilled in 609-607 B.C.E. when King Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon besieged and destroyed Jerusalem. See testimony of Flavius Josephus, the Jewish historian, in *Antiquity of the Jews, Flavius Josephus Against Apion*, Book 1, section 19, as translated in *The Works of Flavius Josephus* [Philadelphia; 1875], Vol. II, William Whiston, p. 483.)

Jer. 44:30 "This is what Jehovah has said: 'Here I am giving Pharaoh Hophra, the king of Egypt, into the hand of his enemies and into the hand of those seeking for his soul, just as I have given Zedekiah the king of Judah into the hand of Nebuchadrezzar the king of Babylon.' " (Spoken by Jeremiah shortly after the fall of Jerusalem in 607 B.C.E. "Many years after [the fall of Jerusalem] the chastisements with which God had threatened Apries (Pharaoh-Hophra) began to fall upon him." —*Ancient History* [New York], Charles Rollin, Vol. I, page 231. Amasis, one of Hophra's officers, rebelled against him. Reports Herodotus: "It is said that Apries

[Pharaoh-Hophra] believed that there was not a god who could cast him down from his eminence, so firmly did he think that he had established himself in his kingdom. But at this time the battle went against him; and . . . he fell into the enemy's hands, and was brought back a prisoner . . . Amasis . . . gave Apries [Hophra] over into the hands of his former subjects, . . . Then the Egyptians took him and strangled him."—*The History of Herodotus* [New York; 1928], translated by George Rawlinson, p. 141.)

A Few Prophecies the Fulfillments of Which Were Recorded by Later Bible Writers

Prophecy: Gen. 9:25 "Cursed be Canaan. Let him become the lowest slave to his brothers." (Prophecy spoken by Noah shortly after 2369 B.C.E.)

Fulfillment: Judg. 1:28; 1 Ki. 9:20, 21 "It came about that Israel grew strong and proceeded to set the Canaanites to forced labor [written about 1100 B.C.E.]." "As for all the people remaining over from the Amorites, the Hittites, the Perizzites, the Hivites and the Jebusites, who were no part of the sons of Israel, their sons who had been left over after them in the land whom the sons of Israel had been unable to devote to destruction, Solomon kept levying them for slavish forced labor until this day." (Time covered by 1 Kings: about 1040-917 B.C.E.)

Prophecy: Gen. 17:20 "As regards Ishmael I have heard you. Look! I will bless him and will make him fruitful and will multiply him very, very much. He will certainly produce twelve chieftains, and I will make him become a great nation." (Spoken by Jehovah to Abraham 1919 B.C.E.)

Fulfillment: Gen. 25:13-16 "These are the names of the sons of Ishmael, by their names, according to their family origins: Ishmael's first-born Nebaioth and Kedar and Adbeel and Mibsam and Mishma and Dumah and Massa, Hadad and Tema, Jetur, Naphish and Kedemah. These are the sons of Ishmael, and these are their names by their courtyards and by their walled camps: twelve chieftains according to their clans." (Time of death of Ishmael was 1795 B.C.E.)

Prophecy: Gen. 48:19 "He [Manasseh] too will become a people and he too will become great. But, just the same, his younger brother [Ephraim] will become greater than he will, and his offspring will become the full equivalent of nations." (Prophecy spoken by Jacob shortly before his death in 1711 B.C.E.)

Fulfillment: Deut. 33:17 "They are the tens of thousands of Ephraim, and they are the thousands of Manasseh." (Blessing spoken by Moses before his death in 1473 B.C.E.)

Prophecy: Josh. 6:26 "Joshua had an oath pronounced at that particular time, saying: 'Cursed may the man be before Jehovah who gets up and does build this city, even Jericho. At the forfeit of his first-born let him lay the foundation of it, and at the forfeit of his youngest let him put up its doors.' " (Spoken by Joshua after Israel entered Canaan in 1473 B.C.E.)

Fulfillment: 1 Ki. 16:34 "In his [King Ahab's] days Hiel the Bethelite built Jericho. At the forfeit of Abiram his first-born he laid the foundation of it, and at the forfeit of Segub his youngest he put up its doors, according to Jehovah's word that he spoke by means of Joshua the son of Nun." (In 941 B.C.E. Ahab became king of Israel.)

Prophecy: 1 Ki. 14:15 "Jehovah will indeed strike Israel down, just as the reed sways in the water; and he will certainly uproot Israel off this good ground that he gave to their forefathers, and he will indeed scatter them beyond the River, for the reason that they made their sacred poles, so offending Jehovah." (Spoken by the prophet Ahijah during the reign of King Jeroboam of the ten-tribe kingdom of Israel, which began in 997 B.C.E.)

Fulfillment: 2 Ki. 17:6, 23 "In the ninth year of Hoshea, the king of Assyria captured Samaria and then led Israel into exile in Assyria and kept them dwelling in Halah and in Habor at the river Gozan and in the cities of the Medes. . . . Jehovah removed Israel from his sight, just as he had spoken by means of all his servants the prophets. So Israel went off its own soil into exile in Assyria." (Prophecy fulfilled in 740 B.C.E. when Assyria subjugated Israel.)

Prophecy: Mic. 5:2 "And you, O Bethlehem . . . , from you there will come out to me the one who is to become ruler in Israel, whose origin is from early times, from the days of time indefinite." (Prophecy of Micah written before 716 B.C.E.)

Fulfillment: Matt. 2:1-6 "After Jesus had been born [in 2 B.C.E.] in Bethlehem of Judea in the days of Herod the king . . . They said to him: 'In Bethlehem of Judea; for this is how it has been written through the prophet, "And you, O Bethlehem of the land of Judah, . . . out of you will come forth a governing one, who will shepherd my people, Israel." ' "

Prophecy: Gen. 49:10 "The scepter will not turn aside from Judah, neither the commander's staff from between his feet, until Shiloh comes; and to him the obedience of the people will belong." (Prophecy spoken by Jacob shortly before his death in 1711 B.C.E.)

Fulfillment: Kingly leadership of Israel from tribe of Judah when David became king of all Israel at Hebron in 1070 B.C.E. (2 Sam. 5:1-5); Jesus Christ the Messiah born of the tribe of Judah and given the throne by God.—Heb. 7:14; Luke 1:32, 33.

Prophecy: Isa. 53:4 "Truly our sicknesses were what he himself carried; and as for our pains, he bore them." (Writing of prophecy of Isaiah completed about 732 B.C.E.)

Fulfillment: Matt. 8:16, 17 "People brought him many demon-possessed persons; and he expelled the spirits with a word, and he cured all who were faring badly; that there might be fulfilled what was spoken through Isaiah the prophet, saying: 'He himself took our sicknesses and carried our diseases.' " (At the time Jesus healed many sick people in Capernaum, about 30 C.E.)

Prophecy: Ps. 16:10 "For you will not leave my soul in Sheol. You will not allow your loyal one to see the pit." (Written by David, who died in 1037 B.C.E.)

Fulfillment: Acts 2:29-31 "David . . . , because he was a prophet and . . . saw beforehand and spoke concerning the resurrection of the Christ [took place 33 C.E.], that neither was he forsaken in Hades nor did his flesh see corruption."

See also the main heading "Jesus Christ," page 283.

Prophecies the Fulfillments of Which Have Been Recorded by Secular Historians

Prophecy: Isa. 13:19, 20 "Babylon, the decoration of kingdoms, the beauty of the pride of the Chaldeans, must become as when God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah. She will never be inhabited, nor will she reside for generation after generation." (Writing of Isaiah's prophecies completed about 732 B.C.E.)

Fulfillment: "More thorough destruction than that which has overtaken Babylon cannot well be conceived. *Rich* [Claudius J. Rich, the English traveler] was unable to discover any traces of its vast walls [in 1811], and even its site has been a subject of dispute. 'On its ruins,' says he, 'there is not a single tree growing, except an old one,' which only serves to make the desolation more apparent. Ruins like those of Babylon, composed of rubbish impregnated with nitre, cannot be cultivated." —*Cyclopædia* (New York; 1867), M'Clintock and Strong, Vol. I, p. 596.

Prophecy: Zeph. 2:9 "'As I am alive,' is the utterance of Jehovah of armies, the God of Israel, 'Moab herself will become just like Sodom, and the sons of Ammon like Gomorrah, a place possessed by nettles, and a salt pit, and a desolate waste, even to time indefinite.'" (Prophecy written before 648 B.C.E.)

Fulfillment: Moab and Ammon now extinct nations. "They [the Moabites] were eventually invaded by tribes from the Arabian desert and their national existence came to an end in the 6th century B.C." (*The Encyclopedia Americana* [New York; 1956], Vol. XIX, p. 277) "The [Ammonite] government disappeared c. the 3d century A.D." (*Harper's Bible Dictionary* [New York; 1952], Madeleine S. Miller and J. Lane Miller, p. 16)

Prophecy: Zeph. 2:13, 14 "He will destroy Assyria. And he will make Nineveh a desolate waste, a waterless region like the wilderness. And in the midst of her, droves will certainly lie stretched out, all the wild animals of a nation. Both pelican and porcupine will spend the night right among her pillar capitals." (Prophecy written by Zephaniah before 648 B.C.E.)

Fulfillment: Nineveh falls to the Chaldeans and Medes about 633 B.C.E. and becomes a mound of ruins. "The city was plundered by the Medes, and the king Sin-shar-ishkun perished in the flames. . . . The city was left to fall into the heap of desolate ruin which it is today (Na. ii. 10, iii. 7), a pasturing-place for the flocks (Zp. ii. 13-15). . . . When Xenophon and the retreating Greek army passed in 401 B.C. it was already an unrecognizable mass of debris." —*The New Bible Dictionary* (Grand Rapids, Michigan; 1962), J. D. Douglas, editor, p. 888.

Prophecy: Jer. 25:11; 29:10 "All this land must become a devastated place, an object of astonishment, and these nations will have to serve the king of Babylon seventy years." "This is what Jehovah has said, 'In accord with the fulfilling of seventy years at Babylon I shall turn my attention to you people, and I will establish toward you my good word in bringing you back to this place.'" (Prophecy spoken by Jeremiah before the destruction of Jerusalem in 607 B.C.E.)

Fulfillment: Jerusalem lay desolate for seventy years, after which a remnant of Jews returned to Jerusalem in 537 B.C.E. See *The Bible as History* (New York; 1956), by Werner Keller, translated by William Neil, p. 313, and *Antiquities of the Jews, Flavius Josephus Against Apion*, Book I, section 19; as translated in *The Life and Works of Flavius Josephus* (Philadelphia; 1875), William Whiston, Vol. 2, p. 483.

Prophecy: Ezek. 26:4, 7-9 "They will certainly bring the walls of Tyre to ruin and tear down her towers, and I will scrape her dust away from her and make her a shining, bare surface of a crag. For this is what the Lord Jehovah has said, 'Here I am bringing against Tyre Nebuchadrezzar the king of Babylon from the north, a king of kings, with horses and war chariots and cavalrymen and a congregation, even a multitudinous people. . . . the strike of his attack engine he will direct against your walls, and your towers he will pull down." (Prophecy spoken against mainland city of Tyre in 607 B.C.E.)

Fulfillment: King Nebuchadnezzar takes mainland city of Tyre after siege. "Menander the Ephesian translated the Phœnician annals into Greek; and Josephus asserts upon their authority, that Nebuchadnezzar besieged Tyre thirteen years when Ithobal was king there. . . . The same historian likewise observes, that Philostratus in his Indian and Phœnician histories affirms that this king (Nebuchadnezzar) besieged Tyre thirteen years. . . . after this we hear little more of that part of the city which stood upon the continent."—*Dissertations on The Prophecies* (London; 1840), Thomas Newton, pp. 150, 151; see also *Cyclopædia* (New York; 1881), M'Clintock and Strong, Vol. X, p. 617, and *Ancient History* (New York), Charles Rollin, Vol. I, p. 472.

Prophecy: Jer. 49:17, 18 "'Edom must become an object of astonishment. Everyone passing along by her will stare in astonishment and whistle on account of all her plagues. Just as in the overthrow of Sodom and Gomorrah and her neighbor towns,' Jehovah has said, 'no man will dwell there.'" (Writing of Jeremiah's prophecies completed about 580 B.C.E.)

Fulfillment: "They [the Edomites] were driven from Palestine in the 2d century B.C. by Judas Maccabæus, and in 109 B.C. John Hyrcanus, Maccabæan leader, extended the kingdom of Judah to include the w. part of Edomitic lands. In the 1st century B.C. Roman expansion swept away the last vestige of Edomitic independence . . . After the destruction of Jerusalem by the Romans in 70 A.D. . . . the name Idumæa [Edom] disappeared from history."—*The New Funk & Wagnalls Encyclopedia* (New York; 1950), Vol. 11, p. 4114.

Prophecy: Dan. 8:1-4, 20 "In the third year of the kingship of Belshazzar the king [of Babylon], there was a vision that appeared to me, . . . I saw, and, look! a ram standing before the watercourse, and it had two horns. And the two horns were tall, but the one was taller than the other, and the taller was the one that came up afterward. I saw the ram making thrusts to the west and to the north and to the south, and no wild beasts kept standing before it, and there was no one doing any delivering out of its hand. And it did according to its will, and it put on great airs. 'The ram that you saw possessing the two horns stands for the kings of Media and Persia.'" (Prophecy given to Daniel about 550 B.C.E.)

Fulfillment: The dual nation of Medo-Persia overthrew Babylon in 539 B.C.E. and became the fourth world power. It is well symbolized by the two-horned ram, the higher horn coming up last, because the Median power came first, but the Persian power that followed surpassed it in strength.—*The Encyclopædia Britannica* (New York; 1911), Vol. XVIII, p. 21 and Vol. XXI, pp. 206, 207.

Prophecy: Dan. 8:5-7, 21 "I for my part, kept on considering, and, look! there was a male of the goats coming from the sunset upon the surface of the whole earth, and it was not touching the earth. And as regards the he-goat, there was a conspicuous horn between its eyes. And it kept coming all the way to the ram possessing the two horns,

which I had seen standing before the watercourse; and it came running toward it in its powerful rage. And I saw it coming into close touch with the ram, and it began showing bitterness toward it, and it proceeded to strike down the ram and to break its two horns, and there proved to be no power in the ram to stand before it. So it threw it to the earth and trampled it down, and the ram proved to have no deliverer out of its hand. 'And the hairy he-goat stands for the king of Greece; and as for the great horn that was between its eyes, it stands for the first king.'" (Prophecy given to Daniel about 550 B.C.E.)

Fulfillment: More than two centuries after Daniel recorded this prophecy the Greek conqueror Alexander the Great rose to power and cast down Medo-Persia, Greece becoming the Fifth World Power, ruling Judea in 332 B.C.E. The prophecy of Alexander's conquests, Josephus reports, was shown to Alexander when he came to Jerusalem: "When the book of Daniel was showed him, wherein Daniel declared that one of the Greeks should destroy the empire of the Persians, he supposed that himself was the person intended: and as he was then glad . . . he called them to him, and bid them ask what favours they pleased of him."—*Antiquities of the Jews*, Book XI, Chap. VIII, ¶5, as translated in *The Life and Works of Flavius Josephus* (Philadelphia, Pa.), William Whiston, p. 388.

Prophecy: Dan. 8:8, 22 "The male of the goats, for its part, put on great airs to an extreme; but as soon as it became mighty, the great horn was broken, and there proceeded to come up conspicuously four instead of it, toward the four winds of the heavens. 'And that one [great horn] having been broken, so that there were four that finally stood up instead of it, there are four kingdoms from his nation that will stand up, but not with his power.'" (Prophecy given to Daniel about 550 B.C.E.)

Fulfillment: Upon the death of Alexander the Great in 323 B.C.E. the Grecian empire was divided into four parts, each part ruled over by one of Alexander's four generals. By the year 301 B.C.E., the year of the decisive battle of Ipsus, four of Alexander's generals had established themselves in power. "The decisive battle took place, B.C. 301, at Ipsus, in Phrygia . . . The two conquerors, Seleucus and Lysimachus, divided the dominions of Alexander, with due regard to their own interests. Seleucus received the Euphrates Valley, Upper Syria, Cappadocia, and part of Phrygia. Lysimachus added the rest of Asia Minor to his Thracian dominion, which extended along the western shores of the Euxine as far as the mouths of the Danube; Ptolemy retained Egypt, and Cassander continued to reign in Macedonia." —*A Manual of Ancient History* (Cincinnati, Ohio; 1872), M. E. Thalheimer, p. 208.

Prophecy: Zech. 9:3, 4 "Tyre proceeded to build a rampart for herself, and to pile up silver like dust and gold like the mire of the streets. Look; Jehovah himself will dispossess her, and into the sea he will certainly strike down her military force; and in the fire she herself will be devoured." (Writing of prophecy by Zechariah completed 519 B.C.E.)

Fulfillment: Island city of Tyre virtually destroyed by Alexander the Great in 332 B.C.E. Alexander used the ruins of the mainland city to build a land bridge to the island. "The Macedonian hosts stormed the walls, and after a siege of seven months Tyre fell amidst flames and massacre." —*The Imperial Bible-Dictionary* (London; 1874), edited by Patrick Fairbairn, Vol. II, p. 1060; see also *Cyclopædia* (New York; 1881), M'Clintock and Strong, Vol. X, pp. 618, 619.

Prophecy: Luke 19:43, 44 "The days will come upon you [Jerusalem] when your enemies will build around you a fortification with pointed stakes and will encircle you and distress you from every side, and they will dash you and your children within you to the ground, and they will not leave a stone upon a stone in you." (Prophecy spoken by Jesus Christ, 33 C.E.)

Fulfillment: Roman armies under General Titus destroyed Jerusalem in 70 C.E. "Jerusalem itself was systematically destroyed and the Temple left in ruins. Archaeological work shows us today just how effective was the destruction of Jewish buildings all over the land."—*The Bible and Archaeology* (Grand Rapids, Michigan; 1962), J. A. Thompson, p. 299; see also testimony of historian Flavius Josephus, an eyewitness with the Roman army in his *Wars of the Jews*, Book V, Chap. XII, ¶2, 3; Book VI, Chap. I, ¶1; Book VI, Chap. IX, ¶3; Book VII, Chap. I, ¶1.

Prophetic Description of the "Last Days," in Which We Now Live

2 Tim. 3:1-5, 12, 13 "Know this, that in the last days critical times hard to deal with will be here. For men will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, self-assuming, haughty, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, disloyal, having no natural affection, not open to any agreement, slanderers, without self-control, fierce, without love of goodness, betrayers, headstrong, puffed up with pride, lovers of pleasures rather than lovers of God, having a form of godly devotion but proving false to its power; and from these turn away. In fact, all those desiring to live with godly devotion in association with Christ Jesus will also be persecuted. But wicked men and impostors will advance from bad to worse, misleading and being misled."

Matt. 24:3, 4, 7, 11, 12, 14 "The disciples approached him privately, saying: 'Tell us, When will these things be, and what will be the sign of your presence and of the conclusion of the system of things?' And in answer Jesus said to them: '. . . For nation will rise against nation and kingdom against kingdom, and there will be food shortages and earthquakes in one place after another. And many false prophets will arise and mislead many; and because of the increasing of lawlessness the love of the greater number will cool off. And this good news of the kingdom will be preached in all the inhabited earth for a witness to all the nations; and then the end will come."

Luke 21:11, 25, 26 "There will be great earthquakes, and in one place after another pestilences and food shortages; and there will be fearful sights and from heaven great signs. . . . on the earth anguish of nations, not knowing the way out because of the roaring of the sea and its agitation, while men become faint out of fear and expectation of the things coming upon the inhabited earth."

2 Pet. 3:3, 4 "You know this first, that in the last days there will come ridiculers with their ridicule, proceeding according to their own desires and saying: 'Where is this promised presence of his? Why, from the day our forefathers fell asleep in death, all things are continuing exactly as from creation's beginning.'"

See also the main heading "Sign of Christ's Presence," pages 451-456.

Prophetic View of God's New System of Things, Now Near at Hand

Rev. 21:1, 3, 4 "I saw a new heaven and a new earth; for the former heaven and the former earth had passed away, . . . I heard a loud voice from the throne say: 'Look! The tent of God is with mankind, and he will reside with them, and they will be his peoples. And God himself will be with them. And he will wipe out every tear from their eyes, and death will be no more, neither will mourning nor outcry nor pain be any more. The former things have passed away.' "

Isa. 65:17, 21-25 " 'Here I am creating a new heavens and a new earth; and the former things will not be called to mind, neither will they come up into the heart. And they will certainly build houses and have occupancy; and they will certainly plant vineyards and eat their fruitage. They will not build and someone else have occupancy; they will not plant and someone else do the eating. For like the days of a tree will the days of my people be; and the work of their own hands my chosen ones will use to the full. They will not toil for nothing, nor will they bring to birth for disturbance . . . And it will actually occur that before they call out I myself shall answer; while they are yet speaking, I myself shall hear. The wolf and the lamb themselves will feed as one, and the lion will eat straw just like the bull; and as for the serpent, his food will be dust. They will do no harm nor cause any ruin in all my holy mountain,' Jehovah has said."

Ps. 72:7, 8, 14, 16, 18, 19 "In his days the righteous one will sprout, and the abundance of peace until the moon is no more. And he will have subjects from sea to sea and from the River to the ends of the earth. From oppression and from violence he will redeem their soul, and their blood will be precious in his eyes. There will come to be plenty of grain on the earth; on the top of the mountains there will be an overflow. His fruit will be as in Lebanon, and those who are from the city will blossom like the vegetation of the earth. Blessed be Jehovah God, Israel's God, who alone is doing wonderful works. And blessed be his glorious name to time indefinite, and let his glory fill the whole earth."

Isa. 9:6, 7 "His name will be called Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God, Eternal Father, Prince of Peace. To the abundance of the princely rule and to peace there will be no end, upon the throne of David and upon his kingdom in order to establish it firmly and to sustain it by means of justice and by means of righteousness, from now on and to time indefinite. The very zeal of Jehovah of armies will do this."

Isa. 11:6-9 "The wolf will actually reside for a while with the male lamb, and with the kid the leopard itself will lie down, and the calf and the maned young lion and the well-fed animal all together; and a mere little boy will be leader over them. And the cow and the bear themselves will feed; together their young ones will lie down. And even the lion will eat straw just like the bull. And the sucking child will certainly play upon the hole of the cobra; and upon the light aperture of a poisonous snake will a weaned child actually put his own hand. They will not do any harm or cause any ruin in all my holy mountain; because the earth will certainly be filled with the knowledge of Jehovah as the waters are covering the very sea."

See also the main heading "Earth and Its Destiny," pages 167-170.

Purgatory

Catholic Statement of Belief

"Purgatory (Lat., *purgare*, to make clean, to purify) in accordance with Catholic teaching is a place or condition of temporal punishment for those who, departing this life in God's grace, are not entirely free from venial faults, or have not fully paid the satisfaction due to their transgressions. . . . Augustine in Ps. xxxvii, n. 3, speaks of the pain which purgatorial fire causes as more severe than anything a man can suffer in this life, . . . Gregory the Great speaks of those who after this life 'will expiate their faults by purgatorial flames', and he adds 'that the pain will be more intolerable than any one can suffer in this life'. Following in the footsteps of Gregory, St. Thomas teaches that besides the separation of the soul from the sight of God, there is the other punishment from fire. . . . St. Bonaventure not only agrees with St. Thomas but adds that this punishment by fire is more severe than any punishment which comes to men in this life. . . . Scripture and the Fathers command prayers and oblations for the departed, and the Council of Trent in virtue of this tradition not only asserts the existence of purgatory, but adds 'that the souls therein detained are aided by the suffrages of the faithful and principally by the acceptable sacrifice of the altar' . . . It is the common teaching of Catholic theologians that (1) indulgences may be applied to the souls detained in purgatory; and (2) that indulgences are available for them 'by way of suffrage'."—*The Catholic Encyclopedia* (New York; 1911), Vol. XII, pp. 575, 578, 579.

Dead Are Unconscious, Unable to Experience Pleasure or Pain

Ps. 145:4, *Dy* "His spirit shall go forth, and he shall return into his earth: in that day all their thoughts shall perish."

Rom. 6:23, *Dy* "The wages of sin is death."

Job 3:17, *Dy* "There the wicked cease from tumult, and there the wearied in strength are at rest."

The soul itself is dead

Ezech. 18:4, *Dy* "Behold all souls are mine: as the soul of the father, so also the soul of the son is mine: the soul that sinneth, the same shall die."

Jas. 5:20, *Dy* "He must know that he who causeth a sinner to be converted from the error of his way shall save his soul from death."

Josue 10:32, 35, 37, *Dy* "And the Lord delivered Lachis into the hands of Israel: and he took it the following day, and put it to the sword, and every soul that was in it, . . . and put to the sword all the souls that were in it, . . . and destroyed it with the edge of the sword: the king also thereof, and all the towns of that country, and all the souls that dwell in it."

See also the main heading "Soul," pages 463-465.

Cleansing from Sin Through Faith in the Blood of Christ, Not by Fire

1 John 1:7, 9, *Dy* "But if we walk in the light, as he also is in the light, we have fellowship one with another: and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin. If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just,

to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all iniquity."

Apoc. 1:5, *Dy* "Jesus Christ, . . . washed us from our sins in his own blood."

Eph. 1:7, *Dy* "In whom we have redemption through his blood, the remission of sins, according to the riches of his grace."

Apoc. 7:9, 14, *Dy* "After this I saw a great multitude, . . . standing before the throne and in sight of the Lamb, clothed with white robes, . . . These are they who . . . have washed their robes and have made them white in the blood of the Lamb."

Christ died only once; saying of "mass" brings no further relief to sinners

Heb. 7:26, 27, *Dy* "For it was fitting that we should have such a high priest, holy, innocent, undefiled, separated from sinners, and made higher than the heavens: who needeth not daily (as the other priests) to offer sacrifices, first for his own sins, and then for the people's: for this he did once, in offering himself."

Heb. 9:26, 28, *Dy* "But now once, at the end of ages, [Jesus] hath appeared for the destruction of sin by the sacrifice of himself. So also Christ was offered once to exhaust the sins of many."

1 Pet. 3:18, *Dy* "Christ also died once for our sins, the just for the unjust: that he might offer us to God."

See also the main heading "Mass," pages 335-337.

God's gift of life is free; not made more readily available by money contributions

Rom. 6:23, *Dy* "For the wages of sin is death. But the grace of God, life everlasting in Christ Jesus our Lord."

Eph. 2:8, *Dy* "For by grace you are saved through faith: and that not of yourselves, for it is the gift of God."

Ps. 48:7-9, *Dy* "They that trust in their own strength, and glory in the multitude of their riches. No brother can redeem, nor shall man redeem: he shall not give to God his ransom, nor the price of the redemption of his soul."

Acts 8:18-20, *Dy* "And when Simon saw that, by the imposition of the hands of the apostles, the Holy Ghost was given, he offered them money, saying: Give me also this power, that on whomsoever I shall lay my hands, he may receive the Holy Ghost. But Peter said to him: Keep thy money to thyself, to perish with thee: because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money."

Severe Testings of Faith, as if by Fire, While One Is Alive, Not After Death

1 Pet. 1:7, *Dy* "That the trial of your faith (much more precious than gold which is tried by the fire) may be found unto praise and glory and honour at the appearing of Jesus Christ." [*NW:* "In order that the tested quality of your faith, of much greater value than gold that perishes despite its being proved by fire, may be found a cause for praise and glory and honor at the revelation of Jesus Christ."]

Mal. 3:1-3, *Dy* "The Lord whom you seek, and the angel of the testament whom you desire shall come to his temple. Behold he cometh, saith the Lord of hosts. And who shall be able to think of the day of his coming? And who shall stand to see him? For he is like a refining fire, and like the fuller's herb. And he shall sit refining and cleansing the silver, and he shall purify the sons of Levi and shall refine them as gold and as silver: and they shall offer sacrifices to the Lord in justice."

Inspired Bible Does Not Speak of Purgatory or of Prayers for the Dead

"It is impossible to point out in any writing of the first four centuries any passage which describes the state of any of the faithful departed as one of acute suffering . . . Still less would it be possible to show that the intermediate state was regarded by them as one in which satisfaction was made for sin."—*The Encyclopædia Britannica*, 9th Ed. (1907), Vol. XX, p. 121.

"There is no clear and explicit Scriptural text in favour of prayers for the dead, except the above text of II Machabees [in the Apochrypha]."—*The Catholic Encyclopedia* (New York; 1908), Vol. IV, p. 654.

Apocrypha refers to praying for the dead in view of resurrection hope, not to secure deliverance from purgatory

2 Mach. 12:43, 44 "And making a gathering, he sent twelve thousand drachms of silver to Jerusalem for sacrifice to be offered for the sins of the dead, thinking well and religiously concerning the resurrection. (For if he had not hoped that they that were slain should rise again, it would have seemed superfluous and vain to pray for the dead.)" [The dead referred to are Jews slain for idolatry, which the Roman Catholic Church classes as a "mortal sin," not the kind for which persons are said to suffer in purgatory.]

Teaching Is Based on Tradition of Men

"The Catholic doctrine of purgatory supposes the fact that some die with smaller faults for which there was no true repentance, and also the fact that the temporal penalty due to sin is at times not wholly paid in this life. The proofs for the Catholic position, both in Scripture and in Tradition, are bound up also with the practice of praying for the dead. For why pray for the dead, if there be no belief in the power of prayer to afford solace to those who as yet are excluded from the sight of God? . . . prayers for the dead and the existence of a place of purgation are mentioned in conjunction in the oldest passages of the Fathers, who allege reasons for succouring departed souls."—*The Catholic Encyclopedia* (New York; 1911), Vol. XII, p. 576.

Human traditions that conflict with God's Word not a safe guide

Matt. 15:1-3, 6-9, *Dy* "Then came to him from Jerusalem scribes and Pharisees, saying: Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the ancients? For they wash not their hands when they eat bread. But he answering, said to them: Why do you also transgress the commandment of God for your tradition? . . . you have made void the commandment of God for your tradition. Hypocrites, well hath Isaias prophesied of you, saying: This people honoureth me with their lips: but their heart is far from me. And in vain do they worship me, teaching doctrines and commandments of men."

Col. 2:8, *Dy* "Beware lest any man cheat you by philosophy and vain deceit; according to the tradition of men, according to the elements of the world and not according to Christ."

Hope for the Dead Through Resurrection

John 5:28, 29, *Dy* "Wonder not at this: for the hour cometh, wherein all that are in the graves shall hear the voice of the Son of God. And they that have done good things shall come forth unto the resurrection of life: but they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of judgment."

Acts 24:15, *Dy* "There shall be a resurrection of the just and unjust."

John 11:23-26, *Dy* "Jesus saith to her: Thy brother shall rise again. Martha saith to him: I know that he shall rise again, in the resurrection at the last day. Jesus said to her: I am the resurrection and the life: he that believeth in me, although he be dead, shall live: and every one that liveth and believeth in me shall not die for ever."

Races of Mankind

First Man and Woman Created by Jehovah God

Gen. 1:27 "God proceeded to create the man in his image, in God's image he created him; male and female he created them."

Gen. 2:21, 22 "Jehovah God had a deep sleep fall upon the man and, while he was sleeping, he took one of his ribs and then closed up the flesh over its place. And Jehovah God proceeded to build the rib that he had taken from the man into a woman and to bring her to the man."

All Mankind Descended from Adam and Eve

Acts 17:26 "He made out of one man every nation of men, to dwell upon the entire surface of the earth."

Gen. 3:20 "After this Adam called his wife's name Eve, because she had to become the mother of everyone living."

"The Bible story of Adam and Eve, father and mother of the whole human race, told centuries ago the same truth that science has shown today: that all the peoples of the earth are a single family and have a common origin. Science describes the intricate make-up of the human body: all its different organs cooperating in keeping us alive, its curious anatomy that couldn't possibly have 'just happened' to be the same in all men if they did not have a common origin. . . . The fact of the unity of the human race is proved, therefore, in its anatomy. . . . all the racial differences among them are in nonessentials such as texture of head hair, amount of body hair, shape of the nose or head, or color of the eyes and the skin. . . . The races of mankind are what the Bible says they are —brothers."—*The Races of Mankind*, by Prof. Ruth Benedict and Dr. Gene Weltfish, Public Affairs Pamphlet #85 (New York; 1956), Sixteenth Edition, pp. 3-5.

"All of us, if we went back far enough, hundreds of generations, would arrive at the same place—the base of the human family tree with the first *Homo sapiens*. . . . Our common ancestor could as well be called Adam, which also means man in Hebrew, for the familiar Biblical story foreshadowed the evidence of science that present men derive from a common stock."—*What is Race?*, published by the United Nations Educational, Scientific and Cultural Organization (Paris; 1952), pp. 11, 12.

See also the main heading "Evolution," pages 177-184.

Cain Married One of His Sisters

Gen. 5:4 "The days of Adam after his fathering Seth came to be eight hundred years. Meanwhile he became father to sons and daughters."

Gen. 4:16, 17 "With that Cain went away from the face of Jehovah and took up residence in the land of Fugitiveness to the east of Eden. Afterward Cain had intercourse with his wife and she became pregnant and gave birth to Enoch."

After the Flood, Nations Developed from Offspring of Noah's Sons

Gen. 9:18, 19 "Noah's sons who came out of the ark were Shem and Ham and Japheth. . . . These three were Noah's sons, and from these was all the earth's population spread abroad."

Gen. 10:32 "These were the families of the sons of Noah according to their family descents, by their nations, and from these the nations were spread about in the earth after the deluge."

All "Races" Due to Hereditary Factors in Original Pair; Traits Became Prominent Due to Geographical Isolation and Intermarriage

"A race is simply one of the partially isolated gene pools into which the human species came to be divided during and following its early geographical spread. Roughly one race has developed on each of the five major continental areas of the earth. . . . Man did indeed diverge genetically during this phase of history and we can measure and study the results of this divergence in what remains today of the old geographical races. As we would expect, divergence appears to be correlated with the degree of isolation. . . . When race formation took place on the continents, with the bottlenecking of thousands of populations in isolated gene pools all over the world, the gene-frequency differences we now see were established. . . . The paradox which faces us is that each group of humans appears to be externally different yet underneath these differences there is fundamental similarity."—*Heredity and Human Life*, by Hampton L. Carson, Columbia University Press (New York; London; 1963), pp. 151, 154, 162, 163.

"Black Race" from Cush, Not Due to Curse on Canaan, Whose Descendants Were White

Gen. 10:6 "The sons of Ham were Cush and Mizraim and Put and Canaan."

Gen. 9:25 "At this [Noah] said: 'Cursed be Canaan.'"

Gen. 10:15-18 "Canaan became father to Sidon his first-born and Heth and the Jebusite and the Amorite and the Girgashite and the Hivite and the Arkite and the Sinite and the Arvadite and the Zemarite and the Hamathite; and afterward the families of the Canaanite were scattered."

Gen. 10:7 "The sons of Cush were Seba and Havilah and Sabtah and Raamah and Sabteca."

People of One Nationality or Skin Color Not Better than Others

Rom. 3:9-12 "What then? Are we in a better position? Not at all! For above we have made the charge that Jews as well as Greeks are all under sin; just as it is written: 'There is not a righteous man, not even one; there is no one that has any insight, there is no one that seeks for God. All men have deflected, all of them together have become worthless; there is no one that does good, there is not so much as one.'"

Acts 10:34, 35 "At this Peter opened his mouth and said: 'For a certainty I perceive that God is not partial, but in every nation the man that fears him and works righteousness is acceptable to him.'"

"When they study racial differences, scientists investigate the way by which particular traits

are passed on from parents to children. They measure head form and identify skin color on a color chart. . . . Scientists recognize that these differences do not themselves show better or worse qualities in peoples, any more than bay horses are better than black ones. . . . The most careful investigations of intelligence have been made in America among Negroes and whites. The scientist realizes that every time he measures intelligence in any man, black or white, his results show the intelligence that man was born with *plus* what happened to him since he was born. . . . Negroes with better luck after they were born got higher scores than whites with less luck. The white race did badly where economic conditions were bad and schooling was not provided, and Negroes living under better conditions surpassed them. The differences did not arise because people were from the North or the South, or because they were white or black, but because of differences in income, education, cultural advantages and other opportunities."—*The Races of Mankind*, by Prof. Ruth Benedict and Dr. Gene Weltfish, Public Affairs Pamphlet #85 (New York; 1956), pp. 14, 17, 18.

"A final approach to the tricky question of racial superiority is a consideration of what each race has contributed to the development of the world's civilization. At first glance, it would seem that today's predominantly Caucasoid Western civilization would win hands down. 'But it's not that simple,' Dr. Meighan cautions. 'True, during the past few hundred years the Western European-United States culture has been recognized as superior. But this span of time is but a moment in the world's history.' He points out that many former civilizations were non-Caucasoid or only part-Caucasoid. The ancient Egyptian civilization, for example, had strong strains of Negroid blood. The Mayas and the Aztec civilizations were Mongoloids."—*Science Digest*, October 1963, p. 11.

Discrimination against one's fellowman, showing partiality, wrong

Prov. 28:21 "The showing of partiality is not good."

Deut. 10:17 "Jehovah your God is the God of gods and the Lord of lords, the God great, mighty and fear-inspiring, who treats none with partiality."

See also the heading "Social Distinctions," pages 462, 463.

Ransom

Man's Need of a Ransom to Free Him from Bondage to Sin and Death

Rom. 5:12 "Through one man sin entered into the world and death through sin, and thus death spread to all men because they had all sinned."

Rom. 3:23 "All have sinned and fall short of the glory of God."

Ps. 51:5 "Look! With error I was brought forth with birth pains, and in sin my mother conceived me."

Ps. 49:7-9 "Not one of them can by any means redeem even *a brother, nor give to God a* ransom for him; (and the redemption price of their soul is so precious that it has ceased to time indefinite) that he should still live forever and not see the pit."

See also the main heading "Sin," pages 456-460.

Jehovah Himself Made Provision for the Ransom

1 John 4:14 "In addition, we ourselves have beheld and are bearing witness that the Father has sent forth his Son as Savior of the world."

Matt. 1:20, 21 "Jehovah's angel appeared to him in a dream, saying: 'Joseph, son of David, do not be afraid to take Mary your wife home, for that which has been begotten in her is by holy spirit. She will give birth to a son, and you must call his name Jesus, for he will save his people from their sins.'"

An expression of his love for mankind

John 3:16 "God loved the world so much that he gave his only-begotten Son, in order that everyone exercising faith in him might not be destroyed but have everlasting life."

1 John 4:9 "By this the love of God was made manifest in our case, because God sent forth his only-begotten Son into the world that we might gain life through him."

Rom. 5:8 "God recommends his own love to us in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us."

The Ransom: Price Paid for Release from Bondage to Sin and Death

Matt. 20:28 "The Son of man came, not to be ministered to, but to minister and to give his soul a ransom in exchange for many."

1 John 3:5 "You know too that that one was made manifest to *take away our sins.*"

Rom. 3:24 "They are being declared righteous by his undeserved kindness through the release by the ransom paid by Christ Jesus."

Heb. 2:14, 15 "Since the 'young children' are sharers of blood and flesh, he also similarly partook of the same things, that through his death he might bring to nothing the one having the means to cause death, that is, the Devil; and that he might emancipate all those who for fear of death were subject to slavery all through their lives."

Christ's human life, represented by his blood, poured out in death is ransom

John 10:11 "I am the fine shepherd; the fine shepherd surrenders his soul ["life," 1950 Ed. ftn.] in behalf of the sheep."

Eph. 1:7 "By means of him we have the release by ransom through the blood of that one."

1 Pet. 1:18, 19 "*It was not with* corruptible things, with silver or gold, that you were delivered from your fruitless form of conduct received by tradition from your forefathers. But it was with precious blood, like that of an unblemished and spotless lamb, even Christ's."

Rev. 5:9 "With your blood you bought persons for God out of every tribe and tongue and people and nation."

Christ died, not because of sin on his part, but as sacrifice on man's behalf

Heb. 7:26; 9:25, 26 "For such a high priest as this was suitable for us, loyal, guileless, undefiled, separated from the sinners, and become higher than the heavens." "Neither is it in order that he should offer himself often, as indeed the high priest enters into the holy place from year to year with blood not his own. Otherwise, he would have to suffer often from the founding *of the world. But now he has* manifested himself once for all time at the conclusion of the systems of things to put sin away through the sacrifice of himself."

1 Pet. 2:22 "He committed no sin, nor was deception found in his mouth."

1 John 4:10 "[God] loved us and sent forth his Son as a propitiatory sacrifice for our sins."

Ransom price corresponds to perfect human life Adam lost and which he could have passed along by inheritance to his children

1 Tim. 2:5, 6 "Christ Jesus, . . . gave himself a corresponding ransom for all."

Phil. 2:7, 8 "He emptied himself and took a slave's form and came to be in the likeness of men. More than that, when he found himself in fashion as a man, he humbled himself and became obedient as far as death, yes, death on a torture stake."

1 Cor. 15:22 "Just as in Adam all are dying, so also in the Christ all will be made alive."

See also 1 Cor. 15:45; Ex. 21: 23, 24.

Following his resurrection, Christ presented value of sacrifice to God in heaven

Heb. 9:11, 12, 24 "When Christ came as a high priest of the good things that have come to pass through the greater and more perfect tent not made with hands, that is, not of this creation, he entered, no, not with the blood of goats and of young bulls, but with his own blood, once for all time into the holy place and obtained an everlasting deliverance for us. For Christ entered, not into a holy place made with hands, which is a copy of the reality, but into heaven itself, now to appear before the person of God for us."

Rom. 8:34 "Christ Jesus is the one who died, yes, rather the one who was raised up from the dead, who is on the right hand of God, who also pleads for us."

Eph. 5:2 "Go on walking in love, just as the Christ also loved you and delivered himself up for you as an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweet-smelling odor."

Purpose and Benefits of Ransom

Isa. 53:12 "He poured out his soul to the very death, and it was with the transgressors that he was counted in; and he himself carried the very sin of many people, and for the transgressors he proceeded to interpose."

Heb. 2:9 "We behold Jesus, who has been made a little lower than angels, crowned with glory and honor for having suffered death, that he by God's undeserved kindness might taste death for every man."

Gal. 1:4 "He gave himself for our sins that he might deliver us from the present wicked system of things according to the will of our God and Father."

Forgiveness of sins

John 1:29 "The next day he beheld Jesus coming toward him, and he said: 'See, the Lamb of God that takes away the sin of the world!' "

Eph. 1:7 "By means of him we have the release by ransom through the blood of that one, yes, the forgiveness of our trespasses."

1 John 1:7 "If we are walking in the light as he himself is in the light, we do have a sharing with one another, and the blood of Jesus his Son cleanses us from all sin."

1 John 2:1, 2 "My little children, I am writing you these things that you may not commit a sin. And yet, if anyone does commit a sin, we have a helper with the Father, Jesus Christ, a righteous one. And he is a propitiatory sacrifice for our sins, yet not for ours only but also for the whole world's."

Rev. 7:9, 10, 14 "After these things I saw, and, look! a great crowd, which no man was able to number, out of all nations and tribes and peoples and tongues, standing before the throne and before the Lamb, dressed in white robes; and there were palm branches in their hands. And they keep on crying with a loud voice, saying: 'Salvation we owe to our God, who is seated on the throne, and to the Lamb.' . . . 'These are the ones that come out of the great tribulation, and they have washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.' "

See also the main heading "Repentance," pages 420-423.

Reconciliation to God

Col. 1:18-20 "He is the beginning, the first-born from the dead, that he might become the one who is first in all things; because God saw good for all fullness to dwell in him, and through him to reconcile again to himself all other things by making peace through the blood he shed on the torture stake."

2 Cor. 5:18, 19 "All things are from God, who reconciled us to himself through Christ and gave us the ministry of the reconciliation, namely, that God was by means of Christ reconciling a world to himself, not reckoning to them their trespasses, and he committed the word of the reconciliation to us."

Rom. 5:10 "If, when we were enemies, we became reconciled to God through the death of his Son, much more, now that we have become reconciled, we shall be saved by his life."

Opened way for "little flock" to gain heavenly life

Luke 12:32 "Have no fear, little flock, because your Father has approved of giving you the kingdom."

1 Cor. 15:22, 23, 49 "Just as in Adam all are dying, so also in the Christ all will be made alive. But each one in his own rank: Christ the first fruits, afterward those who belong to the Christ during his presence. And just as we have borne the image of the one made of dust, we shall bear also the image of the heavenly one."

Rev. 5:9, 10 "You are worthy to take the scroll and open its seals, because you were slaughtered and with your blood you bought persons for God out of every tribe and tongue and people and nation, and you made them to be a kingdom and priests to our God, and they will rule as kings over the earth." (See also Rev. 1:5, 6.)

Gal. 4:4-7 "When the full limit of the time arrived, God sent forth his Son, who came to be out of a woman and who came to be under law, that he might release by purchase those under law, that we, in turn, might receive the adoption as sons. Now because you are sons, God has sent forth the spirit of his Son into our hearts and it cries out: '*Abba*, Father!' So, then, you are no longer a slave but a son; and if a son, also an heir through God." (Compare Rom. 8:15-17.)

See also the main heading "Justification, or Being Declared Righteous," pages 295-298.

Makes possible general resurrection for mankind with opportunity for eternal life

Heb. 9:26-28 "He has manifested himself once for all time at the conclusion of the systems of things to put sin away through the sacrifice of himself. And as it is reserved for men to die once for all time, but after this a judgment, so also the Christ was offered once for all time to bear the sins of many; and the second time that he appears it will be apart from sin and to those earnestly looking for him for their salvation."

Rom. 14:9 "To this end Christ died and came to life again, that he might be Lord over both the dead and the living."

John 5:26-29 "Just as the Father has life in himself, so he has granted also to the Son to have life in himself. And he has given him authority to do judging, because Son of man he is.

Do not marvel at this, because the hour is coming in which all those in the memorial tombs will hear his voice and come out."

Acts 24:15 "There is going to be a resurrection of both the righteous and the unrighteous."

Removal of physical effects of sin during Christ's thousand-year reign

Rev. 21:2, 4 "I saw also the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God . . . And he will wipe out every tear from their eyes, and death will be no more, neither will mourning nor outcry nor pain be any more. *The former things* have passed away." (Compare Rom. 6:23; Mark 2:1-12.)

Everlasting life for those who manifest faith and obedience

John 3:16, 36 "God loved the world so much that he gave his only-begotten Son, in order that everyone exercising faith in him might not be destroyed but have everlasting life. He that exercises faith in the Son has everlasting life; he that disobeys the Son will not see life, but the wrath of God remains upon him."

John 6:40, 47 "This is the will of my Father, that everyone that beholds the Son and exercises faith in him should have everlasting life, and I will resurrect him at the last day. Most truly I say to you, He that believes has everlasting life."

Heb. 5:9 "After he had been made perfect he became responsible for everlasting salvation to all those obeying him."

Appreciation for Ransom Should Affect Our Course of Life

Heb. 9:14 "How much more will the blood of the Christ, who through an everlasting spirit offered himself without blemish to God, cleanse our consciences from dead works that we may render sacred service to the living God?"

Rev. 7:14, 15 "They have washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb. That is why they are before the throne of God; and they are rendering him sacred service day and night in his temple."

1 Cor. 6:20 "You were bought with a price. By all means, glorify God in the body of you people."

Titus 2:13, 14 "We wait for the happy hope and glorious manifestation of the great God and of our Savior Christ Jesus, who gave himself for us that he might deliver us from every sort of lawlessness and cleanse for himself a people peculiarly his own, zealous for fine works."

2 Cor. 5:14, 15 "The love the Christ has compels us, because this is what we have judged, that one man died for all; so, then, all had died; and he died for all that those who live might live no longer for themselves, but for him who died for them and was raised up."

1 John 4:11 "Beloved ones, if this is how God loved us, then we are ourselves under obligation to love one another."

Religion

Not All Worship Approved by God

Matt. 7:13, 14 "Go in through the narrow gate; because broad and spacious is the road leading off into destruction, and many are the ones going in through it; whereas narrow is the gate and cramped the road leading off into life, and few are the ones finding it."

Jas. 1:26 "If any man seems to himself to be a formal worshiper and yet does not bridle his tongue, but goes on deceiving his own heart, this man's form of worship is futile."

Many worship false gods, though unknowingly so

1 Cor. 10:20 "*I say that the* things which the nations sacrifice they sacrifice to demons, and not to God."

Hab. 2:18 "Of what benefit has a carved image been, when the former of it has carved it, a molten statue, and an instructor in falsehood? when the former of its form has trusted in it, to the extent of making valueless gods that are speechless?"

See also the main heading "Celebrations," pages 63-66.

Not even all professedly Christian worship acceptable to God

Matt. 7:21-23 "Not everyone saying to me, 'Lord, Lord,' will *enter into the kingdom of the* heavens, but the one doing the will of my Father who is in the heavens will. Many will say to me in that day, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your name, and expel demons in your name, and perform many powerful works in your name?' And yet then I will confess to them: I never *knew you! Get away from me,* you workers of lawlessness."

Titus 1:16 "They publicly declare they know God, but they disown him by their works, because they are detestable and disobedient and not approved for good work of any sort."

Luke 6:46-49 "Why, then, do you call me 'Lord! Lord!' but do not do the things I say? . . . he who hears and does not do, is like a man who built a house upon the ground without a foundation. Against it the river dashed, and immediately it collapsed, and the ruin of that house became great."

Identifying Marks of True Worship

Worship given only to Jehovah God

Matt. 4:10 "Then Jesus said to him: . . . 'It is Jehovah your God you must worship, and it is to him alone you must render sacred service.' "

Deut. 5:9 "I Jehovah your God am a God exacting exclusive devotion."

1 Cor. 8:5, 6 "Even though there are those who are called 'gods,' whether in heaven or on earth, just as there are many 'gods' and many 'lords,' there is actually to us one God the Father, out of whom all things are, and we for him."

John 17:3 "This means everlasting life, their taking in knowledge of you, the only true God, and of the one whom you sent forth, Jesus Christ."

Faith in Jesus Christ

John 3:36 "He that exercises faith in the Son has everlasting life; he that disobeys the Son will not see life, but the wrath of God remains upon him."

Acts 4:12 "There is no salvation in anyone else, for there is not another name under heaven that has been given among men by which we must get saved."

1 John 4:3 "Every inspired expression that does not confess Jesus does not originate with God."

Reliance on God's written Word, the Bible

2 Tim. 3:16, 17 "All Scripture is inspired of God and beneficial for teaching, for reproving, for setting things straight, for disciplining in righteousness, that the man of God may be fully competent, completely equipped for every good work."

2 Pet. 1:19 "We have the prophetic word made more sure; and you are doing well in paying attention to it as to a lamp shining in a dark place."

John 17:17 "Sanctify them by means of the truth; your word is truth."

Matt. 4:4 "In reply he said: 'It is written, "Man must live, not on bread alone, but on every utterance coming forth through Jehovah's mouth."' "

Accurate knowledge of God's will; worshipers able to explain beliefs

Col. 1:9 "That is why we . . . have not ceased praying for you and asking that you may be filled with the accurate knowledge of his will."

1 Tim. 2:3, 4 "God, whose will is that all sorts of men should be saved and come to an accurate knowledge of truth."

1 Pet. 3:15 "Sanctify the Christ as Lord in your hearts, always ready to make a defense before everyone that demands of you a reason for the hope in you, but doing so together with a mild temper and deep respect."

All active preachers of the Word of God

Matt. 28:19 "Go therefore and make disciples of people of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the holy spirit."

Rom. 10:10 "With the heart one exercises faith for righteousness, but with the mouth one makes public declaration for salvation."

Matt. 24:14 "This good news of the kingdom will be preached in all the inhabited earth for a witness to all the nations; and then the end will come."

Acts 8:1, 4 "On that day great persecution arose against the congregation that was in Jerusalem; all except the apostles were scattered throughout the regions of Judea and Samaria. However, those who had been scattered went through the land declaring the good news of the word."

2 Tim. 4:2 "Preach the word, be at it urgently."

See also the main headings "Babylon the Great," page 37, and "Minister of God," page 348.

Separate from world

John 15:19 "If you were part of the world, the world would be fond of what is its own. Now because you are no part of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, on this account the world hates you."

Jas. 1:27 "The form of worship that is clean and undefiled from the standpoint of our God and Father is this: to look after orphans and widows in their tribulation, and to keep oneself without spot from the world."

1 John 2:15 "Do not be loving either the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him."

See also the main heading "Friendship with the World," pages 197-203.

Lives of worshipers changed to conform to God's way

Rom. 12:2 "Quit being fashioned after this system of things, but be transformed by making your mind over, that you may prove to yourselves the good and acceptable and perfect will of God."

Col. 3:5-10 "Deaden, therefore, your body members that are upon the earth as respects fornication, uncleanness, sexual appetite, hurtful desire, and covetousness, which is idolatry. On account of those things the wrath of God is coming. In those very things you, too, once walked when you used to live in them. But now really put them all away from you, wrath, anger, injuriousness, abusive speech, and obscene talk out of your mouth. Do not be lying to one another. Strip off the old personality with its practices, and clothe yourselves with the new personality, which through accurate knowledge is being made new according to the image of the One who created it."

See also Eph. 4:20-24, and the main heading "Conduct of Christians," pages 98-108.

Worshipers identified by Christian love shown

John 13:34, 35 "I am giving you a new commandment, that you love one another; just as I have loved you, that you also love one another. By this all will know that you are my disciples, if you have love among yourselves."

1 John 4:20, 21 "If anyone makes the statement: 'I love God,' and yet is hating his brother, he is a liar. For he who does not love his brother, whom he has seen, cannot be loving God, whom he has not seen. And this commandment we have from him, that the one who loves God should be loving his brother also."

See also the main heading "Love," pages 325-328.

Abel and Other Men of Faith After Him Practiced True Worship

Heb. 11:4 "By faith Abel offered God a sacrifice of greater worth than Cain, through which faith he had witness borne to him that he was righteous, God bearing witness respecting his gifts."

Heb. 11:7 "By faith Noah, after being given divine warning of things not yet beheld, showed godly fear and constructed an ark for the saving of his household; and through this faith he condemned the world, and he became an heir of the righteousness that is according to faith."

Heb. 11:8, 9 "By faith Abraham, when he was called, obeyed in going out into a place he was destined to receive as an inheritance; and he went out, although not knowing where he was going.

By faith he resided as an alien in the land of the promise as in a foreign land, and dwelt in tents with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the very same promise."

Jehovah Instructed Nation of Israel in Right Worship

Ex. 19:5, 6 "Now if you will strictly obey my voice and will indeed keep my covenant, then you will certainly become my special property out of all other peoples, because the whole earth belongs to me. And you yourselves will become to me a kingdom of priests and a holy nation."

Deut. 10:12, 13 "And now, O Israel, what is Jehovah your God asking of you but to fear Jehovah your God, so as to walk in all his ways and to love him and to serve Jehovah your God with all your heart and all your soul; to keep the commandments of Jehovah and his statutes that I am commanding you today, for your good?"

Jews as a nation later rejected by God because of faithless course

Matt. 21:42-45 "Jesus said to them: 'Did you never read in the Scriptures, "The stone that the builders rejected is the one that has become the chief cornerstone. From Jehovah this has come to be, and it is marvelous in our eyes"? This is why I say to you, The kingdom of God will be taken from you and be given to a nation producing its fruits. Also, the person falling upon this stone will be shattered. As for anyone upon whom it falls, it will pulverize him.' Now when the chief priests and the Pharisees had heard his illustrations, they took note that he was speaking about them."

Matt. 23:37, 38 "Jerusalem, Jerusalem, the killer of the prophets and stoner of those sent forth to her,—how often I wanted to

gather your children together, the way a hen gathers her chicks together under her wings! But you people did not want it. Look! Your house is abandoned to you."

Acts 13:45, 46 "When the Jews got sight of the crowds, they were filled with jealousy and began blasphemously contradicting the things being spoken by Paul. And so, talking with boldness, Paul and Barnabas said: 'It was necessary for the word of God to be spoken first to you. Since you are thrusting it away from you and do not judge yourselves worthy of everlasting life, look! we turn to the nations.'"

True Christianity Revealed by God Through His Son, Not Developed by Men

Heb. 1:1, 2 "God, who long ago spoke on many occasions and in many ways to our forefathers by means of the prophets, has at the end of these days spoken to us by means of a Son, whom he appointed heir of all things, and through whom he made the systems of things."

Heb. 2:3, 4 "How shall we escape if we have neglected a salvation of such greatness in that it began to be spoken through our Lord and was verified for us by those who heard him, while God joined in bearing witness with signs as well as portents and various powerful works and with distributions of holy spirit according to his will?"

John 1:14-17 "So the Word became flesh and resided among us, and we had a view of his glory, a glory such as belongs to an only-begotten son from a father; and he was full of undeserved kindness and truth. . . . Because the Law was given through Moses, the undeserved kindness and the truth came to be through Jesus Christ."

See also the main heading "Organization (Jehovah's)," pages 362-366.

Only one true Christian faith; worshipers not scattered in many religious sects

Eph. 4:1-6 "I, therefore, the prisoner in the Lord, entreat you to walk worthily of the calling with which you were called . . . earnestly endeavoring to observe the oneness of the spirit in the uniting bond of peace. One body there is, and one spirit, even as you were called in the one hope to which you were called; one Lord, one faith, one baptism; one God and Father of all persons, who is over all and through all and in all."

1 Cor. 1:10, 13 "Now I exhort you, brothers, through the name of our Lord Jesus Christ that you should all speak in agreement, and that there should not be divisions among you, but that you may be fitly united in the same mind and in the same line of thought. Does the Christ exist divided?"

More than Sincerely Believing Required

Rom. 10:2, 3 "I bear them witness that they have a zeal for God; but not according to accurate knowledge; for, because of not knowing the righteousness of God but seeking to establish their own, they did not subject themselves to the righteousness of God."

Jas. 2:14, 26 "Of what benefit is it, my brothers, if a certain one says he has faith but he does not have works? That faith cannot save him, can it? Indeed, as the body without breath is dead, so also faith without works is dead."

Must Stay Spiritually Alert so as Not to Fall Away from True Religion

2 Cor. 13:5 "Keep testing whether you are in the faith, keep proving what you yourselves are. Or do you not recognize that Jesus Christ is in union with you? Unless you are disapproved."

1 Cor. 10:12 "Let him that thinks he is standing beware that he does not fall."

Gal. 6:1 "Keep an eye on yourself, for fear you also may be tempted."

First False Teachings Concerning God Introduced by the Devil

Gen. 3:4-6 "The serpent said to the woman: 'You positively will not die. For God knows that in the very day of your eating from it your eyes are bound to be opened and you are bound to be like God, knowing good and bad.' Consequently the woman saw that the tree's fruit was good for food and that it was something to be longed for to the eyes, yes, the tree was desirable to look upon. So she began taking of its fruit and eating it. Afterward she gave some also to her husband when with her and he began eating it." (Compare Rev. 12:9; 20:1-3.)

Departure from True Worship After the Flood, Began with Exalting of Nimrod

Gen. 10:8-10 "And Cush became father to Nimrod. He made the start in becoming a mighty one in the earth. He displayed himself a mighty hunter in opposition to Jehovah. That is why there is a saying: 'Just like Nimrod a mighty hunter in opposition to Jehovah.' And the beginning of his kingdom came to be Babel and Erech and Accad and Calneh, in the land of Shinar."

Gen. 11:4, 9 "They now said: 'Come on! Let us build ourselves a city and also a tower with its top in the heavens, and let us make a celebrated name for ourselves, for fear we may be scattered over all the surface of the earth.' That is why its name was called Babel, because there Jehovah had confused the language of all the earth, and Jehovah had scattered them from there over all the surface of the earth."

See also the main heading "Babylon the Great," pages 33-39.

Apostasy from True Christian Faith Foretold

Acts 20:29, 30 "I know that after my going away oppressive wolves will enter in among you and will not treat the flock with tenderness, and from among you yourselves men will rise and speak twisted things to draw away the disciples after themselves."

2 Pet. 2:1 "However, there also came to be false prophets among the people, as there will also be false teachers among you. These very ones will quietly bring in destructive sects and will disown even the owner that bought them, bringing speedy destruction upon themselves."

1 Tim. 4:1, 2 "The inspired utterance says definitely that in later periods of time some will fall away from the faith, paying attention to misleading inspired utterances and teachings of demons, by the hypocrisy of men who speak lies."

Clergymen Bear Heavy Responsibility for False Teaching

Matt. 23:13-15, 33 "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because you shut up the kingdom of the heavens before men; for you yourselves do not go in, neither do you permit those on their way in to go in. Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because you traverse sea and dry land to make one proselyte, and when he becomes one you make him a subject for Gehenna twice as much so as yourselves. Serpents, offspring of vipers, how are you to flee from the judgment of Gehenna?"

Ezek. 34:2-10 "Prophesy against the shepherds of Israel. Prophesy, and you must say to them, to

the shepherds, 'This is what the Lord Jehovah has said: "Woe to the shepherds of Israel, who have become feeders of themselves! Is it not the flock that the shepherds ought to feed? . . . The sickened ones you have not strengthened, and the ailing one you have not healed, and the broken one you have not bandaged, and the dispersed one you have not brought back, and the lost one you have not sought to find, but with harshness you have had them in subjection, even with tyranny. . . . Here I am against the shepherds, and I shall certainly ask back my sheep from their hand and make them cease from feeding my sheep, and the shepherds will no longer feed themselves; and I will deliver my sheep out of their mouth, and they will not become food for them."' "

Worshipers often want that kind of teaching

2 Tim. 4:3, 4 "There will be a period of time when they will not put up with the healthful teaching, but, in accord with their own desires, they will accumulate teachers for themselves to have their ears tickled; and they will turn their ears away from the truth, whereas they will be turned aside to false stories."

Jer. 5:30, 31 "An astonishing situation, even a horrible thing, has been brought to be in the land: The prophets themselves actually prophesy in falsehood; and as for the priests, they go subduing according to their powers. And my own people have loved it that way."

John 3:19 "The light has come into the world but men have loved the darkness rather than the light."

Worship That Relies on Traditions of Men Is Vain

Matt. 15:3-9 "In reply he said to them: 'Why is it you also overstep the commandment of God because of your tradition? . . . you say, "Whoever says to his father or mother: 'Whatever I have by which you might get benefit from me is a gift dedicated to God,' he must not honor his father at all." And so you have made the word of God invalid because of your tradition. You hypocrites, Isaiah aptly prophesied about you, when he said, "This people honors me with their lips, yet their heart is far removed from me. It is in vain that they keep worshiping me, because they teach commands of men as doctrines."' "

Col. 2:8 "Look out: perhaps there may be someone who will carry you off as his prey through the philosophy and empty deception according to the tradition of men."

Religious Practices Done Simply to Be Seen by Men Not Pleasing to God

Matt. 6:1-5 "Take good care not to practice your righteousness in front of men in order to be observed by them; otherwise you will have no reward with your Father who is in the heavens. Hence when you go making gifts of mercy, do not blow a trumpet ahead of you, just as the hypocrites do . . . that they may be glorified by men. Truly I say to you, They are having their reward in full. But you, when making gifts of mercy, do not let your left hand know what your right is doing, that your gifts of mercy may be in secret; then your Father who is looking on in secret will repay you. Also, when you pray, you must not be as the hypocrites; because they like to pray standing in the synagogues and on the corners of the broad ways to be visible to men. Truly I say to you, They are having their reward in full."

Impressive Religious Temples Not Required

Acts 7:48, 49 "The Most High does not dwell in houses made with hands; just as the prophet says, 'The heaven is my throne, and the earth is my footstool. What sort of house will you build for me? Jehovah says.' "

John 4:20-24 " 'Our forefathers worshiped in this mountain; but you people say that in Jerusalem is the place where persons ought to worship.' Jesus said to her: 'Believe me, woman, The hour is coming when neither in this mountain nor in Jerusalem will you people worship the Father. . . . Nevertheless, the hour is coming, and it is now, when the true worshipers will worship the Father with spirit and truth, for, indeed, the Father is looking for suchlike ones to worship him. God is a Spirit, and those worshiping him must worship with spirit and truth.' "

See also Jer. 7:4.

No Joining with False Worshipers in Spiritual Brotherhood

2 Cor. 6:14-16 "Do not become unevenly yoked with unbelievers. For what sharing do righteousness and lawlessness have? Or what fellowship does light have with darkness? Further, what harmony is there between Christ and Belial? Or what portion does a faithful person have with an unbeliever? And what agreement does God's temple have with idols? For we are a temple of a living God; just as God said: 'I shall reside among them and walk among them, and I shall be their God, and they will be my people.' "

1 Cor. 10:21 "You cannot be drinking the cup of Jehovah and the cup of demons; you cannot be partaking of 'the table of Jehovah' and the table of demons."

See also the main heading "Interfaith," pages 257-263.

Urgent to Forsake False Religion Now to Have God's Approval

Rev. 18:4 "I heard another voice out of heaven say: 'Get out of her, my people, if you do not want to share with her in her sins, and if you do not want to receive part of her plagues.' "

2 Cor. 6:17 " 'Therefore get out from among them, and separate yourselves,' says Jehovah, 'and quit touching the unclean thing.' "

Changing from religion of parents necessary if proved wrong

1 Pet. 1:18 "You were delivered from your fruitless form of conduct received by tradition from your forefathers."

2 Chron. 29:6 "Our fathers have acted unfaithfully and have done what was bad in the eyes of Jehovah our God, so that they left him."

Josh. 24:14 "Remove the gods that your forefathers served on the other side of the River and in Egypt, and serve Jehovah."

Jer. 16:19 "O Jehovah my strength and my stronghold, and my place for flight in the day of distress, to you the nations themselves will come from the ends of the earth, and they will say: 'Indeed our forefathers came to possess sheer falsehood, vanity and things in which there was nothing beneficial.' "

Taking Up True Religion May Bring Opposition from Family and Friends

Matt. 10:34-36 "Do not think I came to put peace upon the earth; I came to put, not peace, but a sword. For I came to cause division, with a man against his father, and a daughter against her mother, and a young wife

against her mother-in-law. Indeed, a man's enemies will be persons of his own household."

Luke 12:52, 53 "From now on there will be five in one house divided, three against two and two against three. They will be divided, father against son and son against father, mother against daughter and daughter against her mother, mother-in-law against her daughter-in-law and daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law."

Faithfulness to God and Christ must come first

Matt. 10:37 "He that has greater affection for father or mother than for me is not worthy of me; and he that has greater affection for son or daughter than for me is not worthy of me."

Luke 18:29, 30 "Truly I say to you, There is no one who has left house or wife or brothers or parents or children for the sake of the kingdom of God who will not in any way get many times more in this period of time, and in the coming system of things everlasting life."

See also Luke 14:25, 26, 33.

Real love for family members shown by setting right example

1 Cor. 7:12-16 "If any brother has an unbelieving wife, and yet she is agreeable to dwelling with him, let him not leave her; and a woman who has an unbelieving husband, and yet he is agreeable to dwelling with her, let her not leave her husband. For the unbelieving husband is sanctified in relation to his wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified in relation to the brother; otherwise, your children would really be unclean, but now they are holy. But if the unbelieving one proceeds to depart, let him depart; a brother or a sister is not in servitude under such circumstances, but God has called you to peace. For, wife, how do you know but that you will save your husband? Or, husband, how do you know but that you will save your wife?"

1 Pet. 3:1, 2 "You wives, be in subjection to your own husbands, in order that, if any are not obedient to the word, they may be won without a word through the conduct of their wives, because of having been eyewitnesses of your chaste conduct together with deep respect."

Repentance

Repentance Required When One Turns to God

Acts 26:20 "Both to those in Damascus first and to those in Jerusalem, and over all the country of Judea, and to the nations I went bringing the message that they should repent and turn to God by doing works that befit repentance."

Jehovah encourages repentance

Rom. 2:4 "Do you despise the riches of his kindness and forbearance and long-suffering, because you do not know that the kindly quality of God is trying to lead you to repentance?"

2 Pet. 3:9 "Jehovah is not slow respecting his promise, as some people consider slowness, but he is patient with you because he does not desire any to be destroyed but desires all to attain to repentance."

Ezek. 33:11 "'As I am alive,' is the utterance of the Lord Jehovah, 'I take delight, not in the death of the wicked one, but in that someone wicked turns back from his way and actually keeps living. Turn back, turn back from your bad ways, for why is it that you should die?'"

Luke 15:7 "There will be more joy in heaven over one sinner that repents than over ninety-nine righteous ones who have no need of repentance."

Necessary because all have sinned

Rom. 3:23 "All have sinned and fall short of the glory of God."

Rom. 5:12 "Through one man sin entered into the world and death through sin, and thus death spread to all men because they had all sinned."

1 John 1:8 "If we make the statement: 'We have no sin,' we are misleading ourselves and the truth is not in us."

Luke 18:9-14 "[Jesus] spoke this illustration also to some who trusted in themselves that they were righteous and who considered the rest as nothing: 'Two men went up into the temple to pray, the one a Pharisee and the other a tax collector. The Pharisee stood and began to pray these things to himself, "O God, I thank you I am not as the rest of men, extortioners, unrighteous, adulterers, or even as this tax collector. I fast twice a week, I give the tenth of all things I acquire." But the tax collector standing at a distance was not willing even to raise his eyes heavenward, but kept beating his breast, saying, "O God, be gracious to me a sinner." I tell you, This man went down to his home proved more righteous than that man.'"

Former way of life to be abandoned

Eph. 4:17, 22-24 "This, therefore, I say and bear witness to in the Lord, that you no longer go on walking just as the nations also walk in the unprofitableness of their minds, . . . you should put away the old personality which conforms to your former course of conduct and which is being corrupted according to his deceptive desires; but that you should be made new in the force actuating your mind, and should put on the new personality which was created according to God's will in true righteousnes and loyalty."

1 Pet. 4:3 "The time that has passed by is sufficient for you to have worked out the will of the nations when you proceeded in deeds of loose conduct, lusts, excesses with wine, revelries, drinking matches, and illegal idolatries."

Col. 3:5-10 "Deaden, therefore, your body members that are upon the earth as respects fornication, uncleanness, sexual appetite, hurtful desire, and covetousness, which is idolatry. On account of those things the wrath of God is coming. In those very things you, too, once walked when you used to live in them. But now really put them all away from you, wrath, anger, injuriousness, abusive speech, and obscene talk out of your mouth. Do not be lying to one another. Strip off the old personality with its practices, and clothe yourselves with the new personality, which through accurate knowledge is being made new according to the image of the One who created it."

One repenting should seek accurate knowledge of God's will

2 Tim. 2:25 "Instructing with mildness those not favorably disposed; as perhaps God may give them repentance leading to an accurate knowledge of truth."

Col. 3:9, 10 "Strip off the old personality with its practices, and clothe yourselves with the new personality, which through ac-

curate knowledge is being made new according to the image of the One who created it."

Rom. 12:2 "Quit being fashioned after this system of things, but be transformed by making your mind over, that you may prove to yourselves the good and acceptable and perfect will of God."

See also the main heading "Knowledge," pages 306-311.

Repentance emphasized in Christian teaching

Mark 1:14, 15 "Now after John was put under arrest Jesus went into Galilee, preaching the good news of God and saying: 'The appointed time has been fulfilled, and the kingdom of God has drawn near. Be repentant, you people, and have faith in the good news.'"

Luke 24:47 "On the basis of his name repentance for forgiveness of sins would be preached in all the nations—starting out from Jerusalem."

Acts 2:38 "Peter said to them: 'Repent, and let each one of you be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ for forgiveness of your sins, and you will receive the free gift of the holy spirit.'"

Acts 17:30 "True, God has overlooked the times of such ignorance, yet now he is telling mankind that they should all everywhere repent."

Acts 20:21 "I thoroughly bore witness both to Jews and to Greeks about repentance toward God and faith in our Lord Jesus."

Repentance Possible for Those Who, in Weakness, Commit a Sin

1 John 2:1 "My little children, I am writing you these things that you may not commit a sin. And yet, if anyone does commit a sin, we have a helper with the Father, Jesus Christ, a righteous one."

Gal. 6:1 "Brothers, even though a man takes some false step before he is aware of it, you who have spiritual qualifications try to restore such a man in a spirit of mildness."

Rev. 2:5 "Therefore remember from what you have fallen, and repent and do the former deeds. If you do not, I am coming to you, and I will remove your lampstand from its place, unless you repent."

Mercy for those who voluntarily confess wrong, change course

Prov. 28:13 "He that is covering over his transgressions will not succeed, but he that is confessing and leaving them will be shown mercy."

1 John 1:9 "If we confess our sins, he is faithful and righteous so as to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness."

Ps. 32:5 "My sin I finally confessed to you, and my error I did not cover. I said: 'I shall make confession over my transgressions to Jehovah.' And you yourself pardoned the error of my sins."

See also the main heading "Mercy," page 345.

There Ought to Be Evidence of Repentance

Matt. 3:8 "So then produce fruit that befits repentance."

Acts 26:20 "Repent and turn to God by doing works that befit repentance."

Indications of true repentance

2 Chron. 7:14 "[If] my people upon whom my name has been called humble themselves and pray and seek my face and turn back from their bad ways, then I myself shall hear from the heavens and forgive their sin."

Ezek. 33:14-16 "And when I say to the wicked one: 'You will positively die,' and he actually turns back from his sin and carries on justice and righteousness, and the wicked one returns the very thing pledged, pays back the very things taken by robbery, and actually walks in the very statutes of life by not doing injustice, he will positively keep living. He will not die. None of his sins with which he has sinned will be remembered against him."

Ezek. 18:30, 31 "'Turn back, yes, cause a turning back from all your transgressions, and let nothing prove to be for you people a stumbling block causing error. Throw off from yourselves all your transgressions in which you have transgressed and make for yourselves a new heart and a new spirit.'"

Acts 3:19 "Repent, therefore, and turn around so as to get your sins blotted out."

Prov. 28:13 "He that is covering over his transgressions will not succeed, but he that is confessing and leaving them will be shown mercy."

Forgive Those Who Express Repentance for Offenses Against You

Luke 17:3, 4 "Pay attention to yourselves. If your brother commits a sin give him a reproof, and if he repents forgive him. Even if he sins seven times a day against you and he comes back to you seven times, saying, 'I repent,' you must forgive him."

Matt. 18:21, 22 "Then Peter came up and said to him: 'Lord, how many times is my brother to sin against me and am I to forgive him? Up to seven times?' Jesus said to him: 'I say to you, not, Up to seven times, but, Up to seventy-seven times.'"

Matt. 6:14, 15 "If you forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you; whereas if you do not forgive men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses."

No Repentance Possible for Persons Who Accept God's Mercy Through Christ, Then Return to Willful Practice of Sin and Disbelief

Heb. 6:4-6 "It is impossible as regards those who have once for all been enlightened, and who have tasted the heavenly free gift, and who have become partakers of holy spirit, and who have tasted the fine word of God and powers of the coming system of things, but who have fallen away, to revive them again to repentance, because they impale the Son of God afresh for themselves and expose him to public shame."

Heb. 10:26, 27, 29 "If we practice sin willfully after having received the accurate knowledge of the truth, there is no longer any sacrifice for sins left, but there is a certain fearful expectation of judgment and there is a fiery jealousy that is going to consume those in opposition. Of how much more severe a punishment, do you think, will the man be counted worthy who has trampled upon the Son of God and who has esteemed as of ordinary value the blood of the covenant by which he was sanctified, and who has outraged the spirit of undeserved kindness with contempt?"

2 Pet. 2:20, 22 "Certainly if, after having escaped from the defilements of the world by an accurate knowledge of the Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, they get involved again with these very things and are overcome, the final conditions have become worse for them than the first. The saying of the true proverb has happened to them: 'The dog has returned to its own vomit, and the sow that was bathed to rolling in the mire.'"

See also the main heading "Gehenna," pages 209, 210.

Resurrection

Resurrection Hope Plainly Set Out in Bible

Heb. 6:1, 2 "Now that we have left the primary doctrine about the Christ, let us press on to maturity, not laying a foundation again, namely, repentance from dead works . . . the resurrection of the dead."

Isa. 25:8 "He will actually swallow up death forever, and the Lord Jehovah will certainly wipe the tears from all faces."

Prechristian Hebrew Scriptures refer to hope of resurrection

Isa. 26:19 "Your dead ones will live. A corpse of mine—they will rise up. Awake and cry out joyfully, you residents in the dust! For your dew is as the dew of mallows, and the earth itself will let even those impotent in death drop in birth."

Job 14:13 "O that in Sheol you would conceal me, that you would keep me secret until your anger turns back, that you would set a time limit for me and remember me!"

Matt. 22:31, 32 "As regards the resurrection of the dead, did you not read what was spoken to you by God, saying, 'I am the God of Abraham and the God of Isaac and the God of Jacob'? He is the God, not of the dead, but of the living." (See also Luke 20:37, 38; Ex. 3:6.)

Dan. 12:13 "As for you yourself, go toward the end; and you will rest, but you will stand up for your lot at the end of the days."

See also 1 Sam. 2:6; Heb. 11:17-19.

Record of persons being raised from the dead before the Common Era

1 Ki. 17:22-24 "Jehovah listened to Elijah's voice, so that the soul of the child came back within him and he came to life. Elijah now took the child and brought him down from the roof chamber into the house and gave him to his mother; and Elijah then said: 'See, your son is alive.' Upon that the woman said to Elijah: 'Now, indeed, I do know that you are a man of God and that Jehovah's word in your mouth is true.'"

2 Ki. 13:20, 21 "Elisha died and they buried him. And there were marauding bands of the Moabites that regularly came into the land at the coming in of the year. And it came about that as they were burying a man, why, here they saw the marauding band. At once they threw the man into Elisha's burial place and went off. When the man touched the bones of Elisha, he immediately came to life and stood upon his feet."

Heb. 11:35 "Women received their dead by resurrection."

See also 2 Ki. 4:17-37.

Christian Greek Scriptures clearly teach resurrection

John 6:39, 40 "This is the will of him that sent me, that I should lose nothing out of all that he has given me but that I should resurrect it at the last day. For this is the will of my Father, that everyone that beholds the Son and exercises faith in him should have everlasting life, and I will resurrect him at the last day."

John 11:23, 24 "Jesus said to her: 'Your brother will rise.' Martha said to him: 'I know he will rise in the resurrection on the last day.'"

Luke 20:35, 36 "Those who have been counted worthy of gaining that system of things and the resurrection from the dead neither marry nor are given in marriage. In fact, neither can they die any more, for they are like the angels, and they are God's children by being children of the resurrection."

Record of persons raised from the dead by Christ and his apostles

John 11:38, 39, 43-45 "Jesus . . . came to the memorial tomb. It was, in fact, a cave, and a stone was lying against it. Jesus said: 'Take the stone away.' Martha, the sister of the deceased, said to him: 'Lord, by now he must smell, for he has been dead four days.' . . . he cried out with a loud voice: 'Lazarus, come on out!' The man that had been dead came out with his feet and hands bound with wrappings, and his countenance was bound about with a cloth. Jesus said to them: 'Loose him and let him go.' Therefore many of the Jews that had come to Mary and that beheld what he did put faith in him."

Luke 7:11-15 "He traveled to a city called Nain, and his disciples and a great crowd were traveling with him. As he got near the gate of the city, why, look! there was a dead man being carried out, the only-begotten son of his mother. Besides, she was a widow. A considerable crowd from the city was also with her. And when the Lord caught sight of her, he was moved with pity for her, and he said to her: 'Stop weeping.' With that he approached and touched the bier, and the bearers stood still, and he said: 'Young man, I say to you, Get up!' And the dead man sat up and started to speak, and he gave him to his mother."

Acts 9:36-41 "In Joppa there was a certain disciple named Tabitha, . . . But in those days she happened to fall sick and die. So they bathed her and laid her in an upper chamber. Now as Lydda was near Joppa, when the disciples heard that Peter was in this city they dispatched two men to him to entreat him: 'Please do not hesitate to come on as far as us.' At that Peter rose and went with them. And when he arrived, they led him up into the upper chamber; . . . But Peter put everybody outside and, bending his knees, he prayed, and, turning to the body, he said: 'Tabitha, rise!' She opened her eyes and, as she caught sight of Peter, she sat up. Giving her his hand, he raised her up, and he called the holy ones and the widows and presented her alive."

See also Matt. 9:18-26; Acts 20:7-12.

Resurrection of Christ to heavenly life opens the way for others to be raised from the dead

1 Cor. 15:12, 20, 21 "Now if Christ is being preached that he has been raised up from the dead, how is it some among you say there is no resurrection of the dead? However, now Christ has been raised up from the dead, the first fruits of those who have fallen asleep in death. For since death is through a man, resurrection of the dead is also through a man."

2 Cor. 4:13, 14 "Now because we have the same spirit of faith as that of which it is written: 'I exercised faith, therefore I spoke,' we too exercise faith and therefore we speak, knowing that he who raised Jesus up will raise us up also together with Jesus and will present us together with you."

Acts 17:31 "He has set a day in which he purposes to judge the inhabited earth in righteousness by a man whom he has appointed, and he has furnished a guarantee to all men in that he has resurrected him from the dead."

See also 1 Pet. 3:18.

More than 500 witnesses to the fact that Jesus was resurrected

1 Cor. 15:3-8 "I handed on to you, among the first things, that

which I also received, that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures; and that he was buried, yes, that he has been raised up the third day according to the Scriptures; and that he appeared to Cephas, then to the twelve. After that he appeared to upward of five hundred brothers at one time, the most of whom remain to the present, but some have fallen asleep in death. After that he appeared to James, then to all the apostles; but last of all he appeared also to me as if to one born prematurely."

Acts 2:32 "This Jesus God resurrected, of which fact we are all witnesses."

See also Matt. 28:1-10, 16, 17.

"Little Flock" to Share in Resurrection to Heavenly Kingdom

Luke 12:32 "Have no fear, little flock, because your Father has approved of giving you the kingdom."

1 Cor. 15:49, 50 "Just as we have borne the image of the one made of dust, we shall bear also the image of the heavenly one. However, this I say, brothers, that flesh and blood cannot inherit God's kingdom, neither does corruption inherit incorruption."

Rom. 6:5 "If we have become united with him in the likeness of his death, we shall certainly also be united with him in the likeness of his resurrection."

1 Pet. 1:3, 4 "Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, for according to his great mercy he gave us a new birth to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, to an incorruptible and undefiled and unfading inheritance. It is reserved in the heavens for you."

Rev. 20:4, 5 "I saw thrones, and there were those who sat down on them, and power of judging was given them. Yes, I saw the souls of those executed with the ax for the witness they bore to Jesus and for speaking about God, . . . And they came to life and ruled as kings with the Christ for a thousand years. . . . This is the first resurrection."

See also the main heading "Congregation of God," pages 112-116.

Those already dead in union with Christ rise first during Christ's second presence

1 Thess. 4:15, 16 "This is what we tell you by Jehovah's word, that we the living who survive to the presence of the Lord shall in no way precede those who have fallen asleep in death; because the Lord himself will descend from heaven with a commanding call, with an archangel's voice and with God's trumpet, and those who are dead in union with Christ will rise first."

1 Cor. 15:22, 23 "Just as in Adam all are dying, so also in the Christ all will be made alive. But each one in his own rank: Christ the first fruits, afterward those who belong to the Christ during his presence."

Those surviving to the presence of the Lord do not sleep in death but are raised instantly at end of their earthly life

1 Cor. 15:51-53 "I tell you a sacred secret: We shall not all fall asleep in death, but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, during the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound, and the dead will be raised up incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this which is corruptible must put on incorruption, and this which is mortal must put on immortality."

See also Rev. 14:13.

Not raised in flesh, but with spiritual body

1 Cor. 15:35, 40, 42, 44 "Someone will say: 'How are the dead

to be raised up? Yes, with what sort of body are they coming?' . . . there are heavenly bodies, and earthly bodies; but the glory of the heavenly bodies is one sort, and that of the earthly bodies is a different sort. So also is the resurrection of the dead. . . . It is sown a physical body, it is raised up a spiritual body. If there is a physical body, there is also a spiritual one."

Phil. 3:20, 21 "As for us, our citizenship exists in the heavens, from which place also we are eagerly waiting for a savior, the Lord Jesus Christ, who will refashion our humiliated body to be conformed to his glorious body according to the operation of the power that he has."

Cannot be harmed by second death; raised to immortal life

Rev. 2:10, 11 "Prove yourself faithful even to death, and I will give you the crown of life. Let the one who has an ear hear what the spirit says to the congregations: He that conquers will by no means be harmed by the second death."

1 Cor. 15:53 "This which is corruptible must put on incorruption, and this which is mortal must put on immortality."

General Resurrection of the Dead After Wicked "Heaven" and "Earth" Are Removed

Rev. 20:11, 12 "I saw a great white throne and the one seated on it. From before him the earth and the heaven fled away, and no place was found for them. And I saw the dead, the great and the small, standing before the throne, and scrolls were opened."

Both Righteous and Unrighteous to Be Raised with Opportunity for Life

Acts 24:15 "I have hope toward God . . . that there is going to be a resurrection of both the righteous and the unrighteous."

John 5:26-29 "Just as the Father has life in himself, so he has granted also to the Son to have life in himself. And he has given him authority to do judging, because Son of man he is. Do not marvel at this, because the hour is coming in which all those in the memorial tombs will hear his voice and come out."

See also the main headings "Judgment" and "Sheol–Hades."

Resurrection Affords Opportunity for Mankind to Benefit from Ransom, Be Judged Individually on Basis of Own Works

Rev. 20:12, 13 "I saw the dead, the great and the small, standing before the throne, and scrolls were opened. But another scroll was opened; it is the scroll of life. And the dead were judged out of those things written in the scrolls according to their deeds. And the sea gave up those dead in it, and death and Hades gave up those dead in them, and they were judged individually according to their deeds."

Heb. 9:27, 28 "As it is reserved for men to die once for all time, but after this a judgment, so also the Christ was offered once for all time to bear the sins of many; and the second time that he appears it will be apart from sin and to those earnestly looking for him for their salvation."

Some to be rewarded with eternal life; others will choose course leading to condemnatory judgment

John 5:28, 29 "All those in the memorial tombs will hear his voice and come out, those who did good things to a resurrection of life, those who practiced vile things to a resurrection of judgment."

Given full opportunity to conform to God's ways

Isa. 65:17, 20 "Here I am creating new heavens and a new earth; and the former things will not be called to mind, neither will they come up into the heart. No more will there come to be a suckling a few days old from that place, neither an old man that does not fulfill his days; for one will die as a mere boy, although a hundred years of age; and as for the sinner, although a hundred years of age he will have evil called down upon him."

Last of those proving unworthy of life destroyed following Christ's thousand-year reign

Rev. 20:7-9 "Now as soon as the thousand years have been ended, Satan will be let loose out of his prison, and he will go out to mislead those nations in the four corners of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together for the war. The number of these is as the sand of the sea. And they advanced over the breadth of the earth and encircled the camp of the holy ones and the beloved city. But fire came down out of heaven and devoured them."

Spiritual Awakening of Living Persons Likened to Resurrection

John 5:24, 25 "He that hears my word and believes him that sent me has everlasting life, and he does not come into judgment but has passed over from death to life. Most truly I say to you, The hour is coming, and it is now, when the dead will hear the voice of the Son of God and those who have given heed will live."

Eph. 2:1, 2 "It is you God made alive though you were dead in your trespasses and sins, in which you at one time walked according to the system of things of this world, according to the ruler of the authority of the air, the spirit that now operates in the sons of disobedience."

Rom. 6:11-13 "Likewise also you: reckon yourselves to be dead indeed with reference to sin but living with reference to God by Christ Jesus. Therefore do not let sin continue to rule as king in your mortal bodies that you should obey their desires. Neither go on presenting your members to sin as weapons of unrighteousness, but present yourselves to God as those alive from the dead."

1 Pet. 4:5, 6 "These people will render an account to the one ready to judge those living and those dead. In fact, for this purpose the good news was declared also to the dead, that they might be judged as to the flesh from the standpoint of men but might live as to the spirit from the standpoint of God."

No Resurrection Hope Held Out for Those in Symbolic Gehenna

Matt. 23:13-15, 33 "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because you shut up the kingdom of the heavens before men; for you yourselves do not go in, neither do you permit those on their way in to go in. Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because you traverse sea and dry land to make one proselyte, and when he becomes one you make him a subject for Gehenna twice as much so as yourselves. Serpents, offspring of vipers, how are you to flee from the judgment of Gehenna?"

Matt. 10:28 "Do not become fearful of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul ["the future life," *ED*]; but rather be in fear of him that can destroy both soul and body in Gehenna."

Mark 9:43, 47 "If ever your hand makes you stumble, cut it off; it is finer for you to enter into life maimed than with two hands to go off into Gehenna, into the fire that cannot be put out. And if your eye makes you stumble, throw it away; it is finer for you to enter one-eyed into the kingdom of God than with two eyes to be pitched into Gehenna."

See also the main heading "Gehenna," pages 209, 210.

No Resurrection Hope for Those Finally Judged to Be "Goats" When Christ in Kingdom Power Executes Judgment

Matt. 25:31-33, 41, 46 "When the Son of man arrives in his glory, and all the angels with him, then he will sit down on his glorious throne. And all the nations will be gathered before him, and he will separate people one from another, just as a shepherd separates the sheep from the goats. And he will put the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on his left. Then he will say, in turn, to those on his left, 'Be on your way from me, you who have been cursed, into the everlasting fire prepared for the Devil and his angels.' And these will depart into everlasting cutting-off."

See also 2 Thess. 1:7-9; Rev. 19:11-21.

Return of Christ

Jesus Christ Promised to Come Again

John 14:3 "If I go my way and prepare a place for you, I am coming again and will receive you home to myself, that where I am you also may be."

Rev. 22:20 "He that bears witness of these things says, 'Yes; I am coming quickly.' Amen! Come, Lord Jesus."

World Not to See Him in Human Form Again, but His Followers for Whom He Went to Prepare a Place in Heaven Would See Him

John 14:2, 3, 18-22 "'In the house of my Father there are many abodes. Otherwise, I would have told you, because I am going my way to prepare a place for you. Also, if I go my way and prepare a place for you, I am coming again and will receive you home to myself, that where I am you also may be. I shall not leave you bereaved. I am coming to you. A little longer and the world will behold me no more, but you will behold me, because I live and you will live. In that day you will know that I am in union with my Father and you are in union with me and I am in union with you. He that has my commandments and observes them, that one is he who loves me. In turn he that loves me will be loved by my Father, and I will love him and will plainly show myself to him.' Judas, not Iscariot, said to him: 'Lord, what has happened that you intend to show yourself plainly to us and not to the world?'"

Jesus was raised from the dead a spirit creature

1 Pet. 3:18 "Christ died once for all time concerning sins, a righteous person for unrighteous ones, that he might lead you to God, he being put to death in the flesh, but being made alive in the spirit."

1 Tim. 3:16 "He was made manifest in flesh, was declared righteous in spirit, appeared to angels, was preached about among nations, was believed upon in the world, was received up in glory."

2 Cor. 5:16 "Even if we have known Christ according to the flesh, certainly we now know him so no more."

See also the main heading "Incarnation," pages 254, 255.

Appearances in materialized bodies after his resurrection seen only by his disciples, not the public

1 Cor. 15:3-8 "I handed on to you, among the first things, that which I also received, that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures; and that he was buried, yes, that he has been raised up the third day according to the Scriptures; and that he appeared to Cephas, then to the twelve. After that he appeared to upward of five hundred brothers at one time, the most of whom remain to the present, but some have fallen asleep in death. After that he appeared to James, then to all the apostles; but last of all he appeared also to me as if to one born prematurely."

Acts 10:40, 41 "God raised this One up on the third day and granted him to become manifest, not to all the people, but to witnesses appointed beforehand by God, to us, who ate and drank with him after his rising from the dead."

Christ gave fleshly body for mankind; not to take it back by returning in flesh

John 6:51 "I am the living bread that came down from heaven; if anyone eats of this bread he will live forever; and, for a fact, the bread that I shall give is my flesh in behalf of the life of the world."

Heb. 9:28; 10:10 "The Christ was offered once for all time to bear the sins of many." "We have been sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all time."

Luke 22:19, 20 "He took a loaf, gave thanks, broke it, and gave it to them, saying: 'This means my body which is to be given in your behalf.'"

Comes in glory, not in likeness of man; superior to angels, not lower

Matt. 16:27 "The Son of man is destined to come in the glory of his Father with his angels."

Matt. 25:31 "When the Son of man arrives in his glory, and all the angels with him, then he will sit down on his glorious throne."

Heb. 1:6 "When he again brings his First-born into the inhabited earth, he says: 'And let all God's angels worship him.'"

Christ's Return to Be "in the Same Manner" as Ascension to Heaven—in Clouds, out of Sight of Physical Human Eyes

Acts 1:9-11 "While they were looking on, he was lifted up and a cloud caught him up from their vision. And as they were gazing into the sky while he was on his way, also, look! two men in white garments stood alongside them, and they said: 'Men of Galilee, why do you stand looking into the sky? This Jesus who was received up from you into the sky will come thus in the same manner as you have beheld him going into the sky.'"

Luke 21:27 "Then they will see the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory."

See also Matt. 24:23-27.

"Sign of the Son of Man" to Be Seen by All Tribes of Earth

Matt. 24:30 "Then the sign of the Son of man will appear in heaven, and then all the tribes of the earth will beat themselves in lamentation, and they will see the Son of man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory."

Rev. 1:7 "Look! He is coming with the clouds, and every eye will see him, and those who pierced him; and all the tribes of the earth will beat themselves in grief because of him."

Sign recorded at Daniel 7:13, 14

Dan. 7:13, 14 "I kept on beholding in the visions of the night, and, see there! with the clouds of the heavens someone like a son of man happened to be coming; and to the Ancient of Days he gained access, and they brought him up close even before that One. And to him there were given rulership and dignity and kingdom, that the peoples, national groups and languages should all serve even him. His rulership is an indefinitely lasting rulership that will not pass away, and his kingdom one that will not be brought to ruin."

Jesus Christ is the "Son of man"

John 3:13-15 "No man has ascended into heaven but he that descended from heaven, the Son of man. And just as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, so the Son of man must be lifted up, that everyone believing in him may have everlasting life."

Luke 22:66-69 "Both chief priests and scribes, gathered together, and they haled him into their Sanhedrin hall, saying: 'If you are the Christ, tell us.' But he said to them: '. . . from now on the Son of man will be sitting at the powerful right hand of God.'"

Son of man in heaven no more visible to men than Jehovah, the Ancient of Days

John 1:18 "No man has seen God at any time."

1 Tim. 6:15, 16 "This manifestation the happy and only Potentate will show in its own appointed times, he the King of those who rule as kings and Lord of those who rule as lords, the one alone having immortality, who dwells in unapproachable light, whom not one of men has seen or can see."

"Seeing" can refer to either physical or mental sight

Rom. 1:20 "His invisible qualities are clearly seen from the world's creation onward, because they are perceived by the things made, even his eternal power and Godship." (Compare with Eph. 1:18.)

Concerning the Greek word for "see" used at Matthew 24:30 and Revelation 1:7, note the following among the meanings listed: "Metaphorically, . . . of mental sight, *to discern, perceive.*"—*A Greek-English Lexicon* (New York; 1849), Liddell and Scott, p. 1042.

When Christ acts to destroy the wicked, they will be forced to recognize his presence, will beat selves in grief

Luke 17:29, 30 "On the day that Lot came out of Sodom it rained fire and sulphur from heaven and destroyed them all. The same way it will be on that day when the Son of man is to be revealed."

2 Thess. 1:7-10 "The revelation of the Lord Jesus from heaven with his powerful angels in a flaming fire, as he brings vengeance upon those who do not know God and those who do not obey the good news about our Lord Jesus. These very ones will undergo the judicial punishment of everlasting destruction from before the Lord and from the glory of his strength, at the time he comes to be glorified in connection with his holy ones and to be regarded in that day with wonder in connection with all those who exercised faith."

Rev. 1:7 "Look! He is coming with the clouds, and every eye will see him, and those who pierced him; and all the tribes of the earth will beat themselves in grief because of him."

Christ's Return Not a Literal Coming Back to Earth

Never ceased to be with his followers by spirit

Matt. 28:20 "Look! I am with you all the days until the conclusion of the system of things."

Acts 2:32, 33 "This Jesus God resurrected, of which fact we are

all witnesses. Therefore because he was exalted to the right hand of God and received the promised holy spirit from the Father, he has poured out this which you see and hear."

Matt. 18:20 "For where there are two or three gathered together in my name, there I am in their midst."

Jehovah is said to have "visited" Israel by turning attention to them

Gen. 50:24 "Joseph said to his brothers: 'I am dying; but God will without fail turn his attention to you ["visit you," *RS*], and he will certainly bring you up out of this land to the land about which he swore to Abraham.'"

Ex. 4:31 "When they heard that Jehovah had turned his attention to ["visited," *RS*] the sons of Israel and that he had seen their affliction, then they bowed down and prostrated themselves."

Ruth 1:6 "She had heard in the field of Moab that Jehovah had turned his attention to ["visited," *RS*] his people by giving them bread."

Christ's return means his taking Kingdom power toward earth

Matt. 25:31, 32 "When the Son of man arrives in his glory, and all the angels with him, then he will sit down on his glorious throne. And all the nations will be gathered before him."

Rev. 12:1, 5, 10 "A great sign was seen in heaven, a woman arrayed with the sun, and the moon was beneath her feet, and on her head was a crown of twelve stars, and she was pregnant. And she gave birth to a son, a male, who is to shepherd all the nations with an iron rod. And her child was caught away to God and to his throne. And I heard a loud voice in heaven say: 'Now have come to pass the salvation and the power and the kingdom of our God and the authority of his Christ.'"

Rev. 11:15 "The seventh angel blew his trumpet. And loud voices occurred in heaven, saying: 'The kingdom of the world has become the kingdom of our Lord and of his Christ, and he will rule as king forever and ever.'"

Christ's return means his turning attention to his joint heirs then in graves, raising them to heavenly life

1 Thess. 4:15, 16 "This is what we tell you by Jehovah's word, that we the living who survive to the presence of the Lord shall in no way precede those who have fallen asleep in death; because the Lord himself will descend from heaven with a commanding call, with an archangel's voice and with God's trumpet, and those who are dead in union with Christ will rise first."

1 Cor. 15:22, 23 "In the Christ all will be made alive. But each one in his own rank: Christ the first fruits, afterward those who belong to the Christ during his presence."

Rom. 8:16, 17 "The spirit itself bears witness with our spirit that we are God's children. If, then, we are children, we are also heirs: heirs indeed of God, but joint heirs with Christ, provided we suffer together that we may also be glorified together."

Christ's return a time of showing favor to faithful Christians yet on earth

Rev. 11:12 "They heard a loud voice out of heaven say to them: 'Come on up here.' And they went up into heaven in the cloud, and their enemies beheld them."

1 Thess. 4:17 "Afterward we the living who are surviving will, together with them, be caught away in clouds to meet the Lord in the air; and thus we shall always be with the Lord."

Luke 19:11-19 "While they were listening to these things he spoke in addition an illustration, because he was near Jerusalem and they were imagining that the kingdom of God was going to display itself instantly. Therefore he said: 'A certain man of noble birth traveled to a distant land to secure kingly power for himself and to return. . . . Eventually when he got back after having secured the kingly power, he commanded to be called to him these slaves to whom he had given the silver money, in order to ascertain what they had gained by business activity. Then the first one presented himself, saying, "Lord, your mina gained ten minas." So he said to him, "Well done, good slave! Because in a very small matter you have proved yourself faithful, hold authority over ten cities." Now the second came, saying, "Your mina, Lord, made five minas." He said to this one also, "You, too, be in charge of five cities."'"

2 Thess. 1:7 "To you who suffer tribulation, relief along with us at the revelation of the Lord Jesus from heaven with his powerful angels."

Christ's return a time of judging of people of all nations

Matt. 25:31-33 "When the Son of man arrives in his glory, and all the angels with him, then he will sit down on his glorious throne. And all the nations will be gathered before him, and he will separate people one from another, just as a shepherd separates the sheep from the goats. And he will put the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on his left."

Christ's second presence the time for execution of wicked ones

2 Pet. 3:3, 4, 7 "In the last days there will come ridiculers . . . saying: 'Where is this promised presence of his? Why, from the day our forefathers fell asleep in death, all things are continuing exactly as from creation's beginning.' But by the same word the heavens and the earth that are now are stored up for fire and are being reserved to the day of judgment and of destruction of the ungodly men."

Matt. 24:39 "They took no note until the flood came and swept them all away, so the presence of the Son of man will be."

2 Thess. 2:8 "Then, indeed, the lawless one will be revealed, whom the Lord Jesus will do away with by the spirit of his mouth and bring to nothing by the manifestation of his presence."

Matt. 25:41, 46 "Then he will say . . . to those on his left, 'Be on your way from me, you who have been cursed, into the everlasting fire prepared for the Devil and his angels.' And these will depart into everlasting cutting-off."

Christ's second presence in Kingdom power results in blessings for mankind

Luke 23:42, 43 "He went on to say: 'Jesus, remember me when you get into your kingdom.' And he said to him: 'Truly I tell you today, You will be with me in Paradise.'"

Matt. 25:31, 34 "When the Son of man arrives in his glory . . . Then the king will say to those on his right, 'Come, you who have my Father's blessing, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the founding of the world.'"

See also the main headings "Earth and Its Destiny" and "Kingdom."

Time of Christ's Return

(See details under the main headings "Sign of Christ's Presence" and "Chronology.")

Day and hour of his taking action to execute the wicked unknown

Mark 13:32, 33 "Concerning that day or the hour nobody knows, neither the angels in heaven nor the Son, but the Father. Keep looking, keep awake, for you do not know when the appointed time is."

Sabbath

Seventh-Day Sabbath Law First Given to Israelites After Exodus from Egypt

Ex. 16:1, 23, 26 "The entire assembly of the sons of Israel finally came to the wilderness of Sin . . . on the fifteenth day of the second month after their coming out of the land of Egypt. . . . [Moses] said to them: 'It is what Jehovah has spoken. Tomorrow there will be a sabbath observance of a holy sabbath to Jehovah. . . . Six days you will pick [the manna] up, but on the seventh day is a sabbath. On it none will form.' "

Deut. 5:2-14 "Jehovah our God concluded a covenant with us in Horeb. It was not with our forefathers that Jehovah concluded this covenant, but with us, all those of us alive here today. . . . Keeping the sabbath day to hold it sacred, just as Jehovah your God commanded you, you are to render service, and you must do all your work six days. But the seventh day is a sabbath to Jehovah your God."

See also Neh. 9:13, 14.

As a sign only between God and the Israelites

Ex. 31:13 "Speak to the sons of Israel, saying, 'Especially my sabbaths you are to keep, for it is a sign between me and you during your generations that you may know that I Jehovah am sanctifying you.' "

Ezek. 20:12 "My sabbaths I also gave to them, to become a sign between me and them, in order for them to know that I am Jehovah who is sanctifying them."

Deut. 5:15 "You must remember that you became a slave in the land of Egypt and Jehovah your God proceeded to bring you out from there with a strong hand and an outstretched arm. That is why Jehovah your God commanded you to carry on the sabbath day."

Activities properly engaged in on sabbath day

Acts 15:21 "From ancient times Moses has had in city after city those who preach him, because he is read aloud in the synagogues on every sabbath."

Luke 4:32 "[Jesus] was teaching them on the sabbath; and they were astounded at his way of teaching."

Luke 13:15, 16 "The Lord answered him and said: 'Hypocrites, does not each one of you on the sabbath untie his bull or his ass from the stall and lead it away to give it drink? Was it not due, then, for this woman who is a daughter of Abraham, and whom Satan held bound, look! eighteen years, to be loosed from this bond on the sabbath day?' " (See also Matt. 12:11, 12.)

John 7:22, 23 "You circumcise a man on a sabbath. If a man receives circumcision on a sabbath in order that the law of Moses may not be broken, are you violently angry at me because I made a man completely sound in health on a sabbath?"

Matt. 12:5 "Have you not read in the Law that on the sabbaths the priests in the temple treat the sabbath as not sacred and continue guiltless?"

Num. 28:9, 10 "On the sabbath day there will be two sound year-old male lambs and two tenth measures of fine flour as a grain offering moistened with oil, together with its drink offering, as a sabbath burnt offering on its sabbath, along with the constant burnt offering and its drink offering."

1 Chron. 9:32 "Some of the sons of the Kohathites, their brothers, were in charge of the layer bread, to prepare it sabbath by sabbath."

Activities forbidden on the sabbath day

Deut. 5:14 "The seventh day is a sabbath to Jehovah your God. You must not do any work, you nor your son nor your daughter nor your slave man nor your slave girl nor your bull nor your ass nor any domestic animal of yours nor your alien resident who is inside your gates, in order that your slave man and your slave girl may rest the same as you."

Ex. 35:3 "You must not light a fire in any of your dwelling places on the sabbath day."

Jer. 17:22 "You must bring no load out of your homes on the sabbath day; and no work at all must you do."

Neh. 10:31 "As for the peoples of the land who were bringing in wares and every kind of cereal on the sabbath day to sell, we should take nothing from them on the sabbath or on a holy day."

Violation of sabbath day punished with death

Ex. 31:14 "You must keep the sabbath, for it is something holy to you. A profaner of it will positively be put to death."

Num. 15:32-35 "While the sons of Israel were continuing in the wilderness, they once found a man collecting pieces of wood on the sabbath day. Then those who found him collecting pieces of wood brought him up to Moses and Aaron and the whole assembly. So they committed him into custody, because it had not been distinctly stated what should be done to him. In time Jehovah said to Moses: 'Without fail the man should be put to death.' "

Other Sabbath Days and Years Equally Binding upon Israelites

Lev. 16:29, 31 "It must serve as a statute to time indefinite for you people: In the seventh month on the tenth of the month you should afflict your souls, and you must not do any work, either the native or the alien resident who is residing as an alien in your midst. It is a sabbath of complete rest for you, and you must afflict your souls."

Lev. 25:2, 4, 8, 10, 11 "Speak to the sons of Israel, and you must say to them, 'When you eventually come into the land that I am giving you, then the land must observe a sabbath to Jehovah. But in the seventh year there should occur a sabbath of complete rest for the land, a sabbath to Jehovah. . . . And you must count for yourself seven sabbaths of years, seven times seven years, and the days of the seven sabbaths of years must amount to forty-nine years for you. And you must sanctify the fiftieth year and proclaim liberty in the land to all its inhabitants. It will become a Jubilee for you, and you must return each one to his possession and you should return each man to his family. . . . You must not sow seed nor reap the land's growth from spilled kernels nor gather the grapes of its unpruned vines.' "

See also Lev. 23:1-43.

Failure to keep sabbath years resulted in deportation

2 Chron. 36:20, 21 "He carried off those remaining from the sword captive to Babylon, and they came to be servants to him and his sons until the royalty of Persia began to reign; to fulfill Jehovah's word by the mouth of Jeremiah, until the land had paid off its sabbaths. All the days of lying desolated it kept sabbath, to fulfill seventy years."

See also Lev. 26:34, 35.

Sabbath Law Not Binding upon Christians

Col. 2:16, 17 "Let no man judge you in eating and drinking or

in respect of a festival or of an observance of the new moon or of a sabbath; for those things are a shadow of the things to come, but the reality belongs to the Christ."

Acts 15:28, 29 "The holy spirit and we ourselves have favored adding no further burden to you, except these necessary things, to keep yourselves free from things sacrificed to idols and from blood and from things strangled and from fornication. If you carefully keep yourselves from these things, you will prosper."

Gal. 4:9-11 "Now that you have come to know God, or rather now that you have come to be known by God, how is it that you are turning back again to the weak and beggarly elementary things and want to slave for them over again? You are scrupulously observing days and months and seasons and years. I fear for you, that somehow I have toiled to no purpose respecting you."

See also the main heading "Law," pages 314-318.

Jesus fulfilled the Law, so it was moved out of the way

Matt. 5:17 "Do not think I came to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I came, not to destroy, but to fulfill."

Rom. 10:4 "Christ is the end of the Law."

Eph. 2:15 "By means of his flesh he abolished . . . the Law of commandments consisting in decrees."

Gal. 4:4, 5 "When the full limit of the time arrived, God sent forth his Son, who came to be out of a woman and who came to be under law, that he might release by purchase those under law."

Col. 2:13, 14 "[God] kindly forgave us all our trespasses and blotted out the handwritten document against us, which consisted of decrees and which was in opposition to us; and He has taken it out of the way by nailing it to the torture stake."

References to Christian Activities on First Day of Week Contain No Instruction to Observe This as a Sabbath

Acts 20:7 "On the first day of the week, when we were gathered together to have a meal, Paul began discoursing to them."

1 Cor. 16:2 "Every first day of the week let each of you at his own house set something aside in store as he may be prospering, so that when I arrive collections will not take place then."

God's Great Sabbath

Gen. 2:2, 3 "By the seventh day God came to the completion of his work that he had made, and he proceeded to rest on the seventh day from all his work that he had made. And God proceeded to bless the seventh day and make it sacred."

Ex. 31:17 "In six days Jehovah made the heavens and the earth and on the seventh day he rested and proceeded to refresh himself."

See also "Chronology," pages 87-89.

Does not mean God has desisted from all work

John 5:17 "He answered them: 'My Father has kept working until now, and I keep working.'"

John 14:10 "The Father who remains in union with me is doing his works."

Entering into God's rest by exercising faith

Heb. 4:1-11 "Since a promise is left of entering into his rest, let us fear that sometime someone of you may seem to have fallen short of it. . . . For we who have exercised faith do enter into the rest . . . Since, therefore, it remains for some to enter into it, and those to whom the good news was first declared did not enter in because of disobedience, he again marks off a certain day by saying after so long a time in David's psalm 'Today'; just as it has been said above: 'Today if you people listen to his own voice, do not harden your hearts.' For if Joshua had led them into a place of rest, God would not afterward have spoken of another day. So there remains a sabbath resting for the people of God. For the man that has entered into God's rest has also himself rested from his own works, just as God did from his own. Let us therefore do our utmost to enter into that rest."

Christians Carry on Public Preaching Work Every Day

Luke 19:47 "[Jesus] went teaching daily in the temple."

Acts 5:42 "Every day in the temple and from house to house they continued without letup teaching and declaring the good news about the Christ, Jesus."

Acts 17:17 "Consequently [Paul] began to reason in the synagogue with the Jews and the other people who worshiped God and every day in the market place with those who happened to be on hand."

Jesus and apostles did not desist from good works of preaching and helping others on Jewish sabbath day

Luke 4:31, 32 "[Jesus] went down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee. And he was teaching them on the sabbath."

Mark 3:1-5 "Once again he entered into a synagogue, and a man was there with a dried-up hand. So they were watching him closely to see whether he would cure the man on the sabbath, in order that they might accuse him. And he said to the man with the withered hand: 'Get up and come to the center.' Next he said to them: 'Is it lawful on the sabbath to do a good deed or to do a bad deed, to save or to kill a soul?' But they kept silent. And after looking around upon them with indignation, being thoroughly grieved at the insensibility of their hearts, he said to the man: 'Stretch out your hand.' And he stretched it out, and his hand was restored."

Acts 17:2 "According to Paul's custom he went inside to them, and for three sabbaths he reasoned with them from the Scriptures."

Salvation

Deliverance from Bondage to Sin, with Everlasting Life in View

John 3:16, 17 "God loved the world so much that he gave his only-begotten Son, in order that everyone exercising faith in him might not be destroyed but have everlasting life. For God sent forth his Son into the world, not for him to judge the world, but for the world to be saved through him."

Rom. 6:17, 18, 22, 23 "Thanks to God that you were the slaves of sin but you became obedient from the heart to that form of teaching to which you were handed over. Yes, since you were set free from sin, you became slaves to righteousness. However, now, because you were set free from sin but became slaves to God, you are having your fruit in the way of holiness, and the end everlasting life. For the wages sin pays is death, but the gift God gives is everlasting life by Christ Jesus our Lord."

Acts 13:46, 47 "Talking with boldness, Paul and Barnabas said:

'It was necessary for the word of God to be spoken first to you. Since you are thrusting it away from you and do not judge yourselves worthy of everlasting life, look! we turn to the nations. In fact, Jehovah has laid commandment upon us in these words, "I have appointed you as a light of nations, for you to be a salvation to the extremity of the earth."' "

All men in need of such salvation

Rom. 5:12 "Through one man sin entered into the world and death through sin, and thus death spread to all men because they had all sinned."

Rom. 3:23 "All have sinned and fall short of the glory of God."

Rom. 3:10 "Just as it is written: 'There is not a righteous man, not even one.' "

Jehovah Is Provider of Salvation

Luke 1:46, 47 "Mary said: 'My soul magnifies Jehovah, and my spirit cannot keep from being overjoyed at God my Savior.' "

1 Tim. 1:1 "Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus under command of God our Savior."

Titus 1:3 "Our Savior, God."

Jesus Christ Is Chief Agent of Salvation

Heb. 2:10 "It was fitting for the one for whose sake all things are and through whom all things are, in bringing many sons to glory, to make the Chief Agent of their salvation perfect through sufferings."

Acts 5:30, 31 "The God of our forefathers raised up Jesus, whom you slew, hanging him upon a stake. God exalted this one as Chief Agent and Savior to his right hand, to give repentance to Israel and forgiveness of sins."

1 John 4:14 "We ourselves have beheld and are bearing witness that the Father has sent forth his Son as Savior of the world."

Heb. 7:25 "[Jesus] is able also to save completely those who are approaching God through him, because he is always alive to plead for them."

Salvation possible only through faith in Jesus Christ

Acts 4:12 "There is no salvation in anyone else, for there is not another name under heaven that has been given among men by which we must get saved."

Acts 16:30, 31 "He brought them outside and said: 'Sirs, what must I do to get saved?' They said: 'Believe on the Lord Jesus and you will get saved, you and your household.' "

John 3:36 "He that exercises faith in the Son has everlasting life; he that disobeys the Son will not see life, but the wrath of God remains upon him."

1 Pet. 1:8, 9 "Though you are not looking upon him at present, yet you exercise faith in him and are greatly rejoicing with an unspeakable and glorified joy, as you receive the end of your faith, the salvation of your souls."

See also the main heading "Ransom," pages 408-412.

Faith must be demonstrated by consistent works

Rom. 10:10 "With the heart one exercises faith for righteousness, but with the mouth one makes public declaration for salvation."

Heb. 5:9 "After he had been made perfect he became responsible for everlasting salvation to all those obeying him."

Jas. 2:14, 26 "Of what benefit is it, my brothers, if a certain one says he has faith but he does not have works? That faith cannot save him, can it? Indeed, as the body without breath is dead, so also faith without works is dead."

Matt. 10:22 "You will be objects of hatred by all people on account of my name; but he that has endured to the end is the one that will be saved."

Knowledge of God's Word Necessary to Gain Salvation

John 17:3 "This means everlasting life, their taking in knowledge of you, the only true God, and of the one whom you sent forth, Jesus Christ."

1 Pet. 2:2 "As newborn infants, form a longing for the unadulterated milk belonging to the word, that through it you may grow to salvation."

2 Tim. 3:15 "From infancy you have known the holy writings, which are able to make you wise for salvation through the faith in connection with Christ Jesus."

See also the main heading "Knowledge," pages 306-311.

Salvation Available to Men of All Nations

Rev. 7:9, 10 "I saw, and, look! a great crowd, which no man was able to number, out of all nations and tribes and peoples and tongues, standing before the throne and before the Lamb, dressed in white robes; and there were palm branches in their hands. And they keep on crying with a loud voice, saying: 'Salvation we owe to our God, who is seated on the throne, and to the Lamb.' "

1 John 2:2 "He is a propitiatory sacrifice for our sins, yet not for ours only but also for the whole world's."

Rom. 1:16 "The good news . . . is, in fact, God's power for salvation to everyone having faith, to the Jew first and also to the Greek."

Acts 13:47 "Jehovah has laid commandment upon us in these words, 'I have appointed you as a light of nations, for you to be a salvation to the extremity of the earth.' "

Salvation Not Earned so that It Is Due Us; an Expression of God's Undeserved Kindness

Titus 3:5 "Owing to no works in righteousness that we had performed, but according to his mercy he saved us."

Titus 2:11 "The undeserved kindness of God . . . brings salvation to all sorts of men."

2 Tim. 1:9 "He saved us and called us with a holy calling, not by reason of our works, but by reason of his own purpose and undeserved kindness."

Not 'Once Saved, Always Saved'; Endurance Required

Matt. 24:13 "He that has endured to the end is the one that will be saved."

Heb. 10:36, 39 "You have need of endurance, in order that, after you have done the will of God, you may receive the fulfillment of the promise. Now we are not the sort that shrink back to destruction, but the sort that have faith to the preserving alive of the soul."

1 Cor. 9:27 "I browbeat my body and lead it as a slave, that, after I have preached to others, I myself should not become disapproved somehow."

Phil. 3:12-14 "Not that I have already received it or am already made perfect, but I am pursuing to see if I may also lay hold on that for which I have also been laid hold on by Christ Jesus. Brothers, I do not yet consider myself as having laid hold on it; but there is one thing about it: Forgetting the things behind and stretching forward to the things ahead, I am pursuing down toward the goal for the prize of the upward call of God by means of Christ Jesus."

Phil. 2:12 "Keep working out your own salvation with fear and trembling."

See also Heb. 6:4-6.

"Little Flock" Granted Salvation to the Heavenly Kingdom

Luke 12:32 "Have no fear, little flock, because your Father has approved of giving you the kingdom."

1 Pet. 1:3-5 "Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, for according to his great mercy he gave us a new birth to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, to an incorruptible and undefiled and unfading inheritance. It is reserved in the heavens for you, who are being safeguarded by God's power through faith for a salvation ready to be revealed in the last period of time."

2 Tim. 2:10-12 "I go on enduring all things for the sake of the chosen ones, that they too may obtain the salvation that is in union with Christ Jesus along with everlasting glory. Faithful is the saying: Certainly if we died together, we shall also live together; if we go on enduring, we shall also rule together as kings."

See also the main heading "Congregation of God," pages 112-116.

Preservation When Jehovah Destroys Wicked Ones in Day of His Vengeance Is a Salvation

1 Thess. 5:2, 3, 8, 9 "You yourselves know quite well that Jehovah's day is coming exactly as a thief in the night. Whenever it is that they are saying: 'Peace and security!' then sudden destruction is to be instantly upon them just as the pang of distress upon a pregnant woman; and they will by no means escape. But as for us who belong to the day, let us keep our senses and have on the breastplate of faith and love and as a helmet the hope of salvation; because God assigned us, not to wrath, but to the acquiring of salvation."

2 Pet. 3:7, 15 "The heavens and the earth that are now are stored up for fire and are being reserved to the day of judgment and of destruction of the ungodly men. Furthermore, consider the patience of our Lord as salvation."

See also the main heading "Armageddon," page 30.

Deliverance from Death by Resurrection Is a Salvation

Heb. 5:7 "In the days of his flesh Christ offered up supplications and also petitions to the one who was able to save him out of death."

John 5:28, 29 "The hour is coming in which all those in the memorial tombs will hear his voice and come out."

Rev. 1:17, 18 "He laid his right hand upon me and said: 'Do not be fearful. I am the First and the Last, and the living one; and I became dead, but, look! I am living forever and ever, and I have the keys of death and of Hades.'"

"Universal Salvation" Unscriptural; Not All Will Gain Final Salvation

Rev. 20:7-10, 14, 15 "As soon as the thousand years have been ended, Satan will be let loose out of his prison, and he will go out to mislead those nations in the four corners of the earth . . . And they advanced over the breadth of the earth and encircled the camp of the holy ones and the beloved city. But fire came down out of heaven and devoured them. And the Devil who was misleading them was hurled into the lake of fire . . . This means the second death, the lake of fire. Furthermore, whoever was not found written in the book of life was hurled into the lake of fire."

Matt. 25:45, 46 "Then he will answer them with the words, 'Truly I say to you, To the extent that you did not do it to one of these least ones, you did not do it to me.' And these will depart into everlasting cutting-off, but the righteous ones into everlasting life."

Heb. 10:26, 27 "If we practice sin willfully after having received the accurate knowledge of the truth, there is no longer any sacrifice for sins left, but there is a certain fearful expectation of judgment and there is a fiery jealousy that is going to consume those in opposition."

Matt. 10:28 "Do not become fearful of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul ["the future life," *ED*]; but rather be in fear of him that can destroy both soul and body in Gehenna."

Matt. 23:13-15, 33 "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because you shut up the kingdom of the heavens before men; for you yourselves do not go in, neither do you permit those on their way in to go in. Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because you traverse sea and dry land to make one proselyte, and when he becomes one you make him a subject for Gehenna twice as much so as yourselves. Serpents, offspring of vipers, how are you to flee from the judgment of Gehenna?"

Salvation Can Mean Deliverance from Oppression or Preservation in the Face of Impending Calamity

Jude 5 "I desire to remind you, despite your knowing all things once for all time, that Jehovah, although he saved a people out of the land of Egypt, afterwards destroyed those not showing faith." (See also Ex. 14:13.)

2 Chron. 20:17 "You will not need to fight in this instance. Take your position, stand still and see the salvation of Jehovah in your behalf."

Ps. 3:7, 8 "Do arise, O Jehovah! Save me, O my God! For you will have to strike all my enemies on the jaw. The teeth of wicked ones you will have to break. Salvation belongs to Jehovah."

Ps. 37:39, 40 "The salvation of the righteous ones is from Jehovah; he is their fortress in the time of distress. And Jehovah will help them and provide them with escape. He will provide them with escape from wicked people and save them, because they have taken refuge in him."

Sanctification

God's Name to Be Sanctified or Held Sacred

Isa. 5:16 "Jehovah of armies will become high through judgment, and the true God, the Holy One, will certainly sanctify himself through righteousness."

Matt. 6:9 "You must pray, then, this way: 'Our Father in the heavens, let your name be sanctified.'"

Ps. 145:21 "Let all flesh bless his holy name to time indefinite, even forever."

Jehovah sanctifies himself by his dealings with his people

Ezek. 20:41 "Because of the restful odor I shall take pleasure in you, when I bring you forth from the peoples and I actually collect you together from the lands to which you have been scattered, and I will be sanctified in you before the eyes of the nations." (See also Ezek. 39:27.)

Ezek. 36:23 "'I shall certainly sanctify my great name, which was being profaned among the nations, which you profaned in the midst of them; and the nations will have to know that I am Jehovah,' is the utterance of the Lord Jehovah, 'when I am sanctified among you before their eyes.'"

Jehovah will sanctify himself by destroying the wicked

Ezek. 38:16 "You will be bound to come up against my people Israel, like clouds to cover the land. In the final part of the days it will occur, and I shall certainly bring you against my land, for the purpose that the nations may know me when I sanctify myself in you before their eyes, O Gog."

Ezek. 38:21-23 " 'I will call forth against him throughout all my mountainous region a sword,' is the utterance of the Lord Jehovah. 'Against his own brother the sword of each one will come to be. And I will bring myself into judgment with him, with pestilence and with blood; and a flooding downpour and hailstones, fire and sulphur I shall rain down upon him and upon his bands and upon the many peoples that will be with him. And I shall certainly magnify myself and sanctify myself and make myself known before the eyes of many nations; and they will have to know that I am Jehovah.' "

Ezek. 39:6, 7 "I will send fire upon Magog and upon those who are inhabiting the islands in security; and people will have to know that I am Jehovah. And my holy name I shall make known in the midst of my people Israel, and I shall no more let my holy name be profaned; and the nations will have to know that I am Jehovah, the Holy One in Israel."

See also the heading "Devil and Demons," pages 155-158.

Heavenly organization of God sanctifies him, lauds him as holy

Isa. 6:3 "This one called to that one and said: 'Holy, holy, holy is Jehovah of armies.' "

Rev. 4:8 "As for the four living creatures, each one of them respectively has six wings; round about and underneath they are full of eyes. And they have no rest day and night as they say: 'Holy, holy, holy is Jehovah God, the Almighty, who was and who is and who is coming.' "

See also the main heading "Angels," pages 9-13.

Jehovah's people to hold sacred his name or reputation, make it known

Isa. 29:23 "When he sees his children, the work of my hands, in the midst of him, they will sanctify my name, and they will certainly sanctify the Holy One of Jacob, and the God of Israel they will regard with awe."

Isa. 8:13 "Jehovah of armies —he is the One whom you should treat as holy."

John 17:4, 6 "I have glorified you on the earth, having finished the work you have given me to do. I have made your name manifest to the men you gave me out of the world."

Right conduct of Jehovah's servants important, so his name is not profaned

1 Tim. 6:1 "Let as many as are slaves under a yoke keep on considering their owners worthy of full honor, that the name of God and the teaching may never be spoken of injuriously."

Ezek. 43:7, 8 "No more will they, the house of Israel, defile my holy name, they and their kings, by their fornication and by the carcasses of their kings at their death . . . And they defiled my holy name by their detestable things that they did, so that I went exterminating them in my anger."

Ezek. 36:17, 20, 21 "Son of man, the house of Israel are dwelling upon their soil, and they keep making it unclean with their way and with their dealings. . . . And they will come in to the nations where they will have to come in, and people will profane my holy name in saying with reference to them, 'These are the people of Jehovah, and from his land they have gone out.' And I shall have compassion on my holy name, which the house of Israel have profaned among the nations where they have come in."

See also the main heading "Conduct of Christians," pages 98-108.

Sanctified Christians, Holy Ones, Called to Heavenly Life with Christ

2 Thess. 2:13, 14 "We are obligated to thank God always for you, brothers loved by Jehovah, because God selected you from the beginning for salvation by sanctifying you with spirit and by your faith in the truth. To this very destiny he called you through the good news we declare, for the purpose of acquiring the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ."

1 Cor. 1:2 "To the congregation of God that is in Corinth, to you who have been sanctified in union with Christ Jesus, called to be holy ones, together with all who everywhere are calling upon the name of our Lord, Jesus Christ, their Lord and ours."

Heb. 12:14 "Pursue peace with all people, and the sanctification without which no man will see the Lord."

Heb. 10:14, 19 "For it is by one sacrificial offering that he has made those who are being sanctified perfect perpetually. Therefore, brothers, . . . we have boldness for the way of entry into the holy place by the blood of Jesus."

See also Heb. 2:10-12, and the main heading "Congregation of God," pages 112-116.

God, Christ and the individual Christian have part in sanctifying

1 Thess. 5:23 "May the very God of peace sanctify you completely."

1 Cor. 1:30 "It is due to him that you are in union with Christ Jesus, who has become to us wisdom from God, also righteousness and sanctification and release by ransom."

Acts 26:18 "To open their eyes, to turn them from darkness to light and from the authority of Satan to God, in order for them to receive forgiveness of sins and an inheritance among those sanctified by their faith in me."

God's Word of truth, the holy spirit, and the blood of Christ necessary for sanctification

John 17:17, 19 "Sanctify them by means of the truth; your word is truth. And I am sanctifying myself in their behalf, that they also may be sanctified by means of truth."

2 Thess. 2:13 "God selected you from the beginning for salvation by sanctifying you with spirit and by your faith in the truth."

Heb. 13:12 "Hence Jesus also, that he might sanctify the people with his own blood, suffered outside the gate."

See also 1 Pet. 1:1, 2.

Sanctified ones must continue to pursue course of sanctification, keeping separate from things displeasing to God

1 Thess. 4:3, 4, 7, 8 "This is what God wills, the sanctifying of you, that you abstain from fornication; that each one of you should know how to get possession of his own vessel in sanctification and honor. For God called us, not with allowance for uncleanness, but in connection with sanctification. So, then, the man that shows disregard is disregarding, not man, but God, who puts his holy spirit in you."

Heb. 12:14 "Pursue peace with all people, and the sanctification without which no man will see the Lord."

Self-Control

Self-Control Needed by Christians

Gal. 5:22, 23 "The fruitage of the spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, kindness, goodness, faith, mildness, self-control."

2 Pet. 1:5-8 "Supply to your faith virtue, to your virtue knowledge, to your knowledge self-control, to your self-control endurance, to your endurance godly devotion, to your godly devotion brotherly affection, to your brotherly affection love. For if these things exist in you and overflow, they will prevent you from being either inactive or unfruitful regarding the accurate knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ."

Titus 1:7, 8 "An overseer must be free from accusation as God's steward, not self-willed, not prone to wrath, not a drunken brawler, not a smiter, not greedy of dishonest gain, but . . . self-controlled."

1 Cor. 9:25-27 "Moreover, every man taking part in a contest exercises self-control in all things. Now they, of course, do it that they may get a corruptible crown, but we an incorruptible one. Therefore, the way I am running is not uncertainly; the way I am directing my blows is so as not to be striking the air; but I browbeat my body and lead it as a slave, that, after I have preached to others, I myself should not become disapproved somehow."

One's Thoughts and Desires Need to Be Controlled

Rom. 12:2 "Quit being fashioned after this system of things, but be transformed by making your mind over."

Phil. 4:8 "Finally, brothers, whatever things are true, whatever things are of serious concern, whatever things are righteous, whatever things are chaste, whatever things are lovable, whatever things are well spoken of, whatever virtue there is and whatever praiseworthy thing there is, continue considering these things."

2 Tim. 2:22 "Flee from the desires incidental to youth, but pursue righteousness, faith, love, peace, along with those who call upon the Lord out of a clean heart."

Prov. 24:1 "Do not be envious of bad men, and do not show yourself craving to get in with them."

1 John 2:16 "Everything in the world—the desire of the flesh and the desire of the eyes and the showy display of one's means of life—does not originate with the Father, but originates with the world."

Jas. 1:14, 15 "Each one is tried by being drawn out and enticed by his own desire. Then the desire, when it has become fertile, gives birth to sin."

Emotions Require Control

Prov. 14:30 "A calm heart is the life of the fleshly organism, but jealousy is rottenness to the bones."

Prov. 16:32 "He that is slow to anger is better than a mighty man, and he that is controlling his spirit than the one capturing a city."

Prov. 19:11 "The insight of a man certainly slows down his anger."

Prov. 25:28 "As a city broken through, without a wall, is the man that has no restraint for his spirit."

Prov. 15:18 "An enraged man stirs up contention, but one that is slow to anger quiets down quarreling."

Eccl. 7:9 "Do not hurry yourself in your spirit to become offended, for the taking of offense is what rests in the bosom of the stupid ones."

Prov. 14:17 "He that is quick to anger will commit foolishness."

Tongue Ought to Be Controlled

1 Pet. 3:10 "He that would love life and see good days, let him restrain his tongue from what is bad and his lips from speaking deception."

Prov. 18:21 "Death and life are in the power of the tongue, and he that is loving it will eat its fruitage."

Jas. 3:5, 6 "The tongue is a little member and yet makes great brags. Look! How little a fire it takes to set so great a woodland on fire! Well, the tongue is a fire. The tongue is constituted a world of unrighteousness among our members, for it spots up all the body and sets the wheel of natural life aflame."

Jas. 1:26 "If any man seems to himself to be a formal worshiper and yet does not bridle his tongue, but goes on deceiving his own heart, this man's form of worship is futile."

Prov. 10:20 "The tongue of the righteous one is choice silver."

Prov. 15:2 "The tongue of wise ones does good with knowledge, but the mouth of the stupid ones bubbles forth with foolishness."

Prov. 15:4 "The calmness of the tongue is a tree of life, but distortion in it means a breaking down in the spirit."

Prov. 15:1 "An answer, when mild, turns away rage, but a word causing pain makes anger to come up."

Prov. 12:18 "There exists the one speaking thoughtlessly as with the stabs of a sword, but the tongue of the wise ones is a healing."

Prov. 28:23 "He that is reproving a man will afterward find more favor than he will that is flattering with his tongue."

Actions Must Be Controlled; Loose Conduct to Be Avoided

Eph. 5:15 "So keep strict watch that how you walk is not as unwise but as wise persons."

Prov. 10:23 "To the stupid one the carrying on of loose conduct is like sport, but wisdom is for the man of discernment."

Gal. 5:19-21 "Now the works of the flesh are manifest, and they are fornication, uncleanness, loose conduct, idolatry, practice of spiritism, hatreds, strife, jealousy, fits of anger, contentions, divisions, sects, envies, drunken bouts, revelries, and things like these. As to these things I am forewarning you, the same way as I did forewarn you, that those who practice such things will not inherit God's kingdom."

Eph. 4:17-19 "This, therefore, I say and bear witness to in the Lord, that you no longer go on walking just as the nations also walk . . . Having come to be past all moral sense, they gave themselves over to loose conduct to work uncleanness of every sort with greediness."

Jude 3, 4 "Beloved ones, though I was making every effort to write you about the salvation we hold in common, I found it necessary to write you to exhort you to put up a hard fight for the faith that was once for all time delivered to the holy ones. My reason is that certain men have slipped in who have long ago been appointed by the Scriptures to this judgment, ungodly men, turning the undeserved kindness of our God into an excuse for loose conduct and proving false to our only Owner and Lord, Jesus Christ."

1 Pet. 4:3 "For the time that has passed by is sufficient for you to have worked out the will of the nations when you proceed-

ed in deeds of loose conduct, lusts, excesses with wine, revelries, drinking matches, and illegal idolatries."

1 Cor. 7:9 "But if they do not have self-control, let them marry, for it is better to marry than to be inflamed with passion."

Lack of Self-Control Marks World in "Last Days"

2 Tim. 3:1-3 "But know this, that in the last days critical times hard to deal with will be here. For men will be . . . without self-control, fierce, without love of goodness."

Settling Personal Differences

Were You Thinking of Getting Even with the One Who Offended You?

Rom. 12:17, 18 "Return evil for evil to no one. Provide fine things in the sight of all men. If possible, as far as it depends upon you, be peaceable with all men."

Prov. 20:22 "Do not say: 'I will pay back evil!' Hope in Jehovah, and he will save you."

1 Pet. 3:8, 9 "All of you be like-minded, showing fellow feeling, exercising brotherly love, tenderly affectionate, humble in mind, not paying back injury for injury or reviling for reviling, but, to the contrary, bestowing a blessing, because you were called to this course, so that you might inherit a blessing."

Would It Be All Right Just to Quit Talking to That Person?

1 Cor. 13:4, 5 "Love . . . does not keep account of the injury."

Matt. 5:23, 24 "If, then, you are bringing your gift to the altar and you there remember that your brother has something against you, leave your gift there in front of the altar, and go away; first make your peace with your brother, and then, when you have come back, offer up your gift."

Eph. 4:26 "Let the sun not set with you in a provoked state."

Lev. 19:17, 18 "You must not hate your brother in your heart. You should by all means reprove your associate, that you may not bear sin along with him. You must not take vengeance nor have a grudge against the sons of your people; and you must love your fellow as yourself. I am Jehovah."

Would It Perhaps Be a Loving Thing Just to Overlook the Offense?

Col. 3:13 "Continue putting up with one another and forgiving one another freely if anyone has a cause for complaint against another. Even as Jehovah freely forgave you, so do you also."

Eph. 4:32 "Become kind to one another, tenderly compassionate, freely forgiving one another just as God also by Christ freely forgave you."

Prov. 10:12 "Hatred is what stirs up contentions, but love covers over even all transgressions."

Prov. 19:11 "The insight of a man certainly slows down his anger, and it is beauty on his part to pass over transgression."

Do You Really Feel that Someone Ought to Talk to the Offender About the Matter? Who Should Do It?

Matt. 18:15 "If your brother commits a sin, go lay bare his fault between you and him alone. If he listens to you, you have gained your brother."

Did He Show Repentance? Have You Forgiven Him? Or, Did You Say This Is Not the First Time This Has Happened?

Luke 17:3, 4 "If your brother commits a sin give him a reproof, and if he repents forgive him. Even if he sins seven times a day against you and he comes back to you seven times, saying, 'I repent,' you must forgive him."

Matt. 18:21, 22 "Then Peter came up and said to him: 'Lord, how many times is my brother to sin against me and am I to forgive him? Up to seven times?' Jesus said to him: 'I say to you, not, Up to seven times, but, Up to seventy-seven times.'"

Why Should You Forgive a Person Like That Anyway?

1 Pet. 4:8 "Above all things, have intense love for one another, because love covers a multitude of sins."

Mark 11:25 "When you stand praying, forgive whatever you have against anyone; in order that your Father who is in the heavens may also forgive you your trespasses."

Matt. 6:9-12, 14, 15 "You must pray, then, this way: 'Our Father in the heavens, let your name be sanctified. . . . and forgive us our debts, as we also have forgiven our debtors.' For if you forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you; whereas if you do not forgive men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses."

Matt. 18:23-35 "The kingdom of the heavens has become like a man, a king, that wanted to settle accounts with his slaves. When he started to settle them, there was brought in a man who owed him ten thousand talents [= 60,000,000 denarii]. But because he did not have the means to pay it back, his master ordered him and his wife and his children and all the things he had to be sold and payment to be made. Therefore the slave fell down and began to do obeisance to him, saying, 'Be patient with me and I will pay back everything to you.' Moved to pity at this, the master of that slave let him off and canceled his debt. But that slave went out and found one of his fellow slaves that was owing him a hundred denarii; and, grabbing him, he began to choke him, saying, 'Pay back whatever you owe.' Therefore his fellow slave fell down and began to entreat him, saying, 'Be patient with me and I will pay you back.' However, he was not willing, but went off and had him thrown into prison until he should pay back what was owing. When, therefore, his fellow slaves saw the things that had happened, they became very much grieved, and they went and made clear to their master all the things that had happened. Then his master summoned him and said to him, 'Wicked slave, I canceled all that debt for you, when you entreated me. Ought you not, in turn, to have had mercy on your fellow slave, as I also had mercy on you?' With that his master, provoked to wrath, delivered him to the jailers, until he should pay back all that was owing. In like manner my heavenly Father will also deal with you if you do not forgive each one his brother from your hearts."

When You Tried to Help, Was the Offender Belligerent, Determined to Continue in the Wrong Course? What Should Be Done?

Matt. 18:16 "If he does not listen, take along with you one or two more, in order that at the mouth of two or three witnesses every matter may be established."

Deut. 19:15 "No single witness should rise up against a man respecting any error or any sin, in the case of any sin that he

may commit. At the mouth of two witnesses or at the mouth of three witnesses the matter should stand good."

Does He Still Show a Rebellious Attitude? Might His Conduct Harm Others in the Congregation?

Matt. 18:17 "If he does not listen to them, speak to the congregation. If he does not listen even to the congregation, let him be to you just as a man of the nations and as a tax collector."

Rom. 16:17 "Now I exhort you, brothers, to keep your eye on those who cause divisions and occasions for stumbling contrary to the teaching you have learned, and avoid them."

See also the main heading "Disfellowshiping," pages 162-165.

Sheol—Hades

Sheol Is the Hebrew Equivalent of the Greek Hades

Ps. 16:10 "You will not leave my soul in Sheol [Hades, *LXX*]."

Acts 2:25-27 "David says respecting him, 'I had Jehovah constantly before my eyes; because he is at my right hand that I may never be shaken. On this account my heart became cheerful and my tongue rejoiced greatly. Moreover, even my flesh will reside in hope; because you will not leave my soul in Hades [Hebrew: *sheol*], neither will you allow your loyal one to see corruption.'"

Sheol–Hades Is Said to Be a Low Place

Deut. 32:22 "A fire has been ignited in my anger and it will burn down to Sheol, the lowest place."

Job 11:7, 8 "Can you find out the deep things of God, or can you find out to the very limit of the Almighty? It is higher than heaven. What can you accomplish? It is deeper than Sheol. What can you know?"

Prov. 9:18 "He has not come to know that those impotent in death are there, that those called in by her are in the low places of Sheol."

Sheol Is in the Dust of the Earth

Job 17:13-16 "If I keep waiting, Sheol is my house; in the darkness I shall have to spread out my lounge. To the pit I shall have to call out, 'You are my father!' To the maggot, 'My mother and my sister!' So where, then, is my hope? And my hope —who is it that beholds it? To the bars of Sheol they will go down, when we, all together, must descend to the very dust."

Num. 16:33 "So down they went, and all who belonged to them, alive into Sheol, and the earth went covering them over, so that they perished from the midst of the congregation."

Sheol–Hades Is the Grave (the Common Grave of All Mankind, Not an Individual Grave)

Job 14:13 "O that in Sheol ["the grave," *AV*] you would conceal me, that you would keep me secret until your anger turns back, that you would set a time limit for me and remember me!"

Rev. 20:13 "Death and Hades ["the grave," *AV* margin] gave up those dead in them."

See also the main heading "Hellfire," pages 229, 230.

Individual burial places, graves or tombs referred to by different original-language words

Judg. 16:31 "Later his brothers and all the household of his father came on down and lifted him up and brought him up and buried him between Zorah and Eshtaol in the burial place [Hebrew: *qeber*] of Manoah his father."

Gen. 35:20 "Jacob stationed a pillar over her grave [Hebrew: *q'buwrah'*]."

Job 21:32 "As for him, to the graveyard he will be brought, and over a tomb [Hebrew: *ga·dish'*] a vigil will be kept."

Matt. 27:64 "Command the grave [Greek: *taph'os*] to be made secure until the third day."

Luke 23:53 "He took it down and wrapped it up in fine linen, and he laid him in a tomb [Greek: *mne'ma*] carved in the rock."

Matt. 28:8 "Quickly leaving the memorial tomb [Greek: *mnemei'on*], with fear and great joy, they ran to report to his disciples."

Sheol–Hades Associated with Death and the Dead, Not Life and the Living

2 Sam. 22:6 "The ropes of Sheol themselves surrounded me; the snares of death confronted me."

Ps. 89:48 "What able-bodied man is there alive who will not see death? Can he provide escape for his soul from the hand of Sheol?"

Isa. 38:18, 19 "It is not Sheol that can laud you; death itself cannot praise you. Those going down into the pit cannot look hopefully to your trueness. The living, the living, he is the one that can laud you, just as I can this day."

Rev. 20:13 "The sea gave up those dead in it, and death and Hades gave up those dead in them."

Rev. 6:8 "I saw, and, look! a pale horse; and the one seated upon it had the name Death. And Hades was closely following him."

Those in Sheol are dead, not merely separated from God

Ps. 139:7, 8 "Where can I go from your spirit, and where can I run away from your face? If I should ascend to heaven, there you would be; and if I should spread out my couch in Sheol, look! you would be there."

Prov. 15:11 "Sheol and the place of destruction are in front of Jehovah. How much more so the hearts of the sons of mankind!"

Amos 9:2 "If they dig down into Sheol, from there my own hand will take them; and if they go up to the heavens, from there I shall bring them down."

Ps. 49:14 "Like sheep they have been appointed to Sheol itself; death itself will shepherd them."

See also the main heading "Soul," pages 463-465.

Situation Making One Feel as Good as Dead Likened to Sheol

Jonah 2:1, 2 "Then Jonah prayed to Jehovah his God from the inward parts of the fish and said: 'Out of my distress I called out to Jehovah, and he proceeded to answer me. Out of the belly of Sheol I cried for help.'"

Ps. 30:2, 3 "O Jehovah my God, I cried to you for help, and you proceeded to heal me. O Jehovah, you have brought up my soul from Sheol itself; you have kept me alive, that I should not go down into the pit."

Both Good Persons and Bad Ones in Sheol–Hades

God-fearing Jacob expected to go there

Gen. 37:34, 35 "With that Jacob ripped his mantles apart and put sackcloth upon his hips

and carried on mourning over his son for many days. And all his sons and all his daughters kept rising up to comfort him, but he kept refusing to take comfort and saying: 'For I shall go down mourning to my son into Sheol!' "

Jesus Christ was in there

Acts 2:31 "He saw beforehand and spoke concerning the resurrection of the Christ, that neither was he forsaken in Hades [Hebrew: *sheol*] nor did his flesh see corruption."

Unrighteous, wicked persons in Sheol

Ps. 9:17 "Wicked people will turn back to Sheol, even all the nations forgetting God."

Job 24:19 "The drought, also the heat, snatch away the snow waters; so does Sheol those who have sinned!"

Matt. 11:23 "You, Capernaum, will you perhaps be exalted to heaven? Down to Hades you will come; because if the powerful works that took place in you had taken place in Sodom, it would have remained until this very day."

Heathen in Sheol

Isa. 14:4, 9 "You must raise up this proverbial saying against the king of Babylon and say: 'How has the one driving others to work come to a stop, the oppression come to a stop! Even Sheol underneath has become agitated at you in order to meet you on coming in.' "

See also Ezek. 32:18-31.

Some Enter Sheol Early, Dying Untimely Deaths as Retribution for Sinful Course

Num. 16:22-24, 31-33 "They fell upon their faces and said: 'O God, the God of the spirits of every sort of flesh will just one man sin and you become indignant against the entire assembly?' In turn Jehovah spoke to Moses, saying: 'Speak to the assembly, saying, "Get away from around the tabernacles of Korah, Dathan and Abiram!" ' And it came about that as soon as he had finished speaking all these words, the ground that was under them began to be split apart. And the earth proceeded to open its mouth and to swallow up them and their households and all humankind that belonged to Korah and all the goods. So down they went, and all who belonged to them, alive into Sheol, and the earth went covering them over, so that they perished from the midst of the congregation."

1 Ki. 2:5, 6 "You yourself also well know what Joab the son of Zeruiah did to me in what he did to two chiefs of the armies of Israel, to Abner the son of Ner and Amasa the son of Jether, when he killed them and placed the blood of war in peacetime and put the blood of war on his belt that was about his hips and in his sandals that were on his feet. And you must act according to your wisdom, and not let his gray hairs go down in peace to Sheol."

Prov. 5:5 "Her feet are descending to death. Her very steps take hold on Sheol itself."

No Man Can, by Human Means, Escape from Going into Sheol

Ps. 89:48 "What able-bodied man is there alive who will not see death? Can he provide escape for his soul from the hand of Sheol?"

Ps. 49:10, 14 "He sees that even the wise ones die, together the stupid one and the unreasoning one perish, and they must leave to others their means of maintenance. Like sheep they have been appointed to Sheol itself; death itself will shepherd them; . . . Sheol rather than a lofty abode is for each one."

Dead Cannot Release Selves from Sheol

Job 7:8, 9 "The eye of him that sees me will not behold me; your eyes will be upon me, but I shall not be. The cloud certainly comes to its end and goes away; so he that is going down to Sheol will not come up."

Deliverance from Sheol-Hades by Resurrection

Job 14:13 "O that in Sheol you would conceal me, that you would keep me secret until your anger turns back, that you would set a time limit for me and remember me!"

Gates of Hades do not overpower Christ's congregation; he resurrects them

Matt. 16:18 "I say to you, You are Peter, and on this rock-mass I will build my congregation, and the gates of Hades will not overpower it."

John 6:39 "This is the will of him that sent me, that I should lose nothing out of all that he has given me but that I should resurrect it at the last day."

See also Rev. 1:1, 17, 18; 1 Cor. 15:44, 54, 55.

All in Sheol-Hades to be resurrected; it is completely destroyed

Rev. 20:12-14 "I saw the dead, the great and the small, standing before the throne, and scrolls were opened. . . . And the dead were judged out of those things written in the scrolls according to their deeds. And the sea gave up those dead in it, and death and Hades gave up those dead in them, and they were judged individually according to their deeds. And death and Hades were hurled into the lake of fire. This means the second death, the lake of fire."

See also the main heading "Resurrection," pages 424-429.

Sign of Christ's Presence

Christ Not to Return Visibly; Visible Events Give Evidence of His Invisible Presence

John 14:19 "A little longer and the world will behold me no more, but you will behold me, because I live and you will live."

Matt. 24:33 "Likewise also you, when you see all these things, know that he is near at the doors."

See also the main heading "Return of Christ," pages 429-433.

"Sign" Is a Composite One, Made Up of Many Features to Appear in One Generation

Matt. 24:34 "Truly I say to you that this generation will by no means pass away until all these things occur." (See also Mark 13:30; Luke 21:32.)

Jesus Gave Visible Evidences of His Second Presence in Answer to His Disciples

Matt. 24:3 "While he was sitting upon the Mount of Olives, the disciples approached him privately, saying: 'Tell us, When will these things be, and what will be the sign of your presence and of the conclusion of the system of things?' " (See also Mark 13:3, 4; Luke 21:7.)

See also the main heading "Chronology," pages 89-91.

Destruction of Jerusalem and its temple was under consideration

Luke 21:5-7 "Later, as certain ones were speaking concerning the temple, how it was adorned with fine stones and dedicated things, he said: 'As for these

things that you are beholding, the days will come in which not a stone upon a stone will be left here and not be thrown down.' Then they questioned him, saying: 'Teacher, when will these things actually be, and what will be the sign when these things are destined to occur?' " (See also Matt. 24:1-3; Mark 13:1-4.)

Luke 21:20 "Furthermore, when you see Jerusalem surrounded by encamped armies, then know that the desolating of her has drawn near."

Reply also dealt with establishment of kingdom of God, affecting all mankind

Matt. 24:3, 30; 25:31, 32 " 'What will be the sign of your presence and of the conclusion of the system of things?' . . . 'They will see the Son of man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory.' " "When the Son of man arrives in his glory, and all the angels with him, then he will sit down on his glorious throne. And all the nations will be gathered before him."

Luke 21:31-35 "When you see these things occurring, know that the kingdom of God is near. . . . But pay attention to yourselves that your hearts never become weighed down with overeating and heavy drinking and anxieties of life, and suddenly that day be instantly upon you as a snare. For it will come in upon all those dwelling upon the face of all the earth."

Foretold international conflicts eclipsing former wars

Matt. 24:7 "For nation will rise against nation and kingdom against kingdom." (Compare verse 6; see also Mark 13:8; Luke 21:10.)

Widespread food shortages

Matt. 24:7 "There will be food shortages . . . in one place after another." (See also Mark 13:8; Luke 21:11.)

Pestilences in one place after another

Luke 21:11 "There will be . . . in one place after another pestilences."

Earthquakes in many places

Mark 13:8 "There will be earthquakes in one place after another." (See also Matt. 24:7; Luke 21:11.)

Hatred and persecution of Christ's followers by all nations

Luke 21:12-17 "People will lay their hands upon you and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues and prisons, you being haled before kings and governors for the sake of my name. It will turn out to you for a witness. . . . and you will be objects of hatred by all people because of my name." (See also Matt. 24:9; Mark 13:9, 13.)

Christians betrayed by relatives, friends and former believers

Luke 21:16 "You will be delivered up even by parents and brothers and relatives and friends, and they will put some of you to death." (See also Mark 13:12.)

Matt. 24:10 "Then, also, many will be stumbled and will betray one another and will hate one another."

False prophets and false Christs

Mark 13:21, 22 "Then, too, if anyone says to you, 'See! Here is the Christ,' 'See! There he is,' do not believe it. For false Christs and false prophets will arise and will give signs and wonders to lead astray, if possible, the chosen ones." (See also Matt. 24:11, 23, 24.)

Increase of lawlessness

Matt. 24:12 "The increasing of lawlessness."

Cooling off of love for God and neighbor by professed Christians

Matt. 24:12 "The love of the greater number will cool off."

"This good news of the kingdom" preached earth-wide

Matt. 24:14 "This good news of the kingdom will be preached in all the inhabited earth for a witness to all the nations; and then the end will come." (See also Mark 13:10.)

"The disgusting thing" standing in a holy place

Matt. 24:15, 16 "When you catch sight of the disgusting thing that causes desolation, as spoken of through Daniel the prophet, standing in a holy place, (let the reader use discernment,) then let those in Judea begin fleeing to the mountains." (See also Mark 13:14.)

Unprecedented tribulation

Matt. 24:21 "Then there will be great tribulation such as has not occurred since the world's beginning until now, no, nor will occur again." (See also Mark 13:19.)

Fearful sights, phenomena from the heavens

Luke 21:11, 25 "There will be fearful sights and from heaven great signs. Also, there will be signs in sun and moon and stars." (See also Matt. 24:29; Mark 13:24, 25.)

Widespread grief and distress at revelation of Christ in power

Matt. 24:30 "Then the sign of the Son of man will appear in heaven, and then all the tribes of the earth will beat themselves in lamentation, and they will see the Son of man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory."

Gathering of the chosen ones

Matt. 24:31 "And he will send forth his angels with a great trumpet sound, and they will gather his chosen ones together from the four winds, from one extremity of the heavens to their other extremity." (See also Mark 13:27.)

People ignoring warning of impending destruction

Matt. 24:37-39 "Just as the days of Noah were, so the presence of the Son of man will be. For as they were in those days before the flood, eating and drinking, men marrying and women being given in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark; and they took no note until the flood came and swept them all away, so the presence of the Son of man will be."

Separating work among those professing to be servants of the Lord

Matt. 24:40, 41 "Then two men will be in the field: one will be taken along and the other be abandoned; two women will be grinding at the hand mill: one will be taken along and the other be abandoned."

Christ's "faithful and discreet slave" class made manifest

Matt. 24:45-47 "Who really is the faithful and discreet slave whom his master appointed over his domestics, to give them their food at the proper time? Happy is that slave if his master on arriving finds him doing so. Truly I say to you, He will appoint him over all his belongings."

Evil slave exposed

Matt. 24:48-51 "If that evil slave should say in his heart, 'My master is delaying,' and should start to beat his fellow slaves and should eat and drink with the confirmed drunkards, the master of that slave will come on a day that he does not expect and in an hour that he does not know, and will punish him with the greatest severity and will assign him his part with the hypocrites. There is where his

weeping and the gnashing of his teeth will be."

'Discreet virgins' rewarded; 'foolish virgins' rejected

Matt. 25:1-12 "Then the kingdom of the heavens will become like ten virgins that took their lamps and went out to meet the bridegroom. Five of them were foolish, and five were discreet. For the foolish took their lamps but took no oil with them, whereas the discreet took oil in their receptacles with their lamps. While the bridegroom was delaying, they all nodded and went to sleep. Right in the middle of the night there arose a cry, 'Here is the bridegroom! Be on your way out to meet him.' Then all those virgins rose and put their lamps in order. The foolish said to the discreet, 'Give us some of your oil, because our lamps are about to go out.' The discreet answered with the words, 'Perhaps there may not be quite enough for us and you. Be on your way, instead, to those who sell it and buy for yourselves.' While they were going off to buy, the bridegroom arrived, and the virgins that were ready went in with him to the marriage feast; and the door was shut. Afterwards the rest of the virgins also came, saying, 'Sir, sir, open to us!' In answer he said, 'I tell you the truth, I do not know you.'"

Faithful users of "talents" rewarded; wicked and sluggish slave thrown out

Matt. 25:14-30 "A man, about to travel abroad, summoned slaves of his and committed to them his belongings. And to one he gave five talents, to another two, to still another one, to each one according to his own ability, and he went abroad. Immediately the one that received the five talents went his way and did business with them and gained five more. In the same way the one that received the two gained two more. But the one that received just one went off, and dug in the ground and hid the silver money of his master. After a long time the master of those slaves came and settled accounts with them. So the one that had received five talents came forward and brought five additional talents, saying, 'Master, you committed five talents to me; see, I gained five talents more.' His master said to him, 'Well done, good and faithful slave! You were faithful over a few things, I will appoint you over many things. Enter into the joy of your master.' Next the one that had received the two talents came forward and said, 'Master, you committed to me two talents; see, I gained two talents more.' His master said to him, 'Well done, good and faithful slave! You were faithful over a few things. I will appoint you over many things. Enter into the joy of your master.' Finally the one that had received the one talent came forward and said, 'Master . . . I grew afraid and went off and hid your talent in the ground. Here you have what is yours.' In reply his master said to him, 'Wicked and sluggish slave, you knew, did you, that I reaped where I did not sow and gathered where I did not winnow? Well, then, you ought to have deposited my silver monies with the bankers, and on my arrival I would be receiving what is mine with interest. Therefore take away the talent from him and give it to him that has the ten talents. . . . And throw the good-for-nothing slave out into the darkness outside. There is where his weeping and the gnashing of his teeth will be.'"

Separation of people of all nations on basis of treatment of king's "brothers"

Matt. 25:31-46 "When the Son of man arrives in his glory, and all the angels with him, then he will sit down on his glorious throne. And all the nations will be gathered before him, and he will separate people one from another, just as a shepherd separates the sheep from the goats. And he will put the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on his left. Then the king will say to those on his right, 'Come, you who have my Father's blessing, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the founding of the world. For I became hungry and you gave me something to eat; I got thirsty and you gave me something to drink. I was a stranger and you received me hospitably; naked, and you clothed me. I fell sick and you looked after me. I was in prison and you came to me. . . . Truly I say to you, To the extent that you did it to one of the least of these my brothers, you did it to me.' Then he will say, in turn, to those on his left, 'Be on your way from me, you who have been cursed, into the everlasting fire prepared for the Devil and his angels. . . . Truly I say to you, To the extent that you did not do it to one of these least ones, you did not do it to me.' And these will depart into everlasting cutting-off, but the righteous ones into everlasting life.'"

Anguish of nations, not knowing which way to turn

Luke 21:25 "On the earth anguish of nations, not knowing the way out because of the roaring of the sea and its agitation."

Fear regarding the future

Luke 21:26 "Men become faint out of fear and expectation of the things coming upon the inhabited earth."

Importance of watchfulness to discern the time of Christ's presence

Mark 13:35-37 "Keep on the watch, for you do not know when the master of the house is coming, whether late in the day or at midnight or at cock-crowing or early in the morning; in order that when he arrives suddenly, he does not find you sleeping. But what I say to you I say to all, Keep on the watch."

Luke 21:34-36 "Pay attention to yourselves that your hearts never become weighed down with overeating and heavy drinking and anxieties of life, and suddenly that day be instantly upon you as a snare. For it will come in upon all those dwelling upon the face of all the earth. Keep awake, then, all the time making supplication that you may succeed in escaping all these things that are destined to occur, and in standing before the Son of man."

Matt. 24:42, 44 "Keep on the watch, therefore, because you do not know on what day your Lord is coming. On this account you too prove yourselves ready, because at an hour that you do not think to be it, the Son of man is coming."

Need of endurance during this time of trial

Matt. 24:13 "He that has endured to the end is the one that will be saved."

Luke 21:19 "By endurance on your part you will acquire your souls."

Moral Degeneracy in Public and Private Life Foretold for "Last Days"

2 Tim. 3:1-5 "Know this, that in the last days critical times hard to deal with will be here. For men will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, self-assuming, haughty, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, disloyal, having no natural affection, not open to any agreement, slanderers, without self-control, fierce, without love of goodness, betrayers, headstrong, puffed up with pride, lovers of pleasures rather than lovers of

God, having a form of godly devotion but proving false to its power; and from these turn away."

See also the main heading "Last Days," pages 311-313.

Persons Moved Only by Own Desires Ridicule Sign of Christ's Presence

2 Pet. 3:3, 4 "In the last days there will come ridiculers with their ridicule, proceeding according to their own desires and saying: 'Where is this promised presence of his? Why, from the day our forefathers fell asleep in death, all things are continuing exactly as from creation's beginning.'"

Destruction to Come When They Are Saying "Peace and Security!"

1 Thess. 5:3 "Whenever it is that they are saying: 'Peace and security!' then sudden destruction is to be instantly upon them just as the pang of distress upon a pregnant woman; and they will by no means escape."

Thousand-Year Reign of Christ Preceded by Destruction of All the Wicked on Earth

Rev. 19:19-21; 20:1-4 "I saw the wild beast and the kings of the earth and their armies gathered together to wage the war with the one seated on the horse and with his army. And the wild beast was caught, and along with it the false prophet that performed in front of it the signs with which he misled those who received the mark of the wild beast and those who render worship to its image. While still alive, they both were hurled into the fiery lake that burns with sulphur. But the rest were killed off with the long sword of the one seated on the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth." "And I saw an angel coming down out of heaven with the key of the abyss and a great chain in his hand. And he seized the dragon, the original serpent, who is the Devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years. And he hurled him into the abyss and shut it and sealed it over him, that he might not mislead the nations any more until the thousand years were ended. . . . And I saw thrones, and there were those who sat down on them, and power of judging was given them. . . . And they came to life and ruled as kings with the Christ for a thousand years."

See also the main heading "Armageddon," pages 26-30.

Sin

All Men Are Accountable to God

Rom. 14:12 "Each of us will render an account for himself to God."

Sin Is a Falling Short of God's Mark of Perfection, Transgression of His Righteous Law

Rom. 3:23 "All have sinned and fall short of the glory of God."

1 John 3:4 "Everyone who practices sin is also practicing lawlessness; and so sin is lawlessness."

1 John 5:17 "All unrighteousness is sin."

All are born in sin (imperfect, with wayward tendencies)

Ps. 51:5 "Look! With error I was brought forth with birth pains, and in sin my mother conceived me."

Rom. 5:12 "Through one man sin entered into the world and death through sin, and thus death spread to all men because they had all sinned."

Due to fleshly imperfection, one may commit sins

Rom. 7:21-23 "I find, then, this law in my case: that when I wish to do what is right, what is bad is present with me. I really delight in the law of God according to the man I am within, but I behold in my members another law warring against the law of my mind and leading me captive to sin's law that is in my members."

Rom. 6:12-14 "Therefore do not let sin continue to rule as king in your mortal bodies that you should obey their desires. Neither go on presenting your members to sin as weapons of unrighteousness, but present yourselves to God as those alive from the dead, also your members to God as weapons of righteousness. For sin must not be master over you."

1 John 5:16 "If anyone catches sight of his brother sinning a sin that does not incur death, he will ask, and he will give life to him, yes, to those not sinning so as to incur death. There is a sin that does incur death. It is concerning that sin that I do not tell him to make request."

Due to ignorance or being misled, one may sin

1 Pet. 1:14 "As obedient children, quit being fashioned according to the desires you formerly had in your ignorance."

Acts 3:17 "And now, brothers, I know that you acted in ignorance, just as your rulers also did."

1 Tim. 1:13 "Formerly I was a blasphemer and a persecutor and an insolent man. Nevertheless, I was shown mercy, because I was ignorant and acted with a lack of faith."

Acts 17:29, 30 "Seeing, therefore, that we are the progeny of God, we ought not to imagine that the Divine Being is like gold or silver or stone, like something sculptured by the art and contrivance of man. True, God has overlooked the times of such ignorance, yet now he is telling mankind that they should all everywhere repent."

See also Num. 15:27-29.

Some make a practice of sin, choosing to live that way

1 John 3:4, 8, 9 "Everyone who practices sin is also practicing lawlessness, and so sin is lawlessness. He who carries on sin originates with the Devil, because the Devil has been sinning from the beginning. . . . Everyone who has been born from God does not carry on sin, because His reproductive seed remains in such one, and he cannot practice sin, because he has been born from God."

Heb. 10:26, 27 "If we practice sin willfully after having received the accurate knowledge of the truth, there is no longer any sacrifice for sins left, but there is a certain fearful expectation of judgment."

2 Thess. 2:11, 12 "So that is why God lets an operation of error go to them, that they may get to believing the lie, in order that they all may be judged because they did not believe the truth but took pleasure in unrighteousness."

See also Num. 15:30; Rom. 1:28-32; 1 Tim. 5:20.

Adam and Eve Sinned by Disobeying God's Plainly Stated Law

Gen. 2:16, 17 "Jehovah God also laid this command upon the man: 'From every tree of the garden you may eat to satisfac-

tion. But as for the tree of the knowledge of good and bad you must not eat from it, for in the day you eat from it you will positively die.'"

Gen. 3:17-19 "To Adam [God] said: 'Because you listened to your wife's voice and took to eating from the tree concerning which I gave you this command, "You must not eat from it," cursed is the ground on your account. In pain you will eat its produce all the days of your life. And thorns and thistles it will grow for you, and you must eat the vegetation of the field. In the sweat of your face you will eat bread until you return to the ground, for out of it you were taken. For dust you are and to dust you will return.'"

1 Tim. 2:14 "Adam was not deceived, but the woman was thoroughly deceived and came to be in transgression."

Rom. 5:19 "Through the disobedience of the one man many were constituted sinners."

Forbidden fruit was not sexual relations

Gen. 1:28 "Further, God blessed them and God said to them: 'Be fruitful and become many.'"

Ps. 127:3-5 "Look! Sons are an inheritance from Jehovah; the fruitage of the belly is a reward. Like arrows in the hand of a mighty man, so are the sons of youth. Happy is the able-bodied man that has filled his quiver with them."

No Descendant of Adam Is Free from Sin; All Inherit It from First Man

1 John 1:8-10 "If we make the statement: 'We have no sin,' we are misleading ourselves and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, he is faithful and righteous so as to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. If we make the statement: 'We have not sinned,' we are making him a liar, and his word is not in us."

1 Ki. 8:46 "There is no man that does not sin."

Rom. 5:12 "Through one man sin entered into the world and death through sin, and thus death spread to all men because they had all sinned."

Sin results in death

Rom. 6:23 "The wages sin pays is death."

Rom. 5:17 "By the trespass of the one man death ruled as king through that one."

Ezek. 18:4 "The soul that is sinning—it itself will die."

Adam's descendants not everlastingly destroyed because of his sin

Heb. 9:27, 28 "As it is reserved for men to die once for all time, but after this a judgment, so also the Christ was offered once for all time to bear the sins of many; and the second time that he appears it will be apart from sin and to those earnestly looking for him for their salvation."

1 Cor. 15:20, 21 "Christ has been raised up from the dead, the first fruits of those who have fallen asleep in death. For since death is through a man, resurrection of the dead is also through a man."

Rev. 20:12 "The dead were judged . . . according to their deeds."

See also the main heading "Resurrection," pages 427-429.

Mosaic Law Emphasized Man's Sinfulness, Need of a Redeemer

Gal. 3:19 "Why, then, the Law? It was added to make transgressions manifest, until the seed should arrive to whom the promise had been made."

Rom. 3:20 "By law is the accurate knowledge of sin."

Gal. 3:24 "Consequently the Law has become our tutor leading to Christ."

Release from Bondage to Sin Made Possible Through Death of Jesus Christ

1 Pet. 2:24 "He himself bore our sins in his own body upon the stake, in order that we might be done with sins and live to righteousness. And 'by his stripes you were healed.'"

Eph. 1:7 "By means of him we have the release by ransom through the blood of that one, yes, the forgiveness of our trespasses, according to the riches of his undeserved kindness."

Rom. 8:2 "Christ Jesus has set you free from the law of sin and of death."

Rom. 5:21 "Just as sin ruled as king with death, likewise also undeserved kindness might rule as king through righteousness with everlasting life in view through Jesus Christ our Lord."

Those called to heavenly life declared righteous by God

Rom. 8:30 "Those whom he foreordained are the ones he also called; and those whom he called are the ones he also declared to be righteous. Finally those whom he declared righteous are the ones he also glorified."

See also the main heading "Justification, or Being Declared Righteous," pages 295-297.

All exercising faith in ransom enjoy divine forgiveness of sins

Acts 10:43 "Everyone putting faith in him gets forgiveness of sins through his name."

Rev. 7:9, 10, 14 "I saw, and, look! a great crowd, which no man was able to number, out of all nations and tribes and peoples and tongues, standing before the throne and before the Lamb, dressed in white robes; and there were palm branches in their hands. And they keep on crying with a loud voice, saying: 'Salvation we owe to our God, who is seated on the throne, and to the Lamb.' . . . 'These are the ones that come out of the great tribulation, and they have washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.'"

One who commits sin should make confession, seek forgiveness from God through Christ

1 John 1:9; 2:1, 2 "If we confess our sins, he is faithful and righteous so as to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness." "My little children, I am writing you these things that you may not commit a sin. And yet, if anyone does commit a sin, we have a helper with the Father, Jesus Christ, a righteous one. And he is a propitiatory sacrifice for our sins, yet not for ours only but also for the whole world's."

Luke 11:2-4 "Father, . . . forgive us our sins."

Jas. 5:16 "Openly confess your sins to one another and pray for one another, that you may get healed."

See also the main heading "Confession," pages 109-111.

Sickness and death, caused by Adamic sin, to be removed by sin-removing sacrifice of Christ during thousand-year reign

1 Cor. 15:3 "Christ died for our sins."

1 Cor. 15:25, 26 "He must rule as king until God has put all enemies under his feet. As the last enemy, death is to be brought to nothing."

Rev. 20:13, 14 "The sea gave up those dead in it, and death and Hades gave up those dead in them, and they were judged individually according to their deeds. And death and Hades were hurled into the lake of fire."

Rev. 21:3, 4 "I heard a loud voice from the throne say: 'Look! The tent of God is with mankind, and he will reside with them, and they will be his peoples. And God

himself will be with them. And he will wipe out every tear from their eyes, and death will be no more, neither will mourning nor outcry nor pain be any more. The former things have passed away.'"

Sin Against the Holy Spirit Unforgivable

Matt. 12:31, 32 "Every sort of sin and blasphemy will be forgiven men, but the blasphemy against the spirit will not be forgiven. For example, whoever speaks a word against the Son of man, it will be forgiven him; but whoever speaks against the holy spirit, it will not be forgiven him, no, not in the present system of things nor in that to come."

See also Heb. 6:4-6; 10:26-31.

Avoid Any Course That May Lead You to Commit Sin

Prov. 1:10, 11, 15 "My son, if sinners try to seduce you, do not consent. If they keep saying: 'Do go with us' . . . my son, do not go in the way with them. Hold back your foot from their roadway."

Jas. 1:14, 15 "Each one is tried by being drawn out and enticed by his own desire. Then the desire, when it has become fertile, gives birth to sin; in turn, sin, when it has been accomplished, brings forth death."

Matt. 5:28 "I say to you that everyone that keeps on looking at a woman so as to have a passion for her has already committed adultery with her in his heart."

Prov. 7:6-8, 21, 22 "At the window of my house, through my lattice I looked down, that I might peer upon the inexperienced ones. I was interested in discerning among the sons a young man in want of heart, passing along on the street near her corner, and in the way to her house he marches. She has misled him by the abundance of her persuasiveness. By the smoothness of her lips she seduces him. All of a sudden he is going after her, like a bull that comes even to the slaughter, and just as if fettered for the discipline of a foolish man."

Prov. 5:12-14 "How I have hated discipline and my heart has disrespected even reproof! And I have not listened to the voice of my instructors, and to my teachers I have not inclined my ear. Easily I have come to be in every sort of badness in the midst of the congregation and of the assembly."

See also the heading "Conduct of Christians," pages 98-108.

Singleness

A Gift That Must Be Cultivated to Be Retained

Matt. 19:10-12 "The disciples said to him: 'If such is the situation of a man with his wife, it is not advisable to marry.' He said to them: 'Not all men make room for the saying, but only those who have the gift. For there are eunuchs that were born such from their mother's womb, and there are eunuchs that were made eunuchs by men, and there are eunuchs that have made themselves eunuchs on account of the kingdom of the heavens. Let him that can make room for it make room for it.'"

1 Cor. 7:7, 37 "I wish all men were as I myself am. Nevertheless, each one has his own gift from God, one in this way, another in that way. But if anyone

stands settled in his heart, having no necessity, but has authority over his own will and has made this decision in his own heart, to keep his own virginity, he will do well."

Affords Greater Freedom for Christian Service

1 Cor. 7:28, 32-35 "Even if you did marry, you would commit no sin. And if a virgin person married, such one would commit no sin. However, those who do will have tribulation in their flesh. But I am sparing you. Indeed, I want you to be free from anxiety. The unmarried man is anxious for the things of the Lord, how he may gain the Lord's approval. But the married man is anxious for the things of the world, how he may gain the approval of his wife, and he is divided. Further, the unmarried woman, and the virgin, is anxious for the things of the Lord, that she may be holy both in her body and in her spirit. However, the married woman is anxious for the things of the world, how she may gain the approval of her husband. But this I am saying for your personal advantage, not that I may cast a noose upon you, but to move you to that which is becoming and that which means constant attendance upon the Lord without distraction."

No License for Loose Conduct

1 Cor. 6:18 "Flee from fornication. Every other sin that a man may commit is outside his body, but he that practices fornication is sinning against his own body."

Gal. 5:19-21 "The works of the flesh are manifest, and they are fornication, uncleanness, loose conduct . . . those who practice such things will not inherit God's kingdom."

Eph. 5:3, 4 "Let fornication and uncleanness of every kind or greediness not even be mentioned among you, just as it befits holy people; neither shameful conduct nor foolish talking nor obscene jesting, things which are not becoming, but rather the giving of thanks."

Prov. 7:7-23 "I was interested in discerning among the sons a young man in want of heart, passing along on the street near her corner, . . . And, look! there was a woman to meet him, with the garment of a prostitute and cunning of heart. . . . She has put on a bold face, and she begins to say to him: ' . . . Do come, let us drink our fill of love until the morning; do let us enjoy each other with love expressions. For the husband is not in his house; he has gone traveling on a way of some distance.' . . . She has misled him by the abundance of her persuasiveness. . . . All of a sudden he is going after her, like a bull that comes even to the slaughter, and just as if fettered for the discipline of a foolish man, until an arrow cleaves open his liver, just as a bird hastens into the trap, and he has not known that it involves his very soul."

When Faced with Pressures Toward Immorality, Marriage May Be Safer for Some

1 Cor. 7:1-9, 36 "Now concerning the things about which you wrote, it is well for a man not to touch a woman; yet, because of prevalence of fornication, let each man have his own wife and each woman have her own husband. . . . But if they do not have self-control, let them marry, for it is better to marry than to be inflamed with passion. . . . if anyone thinks he is behaving improperly toward his virginity, if that is past the bloom of youth, and this is the way it should take place, let him do what he wants; he does not sin. Let them marry."

Social Distinctions

God Made Men to Live Together Without Social Distinctions

Acts 17:26, 27 "He made out of one man every nation of men, to dwell upon the entire surface of the earth, and he decreed the appointed seasons and the set limits of the dwelling of men, for them to seek God, if they might grope for him and really find him, although, in fact, he is not far off from each one of us."

Gal. 2:6 "On the part of those who seemed to be something—whatever sort of men they formerly were makes no difference to me—God does not go by a man's outward appearance."

Gal. 3:28 "There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither slave nor freeman, there is neither male nor female; for you are all one person in union with Christ Jesus."

No One's Ancestry Makes Him Better than Others

Rom. 3:23-27 "All have sinned and fall short of the glory of God . . . Where, then, is the boasting? It is shut out."

Titus 3:9 "Shun foolish questionings and genealogies . . . , for they are unprofitable and futile."

See also the main heading "Races of Mankind," pages 406-408.

People of All Nations Acceptable to God, Not to Be Looked Down Upon

Acts 10:34, 35 "God is not partial, but in every nation the man that fears him and works righteousness is acceptable to him."

John 3:16 "God loved the world so much that he gave his only-begotten Son, in order that everyone exercising faith in him might not be destroyed but have everlasting life."

Acts 10:28 "You well know how unlawful it is for a Jew to join himself to or approach a man of another race; and yet God has shown me I should call no man defiled or unclean."

Wealthy Christians Not to Be Arrogant or Shown Favoritism

1 Tim. 6:17, 18 "Give orders to those who are rich in the present system of things not to be high-minded, and to rest their hope, not on uncertain riches, but on God, who furnishes us all things richly for our enjoyment; to work at good, to be rich in fine works, to be liberal, ready to share."

Jas. 2:2-4 "For, if a man with gold rings on his fingers and in splendid clothing enters into your public assembly, but a poor man in filthy clothing also enters, yet you look with favor upon the one wearing the splendid clothing and say: 'You take this seat here in a fine place,' and you say to the poor one: 'You keep standing,' or: 'Take that seat there under my footstool,' you have class distinctions among yourselves and you have become judges rendering wicked decisions, is that not so?"

See also Jer. 9:23, 24.

Those in Positions of Oversight to Serve Their Brothers, Not Lord It over Them

1 Pet. 5:2, 3 "Shepherd the flock of God in your care, not under compulsion, but willingly; neither for love of dishonest gain, but eagerly; neither as lording it over those who are God's inheritance, but becoming examples to the flock."

Matt. 20:25-28 "But Jesus, calling them to him, said: 'You know that the rulers of the nations lord it over them and the great men wield authority over them. This is not the way among you; but whoever wants to become great among you must be your minister, and whoever wants to be first among you must be your slave. Just as the Son of man came, not to be ministered to, but to minister and to give his soul a ransom in exchange for many.'"

Favor with God Not Because of Race or Nationality, but Obedience

Rom. 10:12 "There is no distinction between Jew and Greek, for there is the same Lord over all, who is rich to all those calling upon him."

Ex. 19:5 "Now if you will strictly obey my voice and will indeed keep my covenant, then you will certainly become my special property out of all other peoples, because the whole earth belongs to me."

1 John 2:17 "The world is passing away and so is its desire, but he that does the will of God remains forever."

See also the main heading "Obedience," pages 359-362.

Legal Social Distinctions Acknowledged in Present System of Things; Christians Not Social Reformers

Eph. 6:5, 9 "You slaves, be obedient to those who are your masters in a fleshly sense, with fear and trembling in the sincerity of your hearts, as to the Christ. Also, you masters, keep doing the same things to them, letting up on the threatening, for you know that the Master of both them and you is in the heavens, and there is no partiality with him."

1 Tim. 6:1, 2 "Let as many as are slaves under a yoke keep on considering their owners worthy of full honor, that the name of God and the teaching may never be spoken of injuriously. Moreover, let those having believing owners not look down on them, because they are brothers. On the contrary, let them the more readily be slaves, because those receiving the benefit of their good service are believers and beloved."

See also Philem. 10-16.

Soul

Man Himself Is a Soul

Gen. 2:7 "Jehovah God proceeded to form the man out of dust from the ground and to blow into his nostrils the breath of life, and the man came to be a living soul."

1 Cor. 15:45 "It is even so written: 'The first man Adam became a living soul.'"

Deut. 24:7 "In case a man is found kidnaping a soul of his brothers of the sons of Israel, and he has dealt tyrannically with him and sold him, that kidnaper must also die."

1 Pet. 3:20 "Who had once been disobedient when the patience of God was waiting in Noah's days, while the ark was being constructed, in which a few people, that is, eight souls, were carried safely through the water."

Human soul dies; not immortal

Num. 23:10 "Let my soul die the death of the upright ones."

Mark 14:34 "He said to them: 'My soul is deeply grieved, even to death.' "

Ezek. 18:4 "Look! All the souls —to me they belong. As the soul of the father so likewise the soul of the son—to me they belong. The soul that is sinning —it itself will die."

Acts 3:23 "Indeed, any soul that does not listen to that Prophet will be completely destroyed from among the people."

Luke 6:9 "Then Jesus said to them: 'I ask you men, Is it lawful on the sabbath to do good or to do injury, to save or to destroy a soul?' "

Lower Animals Also Called Souls

Num. 31:28 "As a tax for Jehovah you must take away from the men of war who went out on the expedition one soul out of five hundred, of humankind and of the herd and of the asses and of the flock."

Gen. 1:21, 24 "God proceeded to create the great sea monsters and every living soul that moves about, which the waters swarmed forth according to their kinds . . . And God went on to say: 'Let the earth put forth living souls according to their kinds, domestic animal and moving animal and wild beast of the earth according to its kind.' "

These souls also die

Rev. 16:3 "The second one poured out his bowl into the sea. And it became blood as of a dead man, and every living soul died, yes, the things in the sea."

Lev. 24:18 "The fatal striker of the soul of a domestic animal should make compensation for it, soul for soul."

Soul Not the Same as Spirit

Heb. 4:12 "The word of God is alive and exerts power and is sharper than any two-edged sword and pierces even to the dividing of soul and spirit."

Job 12:9, 10 "Who among all these does not well know that the hand of Jehovah itself has done this, in whose hand is the soul of everyone alive and the spirit of all flesh of man?"

1 Thess. 5:23 "Sound in every respect may the spirit and soul and body of you brothers be preserved in a blameless manner at the presence of our Lord Jesus Christ."

Spirit that returns to God is active life force, which is sustained by breathing

Eccl. 12:7 "Then the dust returns to the earth just as it happened to be and the spirit itself returns to the true God who gave it."

Rev. 11:11 "After the three and a half days spirit of life from God entered into them, and they stood upon their feet."

Job 27:3, 4 "While my breath is yet whole within me, and the spirit of God is in my nostrils, my lips will speak no unrighteousness."

Ps. 104:29 "If you conceal your face, they get disturbed. If you take away their spirit, they expire, and back to their dust they go."

When spirit goes out, conscious life ceases

Ps. 146:4 "His spirit goes out, he goes back to his ground; in that day his thoughts do perish."

Ps. 104:29 "If you conceal your face, they get disturbed. If you take away their spirit, they expire, and back to their dust they go."

Soul requires breath to keep alive

Job 7:15 "So that my soul chooses suffocation, death rather than my bones."

Josh. 11:11 "They went striking every soul that was in it with the edge of the sword, devoting them to destruction. No breathing thing at all was left over."

See also Gen. 7:22.

Souls have blood

Gen. 9:5 "Your blood of your souls shall I ask back."

Jer. 2:34 "In your skirts there have been found the blood marks of the souls of the innocent poor ones."

Ezek. 22:27 "Her princes in the midst of her are like wolves tearing prey in shedding blood, in destroying souls for the purpose of making unjust gain."

Souls can be killed with the sword

Josh. 10:32 "Jehovah gave Lachish into Israel's hand so that they captured it on the second day, and they went striking it and every soul that was in it with the edge of the sword."

Josh. 11:11 "They went striking every soul that was in it with the edge of the sword, devoting them to destruction."

"Soul" May Refer to *One's Own Self* as a Soul

Gen. 23:8 "If your souls agree to bury my dead out of my sight, listen to me and urge Ephron the son of Zohar for me."

Lev. 26:43 "Their souls had abhorred my statutes."

Ps. 119:28 "My soul has been sleepless from grief."

1 Sam. 18:1 "It came about that, as soon as he had finished speaking to Saul, Jonathan's very soul became bound up with the soul of David, and Jonathan began to love him as his own soul."

Isa. 61:10 "Without fail I shall exult in Jehovah. My soul will be joyful in my God."

"Soul" Sometimes Refers to *Life One Enjoys as a Soul*

Gen. 19:17 "It came about that, as soon as they had brought them forth to the outskirts, he began to say: 'Escape for your soul ["life," *Mo, Dy, AV, RS;* Hebrew: *nephesh*]!' "

Judg. 9:17 "My father fought for you and went risking his soul ["life," *Mo, Dy, AV, RS;* Hebrew: *nephesh*] that he might deliver you out of Midian's hand."

Gen. 35:18 "The result was that as her soul ["life," *Mo;* "soul," *Dy, AV, RS;* Hebrew: *nephesh*] was going out (because she died) she called his name Benoni."

Matt. 16:26 "For what benefit will it be to a man if he gains the whole world but forfeits his soul ["life," *RS;* "soul," *Mo, Dy, AV;* Greek: *psykhe*]?"

Luke 9:24 "For whoever wants to save his soul ["life," *Mo, Dy, AV, RS;* Greek: *psykhe*] will lose it."

"Soul" may refer to future life

Matt. 10:28 "Do not become fearful of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul ["future life," *ED;* Greek: *psykhe*]."

Luke 21:19 "By endurance on your part you will acquire your souls ["future lives," 1950 Ed. ftn.; Greek: *psykhe*]."

Promise of Deliverance of Dead Souls from Sheol (Hades) by Resurrection

Rev. 20:13 "The sea gave up those dead in it, and death and Hades gave up those dead in them, and they were judged individually according to their deeds."

Acts 2:27 "You will not leave my soul in Hades, neither will you allow your loyal one to see corruption."

Ps. 16:10 "You will not leave my soul in Sheol."

Spirit

Spirit Persons Are Invisible and Powerful

John 4:24 "God is a Spirit."

1 Cor. 15:45 "It is even so written: 'The first man Adam became a living soul.' The last Adam became a life-giving spirit."

Heb. 1:13, 14 "With reference to which one of the angels has he ever said: 'Sit at my right hand, until I place your enemies as a stool for your feet'? Are they not all spirits for public service, sent forth to minister for those who are going to inherit salvation?"

See also the main heading "Angels," pages 9-13.

Active Life Force in Earthly Creatures; Sustained by Breathing

Gen. 6:17 "As for me, here I am bringing the deluge of waters upon the earth to bring to ruin all flesh in which the force of life is active ["spirit of life," 1950 Ed. ftn.] from under the heavens."

Gen. 7:22 "Everything in which the breath of the force of life ["spirit of life," 1950 Ed. ftn.] was active in its nostrils, namely, all that were on the dry ground, died."

Job 27:3, 4 "While my breath is yet whole within me, and the spirit of God is in my nostrils, my lips will speak no unrighteousness."

Eccl. 3:19 "There is an eventuality as respects the sons of mankind and an eventuality as respects the beast, and they have the same eventuality. As the one dies, so the other dies; and they all have but one spirit."

Eccl. 12:7 "Then the dust returns to the earth just as it happened to be and the spirit itself returns to the true God who gave it."

Does not produce intelligence apart from the physical body

Ps. 146:4 "His spirit goes out, he goes back to his ground; in that day his thoughts do perish."

One's Mental Disposition

Mark 14:38 "Men, keep on the watch and praying, in order that you do not come into temptation. The spirit, of course, is eager, but the flesh is weak."

Prov. 25:28 "As a city broken through, without a wall, is the man that has no restraint for his spirit."

Gen. 41:7, 8 "Pharaoh woke up and here it was a dream. And it developed in the morning that his spirit became agitated."

Inspired Expressions or Utterances Originating with an Invisible Source

Rev. 16:13, 14 "I saw three unclean inspired expressions ["unclean spirits," 1950 Ed. ftn.] that looked like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon and out of the mouth of the wild beast and out of the mouth of the false prophet. They are, in fact, expressions inspired by demons."

1 John 4:1 "Beloved ones, do not believe every inspired expression ["every spirit," 1950 Ed. ftn.], but test the inspired expressions to see whether they originate with God, because many false prophets have gone forth into the world."

Jehovah's Active Force

Acts 2:1-4 "Now while the day of the festival of Pentecost was in progress they were all together at the same place, and suddenly there occurred from heaven a noise just like that of a rushing stiff breeze, and it filled the whole house in which they were sitting. And tongues as if of fire became visible to them and were distributed about, and one sat upon each one of them, and they all became filled with holy spirit and started to speak with different tongues, just as the spirit was granting them to make utterance."

Acts 4:31 "When they had made supplication, the place in which they were gathered together was shaken; and they were one and all filled with the holy spirit."

Used in creation, inspiration of Bible

Gen. 1:2 "Now the earth proved to be formless and waste and there was darkness upon the surface of the watery deep; and God's active force [Hebrew: *ru'ahh*] was moving to and fro over the surface of the waters."

Ps. 104:30 "If you send forth your spirit, they are created; and you make the face of the ground new."

2 Pet. 1:21 "Prophecy was at no time brought by man's will, but men spoke from God as they were borne along by holy spirit."

Acts 28:25 "The holy spirit aptly spoke through Isaiah the prophet to your forefathers."

Miracles, powerful works performed by means of holy spirit

Matt. 1:18 "The birth of Jesus Christ was in this way. During the time his mother Mary was promised in marriage to Joseph, she was found to be pregnant by holy spirit before they were united."

Acts 10:37, 38 "You know the subject that was talked about throughout the whole of Judea, starting from Galilee after the baptism that John preached, namely, Jesus who was from Nazareth, how God anointed him with holy spirit and power, and he went through the land doing good and healing all those oppressed by the Devil; because God was with him." (See also Matt. 12:28.)

Rom. 8:11 "If, now, the spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwells in you, he that raised up Christ Jesus from the dead will also make your mortal bodies alive through his spirit."

Judg. 15:14, 15 "He, for his part, came as far as Lehi, and the Philistines, for their part, shouted exultantly at meeting him. And Jehovah's spirit became operative upon him, and the ropes that were upon his arms came to be like linen threads that have been scorched with fire, so that his fetters melted off his hands. He now found a moist jawbone of a male ass and thrust his hand out and took it and went striking down a thousand men with it."

See also the main heading "Jesus Christ," page 285.

Used to beget, anoint those called to heavenly kingdom

John 3:5 "Jesus answered: 'Most truly I say to you, Unless anyone is born from water and spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.'"

Rom. 8:16, 17 "The spirit itself bears witness with our spirit that we are God's children. If, then, we are children, we are also heirs: heirs indeed of God, but joint heirs with Christ."

2 Cor. 1:21, 22 "He who has anointed us is God. He has also put his seal upon us and has given us the token of what is to come, that is, the spirit, in our hearts."

See also the heading "Congregation of God," pages 113-116.

God's spirit available to his servants; guides and strengthens them

Luke 11:13 "If you, although being wicked, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more so will the Father in heaven give holy spirit to those asking him!"

Eph. 5:18 "Do not be getting drunk with wine, in which there is debauchery, but keep getting filled with spirit."

Gal. 5:22, 23, 25 "The fruitage of the spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, kindness, goodness, faith, mildness, self-control. Against such things there is no law. If we are living by spirit, let us go on walking orderly also by spirit."

Mark 13:11 "But when they are leading you along to deliver you up, do not be anxious beforehand about what to speak; but whatever is given you in that hour, speak this, for you are not the ones speaking, but the holy spirit is."

John 16:13 "When that one arrives, the spirit of the truth, he will guide you into all the truth."

Spiritism

Christians to Be on Guard Against Wicked Spirits

Eph. 6:12 "We have a fight, not against blood and flesh, but against . . . the wicked spirit forces in the heavenly places."

1 Tim. 4:1 "The inspired utterance says definitely that in later periods of time some will fall away from the faith, paying attention to misleading inspired utterances and teachings of demons."

Rev. 12:12 "Woe for the earth and for the sea, because the Devil has come down to you, having great anger, knowing he has a short period of time."

See also the heading "Devil and Demons," pages 153-160.

Practices Associated with Spiritism

Deut. 18:10-12 "There should not be found in you anyone . . . who employs divination, a practicer of magic or anyone who looks for omens or a sorcerer, or one who binds others with a spell or anyone who consults a spirit medium or a professional foreteller of events or anyone who inquires of the dead. For everybody doing these things is something detestable to Jehovah."

Acts 16:16-18 "It happened that as we were going to the place of prayer, a certain servant girl with a spirit, a demon of divination, met us. She used to furnish her masters with much gain by practicing the art of prediction. This girl kept following Paul and us and crying out. . . . Finally Paul got tired of it and turned and said to the spirit: 'I order you in the name of Jesus Christ to come out of her.' And it came out that very hour."

Isa. 8:19 "In case they should say to you people: 'Apply to the spiritistic mediums or to those having a spirit of prediction who are chirping and making utterances in low tones,' is it not to its God that any people should apply? Should there be application to dead persons in behalf of living persons?"

1 Sam. 28:7 "Saul said to his servants: 'Seek for me a woman who is a mistress of spirit mediumship, and I will go to her and consult her.' Then his servants said to him: 'Look! There is a woman who is a mistress of spirit mediumship in En-dor.' "

Expressions Inspired by Demons Align Rulers Against God

Rev. 16:13, 14, 16 "I saw three unclean inspired expressions that looked like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon and out of the mouth of the false prophet. They are, in fact, expressions inspired by demons and perform signs, and they go forth to the kings of the entire inhabited earth, to gather them together to the war of the great day of God the Almighty. And they gathered them together to the place that is called in Hebrew Har-Magedon."

Spiritism Prevalent in Ancient Egypt and Babylon

Isa. 19:3 "The spirit of Egypt must become bewildered in the midst of it, and I shall confuse its own counsel. And they will be certain to resort to the valueless gods and to the charmers and to the spirit mediums and to the professional foretellers of events."

Ex. 9:11 "The magic-practicing priests were unable to stand before Moses . . . because the boils had developed on the magic-practicing priests and on all the Egyptians."

Isa. 47:1, 12-14 "Come down and sit down in the dust, O virgin daughter of Babylon. . . . Stand still, now, with your spells and with the abundance of your sorceries, in which you have toiled from your youth; that perhaps you might be able to benefit, that perhaps you might strike people with awe. You have grown weary with the multitude of your counselors. Let them stand up, now, and save you, the worshipers of the heavens, the lookers at the stars, those giving out knowledge at the new moons concerning the things that will come upon you. Look! They have become like stubble. A fire itself will certainly burn them up. They will not deliver their soul from the power of the flame."

Babylon the Great Misleads Nations by Spiritistic Practices

Rev. 18:2, 23 "He cried out with a strong voice, saying: 'She has fallen! Babylon the great has fallen.' . . . 'By your spiritistic practice all the nations were misled.' "

See also the heading "Babylon the Great," pages 33-39.

Practice of Any Form of Spiritism Brings Divine Disapproval

Gal. 5:19-21 "The works of the flesh are manifest, and they are fornication, uncleanness . . . practice of spiritism . . . As to these things I am forewarning you, the same way as I did forewarn you, that those who practice such things will not inherit God's kingdom."

Rev. 21:8 "As for the cowards . . . and those practicing spiritism . . . their portion will be in the lake that burns with fire and sulphur. This means the second death."

Lev. 20:6 "As for the soul who turns himself to the spirit mediums and the professional foretellers of events so as to have immoral intercourse with them, I shall certainly set my face against that soul and cut him off from among his people."

1 Chron. 10:13 "Thus Saul died for his unfaithfulness . . . and also for asking of a spirit medium to make inquiry."

Mal. 3:5 "I will come near to you people for the judgment, and I will become a speedy witness against the sorcerers."

How to Keep Free from Spiritistic Influence

Jas. 4:7 "Oppose the Devil, and he will flee from you."

Eph. 6:11, 13 "Put on the complete suit of armor from God that you may be able to stand firm against the machinations of the Devil. On this account take up the complete suit of armor from God, that you may be able to resist in the wicked day and, after you have done all things thoroughly, to stand firm." (See also verses 14-18.)

Pray to Jehovah, study his Word

Matt. 6:9-13 "You must pray, then, this way: 'Our Father in the heavens, . . . deliver us from the wicked one.'"

Eph. 6:17, 18 "Accept . . . the sword of the spirit, that is, God's word, while with every form of prayer and supplication you carry on prayer on every occasion in spirit."

Destroy objects related to spiritistic practices

Acts 19:18, 19 "Many of those who had become believers would come and confess and report their practices openly. Indeed, quite a number of those who practiced magical arts brought their books together and burned them up before everybody. And they calculated together the prices of them and found them worth fifty thousand pieces of silver."

Obey all commandments of God and Jesus Christ

1 Sam. 15:22, 23 "Samuel said [to Saul]: 'Does Jehovah have as much delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices as in obeying the voice of Jehovah? Look! To obey is better than a sacrifice, to pay attention than the fat of rams; for rebelliousness is the same as the sin of divination, and pushing ahead presumptuously the same as using uncanny power.'"

Deut. 18:14-19 "These nations whom you are dispossessing used to listen to those practicing magic and to those who divine; but as for you, Jehovah your God has not given you anything like this. A prophet from your own midst, from your brothers, like me, is what Jehovah your God will raise up for you—to him you people should listen. . . . Jehovah said to me, '. . . I shall indeed put my words in his mouth, and he will certainly speak to them all that I shall command him. And it must occur that the man who will not listen to my words that he will speak in my name, I shall myself require an account from him.'" (See also Acts 3:12-26.)

Have no fear of spiritists and their spells; fear God

Num. 23:21, 23 "He has not looked upon any uncanny power against Jacob, and no trouble has he seen against Israel. Jehovah his God is with him, . . . For there is no unlucky spell against Jacob, nor any divination against Israel."

Prov. 18:10 "The name of Jehovah is a strong tower. Into it the righteous runs and is given protection."

Study

Study of God's Word Required to Advance to Spiritual Maturity

Heb. 6:1-3 "Now that we have left the primary doctrine about the Christ, let us press on to maturity."

2 Tim. 2:15 "Do your utmost to present yourself approved to God, a workman with nothing to be ashamed of, handling the word of the truth aright."

1 Tim. 4:6 "A fine minister of Christ Jesus, one nourished with the words of the faith and of the fine teaching which you have followed closely."

Prov. 18:15 "The heart of the understanding one acquires knowledge, and the ear of wise ones seeks to find knowledge."

Christians must continue to take in knowledge

2 Pet. 3:18 "Go on growing in the undeserved kindness and knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ."

Dan. 12:4 "As for you, O Daniel, make secret the words and seal up the book, until the time of the end. Many will rove about, and the true knowledge will become abundant."

Heb. 6:1-3 "Now that we have left the primary doctrine about the Christ, let us press on to maturity, not laying a foundation again, namely, repentance from dead works, and faith toward God, the teaching on baptisms and the laying on of the hands, the resurrection of the dead and everlasting judgment. And this we will do, if God indeed permits."

Not Books of Worldly Wisdom, but God's Word Strengthens Faith

Eccl. 12:11-13 "The words of the wise ones are like oxgoads, . . . As regards anything besides these, my son, take a warning: To the making of many books there is no end, and much devotion to them is wearisome to the flesh. The conclusion of the matter, everything having been heard, is: Fear the true God and keep his commandments. For this is the whole obligation of man."

1 Cor. 3:19 "The wisdom of this world is foolishness with God; for it is written: 'He catches the wise in their own cunning.'"

1 Tim. 6:20, 21 "O Timothy, guard what is laid up in trust with you, turning away from the empty speeches that violate what is holy and from the contradictions of the falsely called 'knowledge.' For making a show of such knowledge some have deviated from the faith."

2 Pet. 1:19, 21 "We have the prophetic word made more sure; and you are doing well in paying attention to it . . . For prophecy was at no time brought by man's will, but men spoke from God as they were borne along by holy spirit."

See also the main heading "Bible," pages 45-53.

Look to Jehovah as the Source of True Knowledge and Wisdom

John 6:45 "It is written in the Prophets, 'And they will all be taught by Jehovah.' Everyone that has heard from the Father and has learned comes to me."

Prov. 2:4-6 "If you keep seeking for it as for silver, and as for hid treasures you keep searching for it, in that case you will understand the fear of Jehovah, and you will find the very knowledge of God. For Jehovah himself gives wisdom; out of his mouth there are knowledge and discernment."

Prov. 9:10 "The fear of Jehovah is the start of wisdom, and the knowledge of the Most Holy One is what understanding is."

God's spirit needed to understand his Word

1 Cor. 2:10 "It is to us God has revealed them through his spirit, for the spirit searches into all things, even the deep things of God."

Pray to God for his spirit and for wisdom

Luke 11:13 "If you, although being wicked, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more so will the Father in heaven give holy spirit to those asking him!"

Jas. 1:5 "So, if any one of you is lacking in wisdom, let him keep on asking God, for he gives generously to all and without reproaching; and it will be given him."

Ps. 119:66 "Teach me goodness, sensibleness and knowledge themselves, for in your commandments I have exercised faith."

Spiritual Food Provided Through "Faithful and Discreet Slave" Class

Matt. 24:45-47 "Who really is the faithful and discreet slave whom his master appointed over

his domestics, to give them their food at the proper time? Happy is that slave if his master on arriving finds him doing so. Truly I say to you, He will appoint him over all his belongings."

See also Matt. 4:4, and the main heading "Organization (Jehovah's)," page 365.

Get Accurate Knowledge; Pay Attention to Details

Col. 1:9, 10 "That is also why we, from the day we heard of it, have not ceased praying for you and asking that you may be filled with the accurate knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual discernment, in order to walk worthily of Jehovah to the end of fully pleasing him as you go on bearing fruit in every good work and increasing in the accurate knowledge of God."

Phil. 1:9, 10 "This is what I continue praying, that your love may abound yet more and more with accurate knowledge and full discernment; that you may make sure of the more important things, so that you may be flawless and not be stumbling others up to the day of Christ."

Seek Understanding; Endeavor to Get Reasons for Things

Prov. 4:7 "Wisdom is the prime thing. Acquire wisdom; and with all that you acquire, acquire understanding."

Eccl. 7:25 "I myself turned around, even my heart did, to know and to explore and to search for wisdom and the reason of things."

Do Not Rush Through Important Material; Read in an Undertone, Ponder over It

Ps. 1:2 "His delight is in the law of Jehovah, and in his law he reads in an undertone day and night."

1 Tim. 4:15 "Ponder over these things; be absorbed in them."

Consider How Material Applies to Your Own Life

1 Cor. 10:11 "Now these things went on befalling them as examples, and they were written for a warning to us upon whom the ends of the systems of things have arrived."

Rom. 15:4 "All the things that were written aforetime were written for our instruction, that through our endurance and through the comfort from the Scriptures we might have hope."

2 Tim. 3:16, 17 "All Scripture is inspired of God and beneficial for teaching, for reproving, for setting things straight, for disciplining in righteousness, that the man of God may be fully competent, completely equipped for every good work."

Jas. 1:22-25 "Become doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving yourselves with false reasoning. For if anyone is a hearer of the word, and not a doer, this one is like a man looking at his natural face in a mirror. For he looks at himself, and off he goes and immediately forgets what sort of man he is. But he who peers into the perfect law that belongs to freedom and who persists in it, this man, because he has become, not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, will be happy in his doing it."

Meditate on How You Can Use Information to Aid Others

Prov. 15:28 "The heart of the righteous one meditates so as to answer."

1 Pet. 3:15 "Sanctify the Christ as Lord in your hearts, always ready to make a defense before everyone that demands of you a reason for the hope in you."

Repetition of Important Points Is a Fine Memory Aid

2 Pet. 3:1, 2 "Beloved ones, this is now the second letter I am writing you, in which, as in my first one, I am arousing your clear thinking faculties by way of a reminder, that you should remember the sayings previously spoken by the holy prophets and the commandment of the Lord and Savior through your apostles."

2 Pet. 1:13 "I consider it right . . . to rouse you up by way of reminding you."

Be Regular in Study; Do Some Every Day

Acts 17:11 "Now the latter [the Bereans] were more noble-minded than those in Thessalonica, for they received the word with the greatest eagerness of mind, carefully examining the Scriptures daily as to whether these things were so."

Personal Study Necessary

Josh. 1:8 "This book of the law should not depart from your mouth, and you must in an undertone read in it day and night, in order that you may take care to do according to all that is written in it; for then you will make your way successful."

Deut. 17:18 "When he takes his seat on the throne of his kingdom, he must write in a book for himself a copy of this law from that which is in the charge of the priests, the Levites."

Family Discussions of God's Word Beneficial

Gen. 18:17-19 "Jehovah said: '. . . For I have become acquainted with [Abraham] in order that he may command his sons and his household after him so that they shall keep Jehovah's way to do righteousness.'"

Ps. 78:5-7 "He proceeded to raise up a reminder in Jacob, and a law he set in Israel, things that he commanded our forefathers, to make them known to their sons; in order that the generation to come, the sons that were to be born, might know them, that they might rise up and relate them to their sons, and that they might set their confidence in God himself and not forget the practices of God but observe his own commandments."

Eph. 6:4 "You, fathers, do not be irritating your children, but go on bringing them up in the discipline and authoritative advice of Jehovah."

Gathering Together as a Congregation for Study Not to Be Neglected

Heb. 10:25 "Not forsaking the gathering of ourselves together, as some have the custom, but encouraging one another, and all the more so as you behold the day drawing near."

See also Prov. 18:1.

Superior Authorities

Jehovah God Is Supreme Above Earthly "Superior Authorities"

Isa. 40:13, 15 "Who has taken the proportions of the spirit of Jehovah, and who as his man of counsel can make him know anything? Look! The nations are as a drop from a bucket; and as the film of dust on the scales they have been accounted. Look! He lifts the islands themselves as mere fine dust."

Dan. 7:18 "But the holy ones of the Supreme One will receive the kingdom." (See also Dan. 7:22, 27.)

Rom. 9:20, 21 "O man, who, then, really are you to be answering back to God? Shall the thing molded say to him that molded

it, 'Why did you make me this way?' What? Does not the potter have authority over the clay to make from the same lump one vessel for an honorable use, another for a dishonorable use?"

Isa. 33:22 "Jehovah is our Judge, Jehovah is our Statute-giver, Jehovah is our King; he himself will save us."

Heb. 12:9 "We used to have fathers who were of our flesh to discipline us, and we used to give them respect. Shall we not much more subject ourselves to the Father of our spiritual life and live?"

Jesus Christ Is Next in Position to Jehovah

John 17:1, 2 "Jesus spoke these things, and, raising his eyes to heaven, he said: 'Father, . . . glorify your son, that your son may glorify you, according as you have given him authority over all flesh.'"

1 Pet. 3:22 "He is at God's right hand, for he went his way to heaven; and angels and authorities and powers were made subject to him."

Phil. 2:5, 9-11 "Keep this mental attitude in you that was also in Christ Jesus. . . . God exalted him to a superior position and kindly gave him the name that is above every other name, so that in the name of Jesus every knee should bend of those in heaven and those on earth and those under the ground, and every tongue should openly acknowledge that Jesus Christ is Lord to the glory of God the Father."

Eph. 1:20-22 "In the case of the Christ . . . he raised him up from the dead and seated him at his right hand in the heavenly places, far above every government and authority and power and lordship and every name named, not only in this system of things, but also in that to come. He also subjected all things under his feet."

Humans Exercise Authority Only by Permission of Jehovah

Rom. 13:1 "Let every soul be in subjection to the superior authorities, for there is no authority except by God."

John 19:11 "Jesus answered [Pilate]: 'You would have no authority at all against me unless it had been granted to you from above.'"

Dan. 4:25 "The Most High is Ruler in the kingdom of mankind, and . . . to the one whom he wants to he gives it."

Gen. 45:8 "So now it was not you who sent me here, but it was the true God, that he might appoint me a father to Pharaoh and a lord for all his house and as one dominating over all the land of Egypt."

Acts 17:24-26 "The God that made the world and all the things in it, being, as this One is, Lord of heaven and earth, . . . decreed the appointed seasons and the set limits of the dwelling of men."

Deut. 32:8 "When the Most High gave the nations an inheritance, when he parted the sons of Adam from one another, he proceeded to fix the boundary of the peoples with regard for the number of the sons of Israel."

Jehovah Foretold the Course of Worldly Governments Empowered by Satan. Rulers Still Held Accountable to God Who Allows Them Authority

Dan. 7:1-24 "Daniel was speaking up and saying: 'I happened to be beholding in my visions during the night, and, see there! the four winds of the heavens were stirring up the vast sea. And four huge beasts were coming up out of the sea, each one being different from the others. . . . As for these huge beasts, because they are four, there are four kings that will stand up from the earth. . . . As for the fourth beast, there is a fourth kingdom that will come to be on the earth, that will be different from all the other kingdoms; and it will devour all the earth and will trample it down and crush it." (See also Dan. 8:3-22.)

Rev. 17:3, 9, 10, 12 "I caught sight of a woman sitting upon a scarlet-colored wild beast that was full of blasphemous names and that had seven heads and ten horns. Here is where the intelligence that has wisdom comes in: The seven heads mean seven mountains, where the woman sits on top. And there are seven kings: five have fallen, one is, the other has not yet arrived, but when he does arrive he must remain a short while. And the ten horns that you saw mean ten kings, who have not yet received a kingdom, but they do receive authority as kings one hour with the wild beast."

Rev. 13:2, 4, 11, 12 "And the dragon gave the beast its power and its throne and great authority. And they worshiped the dragon because it gave the authority to the wild beast, and they worshiped the wild beast with the words: 'Who is like the wild beast, and who can do battle with it?' and I saw another wild beast ascending out of the earth, and it had two horns . . . And it exercises all the authority of the first wild beast in its sight."

John 12:31 "Now there is a judging of this world; now the ruler of this world will be cast out."

2 Cor. 4:4 "The god of this system of things has blinded the minds of the unbelievers."

1 John 5:19 "The whole world is lying in the power of the wicked one."

Rom. 13:2-4 "He who opposes the authority has taken a stand against the arrangement of God; those who have taken a stand against it will receive judgment to themselves. . . . it is God's minister to you for your good."

Christians to Be Law Abiding, Respect Those in Positions of Authority

Titus 3:1 "Continue reminding them to be in subjection and be obedient to governments and authorities as rulers."

1 Pet. 2:13, 14 "For the Lord's sake subject yourselves to every human creation: whether to a king as being superior or to governors as being sent by him to inflict punishment on evildoers but to praise doers of good."

Dan. 6:5 "These able-bodied men were saying: 'We shall find in this Daniel no pretext at all, except we have to find it against him in the law of his God.'"

Neh. 9:37 "Its produce is abounding for the kings that you have put over us because of our sins, and over our bodies they are ruling and over our domestic animals, according to their liking."

Acts 26:2 "King Agrippa, I count myself happy that it is before you I am to make my defense this day."

Acts 26:25 "I am not going mad, Your Excellency Festus, but I am uttering sayings of truth and of soundness of mind."

See also the main heading "Caesar's Things to Caesar," pages 59-62.

When Human Laws Conflict with God's Law, Worshipers of Jehovah Put Obedience to God First

Acts 4:19, 20 "In reply Peter and John said to them: 'Whether it is righteous in the sight of God to listen to you rather than to God, judge for yourselves. But as for us, we cannot stop speaking about the things we have seen and heard.'"

Acts 5:18-20 "They laid hands upon the apostles and put them in the public place of custody. But during the night Jehovah's angel opened the doors of the prison, brought them out and said: 'Be on your way, and, having taken a stand in the

temple, keep on speaking to the people all the sayings about this life.'"

Dan. 3:16-18 "Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego answered, and they were saying to the king: '. . . If it is to be, our God whom we are serving is able to rescue us. Out of the burning fiery furnace and out of your hand, O king, he will rescue us. But if not, let it become known to you, O king, that your gods are not the ones we are serving, and the image of gold that you have set up we will not worship.'"

Dan. 6:7-10 "'All the high officials of the kingdom . . . have taken counsel together to establish a royal statute and to enforce an interdict, that whoever makes a petition to any god or man for thirty days except to you, O king, should be thrown to the lions' pit. . . .' But Daniel, as soon as he knew that the writing had been signed, entered into his house, and, the windows in his roof chamber being open for him toward Jerusalem, even three times in a day he was kneeling on his knees and praying and offering praise before his God, as he had been regularly doing prior to this."

Ex. 1:17, 20 "The midwives feared the true God, and they did not do as the king of Egypt had spoken to them, but they would preserve the male children alive. So God dealt well with the midwives."

See also the main heading "Neutrality," pages 351-359.

Christians Who Subject Themselves to Proper Authority of Political Governments Receive Benefits

Rom. 13:3, 4 "Do you, then, want to have no fear of the authority? Keep doing good, and you will have praise from it; for it is God's minister to you for your good."

1 Pet. 2:12-14 "Maintain your conduct fine among the nations, . . . For the Lord's sake subject yourselves to every human creation: whether to a king as being superior or to governors as being sent by him . . . to praise doers of good."

Jer. 29:4, 7 "This is what Jehovah of armies, the God of Israel, has said to all the exiled people, whom I have caused to go into exile from Jerusalem to Babylon, '. . . seek the peace of the city to which I have caused you to go into exile, and pray in its behalf to Jehovah, for in its peace there will prove to be peace for you yourselves.'"

2 Chron. 36:23 "This is what Cyrus the king of Persia has said, 'All the kingdoms of the earth Jehovah the God of the heavens has given me, and he himself has commissioned me to build him a house in Jerusalem, which is in Judah. Whoever there is among you of all his people, Jehovah his God be with him. So let him go up.'"

Esther 6:2, 3 "There was found written what Mordecai had reported concerning Bigthana and Teresh, two court officials of the king, doorkeepers, who had sought to lay hand on King Ahasuerus. Then the king said: 'What honor and great thing has been done to Mordecai for this?'"

Acts 23:12, 22-24 "The Jews formed a conspiracy and bound themselves with a curse, saying they would neither eat nor drink until they had killed Paul. Therefore the military commander . . . summoned a certain two of the army officers and said: 'Get two hundred soldiers ready to march clear to Caesarea, also seventy horsemen and two hundred spearmen, at the third hour of the night. Also, provide beasts of burden that they may have Paul ride and convey him safely to Felix the governor.'"

1 Tim. 2:1, 2 "I therefore exhort, first of all, that supplications, prayers, intercessions, offerings of thanks, be made concerning all sorts of men, concerning kings and all those who are in high station; in order that we may go on leading a calm and quiet life with full godly devotion and sertousness."

Those Who Oppose Political Superior Authorities Are Judged Adversely

Rom. 13:2-4 "He who opposes the authority has taken a stand against the arrangement of God; those who have taken a stand against it will receive judgment to themselves. For those ruling are an object of fear, not to the good deed, but to the bad. . . . But if you are doing what is bad, be in fear: for it is not without purpose that it bears the sword; for it is God's minister, an avenger to express wrath upon the one practicing what is bad."

Acts 5:37 "Judas the Galilean rose in the days of the registration, and he drew off people after him. And yet that man perished, and all those who were obeying him were scattered abroad."

Luke 21:20-24 "When you see Jerusalem surrounded by encamped armies, then know that the desolating of her has drawn near. . . . For there will be great necessity upon the land and wrath on this people; and they will fall by the edge of the sword and be led captive into all the nations."

Tithing

Tithing a Requirement of the Mosaic Law

Heb. 7:5 "The men who receive their priestly office from the sons of Levi have a commandment to collect tithes from the people according to the Law, that is, from their brothers, even if these have issued from the loins of Abraham."

Lev. 27:30, 32 "And every tenth part of the land, out of the seed of the land and the fruit of the tree, belongs to Jehovah. It is something holy to Jehovah. As for every tenth part of the herd and flock, everything that passes under the crook, the tenth head should become something holy to Jehovah."

Num. 18:26, 28 "And you should speak to the Levites, and you must say to them, 'You will receive from the sons of Israel the tenth part that I have given to you from them for your inheritance, and you must contribute from it as a contribution to Jehovah a tenth part of the tenth part. In this way you yourselves also will contribute a contribution to Jehovah from all your tenth parts that you will receive from the sons of Israel, and from them you must give the contribution to Jehovah to Aaron the priest.'"

Deut. 14:28, 29 "At the end of three years you will bring out the entire tenth part of your produce in that year, and you must deposit it inside your gates. And the Levite, because he has no share or inheritance with you, and the alien resident and the fatherless boy and the widow, who are inside your gates, must come, and they must eat and satisfy themselves; in order that Jehovah your God may bless you in every deed of your hand that you will do."

Jesus upheld tithing while law covenant was in force

Luke 11:42 "But woe to you Pharisees, because you give the tenth of the mint and the rue and

of every other vegetable, but you pass by the justice and the love of God! These things you were under obligation to do, but those other things not to omit."

Mosaic Law Fulfilled Its Purpose, Was Taken Out of the Way

Matt. 5:17 "Do not think I came to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I came, not to destroy, but to fulfill."

Gal. 3:24, 25 "Consequently the Law has become our tutor leading to Christ, that we might be declared righteous due to faith. But now that the faith has arrived, we are no longer under a tutor."

Col. 2:13, 14 "Furthermore, though you were dead in your trespasses and in the uncircumcised state of your flesh, God made you alive together with him. He kindly forgave us all our trespasses and blotted out the handwritten document against us, which consisted of decrees and which was in opposition to us; and He has taken it out of the way by nailing it to the torture stake."

Rom. 6:14 "You are not under law but under undeserved kindness."

See also the main heading "Law," pages 314-318.

Tithing not included among those "necessary things" made binding on Christians

Acts 15:28, 29 "The holy spirit and we ourselves have favored adding no further burden to you, except these necessary things, to keep yourselves free from things sacrificed to idols and from blood and from things strangled and from fornication. If you carefully keep yourselves from these things, you will prosper."

Abraham Voluntarily Gave a Tenth, or Tithe, to Melchizedek on Just One Occasion

Gen. 14:18-20 "And Melchizedek king of Salem brought out bread and wine, and he was priest of the Most High God. Then he blessed him and said: 'Blessed be Abram of the Most High God, producer of heaven and earth; and blessed be the Most High God, who has delivered your oppressors into your hand!' At that Abram gave him a tenth of everything."

See also Heb. 7:4-10.

Jacob Vowed to Give a Tenth to God; Not Required by Law

Gen. 28:20-22 "Jacob went on to vow a vow, saying: 'If God will continue with me and will certainly keep me on this way on which I am going and will certainly give me bread to eat and garments to wear and I shall certainly return in peace to the house of my father, then Jehovah will have proved to be my God. And this stone that I have set up as a pillar will become a house of God, and as for everything that you will give me I shall without fail give the tenth of it to you.'"

Christian Giving Voluntary, No Amount Specified

2 Cor. 9:7 "Let each one do just as he has resolved in his heart, not grudgingly or under compulsion, for God loves a cheerful giver."

1 Cor. 16:2, 3 "Every first day of the week let each of you at his own house set something aside in store as he may be prospering, so that when I arrive collections will not take place then. But when I get there, whatever men you approve of by letters, these I shall send to carry your kind gift to Jerusalem."

Acts 11:29, 30 "Those of the disciples determined, each of them according as anyone could afford it, to send a relief ministration to the brothers dwelling in Judea; and this they did, dispatching it to the older men by the hand of Barnabas and Saul."

Tongues, Speaking In

Love the Identifying Mark of Christians, Not Speaking in Tongues

John 13:35 "By this all will know that you are my disciples, if you have love among yourselves."

1 John 3:10, 11 "The children of God and the children of the Devil are evident by this fact: Everyone who does not carry on righteousness does not originate with God, neither does he who does not love his brother. For this is the message which you have heard from the beginning, that we should have love for one another."

1 Cor. 13:1, 8 "If I speak in the tongues of men and of angels but do not have love, I have become a sounding piece of brass or a clashing cymbal. Love never fails. But whether there are gifts of prophesying, they will be done away with; whether there are tongues, they will cease; whether there is knowledge, it will be done away with."

Gal. 5:22 "The fruitage of the spirit is love."

See also the main heading "Religion," pages 413-415.

Not All Early Christians Spoke in Tongues

1 Cor. 12:27-30 "Now you are Christ's body, and members individually. And God has set the respective ones in the congregation, first, apostles; second, prophets; third, teachers; then powerful works; then gifts of healings; helpful services, abilities to direct, different tongues. Not all are apostles, are they? Not all are prophets, are they? Not all are teachers, are they? Not all perform powerful works, do they? Not all have gifts of healings, do they? Not all speak in tongues, do they? Not all are translators, are they?"

1 Cor. 14:26 "When you come together, one has a psalm, another has a teaching, another has a revelation, another has a tongue, another has an interpretation."

1 Cor. 14:5 "He that prophesies is greater than he that speaks in tongues."

Miraculous Gift of Tongues Provided Striking Evidence that God's Spirit Was on the Then Newly Formed Christian Congregation

Heb. 2:4 "God joined in bearing witness with signs as well as portents and various powerful works and with distributions of holy spirit according to his will."

1 Cor. 14:22 "Tongues are for a sign, not to the believers, but to the unbelievers."

At Pentecost, Gift of Tongues Served Practical Purpose in Preaching

Acts 1:4-8 "While he was meeting with them he gave them the orders: 'Do not withdraw from Jerusalem, but keep waiting for what the Father has promised, about which you heard from me; because John, indeed, baptized with water, but you will be baptized in holy spirit not many days after this. . . . you will receive power when the holy spirit arrives upon you, and you will be witnesses of me both in Jerusalem and in all Judea and Samaria and to the most distant part of the earth.'"

Acts 2:5-11 "There were dwelling in Jerusalem Jews, reverent men, from every nation of those under heaven. So, when this sound occurred, the multitude came together and were bewil-

dered, because each one heard them speaking in his own language. Indeed, they were astonished and began to wonder and say: 'See here, all these who are speaking are Galileans, are they not? And yet how is it we are hearing, each one of us, his own language in which we were born? Parthians and Medes and Elamites, and the inhabitants of Mesopotamia, and Judea and Cappadocia, Pontus and the district of Asia, and Phrygia and Pamphylia, Egypt and the parts of Libya, which is toward Cyrene, and sojourners from Rome, both Jews and proselytes, Cretans and Arabians, we hear them speaking in our tongues about the magnificent things of God.'"

In Congregation, Used to Build Up Others, Not to Exalt One Having the Gift

1 Cor. 14:6, 19, 27, 28 "If I should come speaking to you in tongues, what good would I do you unless I spoke to you either with a revelation or with knowledge or with a prophecy or with a teaching? Nevertheless, in a congregation I would rather speak five words with my mind, that I might also instruct others verbally, than ten thousand words in a tongue. And if someone speaks in a tongue, let it be limited to two or three at the most, and in turns; and let someone translate. But if there be no translator, let him keep silent in the congregation and speak to himself and to God."

1 Cor. 13:1 "If I speak in the tongues of men and of angels but do not have love, I have become a sounding piece of brass or a clashing cymbal."

Mark 16:17, 18 Refers Not Only to Speaking in Tongues, but Also to Picking Up Serpents and Drinking Poison

Mark 16:17, 18 "Furthermore, these signs will accompany those believing: By the use of my name they will expel demons, they will speak with tongues, and with their hands they will pick up serpents, and if they drink anything deadly it will not hurt them at all. They will lay their hands upon sick persons, and these will become well."

These verses of doubtful authorship

The long and short conclusions that are often added after verse 8 of chapter 16 are missing from many ancient manuscripts, notably the Sinaitic and Vatican No. 1209 of the 4th century.

Miraculous Gifts of Spirit Bestowed Only Through Apostles or in Their Presence

Acts 8:14-19 "When the apostles in Jerusalem heard that Samaria had accepted the word of God, they dispatched Peter and John to them; and these went down and prayed for them to get holy spirit. For it had not yet fallen upon any one of them, but they had only been baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus. Then they went laying their hands upon them, and they began to receive holy spirit. Now when Simon saw that through the laying on of the hands of the apostles the spirit was given, he offered them money, saying: 'Give me also this authority, that anyone upon whom I lay my hands may receive holy spirit.'"

Acts 19:1-7 "In the course of events, while Apollos was in Corinth, Paul went through the inland parts and came down to Ephesus, and found some disciples; and he said to them: 'Did you receive holy spirit when you became believers?' They said to him: 'Why, we have never heard whether there is a holy spirit.' And he said: 'In what, then, were you baptized?' They said: 'In John's baptism.' Paul said: 'John baptized with the baptism in symbol of repentance, telling the people to believe in the one coming after him, that is, in Jesus.' On hearing this, they got baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus. And when Paul laid his hands upon them, the holy spirit came upon them, and they began speaking with tongues and prophesying. All together, there were about twelve men."

Acts 10:44-46 "While Peter was yet speaking about these matters the holy spirit fell upon all those hearing the word. And the faithful ones that had come with Peter who were of those circumcised were amazed, because the free gift of the holy spirit was being poured out also upon people of the nations. For they heard them speaking with tongues and glorifying God."

See also the main heading "Gifts from God," pages 213, 214.

Miraculous Gift of Tongues, Associated with Infancy of Christian Congregation, Was to Pass Away

1 Cor. 13:8-10 "Love never fails. But whether there are gifts of prophesying, they will be done away with; whether there are tongues, they will cease . . . For we have partial knowledge and we prophesy partially; but when that which is complete arrives, that which is partial will be done away with."

Tradition

God's Written Word Not to Be Set Aside for Human Traditions

Mark 7:8-13 "'Letting go the commandment of God, you hold fast the tradition of men.' Further, [Jesus] went on to say to them: 'Adroitly you set aside the commandment of God in order to retain your tradition. For example, Moses said, "Honor your father and your mother," and, "Let him that reviles father or mother end up in death." But you men say, "If a man says to his father or his mother: 'Whatever I have by which you may get benefit from me is corban, (that is, a gift dedicated to God,)'"—you men no longer let him do a single thing for his father or his mother, and thus you make the word of God invalid by your tradition which you handed down.'"

1 Cor. 4:6 "Do not go beyond the things that are written."

Prov. 30:5, 6 "Every saying of God is refined. He is a shield to those taking refuge in him. Add nothing to his words, that he may not reprove you, and that you may not have to be proved a liar."

Adhering to Tradition That Conflicts with the Bible Makes One's Worship Vain

Matt. 15:7-9 "You hypocrites, Isaiah aptly prophesied about you, when he said, 'This people honors me with their lips, yet their heart is far removed from me. It is in vain that they keep worshiping me, because they teach commands of men as doctrines.'"

Not All That Jesus Said and Did Was Written Down, but That Necessary for Salvation Was Recorded

John 20:30, 31 "To be sure, Jesus performed many other signs also before the disciples, which are not written down in this scroll. But these have been written down that you may believe that Jesus is the Christ the Son

of God, and that, because of believing, you may have life by means of his name."

Not All Traditions Are Undesirable

1 Cor. 11:2 "Now I commend you because in all things you have me in mind and you are holding fast the traditions just as I handed them on to you."

2 Thess. 2:15 "So, then, brothers, stand firm and maintain your hold on the traditions that you were taught, whether it was through a verbal message or through a letter of ours."

2 Thess. 3:6 "Now we are giving you orders, brothers, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, to withdraw from every brother walking disorderly and not according to the tradition you received from us."

Traditions May Lead One Away from True Worship, Cause One to Oppose God's Servants

Col. 2:8 "Look out: perhaps there may be someone who will carry you off as his prey through the philosophy and empty deception according to the tradition of men, according to the elementary things of the world and not according to Christ."

Titus 1:13, 14 "This witness is true. For this very cause keep on reproving them with severity, that they may be healthy in the faith, paying no attention to Jewish fables and commandments of men who turn themselves away from the truth."

Isa. 29:13 "And Jehovah says: 'For the reason that this people have come near with their mouth, and they have glorified me merely with their lips, and they have removed their heart itself far away from me, and their fear toward me becomes men's commandment that is being taught.'"

Gal. 1:13, 14 "You, of course, heard about my conduct formerly in Judaism, that to the point of excess I kept on persecuting the congregation of God and devastating it, and I was making greater progress in Judaism than many of my own age in my race, as I was far more zealous for the traditions of my fathers."

Bible Provides Standard for Checking Correctness of All Traditions

2 Tim. 3:15-17 "From infancy you have known the holy writings, which are able to make you wise for salvation through the faith in connection with Christ Jesus. All Scripture is inspired of God and beneficial for teaching, for reproving, for setting things straight, for disciplining in righteousness, that the man of God may be fully competent, completely equipped for every good work."

Ps. 119:105 "Your word is a lamp to my foot, and a light to my roadway."

Transmigration

Soul Not Separate and Distinct from Body, so Cannot Transmigrate at Death

Gen. 2:7 "Jehovah God proceeded to form the man out of dust from the ground and to blow into his nostrils the breath of life, and the man came to be a living soul."

1 Cor. 15:45 "The first man Adam became a living soul."

See also the main heading "Soul," pages 463-465.

When Man Dies, the Soul Dies; No Conscious Existence in a Different Body

Ezek. 18:4 "Look! All the souls —to me they belong. As the soul of the father so likewise the soul of the son—to me they belong. The soul that is sinning —it itself will die."

Acts 3:23 "Any soul that does not listen to that Prophet will be completely destroyed from among the people."

Eccl. 9:5 "The living are conscious that they will die; but as for the dead, they are conscious of nothing at all."

Ps. 146:4 "His spirit goes out, he goes back to his ground; in that day his thoughts do perish."

At Death Man's Soul Goes to Sheol (the Grave), Not into Another Body

Ps. 89:48 "What able-bodied man is there alive who will not see death? Can he provide escape for his soul from the hand of Sheol?"

Eccl. 9:10 "All that your hand finds to do, do with your very power, for there is no work nor devising nor knowledge nor wisdom in Sheol ["the grave," *AV*], the place to which you are going."

Humans Have No Existence Before Being Conceived and Brought Forth by Their Parents

Eccl. 4:2, 3 "I congratulated the dead who had already died rather than the living who were still alive. So better than both of them is the one who has not yet come to be, who has not seen the calamitous work that is being done under the sun."

Rom. 9:11, 12 "When they had not yet been born nor had practiced anything good or vile, . . . it was said to her: 'The older will be the slave of the younger.'"

Children Produced in Likeness of Parents, Not with Soul of Some Animal or Other Human

Gen. 5:3 "Adam lived on for a hundred and thirty years. Then he became father to a son in his likeness, in his image, and called his name Seth."

Rom. 5:12 "Through one man sin entered into the world and death through sin, and thus death spread to all men."

Animals Produce After Their Kind, Not with Souls of Humans or Other Animals

Gen. 1:20, 21, 24 "God went on to say: 'Let the waters swarm forth a swarm of living souls and let flying creatures fly over the earth upon the face of the expanse of the heavens.' And God proceeded to create the great sea monsters and every living soul that moves about, which the waters swarmed forth according to their kinds, and every winged flying creature according to its kind. . . . God went on to say: 'Let the earth put forth living souls according to their kinds, domestic animal and moving animal and wild beast of the earth according to its kind.' And it came to be so."

Murder Is Forbidden by God, but Animals May Be Killed, so Not Transmigrated Human Souls

Ex. 20:13 "You must not murder."

Gen. 9:5, 6 "Your blood of your souls shall I ask back. From the hand of every living creature shall I ask it back; and from the hand of man, from the hand of each one who is his brother, shall I ask back the soul of man. Anyone shedding man's blood, by man will his own blood be shed, for in God's image he made man."

Gen. 9:3 "Every moving animal that is alive may serve as food for you. As in the case of green

vegetation, I do give it all to you."

Deut. 12:21 "You must then slaughter some of your herd or some of your flock that Jehovah has given you, just as I have commanded you, and you must eat inside your gates whenever your soul craves it."

Hope for Future Life by Means of Resurrection, Not Transmigration

Acts 24:15 "I have hope toward God, which hope these men themselves also entertain, that there is going to be a resurrection of both the righteous and the unrighteous."

1 Cor. 15:20-22 "Now Christ has been raised up from the dead, the first fruits of those who have fallen asleep in death. For since death is through a man, resurrection of the dead is also through a man. For just as in Adam all are dying, so also in the Christ all will be made alive."

Trinity

Catholic and Protestant Statements of Belief

"THE DOGMA OF THE TRINITY.—The Trinity is the term employed to signify the central doctrine of the Christian religion—the truth that in the unity of the Godhead there are Three Persons, the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit, these Three Persons being truly distinct one from another. Thus, in the words of the Athanasian Creed: 'the Father is God, the Son is God, and the Holy Spirit is God, and yet there are not three Gods but one God.' "—*The Catholic Encyclopedia* (New York; 1912), Vol. XV, p. 47.

"The World Council of Churches is a fellowship of churches which confess the Lord Jesus Christ as God and Savior according to the Scriptures and therefore seek to fulfill together their common calling to the glory of the one God, Father, Son and Holy Spirit."—Basis of membership in the World Council of Churches. *The Christian Century*, January 10, 1962 (Chicago, Ill.), pp. 44, 45.

"We worship one God in Trinity, and Trinity in Unity; neither confounding the persons, nor dividing the substance. For there is one person of the Father, another of the Son, and another of the Holy Ghost. But the Godhead of the Father, of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost is all one: the glory equal, the majesty coeternal. Such as the Father is, such is the Son, and such is the Holy Ghost. . . . The Father eternal, the Son eternal, and the Holy Ghost eternal. . . . So likewise the Father is almighty, the Son almighty, and the Holy Ghost almighty. . . . So the Father is God, the Son is God, and the Holy Ghost is God. And yet there are not three Gods, but one God. . . . The Father is made of none, neither created nor begotten. The Son is of the Father alone; not made, nor created, but begotten. The Holy Ghost is of the Father and of the Son; neither made, nor created, nor begotten, but proceeding. . . . And in this Trinity none is afore or after other; none is greater or less than another. But the whole three persons are coeternal together, and coequal. So that in all things, as is aforesaid, the Unity in Trinity and the Trinity in Unity is to be worshipped. He therefore that will be saved must thus think of the Trinity."—The Athanasian Creed, quoted in *Cyclopædia of Biblical, Theological, and Ecclesiastical Literature* (New York; 1871), by John M'Clintock and James Strong, Vol. II, pp. 560, 561.

Bible's Identification of God Is Clear, Understandable

John 4:24, *AV* "God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth."

1 Cor. 8:6, *AV* "To us there is but one God, the Father."

Deut. 6:4, *AS* "Jehovah our God is one Jehovah."

Ps. 83:18, *AV* "That men may know that thou, whose name alone is JEHOVAH, art the most high over all the earth."

Jesus Christ Not One God with the Father

1 Cor. 8:6, *RS* "For us there is one God, the Father, from whom are all things and for whom we exist, and one Lord, Jesus Christ, through whom are all things and through whom we exist."

The Father is Jesus' God

John 20:17, *AV* "Jesus saith unto her, Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father, and your Father; and to my God, and your God."

1 Pet. 1:3, *AV* "Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ."

Mark 15:34, *AV* "At the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Elo'i, Elo'i, la'ma sabach-tha'ni? which is, being interpreted, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?"

Rev. 1:1; 3:12, *AV* "The Revelation of Jesus Christ . . . Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which . . . cometh down out of heaven from my God."

Jesus called his Father the "only true God," excluding himself

John 17:1, 3, *RS* "When Jesus had spoken these words, he lifted up his eyes to heaven and said, 'Father, the hour has come; glorify thy Son that the Son may glorify thee, And this is eternal life, that they know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom thou hast sent.' "

Jesus is the Son of God, not God the Son

Matt. 16:16, 17, *AV* "Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-jona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven."

1 John 4:15, *RS* "Whoever confesses that Jesus is the Son of God, God abides in him."

Luke 1:35, *RS* "The angel said to her, 'The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow you; therefore the child to be born will be called holy, the Son of God.' "

John 1:34, *RS* "I [John the Baptist] have seen and have borne witness that this is the Son of God."

John 3:16, 17, *AV* "For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved."

John 20:29-31, *AV* "Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed. And many other signs truly did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book: But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God."

Jesus is, not God, but mediator between God and men

1 Tim. 2:5, 6, *AV* "There is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus; who gave himself a ransom for all."

Jesus did not claim to be God, but God's representative

John 10:36, *RS* "Do you say of him whom the Father consecrated and sent into the world, 'You are blaspheming,' because I said, 'I am the Son of God'?"

John 5:37, *AV* "The Father himself, which hath sent me, hath borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his shape."

John 8:17, 18 *AV* "It is also written in your law, that the testimony of two men is true. I am one that bear witness of myself, and the Father that sent me beareth witness of me."

John 14:1, 6, 9, *AV* "Ye believe in God, believe also in me. . . . I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. . . . Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou then, Shew us the Father?" (Compare John 1: 14, 18.)

Jesus Not Equal to the Father in Power and Glory, but Subject to Him

John 14:28, *AV* "My father is greater than I."

John 13:16; 8:42, *RS* "'Truly, truly, I say to you, a servant is not greater than his master; nor is he who is sent greater than he who sent him.'" "Jesus said to them, 'If God were your Father, you would love me, for I proceeded and came forth from God; I came not of my own accord, but he sent me.'"

John 5:19, *RS* "Jesus said to them, 'Truly, truly, I say to you, the Son can do nothing of his own accord, but only what he sees the Father doing.'"

Luke 22:41, 42, *AV* "He was withdrawn from them about a stone's cast, and kneeled down, and prayed, saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me: nevertheless not my will, but thine, be done."

Even in heaven he is subject to the Father

1 Cor. 11:3, *AV* "I would have you know, that the head of every man is Christ; and the head of the woman is the man; and the head of Christ is God."

Matt. 20:23, *AV* "To sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give, but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared of my Father."

Phil. 2:5-7, *RS* "Have this mind among yourselves, which you have in Christ Jesus, who, though he was in the form of God, did not count equality with God a thing to be grasped, but emptied himself, taking the form of a servant."

Only Jehovah Is from Everlasting to Everlasting

Ps. 90:2, *AV* "Before the mountains were brought forth, or ever thou hadst formed the earth and the world, even from everlasting to everlasting, thou art God."

Jer. 10:10, *AS* "Jehovah is the true God; he is the living God, and an everlasting King."

Isa. 40:28, *AS* "The everlasting God, Jehovah, the Creator of the ends of the earth."

1 Tim. 1:17, *AV* "Now unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, be honour and glory for ever and ever."

Son of God had a beginning, was created

Rev. 1:1; 3:14, *RS* "The revelation of Jesus Christ . . . To the angel of the church in Laodicea write: 'The words of the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of God's creation ["the beginning of the creation of God," *Dy, AV, Confraternity, Westminster, AS*].'"

Col. 1:15, 16, *AV* "Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature: for by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him."

John 1:18, *AV* "No man hath seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him."

Oneness of Father and Son No More Mysterious than Unity of True Christians

John 10:30; 17:20-22, *AV* "I and my Father are one." "Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; that they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one."

1 Cor. 1:10, *AV* "Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and that there be no divisions among you; but that ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment."

John 8:28, 29, *AV* "Then said Jesus unto them, When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am he, and that I do nothing of myself; but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things. And he that sent me is with me: the Father hath not left me alone; for I do always those things that please him."

Holy Spirit Is God's Active Force, Not a Person

Acts 1:8, *RS* "You shall receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you."

Acts 2:2-4, 16, 17, *RS* "Suddenly a sound came from heaven like the rush of a mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting. And there appeared to them tongues as of fire, distributed and resting on each one of them. And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit and began to speak in other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance. But this is what was spoken by the prophet Joel: 'And in the last days it shall be, God declares, that I will pour out my Spirit upon all flesh, and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams.'"

Eph. 5:18, *RS* "Be filled with the Spirit."

Acts 1:5, *RS* "Before many days you shall be baptized with the Holy Spirit."

See also 1 Cor. 12:4-13.

Heavenly visions of God and his Son reveal no personal holy spirit

Acts 7:55, 56, *RS* "But [Stephen], full of the Holy Spirit, gazed into heaven and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing

at the right hand of God; and he said, 'Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing at the right hand of God.'"

Dan. 7:9, 13, *RS* "As I looked, thrones were placed and one that was ancient of days took his seat; his raiment was white as snow. . . . I saw in the night visions, and behold, with the clouds of heaven there came one like a son of man, and he came to the Ancient of Days and was presented before him." (Compare Matt. 26:64.)

Masculine pronoun in some texts does not prove personality; the antecedent, "Comforter" or "Helper," is masculine in Greek text, thus pronoun is masculine to agree grammatically

John 15:26, *AV* "When the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, *which* proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me."

Rom. 8:26, *AV* "The Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit *itself* maketh intercession for us."

"SPIRIT. PNEUMA primarily denotes the wind (akin to *pneō*, to breathe, blow); also breath; then, especially the spirit, which, like the wind, is invisible, immaterial and powerful. . . . 'Spirit' and 'Ghost' are renderings of the same word *pneuma; . . .* the noun *pneuma* is neuter in Greek, while the corresponding word in Aramaic . . . is feminine (*rûchâ*, cf. Heb. *rûach*)."—*An Expository Dictionary of New Testament Words* (London; 1962), by W. E. Vine, Vol. IV, pp. 62-64.

Scriptures Mentioning Father, Son and Holy Spirit Together Do Not Say They Are Equal, Coeternal or One God

Matt. 28:19, *RS* "Go therefore and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit."

Matt. 3:16, 17, *AV* "Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him: and lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased."

Trinitarian statement in 1 John 5:7, found in some Bibles, is spurious

1 John 5:7, *AV* "For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one."

"5:7 This verse has not been found in Greek in any manuscript in or out of the New Testament earlier than the thirteenth century. It does not appear in any Greek manuscript of I John before the fifteenth century, when one cursive has it; one from the sixteenth also contains the reading. These are the only Greek manuscripts of the New Testament in which it has ever been found. But it occurs in no ancient Greek manuscript or Greek Christian writer or in any of the oriental versions. Its chief support is in two Old Latin manuscripts of the sixth and eighth centuries and in some manuscripts of the Latin Vulgate, but not the oldest ones. Erasmus did not include it in his first edition of the New Testament in Greek (1516) nor in his second (1519). When criticized for the omission, he rashly said that if anyone could show him a Greek manuscript containing the passage he would insert it, and the sixteenth-century Codex Montfortianus containing it was brought to his attention. He felt obliged to include the reading in his third edition (1522), and it was this edition that Tyndale used in making his translation of the Greek Testament (1525). From Tyndale the verse found its way into the King James Version. It is universally discredited by Greek scholars and editors of the Greek text of the New Testament."—*The Goodspeed Parallel New Testament* (Chicago; 1943), Edgar J. Goodspeed, p. 557.

"The words, 'in heaven, the Father . . . bear witness on earth', constitute what is often called the *Comma Ioanneum*, or text of the Heavenly Witnesses. Without it the translation would run, 'For there are three that bear witness, the Spirit and the water and the blood'. In the opinion of nearly all critics and of most Catholic writers of the present day the words were not contained in the original text; at the same time, until further action be taken by the Holy See it is not open to Catholic editors to eliminate the words from a version made for the use of the faithful."—*The Westminster Version of the Sacred Scriptures* (London; 1931), Cuthbert Lattey, S. J., and Joseph Keating, S. J., general editors, Vol. IV, pp. 145, 146.

John 1:1, 2 Mentions Only Two Persons, Not Three

John 1:1, 2, *AV* "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God."

Modern translations and Greek grammar make meaning clear

John 1:1, *AT* "In the beginning the Word existed. The Word was with God, and the Word was divine."

"In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God; and the Word was a god."—*The New Testament—A New Translation and Explanation* Based on the Oldest Manuscripts (a translation from German into English; 1937), by Johannes Greber.

"In the beginning the Word was, and the Word was with God, and the Word was a god."—*New World Translation* (New York; 1961).

War

War in Our Day Part of Sign of Conclusion of Wicked System of Things

Matt. 24:3, 4, 7, 8 "While he was sitting upon the Mount of Olives, the disciples approached him privately, saying: 'Tell us, When will these things be, and what will be the sign of your presence and of the conclusion of the system of things?' And in answer Jesus said to them: '. . . nation will rise against nation and kingdom against kingdom, and there will be food shortages and earthquakes in one place after another. All these things are a beginning of pangs of distress.'"

Dan. 11:40 "In the time of the end the king of the south will engage with him in a pushing, and against him the king of the north will storm with chariots and with horsemen and with many ships; and he will certainly enter into the lands and flood over and pass through."

See also Rev. 6:4.

War to Be Brought to an End by God Through His Prince of Peace

Ps. 46:9 "He is making wars to cease to the extremity of the earth. The bow he breaks apart and does cut the spear in pieces; the wagons he burns in the fire."

Mic. 4:3 "He will certainly render judgment among many peoples, and set matters straight respecting mighty nations far away. And they will have to beat their swords into plowshares and their spears into pruning shears. They will not lift up sword, nation against nation, neither will they learn war any more."

Isa. 9:6, 7 "For there has been a child born to us, there has been a son given to us; and the princely rule will come to be upon his shoulder. And his name will be called Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God, Eternal Father, Prince of Peace. To the abundance of the princely rule and to peace there will be no end, upon the throne of David and upon his kingdom in order to establish it firmly and to sustain it by means of justice and by means of righteousness, from now on and to time indefinite."

Political rulers and their armies, gathered in opposition to Jehovah and his King of Kings, to be destroyed by heavenly forces

Ps. 2:2, 3, 5, 9 "The kings of earth take their stand and high officials themselves have massed together as one against Jehovah and against his anointed one, saying: 'Let us tear their bands apart and cast their cords away from us!' At that time he will speak to them in his anger and in his hot displeasure he will disturb them. 'You will break them with an iron scepter, as though a potter's vessel you will dash them to pieces.' "

Rev. 16:14 "They are, in fact, expressions inspired by demons and perform signs, and they go forth to the kings of the entire inhabited earth, to gather them together to the war of the great day of God the Almighty."

Rev. 19:11, 15, 19-21 "I saw the heaven opened, and, look! a white horse. And the one seated upon it is called Faithful and True, and he judges and carries on war in righteousness. And out of his mouth there protrudes a sharp long sword, that he may strike the nations with it, and he will shepherd them with a rod of iron. He treads too the press of the wine of the anger of the wrath of God the Almighty. And I saw the wild beast and the kings of the earth and their armies gathered together to wage the war with the one seated on the horse and with his army. And the wild beast was caught, and along with it the false prophet that performed in front of it the signs with which he misled those who received the mark of the wild beast and those who render worship to its image. While still alive, they both were hurled into the fiery lake that burns with sulphur. But the rest were killed off with the long sword of the one seated on the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth. And all the birds were filled from the fleshy parts of them."

See also Joel 3:9-13.

Jehovah Used Ancient Israel as His Executional Forces

Deut. 20:16, 17 "It is only of the cities of these peoples that Jehovah your God is giving you as an inheritance that you must not preserve any breathing thing alive, because you should without fail devote them to destruction, the Hittites and the Amorites, the Canaanites and the Perizzites, the Hivites and the Jebusites, just as Jehovah your God has commanded you."

Deut. 7:16 "You must consume all the peoples whom Jehovah your God is giving to you. Your eye must not feel sorry for them; and you must not serve their gods."

Jehovah himself fought for Israel in ancient times

Josh. 10:14 "Jehovah himself was fighting for Israel."

Josh. 10:42 "Joshua captured all these kings and their land at one time, because it was Jehovah the God of Israel who was fighting for Israel."

2 Chron. 20:29 "The dread of God came to be upon all the kingdoms of the lands when they heard that Jehovah had fought against the enemies of Israel."

Christian Position Toward Participation in Carnal Warfare

2 Cor. 10:3, 4 "Though we walk in the flesh, we do not wage warfare according to what we are in the flesh. For the weapons of our warfare are not fleshly, but powerful by God for overturning strongly entrenched things."

Isa. 2:2, 4 "It must occur in the final part of the days that the mountain of the house of Jehovah will become firmly established above the top of the mountains, and it will certainly be lifted up above the hills; and to it all the nations must stream. And he will certainly render judgment among the nations and set matters straight respecting many peoples. And they will have to beat their swords into plowshares and their spears into pruning shears. Nation will not lift up sword against nation, neither will they learn war any more."

Historical record concerning position taken by early Christians

"The Christians refused to show their loyalty by burning incense to the emperor. Being men of peace, they would not serve in the Roman armies."—*The March of Civilization, Ancient and Medieval World* (New York; 1931), Jesse E. Wrench, Professor of History, University of Missouri, p. 205.

"They preferred the Kingdom of God to any kingdom that they might serve on earth. . . . The early Christians were ready to die for their faith. . . . Since they believed in peace, they would not serve in Rome's imperial armies."—*From the Old World to the New* (New York; 1932), Eugene A. Colligan, Associate Superintendent of Schools, City of New York, and Maxwell F. Littwin, Principal, New York City Public Schools, pp. 88, 89.

"'To begin with the real ground of the military crown, I think we must first inquire whether warfare is proper at all for Christians. . . . Shall it be held lawful to make an occupation of the sword, when the Lord proclaims that he who uses the sword shall perish by the sword? And shall the son of peace take part in the battle when it does not become him even to sue at law? And shall he apply the chain, and the prison, and the torture, and the punishment, who is not the avenger even of his own wrongs? . . . And shall he keep guard before the temples which he has renounced? . . . Shall he carry a flag, too, hostile to Christ? . . . Of course, if faith comes later, and finds any preoccupied with military service, their case is different, as in the instance of those whom John used to receive for baptism, and of those most faithful centurions, I mean the centurion whom Christ approves, and the centurion whom Peter instructs; yet, at the same time, when a man has become a believer, and faith has been sealed, there must be either an immediate abandonment of it, which has been the course with many; or all sorts of quibbling will have to be resorted to in order to avoid offending God, and that is not allowed even outside of military service. . . . Nowhere does the Christian change his character.' " Tertullian, "The Chaplet," or "De Corona," *The Ante-Nicene Fathers*, edited by Alexander Roberts and James Donaldson, Vol. III (Grand Rapids, Mich.; 1957), pp. 99, 100.

"There were two grounds on which service in the Imperial armies was irreconcilable with the Christian profession; the one

that it required the military oath, and the countenancing, if not the actual performance, of idolatrous acts; the other that it contravened the express commands of Christ and the whole spirit of the Gospel."—*Early Church History to the Death of Constantine* (London; 1892), E. Backhouse and C. Tylor, p. 128.

See also the main heading "Neutrality," page 357.

Christians Engage in Spiritual Warfare

Eph. 6:11-17 "Put on the complete suit of armor from God that you may be able to stand firm against the machinations of the Devil; because we have a fight, not against blood and flesh, but . . . against the world rulers of this darkness, against the wicked spirit forces in the heavenly places. . . . Stand firm, therefore, with your loins girded about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness, and with your feet shod with the equipment of the good news of peace. Above all things, take up the large shield of faith, with which you will be able to quench all the wicked one's burning missiles. Also, accept the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the spirit, that is, God's word."

Rom. 13:12 "The night is well along; the day has drawn near. Let us therefore put off the works belonging to darkness and let us put on the weapons of the light."

Wickedness

Jehovah Is Righteous, Not the Cause of Wickedness

Ps. 145:17 "Jehovah is righteous in all his ways and loyal in all his works."

Rev. 15:3 "Great and wonderful are your works, Jehovah God, the Almighty. Righteous and true are your ways, King of eternity."

John 17:25 "Righteous Father, the world has, indeed, not come to know you."

Rom. 9:14 "What shall we say, then? Is there injustice with God? Never may that become so!"

God sets standard of what is good and what is bad, what is righteous and what is wicked

Isa. 33:22 "Jehovah is our Judge, Jehovah is our Statute-giver, Jehovah is our King."

Gen. 2:16, 17 "Jehovah God also laid this command upon the man: 'From every tree of the garden you may eat to satisfaction. But as for the tree of the knowledge of good and bad you must not eat from it, for in the day you eat from it you will positively die.'"

Ps. 119:1-7 "Happy are the ones faultless in their way, the ones walking in the law of Jehovah. Happy are those observing his reminders; with all the heart they keep searching for him. Really they have practiced no unrighteousness. In his ways they have walked. You yourself have commandingly given your orders to be carefully kept. . . . I shall laud you in uprightness of heart, when I learn your righteous judicial decisions."

Jehovah Made First Human Pair Perfect (Without Defect; Complete)

Eccl. 7:29 "The true God made mankind upright, but they themselves have sought out many plans."

Deut. 32:4, 5 "The Rock, perfect is his activity, for all his ways are justice. A God of faithfulness, with whom there is no injustice; righteous and upright is he. They have acted ruinously on their own part; they are not his children, the defect is their own. A generation crooked and twisted!"

Endowed humans with freedom of choice

Gen. 4:6, 7 "At this Jehovah said to Cain: ' . . . If you turn to doing good, will there not be an exaltation? But if you do not turn to doing good, there is sin crouching at the entrance, and for you is its craving; and will you, for your part, get the mastery over it?' "

Josh. 24:15 "Now if it is bad in your eyes to serve Jehovah, choose for yourselves today whom you will serve, . . . as for me and my household, we shall serve Jehovah."

Acts 13:48 "All those who were rightly disposed for everlasting life became believers."

Wickedness Started When Spirit Son of God Corrupted Self, Instigated Rebellion Against God

Jas. 1:13-15 "When under trial, let no one say: 'I am being tried by God.' No; for with evil things God cannot be tried nor does he himself try anyone. But each one is tried by being drawn out and enticed by his own desire. Then the desire, when it has become fertile, gives birth to sin; in turn, sin, when it has been accomplished, brings forth death."

Gen. 3:1-6 "Now the serpent . . . began to say to the woman: 'Is it really so that God said you must not eat from every tree of the garden?' At this the woman said to the serpent: 'Of the fruit of the trees of the garden we may eat. But as for eating of the fruit of the tree that is in the middle of the garden, God has said, "You must not eat from it, no, you must not touch it that you do not die."' At this the serpent said to the woman: 'You positively will not die. For God knows that in the very day of your eating from it your eyes are bound to be opened and you are bound to be like God, knowing good and bad.' . . . So she began taking of its fruit and eating it. Afterward she gave some also to her husband when with her and he began eating it."

Rev. 20:2 "He seized the dragon, the original serpent, who is the Devil and Satan."

Satan and demons bear principal blame for wickedness

1 John 5:19 "The whole world is lying in the power of the wicked one."

Rev. 12:9 "The one called Devil and Satan . . . is misleading the entire inhabited earth."

Eph. 6:12 "We have a fight, not against blood and flesh, but . . . against the world rulers of this darkness, against the wicked spirit forces in the heavenly places."

Acts 10:38 "Jesus who was from Nazareth, . . . God anointed him with holy spirit and power, and he went through the land doing good and healing all those oppressed by the Devil."

1 John 3:8 "He who carries on sin originates with the Devil, because the Devil has been sinning from the beginning."

Adam in Eden Willfully Joined in Course of Sin, Bringing Penalty for Sin upon Himself and Unborn Offspring

1 Tim. 2:14 "Adam was not deceived, but the woman was thoroughly deceived and came to be in transgression."

Rom. 5:12 "Through one man sin entered into the world and death through sin, and thus death spread to all men because they had all sinned."

Some Among Men Continue to Prefer Unrighteousness

John 3:19 "Now this is the basis for judgment, that the light has come into the world but men have loved the darkness

rather than the light, for their works were wicked."

Rom. 1:29-32 "Filled as they were with all unrighteousness, wickedness, covetousness, injuriousness, being full of envy, murder, strife, deceit, malicious disposition, being whisperers, backbiters, haters of God, insolent, haughty, self-assuming, inventors of injurious things, disobedient to parents, without understanding, false to agreements, having no natural affection, merciless. Although these know full well the righteous decree of God, that those practicing such things are deserving of death, they not only keep on doing them but also approve those practicing them."

Wicked men influence others to become corrupt

Prov. 1:10-16 "My son, if sinners try to seduce you, do not consent. If they keep saying: 'Do go with us. Do let us lie in ambush for blood. Do let us lie in concealment for the innocent men without any cause. Let us swallow them down alive just like Sheol, even whole, like those going down into a pit. Let us find all sorts of precious valuables. Let us fill our houses with spoil. Your lot you ought to cast in among us. Let there come to be just one bag belonging to all of us'—my son, do not go in the way with them. Hold back your foot from their roadway. For their feet are those that run to sheer badness."

2 Tim. 3:6, 13 "From these arise those men who slyly work their way into households and lead as their captives weak women loaded down with sins, led by various desires. But wicked men and impostors will advance from bad to worse, misleading and being misled."

Persons endeavoring to do right suffer under oppression of wicked

Ps. 37:12 "The wicked one is plotting against the righteous one, and at him he is grinding his teeth."

1 John 3:12 "Not like Cain, who . . . slaughtered his brother. And for the sake of what did he slaughter him? Because his own works were wicked, but those of his brother were righteous."

Prov. 29:10 "Bloodthirsty men hate anyone blameless; and as for the upright ones, they keep seeking for the soul of each one."

Hab. 1:4 "The wicked one is surrounding the righteous one, for that reason justice goes forth crooked."

Prov. 29:2 "When anyone wicked bears rule, the people sigh."

Why Does God Permit Wickedness to Continue?

Hab. 1:13 "You are too pure in eyes to see what is bad; and to look on trouble you are not able. Why is it that you look on those dealing treacherously, that you keep silent when someone wicked swallows up someone more righteous than he is?"

Jer. 12:1 "Why is it that the way of wicked ones is what has succeeded, that all those who are committing treachery are the unworried ones?"

See also the heading "Devil and Demons," pages 155-157.

Rather than destroy Satan at once, Jehovah has allowed time to settle for all time the issues raised, to magnify his own name and power

Rom. 9:14, 17, 20, 22-24 "What shall we say, then? Is there injustice with God? Never may that become so! For the Scripture says to Pharaoh: 'For this very cause I have let you remain, that in connection with you I may show my power, and that my name may be declared in all the earth.' O man, who, then, really are you to be answering back to God? Shall the thing molded say to him that molded it, 'Why did you make me this way?' If, now, God, although having the will to demonstrate his wrath and to make his power known, tolerated with much long-suffering vessels of wrath made fit for destruction, in order that he might make known the riches of his glory upon vessels of mercy, which he prepared beforehand for glory, namely, us, whom he called not only from among Jews but also from among nations, what of it?"

Ezek. 38:23 "I shall certainly magnify myself and sanctify myself and make myself known before the eyes of many nations; and they will have to know that I am Jehovah."

Job 1:9-12; 2:4-6 "Satan answered Jehovah and said: 'Is it for nothing that Job has feared God? Have not you yourself put up a hedge about him and about his house and about everything that he has all around? The work of his hands you have blessed, and his livestock itself has spread abroad in the earth. But, for a change, thrust out your hand, please, and touch everything he has and see whether he will not curse you to your very face.' Accordingly Jehovah said to Satan: 'Look! Everything that he has is in your hand. Only against him himself do not thrust out your hand!'" "But Satan answered Jehovah and said: 'Skin in behalf of skin, and everything that a man has he will give in behalf of his soul. For a change, thrust out your hand, please, and touch as far as his bone and his flesh and see whether he will not curse you to your very face.' Accordingly Jehovah said to Satan: 'There he is in your hand! Only watch out for his soul itself!'" (See also Luke 22:31.)

Granted opportunity for unborn offspring of Adam to gain salvation

John 3:16 "God loved the world so much that he gave his only-begotten Son, in order that everyone exercising faith in him might not be destroyed but have everlasting life."

2 Pet. 3:9, 15 "Jehovah is not slow respecting his promise, as some people consider slowness, but he is patient with you because he does not desire any to be destroyed but desires all to attain to repentance. Furthermore, consider the patience of our Lord as salvation."

Acts 17:24-26 "'The God that made the world and all the things in it . . . made out of one man every nation of men, to dwell upon the entire surface of the earth."

Time that has passed is short in God's eyes

2 Pet. 3:8 "Let this one fact not be escaping your notice, beloved ones, that one day is with Jehovah as a thousand years and a thousand years as one day."

Ps. 90:4 "A thousand years are in your eyes but as yesterday when it is past, and as a watch during the night."

Woes Increased Since Satan Cast Out of Heaven; Knows Time Is Short

Rev. 12:7, 8, 12 "War broke out in heaven: Michael and his angels battled with the dragon, and the dragon and its angels battled but it did not prevail, neither was a place found for them any longer in heaven. . . . Woe for the earth and for the sea, because the Devil has come down to you, having great anger, knowing he has a short period of time."

Marks these as "last days" of wicked system of things

2 Tim. 3:1-5 "Know this, that in the last days critical times hard to deal with will be here. For men will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, self-assuming, haughty, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, disloyal, having no natural affection, not open to any agree-

ment, slanderers, without self-control, fierce, without love of goodness, betrayers, headstrong, puffed up with pride, lovers of pleasures rather than lovers of God, having a form of godly devotion but proving false to its power; and from these turn away."

Matt. 24:3, 4, 7, 8, 12 "The disciples approached him privately, saying: 'Tell us, When will these things be, and what will be the sign of your presence and of the conclusion of the system of things?' And in answer Jesus said to them: ' . . . For nation will rise against nation and kingdom against kingdom, and there will be food shortages and earthquakes in one place after another. All these things are a beginning of pangs of distress. And because of the increasing of lawlessness the love of the greater number will cool off.' "

See also the main heading "Sign of Christ's Presence," pages 451-456.

Prosperity of Wicked Only Short-lived; Do Not Adopt Their Ways

Ps. 37:1, 2, 9, 10 "Do not show yourself heated up because of the evildoers. Do not be envious of those doing unrighteousness. For like grass they will speedily wither, and like green new grass they will fade away. For evildoers themselves will be cut off . . . And just a little while longer, and the wicked one will be no more; and you will certainly give attention to his place, and he will not be."

Prov. 24:1 "Do not be envious of bad men, and do not show yourself craving to get in with them."

Eccl. 8:11-13 "Because sentence against a bad work has not been executed speedily, that is why the heart of the sons of men has become fully set in them to do bad. Although a sinner may be doing bad a hundred times and continuing a long time as he pleases, yet I am also aware that it will turn out well with those fearing the true God, because they were in fear of him. But it will not turn out well at all with the wicked one, neither will he prolong his days that are like a shadow, because he is not in fear of God."

Wicked ones bring calamity on themselves

Prov. 15:27 "The one making unjust profit is bringing ostracism upon his own house."

Prov. 11:5, 6, 19 "In his own wickedness the wicked one will fall. . . . by their craving those dealing treacherously will themselves be caught. . . . the one chasing after what is bad is in line for his own death."

Prov. 1:19 "Thus are the paths of everyone making unjust profit. It takes away the very soul of its owners."

Wicked to be destroyed by God

Ps. 92:7 "When the wicked ones sprout as the vegetation and all the practicers of what is hurtful blossom forth, it is that they may be annihilated forever."

Matt. 25:41 "Be on your way from me, you who have been cursed, into the everlasting fire prepared for the Devil and his angels."

Prov. 2:22 "As regards the wicked, they will be cut off from the very earth; and as for the treacherous, they will be torn away from it."

Jude 14, 15 "Look! Jehovah came with his holy myriads, to execute judgment against all, and to convict all the ungodly concerning all their ungodly deeds that they did in an ungodly way, and concerning all the shocking things that ungodly sinners spoke against him."

Jehovah's Eyes Are on Righteous Ones to Preserve Them

1 Pet. 3:10-12 "He that would love life and see goods days, let him restrain his tongue from what is bad and his lips from speaking deception, but let him turn away from what is bad and do what is good . . . For the eyes of Jehovah are upon the righteous ones, and his ears are toward their supplication; but the face of Jehovah is against those doing bad things."

Prov. 15:3 "The eyes of Jehovah are in every place, keeping watch upon the bad ones and the good ones."

Righteous will be rewarded, even by resurrection from the dead

Ps. 37:11, 27, 29, 34, 37 "The meek ones themselves will possess the earth, and they will indeed find their exquisite delight in the abundance of peace. Turn away from what is bad and do what is good, and so reside to time indefinite. The righteous themselves will possess the earth, and they will reside forever upon it. Hope in Jehovah and keep his way, and he will exalt you to take possession of the earth. When the wicked ones are cut off, you will see it. Watch the blameless one and keep the upright one in sight, for the future of that man will be peaceful."

Prov. 12:2 "One that is good gets approval from Jehovah."

Prov. 11:4-6, 19, 31 "Valuable things will be of no benefit on the day of fury, but righteousness itself will deliver from death. The righteousness of the blameless one is what will make his way straight . . . The righteousness of the upright ones is what will deliver them . . . The one firmly standing for righteousness is in line for life . . . Look! The righteous one—in the earth he will be rewarded."

Prov. 12:7, 28 "The very house of the righteous ones will keep standing. In the path of righteousness there is life, and the journey in its pathway means no death."

Luke 14:14 "You will be repaid in the resurrection of the righteous ones."

Wise Course in View of Wicked Conditions

Eph. 5:15-17 "So keep strict watch that how you walk is not as unwise but as wise persons, buying out the opportune time for yourselves, because the days are wicked. On this account cease becoming unreasonable, but go on perceiving what the will of Jehovah is."

1 Pet. 4:3, 7, 19 "The time that has passed by is sufficient for you to have worked out the will of the nations . . . Be sound in mind, therefore, and be vigilant with a view to prayers. So, then, also let those who are suffering in harmony with the will of God keep on commending their souls to a faithful Creator while they are doing good."

Wisdom

True Wisdom Starts with Reverent Fear of God

Prov. 9:10 "The fear of Jehovah is the start of wisdom, and the knowledge of the Most Holy One is what understanding is." (See also Job 28:28.)

Prov. 15:33 "The fear of Jehovah is a discipline toward wisdom, and before glory there is humility."

Such wisdom acquired from God's Word

2 Tim. 3:15 "From infancy you have known the holy writings, which are able to make you wise for salvation through the faith in connection with Christ Jesus."

Prov. 1:1-4 "The proverbs of Solomon the son of David, the king of Israel, for one to know wisdom and discipline, to discern the sayings of understanding, to receive the discipline that gives insight, righteousness and judgment and uprightness, to give to the inexperienced ones shrewdness, to a young man knowledge and thinking ability."

Jer. 8:9 "Look! They have rejected the very word of Jehovah, and what wisdom do they have?"

Proper to pray to God for wisdom

Jas. 1:5 "So, if any one of you *is lacking in wisdom, let him* keep on asking God, for he gives generously to all and without reproaching; and it will be given him."

2 Chron. 1:8, 10 "At that Solomon said to God: ' . . . Give me now wisdom and knowledge that I may go out before this people and that I may come in.' "

Col. 1:9 "That is also why we, from the day we heard of it, have not ceased praying for you *and asking that you may be filled* with the accurate knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual discernment."

Wisdom from God comes through Christ

1 Cor. 1:24, 30 "To those who are the called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the power of God and the wisdom of God. But it is due to him that you are in union with Christ Jesus, who has become to us wisdom from God, also righteousness and sanctification and release by ransom."

Col. 2:3 "Carefully concealed in [Christ] are all the treasures of wisdom and of knowledge."

Characteristics of godly wisdom

Jas. 3:13, 17 "Who is wise and understanding among you? Let him show out of his fine conduct his works with a meekness that belongs to wisdom. But the wisdom from above is first of all chaste, then peaceable, reasonable, ready to obey, full of mercy and good fruits, not making partial distinctions, not hypocritical."

Prov. 1:5 "A wise person will listen and take in more instruction, and a man of understanding *is the one who acquires* skillful direction."

Ps. 107:43 "Who is wise? He will both observe these things and show himself attentive toward Jehovah's acts of loving-kindness."

Deut. 4:5, 6 "See, I have taught you regulations and judicial decisions, just as Jehovah my God has commanded me . . . And you must keep and do them, because this is wisdom on your *part and understanding on your* part before the eyes of the peoples who will hear of all these regulations, and they will certainly say, 'This great nation is undoubtedly a wise and understanding people.' "

Eccl. 8:1 "The wisdom of a man itself causes his face to shine, and even the sternness of his face is changed for the better."

Godly wisdom is a protection and a guide in the ways of life

Eccl. 7:12 "Wisdom is for a protection the same as money is for a protection; but the advantage of knowledge is that wisdom itself preserves alive its owners."

Prov. 2:10-13 "When wisdom enters into your heart and knowledge itself becomes pleasant to your very soul, thinking ability itself will keep guard over you, discernment itself will safeguard you, to deliver you from the bad way, from the man speaking perverse things, from those leaving the paths of uprightness to walk in the ways of darkness." (See also Prov. 5:1, 2.)

Prov. 3:21-23 "Safeguard practical wisdom and thinking ability, and they will prove to be life to your soul and charm to your throat. In that case you will walk in security on your way, and even your foot will not strike against anything."

Prov. 4:5-7 "Acquire wisdom, *acquire understanding. Do not* forget, and do not turn aside from the sayings of my mouth. Do not leave it, and it will keep you. Love it, and it will safeguard you. Wisdom is the prime thing. Acquire wisdom; and with all that you acquire, acquire understanding."

Prov. 7:2, 4, 5 "Keep my commandments and continue living, and my law like the pupil of your eyes. Say to wisdom: 'You *are my sister*'; and *may you call* understanding itself 'Kinswoman,' to guard you against the woman stranger, against the foreigner who has made her own sayings smooth."

Wisdom worth more than material possessions

Prov. 3:13, 14 "Happy is the man that has found wisdom, and the man that gets discernment, for having it as gain is better *than having silver as gain and* having it as produce than gold itself."

Prov. 8:11 "For wisdom is better than corals, and all other delights themselves cannot be made equal to it."

Job 28:12, 15-19 "But wisdom —where can it be found, and where, now, is the place of understanding? Pure gold cannot be given in exchange for it, and silver cannot be weighed out as *its price. It cannot* be *paid for* with gold of Ophir, with the rare onyx stone and the sapphire. Gold and glass cannot be compared to it, nor is any vessel of refined gold an exchange for it. Coral and rock crystal themselves will not be mentioned, but *a bagful of wisdom is worth* more than one full of pearls. The topaz of Cush cannot be compared to it; it cannot be paid for even with gold in its purity."

Worldly Wisdom, Leaving God Out of Account, Is Harmful

1 Cor. 1:19, 20 "It is written: 'I will make the wisdom of the wise men perish, and the intelligence of the intellectual men I will shove aside.' Where is the wise man? Where the scribe? Where the debater of this system of things? Did not God make the wisdom of the world foolish?"

Rom. 1:22, 23 "Although asserting they were wise, they became foolish and turned the glory of the incorruptible God into something like the image of corruptible man and of birds and four-footed creatures and creeping things."

Col. 2:8 "Look out: perhaps there may be someone who will carry you off as his prey through the philosophy and empty deception according to the tradition of men, according to the elementary things of the world and not according to Christ."

Jas. 3:15 "This is not the wisdom that comes down from above, but is the earthly, animal, demonic."

1 Tim. 6:20 "O Timothy, guard what is laid up in trust with you, turning away from the empty speeches that violate what is holy and from the contradictions of the falsely called 'knowledge.' "

See also the main heading "Evolution," pages 177-183.

Women

Godly Devotion, Christian Qualities Make a Woman Truly Attractive

Prov. 31:30 "Charm may be false, and prettiness may be vain; but the woman that fears Jehovah is the one that procures praise for herself."

1 Pet. 3:3, 4 "Do not let your adornment be that of the external braiding of the hair and of the putting on of gold ornaments or the wearing of outer garments, but let it be the secret person of the heart in the incorruptible apparel of the quiet and mild spirit, which is of great value in the eyes of God."

In God's Arrangement of Things, Man Is Head of Woman

1 Cor. 11:3 "The head of every man is the Christ; in turn the head of a woman is the man."

Eph. 5:23 "A husband is head of his wife as the Christ also is head of the congregation."

See also Gen. 3:16.

Women to Show Submissiveness in Congregation, Not Trying to Exercise Authority over Men or Arguing with Them

1 Cor. 14:34, 35 "Let the women keep silent in the congregations, for it is not permitted for them to speak, but let them be in subjection, even as the Law says. If, then, they want to learn something, let them question their own husbands at home, for it is disgraceful for a woman to speak in a congregation."

1 Tim. 2:11, 12 "Let a woman learn in silence with full submissiveness. I do not permit a woman to teach, or to exercise authority over a man, but to be in silence."

Head Covering Worn as "Sign of Authority" When 'Praying or Prophesying' in Presence of Husband or in Congregation

1 Cor. 1:2; 11:3, 5, 10, 13 "To the congregation of God that is in Corinth . . . I want you to know that the head of every man is the Christ; in turn the head of a woman is the man . . . every woman that prays or prophesies with her head uncovered shames the one who is her head, for it is one and the same as if she were a woman with a shaved head. That is why the woman ought to have a sign of authority upon her head because of the angels. Judge for your own selves: Is it fitting for a woman to pray uncovered to God?"

Subject to Husband as Congregation Is to Christ

Eph. 5:22, 24 "Let wives be in subjection to their husbands as to the Lord. In fact, as the congregation is in subjection to the Christ, so let wives also be to their husbands in everything."

Col. 3:18 "You wives, be in subjection to your husbands, as it is becoming in the Lord."

Subject even to unbelieving husband

1 Pet. 3:1 "In like manner, you wives, be in subjection to your own husbands, in order that, if any are not obedient to the word, they may be won without a word through the conduct of their wives."

Obedience to God takes priority in matters of worship

Acts 5:29 "We must obey God as ruler rather than men."

Matt. 22:37-39 "He said to him: 'You must love Jehovah your God with your whole heart and with your whole soul and with your whole mind.' This is the greatest and first commandment. The second, like it, is this, 'You must love your neighbor as yourself.' "

Diligence in Caring for Interests of Household

Prov. 31:10, 13-19, 21, 22, 24, 27 "A capable wife who can find? Her value is far more than that of corals. She has sought wool and linen, and she works at whatever is the delight of her hands. She has proved to be like the ships of a merchant. From far away she brings in her food. She also gets up while it is still night, and gives food to her household and the prescribed portion to her young women. She has considered a field and proceeded to obtain it; from the fruitage of her hands she has planted a vineyard. She has girded her hips with strength, and she invigorates her arms. She has sensed that her trading is good; her lamp does not go out at night. Her hands she has thrust out to the distaff, and her own hands take hold of the spindle. She does not fear for her household because of the snow, for all her household are clothed with double garments. Coverlets she has made for herself. Her clothing is of linen and wool dyed reddish purple. She has made even undergarments and proceeded to sell them, and belts she has given to the tradesmen. She is watching over the goings on of her household, and the bread of laziness she does not eat."

See also Ruth 2:2-23.

Not wise to allow household duties to crowd out spiritual interests

Luke 10:38-41 "A certain woman named Martha received him as guest into the house. This woman also had a sister called Mary, who, however, sat down at the feet of the Lord and kept listening to his word. Martha, on the other hand, was distracted with attending to many duties. So, she came near and said: 'Lord, does it not matter to you that my sister has left me alone to attend to things? Tell her, therefore, to join in helping me.' In answer the Lord said to her: 'Martha, Martha, you are anxious and disturbed about many things. A few things, though, are needed, or just one. For her part, Mary chose the good portion, and it will not be taken away from her.' "

See also the main heading "Materialism," pages 338-342.

Modesty and Neatness in Dress at All Times

1 Tim. 2:9, 10 "Likewise I desire the women to adorn themselves in well-arranged dress, with modesty and soundness of mind, not with styles of hair braiding and gold or pearls or very expensive garb, but in the way that befits women professing to reverence God, namely, through good works."

Appropriate use of jewelry and other adornments not to be condemned

Gen. 24:53 "The servant began to bring out articles of silver and articles of gold and garments and to give them to Rebekah."

Isa. 61:10 "Without fail I shall exult in Jehovah. My soul will be joyful in my God. For he has clothed me with the garments of salvation . . . like the bride who decks herself with her ornamental things."

See also Ps. 45:13, 14.

Can Contribute to Peace of Home and Congregation by Wise Use of Tongue

Prov. 31:26 "Her mouth she has opened in wisdom, and the law of loving-kindness is upon her tongue."

Prov. 21:9 "Better is it to dwell upon a corner of a roof than with a contentious wife, although in a house in common."

1 Tim. 5:13 "At the same time they also learn to be unoccupied, gadding about to the houses; yes, not only unoccupied, but also gossipers and meddlers in other people's affairs, talking of things they ought not."

Women Share in Preaching God's Word

Ps. 68:11 "Jehovah himself gives the saying; the women telling the good news are a large army."

Acts 2:16, 17 "On the contrary, this is what was said through the prophet Joel, '"And in the last days," God says, "I shall pour out some of my spirit upon every sort of flesh, and your sons and your daughters will prophesy."'"

Acts 21:9 "This man had four daughters, virgins, that prophesied."

Rom. 16:1 "I recommend to you Phoebe our sister, who is a minister of the congregation that is in Cenchreae."

Work

Christians to Be Conscientious, Hard Workers

Col. 3:23 "Whatever you are doing, work at it whole-souled as to Jehovah, and not to men."

Eph. 4:28 "Let the stealer steal no more, but rather let him do hard work, doing with his hands what is good work, that he may have something to distribute to someone in need."

1 Thess. 4:11 "Make it your aim to live quietly and to mind your own business and work with your hands, just as we ordered you."

Prov. 13:4 "The very soul of the diligent ones will be made fat."

See also 2 Thess. 3:10.

Laziness leads to poverty and ruin

Prov. 10:4 "The one working with a slack hand will be of little means."

Prov. 24:33, 34 "A little sleeping, a little slumbering, a little folding of the hands to lie down, and as a highwayman your poverty will certainly come and your neediness as an armed man."

Prov. 18:9 "The one showing himself slack in his work—he is a brother to the one causing ruin."

Prov. 13:4 "The lazy one is showing himself desirous, but his soul has nothing."

Prov. 21:25 "The very craving of the lazy will put him to death, for his hands have refused to work."

Eccl. 10:18 "Through great laziness the beamwork sinks in, and through the letting down of the hands the house leaks."

Man Should Find Enjoyment in the Work He Does

Eccl. 3:13, 22 "Every man should eat and indeed drink and see good for all his hard work. It is the gift of God. And I have seen that there is nothing better than that the man should rejoice in his works, for that is his portion." (See also Eccl. 5:18.)

Eccl. 2:10, 24 "I did not hold back my heart from any sort of rejoicing, for my heart was joyful because of all my hard work, and this came to be my portion from all my hard work. With a man there is nothing better than that he should eat and indeed drink and cause his soul to see good because of his hard work."

Isa. 65:22 "They will not build and someone else have occupancy; they will not plant and someone else do the eating. For like the days of a tree will the days of my people be; and the work of their own hands my chosen ones will use to the full."

Become Skilled in Your Work, Doing Work of Good Quality

Prov. 22:29 "Have you beheld a man skillful in his work? Before kings is where he will station himself."

See also 2 Chron. 2:13, 14.

Be Willing to Share Benefits of Labors with Others

Rom. 12:13 "Share with the holy ones according to their needs. Follow the course of hospitality."

2 Cor. 9:5, 7, 11 "Therefore I thought it necessary to encourage the brothers to come to you in advance and to get ready in advance your bountiful gift previously promised . . . Let each one do just as he has resolved in his heart, not grudgingly or under compulsion, for God loves a cheerful giver. In everything you are being enriched for every sort of generosity."

2 Cor. 8:1-4 "Now we let you know, brothers, about the undeserved kindness of God that has been bestowed upon the congregations of Macedonia, that during a test under affliction their abundance of joy and their deep poverty made the riches of their generosity abound. For according to their actual ability, yes, I testify, beyond their actual ability this was, while they of their own accord kept begging us with much entreaty for the privilege of kindly giving and for a share in the ministry destined for the holy ones."

1 Tim. 6:17, 18 "Give orders to those who are rich . . . to work at good, to be rich in fine works, to be liberal, ready to share."

Work to Provide Material Things Needed, Not to Heap Up Riches

1 Thess. 4:11 "Make it your aim to live quietly and to mind your own business and work with your hands, just as we ordered you."

2 Thess. 3:12 "To such persons we give the order and exhortation in the Lord Jesus Christ that by working with quietness they should eat food they themselves earn."

1 Tim. 6:7, 8 "We have brought nothing into the world, and neither can we carry anything out. So, having sustenance and covering, we shall be content with these things."

Prov. 30:8 "Give me neither poverty nor riches."

Heb. 13:5 "Let your manner of life be free of the love of money, while you are content with the present things. For he has said: 'I will by no means leave you nor by any means forsake you.'"

Look to God for blessing on efforts to obtain life's necessities

Jas. 4:13-15 "Come, now, you who say: 'Today or tomorrow we will journey to this city and will spend a year there, and we will engage in business and make profits,' whereas you do not know what your life will be tomorrow.

For you are a mist appearing for a little while and then disappearing. Instead, you ought to say: 'If Jehovah wills, we shall live and also do this or that.'"

Luke 11:2, 3 "Then he said to them: 'Whenever you pray, say, "Father, let your name be sanctified. Let your kingdom come. Give us our bread for the day according to the day's requirement."'"

Matt. 6:25, 30-32 "On this account I say to you: Stop being anxious about your souls as to what you will eat or what you will drink, or about your bodies as to what you will wear. Does not the soul mean more than food and the body than clothing? If, now, God thus clothes the vegetation of the field, which is here today and tomorrow is thrown into the oven, will he not much rather clothe you, you with little faith? So never be anxious and say, 'What are we to eat?' or, 'What are we to drink?' or, 'What are we to put on?' For all these are the things the nations are eagerly pursuing. For your heavenly Father knows you need all these things."

2 Cor. 9:10 "Now he that abundantly supplies seed to the sower and bread for eating will supply and multiply the seed for you to sow and will increase the products of your righteousness."

Working for material necessities not to overshadow service to God

Matt. 6:33 "Keep on, then, seeking first the kingdom and his righteousness, and all these other things will be added to you."

John 6:27 "Work, not for the food that perishes, but for the food that remains for life everlasting, which the Son of man will give you."

Must Perform Work Consistent with Faith in God and His Purposes

Jas. 2:17, 18, 26 "Faith, if it does not have works, is dead in itself. Nevertheless, a certain one will say: 'You have faith, and I have works. Show me your faith apart from the works, and I shall show you my faith by my works.' Indeed, as the body without breath is dead, so also faith without works is dead."

Eccl. 12:13, 14 "The conclusion of the matter, everything having been heard, is: Fear the true God and keep his commandments. For this is the whole obligation of man. For the true God himself will bring every sort of work into the judgment in relation to every hidden thing, as to whether it is good or bad."

Preaching work to be done by Christians

2 Tim. 4:5 "You, though, keep your senses in all things, suffer evil, do the work of an evangelizer, fully accomplish your ministry."

2 Tim. 4:2 "Preach the word."

Luke 9:2 "So he sent them forth to preach the kingdom of God."

Matt. 28:19, 20 "Go therefore and make disciples of people of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the holy spirit, teaching them to observe all the things I have commanded you."

Not minimum service, but willingness to exert ourselves

1 Cor. 15:58 "Consequently, my beloved brothers, become steadfast, unmovable, always having plenty to do in the work of the Lord, knowing that your labor is not in vain in connection with the Lord."

Rom. 12:11 "Do not loiter at your business. Be aglow with the spirit. Slave for Jehovah."

Luke 13:24 "Exert yourselves vigorously to get in through the narrow door."

Heb. 6:10-12 "God is not unrighteous so as to forget your work and the love you showed for his name, in that you have ministered to the holy ones and continue ministering. But we desire each one of you to show the same industriousness so as to have the full assurance of the hope down to the end, in order that you may not become sluggish, but be imitators of those who through faith and patience inherit the promises."

Luke 10:27 "You must love Jehovah your God with your whole heart and with your whole soul and with your whole strength."

1 Tim. 3:1 "That statement is faithful. If any man is reaching out for an office of overseer, he is desirous of a fine work."

Not all are able to do the same amount in Jehovah's service

Luke 21:2-4 "Then he saw a certain needy widow drop two small coins of very little value there, and he said: 'I tell you truthfully, This widow, although poor, dropped in more than they all did. For all these dropped in gifts out of their surplus, but this woman out of her want dropped in all the means of living she had.'"

Matt. 25:14, 15 "It is just as when a man, about to travel abroad, summoned slaves of his and committed to them his belongings. And to one he gave five talents, to another two, to still another one, to each one according to his own ability, and he went abroad."

God backs us up so that we are empowered to do the work assigned

2 Cor. 4:7 "We have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the power beyond what is normal may be God's and not that out of ourselves."

Phil. 4:13 "For all things I have the strength by virtue of him who imparts power to me."

1 Cor. 2:4, 5 "My speech and what I preached were not with persuasive words of wisdom but with a demonstration of spirit and power, that your faith might be, not in men's wisdom, but in God's power."

Eph. 3:20, 21 "Now to the one who can, according to his power which is operating in us, do more than superabundantly beyond all the things we ask or conceive, to him be the glory."

2 Tim. 4:17 "The Lord stood near me and infused power into me, that through me the preaching might be fully accomplished and all the nations might hear it."

Luke 12:11, 12 "When they bring you in before public assemblies and government officials and authorities, do not become anxious about how or what you will speak in defense or what you will say; for the holy spirit will teach you in that very hour the things you ought to say."

Diligent ones find joy in service of God

Jas. 1:25 "He who peers into the perfect law that belongs to freedom and who persists in it, this man, because he has become, not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, will be happy in his doing it."

Matt. 25:23 "His master said to him, 'Well done, good and faithful slave! You were faithful over a few things. I will appoint you over many things. Enter into the joy of your master.'"

John 13:17 "If you know these things, happy you are if you do them."

Ps. 40:8 "To do your will, O my God, I have delighted."

INDEX

Abraham, covenant, 123, 124
tithed, 478
Abusive speech, 102
Accurate knowledge: see Knowledge
Active life force, 466
Adam, all mankind descended from, 406
disobedience resulted in death, 142, 319
responsibility for sin, 493
sin was not sexual relations, 458
time of creation, 87
Adultery, 103
Alcoholic beverages, 193
Allegiance, Christian's, for God, 61
Amen, 380
Ancestors, unconscious, 136
Angels, 9-14
demons, 14, 158-160
mortal, 14, 253
not to be worshiped, 10, 138
number, 9
services performed, 10-13
Anger, 102
Animals, at peace with man, 170
bleeding those used for food, 53
man's superiority, 136
not transmigrated souls, 137, 483
souls, 464
worship of, forbidden, 137
Anointing, 114
Antichrist, 14-16
Apostates, 15, 417
Apostles, 17-20
Apostolic Succession, 20-25
Christ foundation cornerstone, 20
no record of, in Scriptures, 21
Peter not infallible, 24
Appointed times of the nations, 89-91
Archaeology, confirms Bible, 46
evidence concerning evolution, 180
Armageddon, 25-30
Christians on earth not to fight, 25
description of destruction, 26
how to survive, 30
not violate God's love, 29
when Armageddon will come, 29
why necessary, 27, 28
Assemblies: see Conventions
Assignments, service in organization, 211
Associations, 30-33
bad, to be shunned, 31, 32, 76
fellowship with Christians important, 30, 31
Atheism, 95, 96
Attitudes, wrong, 99-102

Babylon, date of fall, 84
opposed to pure worship, 34
spiritism, 469
Babylon the Great, 33-39
description, 34, 35
fall and destruction, 38, 39
identifying, 33-38
Back-calls, 388
Baptism, 39-44
dedication, 153
does not wash away sins, 40
immersion, not sprinkling, 40
infant baptism unscriptural, 41
name of Father, Son and holy spirit, 41
rebaptism, 42
Bible, 45-53
archaeology corroborates, 46
candor of writers, 46
for all races, 51
God's communication with man, 268
harmony with true science, 47
help needed to understand, 50
inspired by God, 45
interpretation, 50, 51
modern translations, 52
not outdated, all beneficial, 48, 49, 481
prophecy, 45, 394-402
reading and understanding, vital, 49, 50
Birthdays, 66, 235, 236
Blessings, under the Kingdom, 167-170
Blood, 53-55
animals must be bled, 53
misuse leads to loss of life, 54
prohibition on blood, 53
transfusions, 53, 54
Bloodguilt, 55
Born Again, as Spiritual Sons of God, 56, 57
Bread, represents Jesus' body, 323, 324
Bribes, 102
Bride of Christ, 57-59

Caesar's Things to Caesar, 59-62
Caesar equivalent to government, 59
God is supreme authority, 61, 473
laws to be conformed to, 60, 61
respect due rulers, 60
superior authorities, 473, 474
taxes, 60
Cain, married his sister, 406
Calamity, freedom from fear of, 190, 191
Canaan, curse, 407
Celebrations, 62-67
birthdays, 66, 235, 236
memorial of Christ's death, 62, 323
paganism involved, 62-64, 237-240
political, 65
Challenge, Satan's, to Jehovah, 155, 156
Charitable Works, 67-71
Christians' responsibility, 69
give freely, without show, 68
organized giving, 68
Charities: see Charitable Works
Chastity, 104
Children, 71-77
are a reward from Jehovah, 71
death and deformities not God's fault, 74
duty to train and discipline, 72
judgment of parents includes, 75, 76
meetings and service, 73, 74, 350
obedience to parents, 73, 362
should show concern for parents, 74
worldly associations corrupt, 76
Christ: see Jesus Christ
Christians, 78-84
Christianity revealed by God, 416
conduct, 98-108
early Christians not communistic, 94
holidays, 62-65, 235-242
law abiding, 79, 272, 352, 475
love identifies, 78, 326
manifest fruits of spirit, 80
marry only Christians, 332
maturity, 342
must preach, 81, 347, 348
need of study, 470-473
neutrality, 78, 79, 351-359
no part of world, 32, 198-202, 280, 281
no share in slaying at Armageddon, 26
not all "Christians" are really such, 83
not social reformers, 463
not under law covenant, 318
patriotic ceremonies, 354-356
persecution, 82, 374-378
position toward war, 491, 492
sanctification, 443
secular work, 503
spiritual warfare, 79, 492
tithing, 478
witnesses of Jehovah and Jesus, 81
Christmas, 63, 236, 237
Christ's return: see Return of Christ
Chronology, 84-91
appearance of Messiah, 89
"appointed times of the nations," 89-91
fall of Babylon in 539 B.C.E., 84
from 539 B.C.E. to Adam's creation, 84-87
Jerusalem's destruction in 607 B.C.E., 85
Jesus' birth, 89
length of "days" of creation, 87-89
Church, temples not required, 419
See also Congregation of God
Church and State, 37
Circumcision, 124
City, symbolic, 33, 363
Clergy-laity distinction, 37
Clergymen, bear heavy responsibility, 417
Commandments, 91-94
Commendation, 171
Communion, memorial meal, 324, 335-337
Communism, 94-97
Complaining, 102, 172
Conduct of Christians, 98-108
attitudes and practices to avoid, 99-104
no divisive barriers, 271
patterned after Christ, 98
singleness, 461
Confession, 109-111
basis for mercy, 345
confess to God through Christ, 109
informing overseers, 111
seek forgiveness for sins, 109, 459
Congregation of God, 112-117
anointed with holy spirit, 114, 115
built on Christ, not Peter, 20, 21, 113
foreordained, 392
'gates of Hades' not overpower, 451
heavenly resurrection, 426, 427
immortality, 252, 253
judgment of "temple" class, 291
limited to 144,000, 116
members chosen by God, 114
"new creation," 134
other uses of word "congregation," 116
share with Christ in judging, 294
to be kings and priests, 115
Congregation servant: see Overseers
Conscience, 117-119
Contributions, 274
Conventions, 67, 274
Cooperation, 105
Cornerstone, Christ, not Peter, 20, 21
Counsel, 119-122
Courage, 105
Courts, 314
Covenants, 123-131
Abrahamic covenant, 123, 124
covenant with Noah, 123
for heavenly kingdom, 129, 303
for priesthood in Israel, 127
kingdom covenant with David, 128, 302
law covenant, 125-127, 314-318
new covenant, 127, 128
Cowardice, 100, 191, 192
Creation, 131-135
active force used, 467
angels, 9
"days" of creation, 87-89, 132-134
Jesus Christ master worker, 132
"new creation," 134
orderly, not chaotic, 131
Creative days, 87-89, 132-134
Creator, 264
Creature Worship, 135-139
animals, 136, 137
prominent personalities, 137, 138
Cross, 139-141
Jesus died on stake, 140
pagan use of cross, 139
reverence of, is idolatry, 140
Cup, represents Jesus' blood, 324

Dates: see Chronology
David, covenant for kingdom, 128, 129
Day, creative days, 87-89, 132-134
meanings of term, 87
prophetic, 89
Dead, condition of dead, 142, 144
honoring the dead, 136
talking with, 143, 144
Death, 142-146
baptism into, 44
cause of death, 142
condition of dead, 142, 144
resurrection, 424-429
"second death," 146
severs marriage tie, 334
Sheol—Hades, 448-451
soul can die, 143, 463, 464
to be done away with, 146
Decisions, 146-150
Dedication, 40, 150-153
Deformities, cause and relief, 74
Demons, 158-160
Desolation, seventy years, 85
Destiny: see Predestination
Devil and Demons, 153-160
Devil, spirit person, 153
origin, 154, 158
ruler of world, 155
Satan not in hell, 231
Satan responsible for wickedness, 494
spiritism, 468-470
Discipline, 160-162
Disfellowshiping, 162-165
Disobedience, 360
Disrespect, 100, 172
Divorce, 334
Drinking, alcoholic beverages, 102, 193

Earth and Its Destiny, 165-170
blessings under Kingdom, 167-170, 373
God's purpose, 165
remains forever, 166
Earthquakes, 452
Easter, 64, 239, 240
Eating: see Food
Elijah, 227
Emotions, control of, 444
Encouragement, 122, 171-174
Endurance, 174-177, 377
Entertainment, 148
Envy, 100
Eternal torment: see Hellfire

Everlasting life: see Life
Evil Slave, 453
Evolution, 177-184
archaeological evidence, 180
dating methods, 182
fossil record, 182
kind produces 'after its kind,' 178
man degrading not evolving, 180
mutations, 183
varieties due to genes, 179

F **Faith,** 184-189
Faithful . . . discreet slave, 275, 365, 453
Faith healing: see Healing
False prophets, 15
Family, discussions and study, 473
father's responsibility, 72
mother's place, 72, 501
opposition, 175, 419
Fasting, 239
Father, 72, 244
Favoritism, 462
Fear, 189-192
Field ministry, 277-280
Fighting: see Neutrality
Flag salute, 354-356
Flood, 86, 87, 417
Food, 192-194
moderation, 193
Mosaic dietary restrictions, 192
Food shortages, 452
Forbidden fruit, Adam's sin not sex act, 458
Foreknowledge: see Predestination
Forgiveness, accepting it, 109
for those who repent, 423
prayers for, 381
settling personal differences, 447
Fornication, 103
Fossils, 182
Freedom, 194-197
Friendship with the World, 197-203
Christians no part of world, 198-202
respect for rulers, 203
Fruits of the Spirit, 203-209

G **Gehenna,** 209, 210, 428
"lake of fire," 210
significance, 210
valley of Hinnom, 209, 210, 230
Genetics, 179
Gentiles, part of Christian congregation, 114
Gifts, 68, 238
Gifts from God, 211-215, 219
assignments of service, 211, 212
everlasting life, 213
marriage and singleness, 212
miraculous, of early Christians, 213, 214
speaking in tongues, 479-481
transmitted through apostles, 13
Glory, seeking for oneself, 138
Gluttony, 103, 193
God, 215-217
evidences of existence, 215
false gods, 217, 257
Jehovah is almighty, 216
Jesus is a god, 216, 282
Jesus subject to God, 282, 486
name, 264, 441, 442
obedience to, required, 359, 360
reverent fear of, 189, 190, 497, 498
why permits wickedness, 494, 495
See also Jehovah
"Good Friday," 239
Goodness, 106, 206
Gossiping, 103
Governing body, 20, 24, 275, 365
Governments: see Superior Authorities
Greediness, 100

H **Happiness,** new earth, 168
Harlot, Babylon the Great, 83
Hate, 101, 202
Head covering, 500
Headship, 195, 500
Healing, 218-223
not proof of true religion, 222
spiritual healing, 223
Health, new earth, 168
Heart, 223-225
Heaven, 225-228
limited number go to heaven, 226
"new heavens," 227
Hellfire, 229-234
gates of hell, 22
meaning of "hell," 229
parable of rich man and Lazarus, 232
purgatory, 403-406
Satan not in hell, 231
symbolic fire and torment, 234
upright go to hell, 230
Hinnom: see Gehenna
Holidays, 235-242
birthdays, 66, 235, 236
Christians not observe, 235-237
Christmas, 63, 236, 237
Easter, 64, 239
"Good Friday," 239
idolizing humans, 65, 241
in memory of dead spirits, 240
lent, 238
paganism involved, 62-66, 235-240
Holy spirit: see Spirit
Honorary Titles, 243, 244
House-to-house preaching, 387
Human body, organs designed by God, 179
Humility, 244-247
Husband, headship in marriage, 333

I **Idolatry,** 247-252
emblem of the State, 250, 251
"relative" worship of idols, 249
"Immaculate" conception, 329
Immersion, 40
Immorality, 103, 198
Immortality, 252, 253
angels not immortal, 14, 253
concept from Babylon, 37
heirs of heavenly kingdom, 252, 253
human soul not immortal, 253
Jehovah and Jesus, 252
reincarnation, 256, 257
transmigration of soul, 482-484
Incarnation, 253-257, 283
Indifference, preaching in spite of, 175
Infallibility, 24
Infant baptism: see Baptism
Inspiration, Bible, 45
Inspired expressions, 466, 468
Integration, 463
Integrity, man's, questioned by Satan, 155
Interfaith, 257-263
Jehovah rejects idolatrous rites, 258, 280
only one true faith, 257
proper to expose falsehood, 263
Interpretation, 50, 51
Israel, Jehovah's executional force, 490
law covenant, 125-127
spiritual, 116, 127, 128, 226

J **Jehovah,** 264-269
angels spoke in his name, 10
Creator, 264
foreknowledge, 391, 392
hears prayers, 379
human eyes cannot see, 265
Jesus subject to God, 486
long-suffering and mercy, 322, 323, 344
love, 325
name, 264
not a name for Jesus, 267
not God of Jews only, 267
not omnipresent, 267
obedience to, required, 359, 360
qualities, 266
reverent fear of, 189, 497
sanctification, 441, 442
source of true knowledge, 306
supreme, 473
theocratic organization, 362-366
undeserved kindness, 299, 300
why permits wickedness, 494, 495
without beginning or end, 265
Jehovah's Witnesses, 270-281
assemblies, 274
conduct, 271, 272
each baptized Witness a minister, 277
"faithful and discreet slave" class, 275
flag salute, 354-356
identifying true religion, 413-415
law abiding, 79, 272, 352, 475
meetings, 272-274
name and origin, 270
neutrality, 351-359
no divisive barriers, 271
no interfaith, 280
not social reformers, 463
not subversive, 281, 358
organization structure, 275, 276
overseers, 276, 366-371
persecution, 374-378
position toward carnal war, 491, 492
qualification to preach, 40, 277
separate from world, 280, 281
voluntary contributions, 274
witnesses of Jehovah and Jesus, 81
women and children ministers, 71, 279, 502
Jerusalem, New, 58
seventy years of desolation, 85
Jesus Christ, 282-288
a mighty god, 282
condemned false religious beliefs, 259
date of birth, 89
first creation by God, 282
foundation cornerstone, 20, 113
fulfilled law covenant, 126, 316, 486
keys of Hades, 22
lesser than Jehovah, 282, 486
master worker in creation, 132
Messiah, 283
Michael, 288
miracles, 285
not God-man, 254, 283
not one God with the Father, 485
obeyed Law, 315
observance of birth, 236
prophecies fulfilled in Jesus, 283
ransom, 286, 408-412
resurrection, 287, 425
return of Christ, 429-433
salvation possible only through, 286
son of God, 283
"son of man," 431
was created, 487
Jewelry, 501
Jews, Jesus identified as Messiah, 89, 283
return from captivity, 85
John the Baptist, 42, 57
Joy, 289, 290
Judgment, 290-295
angelic executioners, 13
concerning who enter Kingdom, 28
execution of divine judgment, 292, 293
Jehovah's, righteous, 290
Judgment Day, 293, 294
nations judged by Christ, 292
"temple" class, 291
Justification, or Being Declared Righteous, 295-298

K **Keys of death,** 22
Keys of kingdom, 22
Kind, Genesis kinds, 178
Kindness, 206, 298-300
Kingdom, 300-306
establishment, 89-91, 304, 305
heavenly, not earthly, 302
is a government, 301
keys of kingdom, 22
not state of goodness in heart, 301, 302
to endure forever, 305
Knowledge, 306-311
brings responsibility, 309
Jehovah is source, 471
worldly wisdom, 310, 311, 499

L **Lake of fire,** 210, 230, 231
"Last Days," 311-313
chronology, 89-91
critical times foretold, 311
separating work, 312
sign of Christ's presence, 451-456
system of things to end, 312
Law, 313-318
Christians law abiding, 79, 314, 352, 475
Christians not under law covenant, 65
Law covenant, 125-127, 314-317
came to end with Jesus, 316, 478
Christians not under Law, 65, 318
made just with Israel, 315
not divided into two parts, 316, 317
principles not abolished, 317
replaced with new covenant, 315
sabbath, 434-437
tithing, 477, 478
Lazarus, rich man and Lazarus, 232, 233
Laziness, 101, 502
Lent, 238, 239
Life, 319-321
alive in a spiritual sense, 321
available through Jesus, 319
dependent upon Jehovah, 268, 269
everlasting, heaven and earth, 320
gift from God, 211
life force, 466
soul, 465
Long-suffering, 322, 323
Loose conduct, 103
Lord's Evening Meal, 323-325
bread and wine, 323, 324
Nisan 14, 323
not showy religious festival, 62
those in new covenant partake, 324, 325
to be kept in remembrance, 323
Love, 325-329
demonstrated by obedience, 326, 360
marks true Christians, 326, 479
not violated by destruction of wicked, 29
Lying, 103

Man, is a soul, 463
origin, 179
races of mankind, 406-408
Mariolatry, 329-331
"assumption" unscriptural, 331
improper to pray to Mary, 331
Mary not "ever virgin," 330
"mother of God," 330
not "immaculately" conceived, 329
Marriage, 332-335
Cain married his sister, 406
Christians marry only Christians, 332
death severs marriage tie, 334
divorce, 334
from God, 212, 332
husband's headship, 333
legal registration, 61
polygamy, 334
purpose, 71, 333
resurrected ones not marry, 335
singleness, 334, 335, 460, 461
unbelievers, 31, 332
wife to obey and respect husband, 333, 500
Mary: see Mariolatry
Mass, 335-337
Materialism, 338-342
Maturity, 342, 343
study required, 470
Mediator, Christ, 109
Meditation, 472
Meetings, 272-274
assemblies, 67, 274
children to attend, 73
place of meeting, 116
Memorial: see Lord's Evening Meal
Mercy, 344-346
Messiah, 89, 283
Michael, 288
Mildness, 107, 207
Military service, 357
Mind, effect on one's conduct, 99
peace of mind, 372
Ministerial servants: see Overseers
Minister of God, 346-351
all Christians share in ministry, 347
children may serve God, 74, 350
Jehovah qualifies his servants, 349, 385
Jesus set the example, 347
ordination, 349
theological training unnecessary, 349
women ministers, 350, 502
Ministry, carried on peaceably, 372
manner of preaching, 387, 388
objective, 387
Miracles, apostles performed, 18
healing, 218-223
Jesus Christ, 285
performed by means of holy spirit, 467
Money, love of, dangerous, 101, 338
Morals, requirements for baptism, 40
Mother, Jehovah's organization, 363
training of children, 72
"Mother of God," 330
Murder, 55, 103
Mutations, 183

Nationalism, 199
Negroes: see Races of Mankind
Neutrality, 351-359
avoiding political involvement, 281, 353
Christians law abiding, 79, 272, 352, 475
Christians not subversive, 281, 358, 359
flag salute, 354, 355
military service, 357
patriotic ceremonies, 356
New covenant, 127, 128, 315, 324
New creation, 134
New heavens, 227
New Jerusalem, 58
New order, earthly blessings, 167-170
New system of things, prophetic view of, 402
"New World Translation," 52
1914, chronology, 89, 90
sign of Christ's presence, 451-456
Noah, covenant for preservation, 123

Obedience, 359-362
children to parents, 362
wife to husband, 333, 361
Omnipresence, 267
144,000, called to heavenly life, 115, 225
spiritual Israelites, 226
Opposition: see Persecution
Ordination, 349
Organization (Jehovah's), 362-366
assistance to understanding, 309
Bible guides God's people, 365
"faithful and discreet slave," 275, 365
governing body, 20, 24, 275, 365
heavenly, 9
Overseers, 276, 366-371

Paradise, under God's kingdom, 167-170
Parents, respect, 135
training children, 72, 73, 161, 162
Passover, Nisan 14, 323
Patience, 107, 173
Patriotism: see Neutrality
Paul, chosen as an apostle, 19
Peace, 371-373
Persecution, 374-378
antichrist, 15
Christians must expect, 82, 374, 419
evidence of Christ's presence, 452
not rob Christians of joy, 290
reasons for, 374
Satan instigates, 378
Pestilences, 452
Peter, keys of kingdom, 22
married, 25
not infallible, 24
not the "rock-mass," 20, 21
Rome, 24
Politics, Christian position, 199
Devil's influence, 155
See also Neutrality
Polygamy, 334
Poor, helping, 69, 70, 345
See also Charitable Works
Prayer, 379-384
"amen," 380
directed to Jehovah, 379
improper to pray to Mary, 331
in Jesus' name, 379
mealtime, 381
model prayer, 380
offered to images, 384
posture, 380
proper matters, 382, 383
repetition not please God, 384
"saints" cannot intercede, 138
Preaching the Good News, 384-390
all Christians share, 384
angelic direction, 12
every day proper, 390, 437
evidence of Christ's presence, 453
how done, 387
Jehovah qualifies his servants, 385
message for everyone, 390

not a burden, 386
objective, 387
repeated calls necessary, 387
women, 385, 502
Predestination (Foreordination), 390-394
Presumptuousness, 101
Pride, 101, 246
Priests, Babylon, 37
Israel, 127
Prince of Peace, 373
Prophecy, 394-402
distinguishing true and false, 394
false prophets, 15
fulfillments mentioned in Bible, 396
fulfillments recorded by historians, 397
"last days," 401
Purgatory, 403-406

Races of Mankind, 406-408
all descended from Adam, 406
"black race" from Cush, 407
Christians not social reformers, 462, 463
due to hereditary factors, 407
salvation available to all, 439
Radioactive dating methods, 182
Rainbow, 123
Ransom, 408-412
basis for being declared righteous, 296
forgiveness of sins, 459
Jehovah made provision for, 409
man's need of ransom, 408
purpose and benefits, 286, 410
Rebaptism, 42
Reconciliation, 411
Registration, compliance with law, 61
Reincarnation, 256, 257
Reinstatement, 164
"Relative" worship, 249
Religion, 412-420
apostasy foretold, 417
Babylon, 34-37
changing if necessary, 419
clergymen bear responsibility, 417
identifying marks of true, 413-415
interfaith, 257-263
Jesus condemned false beliefs, 259
more than sincerity required, 416
not all approved by God, 412, 413
temples not required, 419
Repentance, 420-423
evidence of, 422
importance of humility, 245
prayers for forgiveness, 381
willful sins, 423
Respect, for overseers, 120, 191
worldly rulers, 60
Rest day, 88, 434-437
Resurrection, 424-429
Christian congregation, 22, 115
deliverance from Sheol—Hades, 451
Gehenna, 428
general resurrection, 427
heavenly resurrection, 426, 427
Jesus Christ, 255, 287, 425
resurrected ones will not marry, 335
righteous and unrighteous, 427
Return of Christ, 429-433
invisible, 430, 431
"same manner" as ascension, 430
time of Christ's return, 433
Rich man and Lazarus, 232, 233
Righteous, being declared, 295-297
Righteousness, new earth, 168
righteous standing with God, 187, 295-298

Sabbath, 434-437
not apply to Christians, 65, 435, 436
preaching on, proper, 390, 437
Sacrifices, 54
"Saints," 138
Saluting, 354-356
Salvation, 437-441
not 'once saved, always saved,' 439
ransom, 408-412
'universal salvation' unscriptural, 440
Sanctification, 441-443
Satan the Devil: see Devil and Demons
Science, Bible in agreement with, 47
Second coming of Christ: see Return of Christ
Second death, 146
Security, 170
Sedition, 281, 358
Seed, Abraham's, 156
God's woman, 156
Satan's, 156
Segregation, 463
Self-control, 444-446
Self-justification, 119
Serpent, 154
Settling Personal Differences, 446-448
Sexual relations, not Adam's sin, 458
Sheol—Hades, 448-451
associated with death, 449
common grave of mankind, 448, 449
deliverance by resurrection, 451
'gates of Hades,' 451
good and bad persons in, 449, 450
low place in dust of earth, 448
Sign of Christ's Presence, 451-456
'sign' is composite, 451
visible evidences, 451-455
Sin, 456-460
Adam and Eve, 319, 457, 458
against holy spirit, 460
baptism not wash away, 40
being declared righteous, 295, 296
confession, 109-111
deliverance from bondage to, 437, 459
forgiveness, 286, 423
no forgiveness by Mass, 336, 337
purgatory, 403-406
repentance required, 420-423
willful sins, 423
Sincerity, more required, 416
Singleness, 460, 461
affords greater freedom, 334, 461
gift from God, 212
Slander, 103
Social companionship, 32, 198
Social Distinctions, 462, 463
Son of man, 431
Soul, 463-465
human soul not immortal, 253, 463
man is a soul, 463
not same as spirit, 464
purgatory, 403-405
transmigration, 482-484
Sovereignty, Jehovah's, vindicated, 27
Speaking in tongues: see Tongues, Speaking in
Speech, 200
Spirit, 466-468
active force or holy spirit, 466, 467
active life force, 466
baptism, 43, 44
fruits of spirit, 203-209
holy spirit not a person, 487, 488
inspired expressions, 466
invisible persons, 466
sin against holy spirit, 460

soul not same as spirit, 464
Spiritism, 468-470
Stake, 140
Star, led astrologers to Herod, 237
Stealing, 104
Strength, Jehovah imparts, 172
Stubbornness, 101
Study, 470-473
Subjection, 475, 476, 500
Submissiveness, 108, 500
Suffering, 176, 376, 494
Sunday: see Sabbath
Superior Authorities, 473-477
Christians are law abiding, 79, 272, 475
human authority by God's permission, 474
Jehovah is supreme, 61, 473
obedience to God comes first, 475
Superstition, 190

T **Talking with dead**, 143, 144
Tartarus, 229
Taxes, 60
Temple, Jewish temple rejected, 112
spiritual temple, 115, 291
Ten Commandments, 91, 92, 316, 317
Thinking, effect on one's conduct, 99
Time of the end: see "Last Days"
Tithing, 477, 478
Titles, 243, 244
Tongue, control of, 445, 501
Tongues, Speaking in, 479-481
bestowed only through apostles, 480
gift to pass away, 481
not all early Christians had gift, 479
Torment, not after death, 229, 231
resulting from message preached, 234
Satan's, 234
Torture stake, 140
Tradition, 481, 482
Training for ministry, 280
Transfusions, 53, 54
Translations, 52
Transmigration, 137, 482-484
Trinity, 484-489
concept from Babylon, 37
holy spirit not a person, 487
Jesus not one God with Father, 485
Jesus subject to God, 486
Jesus was created, 487
John 1:1, 489
oneness of Father and Son, 487
only Jehovah from everlasting, 486
religious statements of belief, 484
Scriptures not say three are equal, 488

U **Uncleanness**, 103
Undeserved kindness: see Kindness
Universal salvation, 440

V **Valley of Hinnom**, 209
Virgin, Mary not "ever virgin," 330
Voting: see Neutrality

W **War**, 489-492
brought to an end, 373, 489
Christian's position, 357, 491
Israel was God's executional force, 490
part of "sign," 452, 489
spiritual warfare, 492
Way, Christian, 79, 98
Wealth, love of dangerous, 338
Wickedness, 492-497
cleared from earth by God, 28, 496
increase in "last days," 495
Jehovah not the cause, 492
Jehovah preserves righteous, 497
Satan responsible for wickedness, 493
why permitted, 494, 495
Wife, obey and respect husband, 333, 361
subject to husband, 500
Wine, moderate use, 193
Wisdom, 497-499
a protection and a guide, 498
Jehovah is source, 471
starts with fear of God, 497
worldly wisdom, 310, 311, 499
Witnesses, of Jehovah and Jesus, 81, 270-281
Women, 500-502
caring for household, 501
head covering, 500
may be ministers, 350, 385, 502
modesty in dress, 501
qualities making attractive, 500
submissiveness in congregation, 350, 500
wise use of tongue, 445, 501
Work, 502-505
Works, consistent with faith, 188, 504
World, end of wicked system of things, 312
friendship with, 197-203
ruler, 155, 197
unbelieving mankind, 197
Worship, angels, 10, 138
creature, 135-138
identifying marks of true, 413-415
Israel instructed by Jehovah, 415
new earth, 169
not all approved by God, 412, 413
"relative" worship, 249
to be given only to Jehovah, 135

For additional information write to
WATCH TOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY

America, (U.S.A.)	117 Adams St.	Brooklyn, N.Y. 11201
Australia	11 Beresford Road	Strathfield, N.S.W. 2135
Canada M6A 1Z5	150 Bridgeland Ave.	Toronto, Ontario
England	Watch Tower House, The Ridgeway	London NW7 1RN
New Zealand	6-A Western Springs Road	Auckland 8
South Africa	Private Bag 2	Elandsfontein, 1406